


3.42



The chroni-
cle of **John Hardyng**, from
the firste begynnynge of Englande, vnto the
reigne of King Edward the fourth wher he
made an end of his chronicle. And from that
tyme is added a continuacion of the
Rorie in prose to this our tyme,
now first imprinted, garbe-
red out of diuerse and
sondery autours
þ haue writte
of the at-
taires
of Englande.

L O N D I N I
Ex officina Richardi Graeciani.
Mense Ianuarii.

M.D.xlii.

Com privilegio adimpre-
tionum solum.



ArundeL.
Lumley2.



John Smith

The dedication of

this presente worke, vnto the right hono-
rable lord Thomas duke of Norfolke,
by thenpunter, Richard Grafton.



orde Thomas of Norfolke
duke moste gracious
Of noble auncestrie and blood
discended
A capitain right woorthie and
auenturous
And fro Scotlande euen new-
ly retended

Where Englandes querell ye haue reuenged
In the behalfe of our noble kyng Henrye
I wishe you all health, honour, and victorie

And because it hath pleased almightie God
In the right title and querele of Englande
To vse your stroke as an iron rod
Wherewith to scourge the falsehod of Scotlande,
In whom is no truthen ne holde of any bande
Thon Hardynges chronicle, as me thought was
Moste mete to bee dedicated, to your grace.

For Hardyng a true herted Englishman
An esquier balaunt hardie and bolde
And not vnlearned, as the tyme was than
Serched out of chronicles, bothe late an olde
All that euer by thesame hath bee tolde
How fro the beginnyng, Scotlande dooth reigne
Under kynges of Englande, as their souereigne

¶.ii.

And

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

Interpret.

The Dedication of

this presente worke, vnto the right hono-
rable lord Thomas Duke of Norfolke,
by thenpunter, Richarde Grafton.



Dye Thomas of Norfolke
duke moste gracious
Of noble auncestrie and blood
discended
A capitain right woorthie and
auenturous
And fro Scotlande euen new-
ly retended

Where Englandes querell ye haue reuenged
In the behalfe of our noble kyng Henrye
I wishe you all healt, honour, and victoꝝ

And because it hath pleased almightie God
In the right title and querele of Englande
To vse your stroke as an iron rod
Wherewith to scourge the falsehod of Scotlande,
In whom is no truthene holde of any bande
Thon Hardynges chꝛonicle, as me thought was
Moste mete to bee dedicated, to your grace.

For Hardyng a true herted Englisheman
An esquier valiaunt hardie and bolde
And not vnlearned, as the tyme was than
Serched out of chꝛonicles, bothe late an olde
All that euer by thesame hath bee tolde
Now fro the beginnyng, Scotlande dooth reigne
Under kynges of Englande, as their souereigne

¶.¶.

And

And Hardynges owne self, hath the partie bee
That from Scotlande, oft tymes hath brought
Their scales of homage and feaultee
Unto the kyng of Englande, as he ought
Unto whom the Scottes then sued and sought
Yeldyng to liue in humble subieccion
Of Englandes gouernaunce and protection.

But that the people of their propre nature
Hath euen from the firste, been so vntowarde
So vnstedfast, inconstaunte and vnure
That nothyng maie possibly bee moze frowarde
So haue thei continued from thence furthwarde
Neuer glad to bee in quiet and rest
But to defeccion, aye ready and prest.

Wherefore Iho Hardyng, to his lord & maister
Whom in his tyme he serued with out blame
Edward, first duke of Yorke, and after
Kyng of this realme, the fourth of that name
In this chronicle affirmeth of the same
That thei will rebell, till by prouision
The kyng of Englade shall haue made the bothe

(one

And in deede Englad, hath oft been costreigned
The Scottes slacknesse in dooyng their homage
To picke forward, whē thei would haue refrained
With the sharpe spurre of marciall forceage
And to abate their wantonnesse of courage
With the iron rodde of due correccion
As oft as thei attempted defeccion.

For the Scottes will aye bee boastyng & crakyng
Euer

Euē sekpng causes of rebellion
Spoyles, booties, and pꝛeades euē takpng
Euē sowpng quereles of dissension
To burne and steale is all their intencion
And yet as people, whom God dooth hate & curse
Thei alwaies begyn, and euē haue the woꝛse.

¶ Englande hetherto hath neuer lacked power
As oft as nede wer, the Scottes to compell
Their duety to dooe, and menne of honour
Englande hath had, as stozies dooe tell
Whiche whensoever the Scottes did rebell
Wer able at all tynes, theim to subdue
And their obedience, to Englande renue.

¶ Amongest the whiche nūbꝛe, your noble father
In the twelfth yere of Henry the seuenthes reigne
By aunciente recoꝛde, as I can gather
Becpng of suche credence as cannot feigne
Yode into Scotlande their pꝛyde to restraigne
With sebleable power (as bookes dooen auowe)
And like commission as your grace had now.

¶ That season he did so valiauntely
The Scottes bāquishpng and puttyng to flight
That thei rann awaie moſte shamefully
Not able of hym tabide the sight
Noꝛ able to sustein, the bꝛunte of his might
Sundꝛy castles, he rased doune to the grounde
Whiche to the honour of Englande did redounde.

¶ Kyng Jamy also, makpng great braggue and
Haupng his armie not a mile of that daie (vaunte

Your father as a capitaine valiaunt
Made in a moment, for feare to runne awaie
The Scottish kyng, sedyng furth heraldes twate
Chalenged your father, with many a proud worde
Battaill to wage, and trie it by the swoorde.

And choose thou sir erle, or kyng Jamy then
Whether we shall fight, arme against arme
Or els I and thou, trie it manne for manne
For sparyng bloudshed, of either compaignie
That if it chaunce me, to haue the victorie
Naught shall I demaunde, for Englandes losse &
Sauig Barwike toun, for euer to be mine (thine)

Then to the heraldes, saied this noble knight
Shewe to your kyng, that in this place purposely
Battaill for to wage, my tentes haue I pight
I am not come to flee, but to fight sharpely
As where he standeth, he maie see with his yie
And firste where he would, bloudshed saued to be
Therof I am no lesse desirous then he.

Secundarily, where it is his likyng
That I a poore erle, and of meane estate
Maie combattre, with hym beeyng a kyng
That our twoo fightes, maie cease all debate
He dooeth me honour, after suche high rate
That I must nedes graunt, my self bound in this
Humble thanks to tendre to his grace. (case)

Now as for the toun of Berwike, it is knowen
(Whiche your lord requireth in case I bee slain)
Is the kyng my souereignes, and not myne owne
So

So that graunte therof, in me dooth not remain
But this maie ye bear worde to your lorde again
My persone and life, aduenture I shall
More precious to me, then the rounde worlde all.

When kyng Jamp, by his heraldes two
Spedefully returnyng, had due knowlage
Muche otherwise, then he looked for tho
Of the erles stoute answere and message
fled out of hande, and would no battaill wage
So that your father returned home victour
With comforte, laude, praise, ioye and honour.

Thesame your father, in the fift yere
Of our moste noble kyng Henry the eight
When his grace and his armie at Turney were
And thesame kyng Jamp, of Scotlande streight
Against Englande, his banner displeight
Uaquisshed þ Scottes, & with your helpyng hand
Slew there kyng Jamp, & brought hym into En-
(gland

Again the fiftene yere of thesame reigne
Your self in propre persone, full courageous
Set furthe against þ Scottes, without disdeigne
Like a capitain valiaunt and venturous
Where ye brēt Fedworth, a toun right populous
With diuerse victories, that your grace then had
Whiche made all Englande to reioyse & bee glad

The yere folowyng also, as bookes testify
The Scottes came, with an houghe power
Of .lx. thousande men vnder the duke of Albany
Besiegyng Warke castle, thynkyng it to deuour
But

But hearyng that your grace, did appoche that
The Scottes trebled, and so did their duke(houre
And cowardly fled, to their shame and rebuke.

I Sembleably, by this your last voyage
Now this last October and Nouember
Made into Scotlande, to their greate damage
It dooth as me semeth, right well appere
That when pleaseh our kyng, to send you thether
Your house in his right, is appointed by God
To bee to the Scottes, a sharpe scourge and rod.

Wherfore this chzonicle of Jhon Hardyng
I haue thought good, to dedicate to your grace
Because thesame in euery maner of thyng
Dooeth best set out the nature of that place
With distaunce of tounes, and euery miles space
Beseech yng your grace to take in good parte
Myne honest laboures and beneuolent harte

The pzeface into the

Chronicle of Ihon Hardyng.



Honges al wryters, that haue
put in hze
Their penne and stile, thynges
to endite
None haue behynde theim, left
so greate trasure
Ne too their posteritee, haue
dooen suche delite

As thei whiche haue taken peines to wryte
Chronicles and actes, of eche nacion
And haue of the same, made true relacion.

By chronicles we knowe, thynges auncient
The succession of tymes, and menne
The state of policies, with their regiment
How long eche partie hath ruled, and when
And what wer all their procedynges then.
Chronicles make reporte of matters dooen
And passed many thousande yeres gooen

By Chronicles we knowe, in eche countree
What menne haue been, of prowesse marciall
What persones chiefly in actiuitee
When and betwene whom, warres haue befall
Either ciuile oꝛ els externall
How thesame haue been, conueighed & wrought
Oꝛ els appeaced, and to quiete brought.

Chronicles dooe recoꝛde and testifie

Euery

But hearyng that your grace, did approche that
The Scottes trebled, and so did their duke(houre
And cowardly fled, to their shame and rebuke.

Sembleably, by this your last voyage
Now this last October and Nouember
Made into Scotlande, to their greate damage
It dooth as me semeth, right well appere
That when pleaseh our kyng to send you thether
Your house in his right, is appoincted by God
To bee to the Scottes, a sharpe scourge and rod.

Wherfore this chzonicle of Jhon Hardyng
I haue thought good, to dedicate to your grace
Because thesame in euery maner of thyng
Dooeth best set out the nature of that place
With distaunce of tounes, and euery miles space
Beseechynge your grace to take in good parte
Myne honest laboures and beneuolent harte

The pꝛeface into the

Chronicle of Ihon Hardyng.



Hinges al wꝛiters, that haue
put in bꝛe

Their penne and stile, thynges
to endite

None haue behynde theim, left
so greate trasure

Ne too their posteritee, haue
dooen suche delite

As thei whiche haue taken peines to wꝛite
Chronicles and actes, of eche nacion
And haue of the same, made true relacion.

By chronicles we knowe, thynges auncient
The succession of tymes, and menne
The state of policies, with their regiment
How long eche partie hath ruled, and when
And what wer all their procedynges then.
Chronicles make reporte of matters dooen
And passed many thousande yeres gooen

By Chronicles we knowe, in eche countree
What menne haue been, of prowesse marciall
What persons chiefly in actiuitee
When and betwene whom, warres haue befall
Either ciuile oꝛ els externall
How thesame haue been, conueighed & wrought
Oꝛ els appeaced, and to quiete bꝛought.

Chronicles dooe recoꝛde and testifie

Euery

To the reader.

Euen from the worldes first beginnynges
And dooe kepe in continuall memorie
The course and processe, of all maner thynges
The lifes and maners, of princes and kynges
As well Gentiles as Judaicall
As well iuste and godly, as tyrannicall.

What persones to their prince and countree
Haue been louyng true and obedient
And at all tymes of necessitee
Haue serued thesame, with good entent
And constauntly therein, haue their lifes spent
In chronicles are registred faithfully
To their immortall honoure and gloꝝ.

Contrary wise, who to their soueraignes
O: to their countrees, haue been wicked traitours
O: by collusion and craftie traignes
Haue rebelled against their gouernours
O: thesame to help, haue been slacke proctours
Are sembleably sette out by name
To their endeleffe infamy, reproche, and shame.

These thynges, and others a thousande mo
Whereby realmes, haue decaied o: growen
Chaunged in processe, and altered to and fro
Fruitefull and expedient to bee known
Are in chronicles, so plainly shoven
That thynges antique, to vs bee as apparent
As if at their dooyng, we had been present.

Wherfore Goddes woorde and holy scripture
Whiche abandoneth all maner vanitee

Yet

To the reader.

yet of chronicles admitteth the lecture
as a thyng of greate fruite and vtilitee
And as a lanterne, to the posteritee
for example, what thei ought to knowe
what waies to refuse, and what to folowe.

¶ The Bible bookes, of Iudges and kynges
Although mooste full, of high deuine mystery
And farre surmountyng all Ethnike dooynge
yet if thei bee reade, and take literally
Hath the fourme and course of plain history
What kynges serued God, and who transgressed
Whiche therby prospered, or wer oppressed.

¶ The bookes of the kynges euery where
If thynges seme touched ouer briesly
To a larger storie, dooeth vs refere
Whiche wer chronicles of eche manne truly
Sette out at length, to our memozy
Albeit those chronicles (as it is euident)
Are losse, and dooe not remain at this present.

¶ The bookes inscribed, Paralipomena
A perfect membre, and piece of the bible
Is a summary, of the kynges of Iuda
And therfore in Hebrew, it hath the title
And appellacion, of a Chronicle
The Machabees also, by my demyng
Is a plain historie, of holy wrytyng.

¶ Whiche bookes, if thei had neuer been set out,
It had been a greate main to our knowlage
A lamentable lacke, withouten doubt.

A great

To the reader.

Euen from the worldes first beginnynges
And dooe kepe in continuall memorie
The course and processe, of all maner thynges
The lifes and maners, of princes and kynges
As well Gentiles as Judaicall
As well iuste and godly, as tyrannicall.

What persones to their prince and countree
Haue been louyng true and obedient
And at all tymes of necessitee
Haue serued thesame, with good entent
And constauntly therein, haue their lifes spent
In chronicles are registred faithfully
To their immortall honoure and glory.

Contrary wise, who to their soueraignes
O: to their countrees, haue been wicked traitours
O: by collusion and craftie traigues
Haue rebelled against their gouernours
O: thesame to help, haue been slacke proctours
Are semblably sette out by name
To their endlesse infamy, reproche, and shame.

These thynges, and others a thousande mo
Whereby realmes, haue decayed o: growen
Chaunged in processe, and altered to and fro
Fruitfull and expedient to bee knownen
Are in chronicles, so plainly shoven
That thynges antique, to vs bee as apparent
As if at their dooyng, we had been present.

Wherefore Goddes woorde and holy scripture
Whiche abandoneth all maner vanitee

To the reader.

yet of chronicles admitteth the lecture
as a thyng of greate fruite and vtillitee
And as a lanterne, to the posteritee
for example, what thei ought to knowe
what waies to refuse, and what to folowe.

¶ The Bible bookes, of Iudges and kynges
Although mooste full, of high deuine mystery
And farre surmountyng all Ethnike doopnges
yet if thei bee reade, and take literally
Hath the fortune and course of plain history
What kynges serued God, and who transgressed
Whiche therby prospered, or wer oppressed.

¶ The bookes of the kynges euery where
If thynges seme touched ouer briesly
To a larger storie, dooeth vs refere
Whiche wer chronicles of eche manne truly
Sette out at length, to our memozy
Albeit those chronicles (as it is euident)
Are losse, and dooe not remain at this present.

¶ The bookes inscribed, Paralipomena
A perfect membre, and piece of the bible
Is a summary, of the kynges of Iuda
And therfore in Hebrue, it hath the title
And appellacion, of a Chronicle
The Machabees also, by my demyng
Is a plain historie, of holy writyng.

¶ Whiche bookes, if thei had neuer been set out,
It had been a greate main to our knowlage
A lamentable lacke, withouten doubt.

A great

To the reader.

A greate cause of blindnesse to our age
And to our faith, inestimable damage
But the spirite of God, the autour was
That those examples, might bee our glasse.

¶ Chronicles therefore, of true reporte
Whether of Christian realmes or no
Are mater of pleasure, fruite, and comforte
And for a thousande causes and mo
Diligently to bee attended vnto
Yea, and all maner writers of the same
Worthie laude, thanke, honour & immortall fame

¶ Neither is any one to bee reiected
That in this behalfe, hath dooen his endeuoure
For though some bee, suche as might bee corrected
Yet those that haue, therein bestowed labour
Haue mynded to profite vs to their power
Neither any is so full, but somewhere dooeth faill
Nor any so bare, but dooth somethyng auail.

¶ And what an exceeding benefite trowe ye
Is it to, eche manne, to haue cognition
Of all actes, bothe of his owne countree
And also of euery forein nacion
As if he had liued, when eche thyng was dooen
And to view the actes of antiquitee
As though he did now, presently theim see.

¶ Chroniclers therefore, I can highly commende
And among others, this autour Ihon Hardyng
Who with all his power, to this point did conted
To the vttermost extent of his learning

That

To the reader.

That Englishe men might haue vnderstandyng
Of all affaires, touchyng their owne cowntree
Euen to his daies, from old antiquitee.

And though his cunnyng, wer not so muche
As some others, no; his intelligence
Yet his good mynde, entent, and zeale was suche
That in hym lacked, no poynte of diligence
After suche bookes, as he thought of credence
Faithfully to describe, suche thynges in tyme
As happened to Englande, from tyme to tyme:

But in thynges dooen, before his owne daies
He foloweth his autours, at auenture
Without choyce or difference of the true waies
No; well assured, who wer corrupte or pure
No; whether thei wer certain or els vnure
Whether fabulous, or menne of veritee
Whether vain, or of good autoritee.

But what soeuer, in his owne tyme was dooen
That he reporteth with all fidelitee
Right so as eche thyng, ended or begonne
Without any spotte of insinceritee
Or dissimulation of the veritee
He founde all meanes, the very truth to knowe
And what he knewe certainly, that did he shewe.

From the beginning of Henry the fourth kyng
Of this realme of Englande, after the conquest
Euen to Edward the fourthes reignyng
Whiche was thre score yeres and one at the lest
He leauyng nothyng vnwritten at the largest.

That

To the reader.

That was oꝛ seemed to bee of importaunce
Touchyng peace and warre, with Scotlande oꝛ
(fraunce

¶ Unto the Scottes, he could neuer bee frende
Because he sawe them towardes Englande
False from the beginnyng, to the last ende
Neuer standyng to any league ne bande
Homage, fealtee, ne wityng of their hande
Neuer so ready to make rebellion
As when thei promised moste subieccion.

¶ That if Jhon Hardyng, bee a true man
And in this behalfe inspired with prophcie
Thei will neuer bee, but as thei wer than
False to Englande, suble, and crafte
Entendyng mischiefe, when thei shewe contrarie
Spoylers and robbers, that amende will neuer
Till our kyng shall haue made them Englishe foꝛ
(euer.

¶ Neither is there any, that euer wote
Whiche in maters of Scotlande could better skil
Noꝛ whiche their falsehod and vntruth to note
Had moze affection oꝛ better will
Oꝛ better knew water, wood, toun, vale and hill
Oꝛ was moze feruente the Scottes to persue
Who to England he knewe, would neuer bee true

¶ Neither any chronicler that euer was
Either dooeth oꝛ can, moze largely declare
Euen from Brutus, how it came to passe
That kynges of Englande the soueraignes are
And ouer Scotlande ought rule to beare
Hymself is witnesse, of their subieccion

And

To the reader.

And homage, vnder Englandes protection.

In other thynges, the tynes wer suche
That though this werke haue some spice of blind
yet is the autoure, not to bee blamed muche (nesse
for Popishe errour, that reason doubtlesse
Did all the worlde cuer go and oppresse
Therfore such thynges, we must in good part take
And pardon that fault, for the tynes sake.

Yet haue we though best, the autour to set out
Euen in suche fourme, as hymself did endite
It wer an vnquod thyng, if we should go about
To alter and chaunge, that old menne haue wryte
Secondly to vs, it maie bee greate delite
The blindnesse of those tynes to consider
From whiche hath pleased God vs to deliuer.

Finally the darkenesse of those daies to see
To the honour of our kyng dooeth redounde
To whom by Goddes help geuen it hath bee
All Popishe trumpery for to confounde
Whiche thyng, al true English hertes hath boude
Incessauntly to prae, for kyng Henry the eight
Whole godly wisdom, hath made all streight.

And forasmuche as Hardyng, his boke doth ende
With Edward the fourth, whose seruaunt he was
And to whom also, this booke he did commend
Consideryng also, the tyme and space
Beyng. lx. yeres and more, I could not let passe
So many goodly statutes and decrees
Battailes, and stories, not good to lese.

Wherefore

To the reader.

Wherefore I annexed them by continuacion
Beginnyng with Edward the fourth of that name
Then Edward the fifth, kyng by generacion
Whom Richard the third, to his immortall shame
Cruelly murdered, the story saith the same
But plaged he was, to his greate greuaunce
With a shamefull death, as Goddes vengeance

Kyng Henry the seventh next dooth ensue
Father vnto our moste dyed soueraigne lord
And of Henry the eight, some thyng that is true
I haue set furth, as wyters dooe accorde
Not in metre, but obseruyng woorde, for woorde
Myne autours, that wrote it all in prose
Reportyng the truth, without fraude or glose.

Now right gentle reader, thy parte shalbee
My good will and zele, my pain and labour
To entrepree and take in good parte and gree
Seuyng to the same, suche good wordes of fauour
As maie enforce me with all myne endeuour
The setting furth of myn werkes to take in hande
To thy solace, and honour of Englande.

The Proheme of Ihon Hardyng fol. 1.
into this his chronycle.



He mooste substaunce of power and
of myght,

Throughe age distilled, into debilitie
Of me I am this time an aged wight
And great faute haue of habilitie

This labour now should haue withheld fro me
But that my witte would haue some diligence
My ghoste to kepe from synne and insolence.

This werke is great, and lōge to byng to fine
So doeth it euer fro tyme to tyme encrease
And long hath dooen, afore Chyist did enclyne,
In Marie mother and mayden without lease
To chronycle, so men haue theim put in prease
Some in meetre, and some also in prose
Some in Latyn, full wysely dyd it close.

And some in frenche, they made for intellectuall
Of men that could no Latyn vnderstande
More sufficiently endited and protecte
By ferre then I can it now take in hande
And some in lynes two, they rhyme ay bande
But though my witte be not so curious
As theirs by ferre to make it glorious:

Yet wyl I vse, the symple witte I haue
To your pleasure and consolacion
Moste noble lord and pryncce, so God me saue
That in chronycles hath delectacion
Though it be farre aboue myne estimacion
Into balade I wyl it now translate

The Prohem.

Right in this forme wyth all myne estimate.

Thy Lorde of Yorke vnto your sapience
I wyll remembze a notabiltee
Of youre elders rule and regymence
That had this lande of olde pzyorptee
Which ruled wer after their dignitee
In vertue digne by royall gouernaunce
And in vice ruled and misgouernaunce.

By which knowlage your discrete sapience
All hyce euermoze destoye maye and reproue
By vertuous and blessedfull diligence
And vertue loue, that maye not ought greue
Howe ye shall rule your subiectes while ye lyue
In lawe and peace and all tranquyllitee
Which been the floures of all regalytee.

Edward the thyrde, that was kyng of this land
By right tytyle, and very iust discent
And kyng of fraunce as I can vnderstande
By his mother quene Isabell the gent
Sister and heyre of Charles by hole entent
For Charles dyed without any chylde
The right discent of his mother milde.

Numeri.
xxii.

Why should y french forbarte you of your right
Sith God of heauen, in libzo Numeri
Gaue to Moyses this lawe, that nowe is light
In the Chapiter seuen and twenty
By these wordes the doughter ryghtfully
Of Salphaat, ask the fathers heritage
Geue thein in possession among the colynage.

Sal-
phaat.

This

This kyng Edward reigning in his daies
 In merctall actes, triumphe and victoꝝ
 Aboue all pꝛinces famed was alwaies
 Five soonnes had, the woꝛlde out to crie
 There were no suche of one patrimonie
 Edward the pꝛince and eldest soonne of age
 Who gat Richard, that had the heiritage

Leonell next boꝛe, after in Antwerpe
 In Brabant lande, that wedded vnto his wife
 Charles daughter of Ulster as mēne dooe karpe
 And begatte on her Philip his daughter rife
 And also his heire, whom he loued as his life
 Whom erle Edmonde of Marche the Moxtimer
 Wedded to his wife and begat the erle Roger.

Edward the thirde had five soonnes.	{	Edward pꝛince.
		Leonell.
		Jhon duke of Lancastre.
		Edmonde duke of York.
		Thomas of Woodstocke duke of Gloucestre.

That erle was after of Marche and of Ulster
 With wilde Irish that slain wer in Irelande
 Who had a soonne, erle Emonde Moxtimer
 That died without issue I vnderstande
 To whom dame Anne, his sister, vnto his lande
 Was verie heire, whō the erle of Cambridge wed
 And gatte of her your self as I haue red

Why should ye not then bee verie heire
 Of all her lande and eke of all her right
 Sith Jesu Christs of Jude lande so feire

The Prohemie.

By vertie meane of his mother Mary bright
To bee kyng, claimed title and right
And so did name hymself kyng of Jewes
So by your mother, the right to you accrewes.

After Lionell that was duke of Clarence
And of Ulster the erle was, by his wife
And of Italy, for his greates excellence
Kyng Would haue been, without any strife
Of all Europe, without comparatife
The royall lande, and to his espousaile
The dukes doughter of Melain without faile.

Tho duke
of Lanc
stere born
in Gaunt.

Thon bozne at Gaunte, of Flaunders chief citee
The thirde soonne was, of good kyng Edward
That wedded dame Blaunch, full of feminitee
Duke Henries doughter and heire afterwarde
Of Lancastre, by lawe and kynde and forwarde
Who gat and bare the fourth kyng Henry
That kyng Richard deposed wrongfully.

Henry
fourth.

Henry
fif. h.

Who gat Henry the fifth like conqueroure
Of Normandy, and mikill parte of Fraunce
That excelled bothe kyng and emperoure
In marriall actes, by his gouernaunce
Who gat Henry the sixte at Godes pleasaunce
Of suche symplenesse and disposicion
As menne mate se by his discrecion.

Henry the
sixte.

For when Henry the fourth first was crouned
Many a wise man, saied then full commenly
The thirde heire should not sope but bee uncrou-
And deposed of all regaltee

(ned
To

To this reason thei dyd there wyttes applye
Of euell wotten good, the thirde should not enioyse
Of longe agone, it hath bene a common voyce

Howe the maker of thys booke sayeth hys aduysse in breste for
the duke of yorke.

O my lord of yorke, God hath prouyde
In thys for you, as men saye commonly
So that no slouth you from hys grace deuyde
But take it as he hath it sente manly
And rule well now ye haue the remedy
But neretheles, let every man haue the ryght
Both frend and foe, it may increase your myghte

Create well Percy of marches lyne dyscended
To helpe your ryght with myght and fortifie
By tender meanes to holde hym well contented
Remembryng hym by wytte and policie
Howe by processe of tyme and destenie
Your right mighte all bene his, as nowe is yours
Through gods might, make the your successours

Edmonde was then the. iiii. sonne, at Langlay
Bozne, as knowe it was well in the lande
A noble pryncce after, as men myght say
At battayle of Otway, he fought soze with his had
And Jhon of Gaunte his brother, I vnderstande
That fought ful soze, for Jhon of Moutfortright
Agayne Charles of Blois a manly knyght.

Edmond
duke of
yorke.

This Edmond was after duke of yorke create
And had a sonne that Edward had to name
Whom kynge Richarde made to be denomyne
In all his wyttes exalting hys fame

a. iiii. kynge

The Prologue

Kyng Boxtyngeale, his father yet at hame
Luyng in age I trawe of. lxxx. yere
A fayre person, as a manne myghte se any where.

Thomas **T**homas Woodstoke, the. v. sonne in dede
of Wood- Duke of Gloucester, that tyme made and create
Rock Duke By kyng Richard murdered whom for his med
of Glou- Kyng Henry quit with deathe preordinate
cester By Goddes dome and sentence approbate
Mathew Who sleeth, so shall he be slayne by his sentence
xxvii. Well moze murder which asketh ay vengeance.

Who laye afoze Paris, a moneth dape
Wyth hoost roall wythout any battayle
Of all enemyes moost dyled he was alwaye
And Scottes most hum dyled without anye fayle
For as thei trowed by their owne rebafaille
Of prophecies he shoulde their lande conquere
And make the kyng to Englande homegre

Edward **N**ow haue I made vnto your owne knowlege
prynce of A remeinbraunce of Edwardes sonnes fyue
Wales & Your cramplere to geue you a corage
eldest son So noble princes, I trowe were none alpye
of kyng After my wytte as I can dyscryue
Edward The eldest sonne, whose lyfe I haue lefte oute
the. iii. Who that in Fraunce and all landes was mooste

(Doubt
Of the ryght and tydes that my lordes of pothe haue to
Fraunce & Spayne wyth Boxtyngeale and other landes by
ponde the sea, Jerusalem and other landes.

At battayle of Poitiers tooke kyng Ihou
With greate honour triumphe and byctory

By mercypall actes, and verteous lyfe alone
 And in Spaine, as made is memoize
 The kyng Petro, by knightly victorie
 To his kyngdome, he dyd restore again
 By his brother put out, with much pain

The appoyntments betwixte duke Ihon and duke Ed-
 munde, who shoulde be kyng of Castyle and Lyon, & what
 the maker of thys booke sawe & red at London, to sye Roberts
 Amfrewill then lord Amfrewill.

This kyng Petro to geue hym to his mede
 Had nothyng elles but daughters two full fayre
 Whiche he betooke, to that pryncce in dede
 For his wages, for cause they were his heyre
 With whom he dyd, to Englande so repayre
 And Constance wedde, vnto hys brother Ihon
 Edmunde his brother, the younger had anone

Dame Isabell, the younger hyghte by name
 Betwene these brethren, was appoyntment
 The first heire male, whiche of the sisters came
 The kyng shoulde been, and haue the regiment
 To you my lord of Yorke, thys doth appent
 For your vncle Edward, was fyrst heyre male
 To whom your father, was heire without faile

Duke of
 Yorke.

So kyng of Spaine, and also of Portyngale
 Ye shoulde now be, by line of bloodde dyscende
 By couenaunt also and appoyntment whole
 As I haue sene of it the munimente
 Under seale wyrtten, in all entente
 Whych your vncle, to my lord Amfrewill
 At London shewed, whych I red that whyle

a. iiii.

For

The Prohemie.

For Spayne & Portyngale beare the renoume
And cominen name as I haue herde expressed
Both to the realmes of Castyll and Lyon
And so the kyng of Spayne hath aye adressed
His royall stile in wytyng well impressed
Kyng of Castill and also of Lyon,
Accompted both so for his region.

The tytle of the kynges of Englande
By consequens to Wales and Scotlande
For they perteyne, as ye maye vnderstande
Of auncient tyme, to the crowne of Englande
By papall bull, ye haue the right to Irelande,
Galcowe, Daitowe and Normandy
Dountyf, Sebuile, Saunrie and Sauntignye.

And all the lande beyonde the charente
Of Dangolesme, Dangolismoy & Lurze yne
Of Caoure, Caourenô, Poridoz & Pirygût coultre
Of Rodis, Ronegeauis, Dagô, Dagenoise & fine
Charbe, Wigoz & Gaure should to you enclyne,
With all the fraunchyses and all souerayntee
As hath the kyng of Fraunce in his degree.

Not that I Jhon Hardyng maker of this booke, deliuered
to kyng Henry the sixte the copie of the treatie of this land
as kyng Edward the thyrde treated and had them after
the battayle of Poitiers.

Calys & Marke, Colne, Hamps, Oye & Wale,
Sandegate & Gypsongs, with all the whole coultre
With all the landes & townes betwene them all
With all fraunchyses and royall souerayntie

All those of right be yours in propertie
 What by treat and what by very right
 As kyng Edward theim had of mykyl might.

To Jerusalem, I saye ye haue great right
 for erle Gessraye, that hight Plantagenet
 Of Aungeoy erle, a pynce of passyng might
 The eldest sonne to Fouke, and first begette
 kyng of Jerusalem by his wife dewly sette
 whose sonne Gessraye foresaid gatte on his wife
 Henry the seconde that was knowen full ryse.

Yet haue ye moze fro Bawdewyn Baralticus
 kyng afterwarde, to thesame kyng Henry
 The crowne sente and his banner precious
 As verpe heyze of whole auncestrie
 Descente of bloude by title lynyally
 from Godfray Boleyn and Robert Curthose
 That kynges wer therof and chose.

Godfray
 Boleyn.
 Robert cur
 those.

He sente hym also the Sepulture keyes
 Kelygnyng wholly vnto hym his right
 for to defende the lande from Sarizenes
 for he was sicke and had therto no might
 And all the lande, destroyed was to sight
 By the Soudyan to great lamentacion
 Of Goddes people, and all Chyristen nacion.

He sent hym also the keyes of Dauids towre
 With Heracle, that of Jerusalem
 Was Patriarke and greatest of honour
 And with templers, which brought hym into this
 Beschyng hym he would the susteine (realme
 full

The Prohem.

Full humbly askyng supportacion
For the cytee and chrysten consolacion.

All these titles, the chzonicles can recozde
If they be sene by good delyberacion
Many of them to these full well accorde
As I haue sene wyth great dilectacion
By clarkes wyrtten for our informacion
As in olde feldes, coynes freshe and grene grewe
So of olde bookes commeth our connyng newe

Out of old
bookes com-
meth newe
knowledge.

Of thys I wyll nowe sease and forth procede
To my matter, where fyrste I beganne
To chzonicles of thys lande for worthihed
To remember in balade as I canne
To that intent to please both god and manne
And eke to please good feminitee
Of my lady your wyfe dame Cecelie

The dukes
wyfe named
Cecely.

That in latin hath lytle intellect
To vnderstande the greate nobilitee
Of thys ylike lande of whiche she is electe
Tyme commyng lyke to haue the soueraintee
Under your rule as shoulde femynitee
Whycher if it might haue pleased her ladishippe
My herte will reioyse of her inwarde gladshippe.

For well I wote your great intellygence
That in latyn hathe good inspection
Wyll pleased be of your hygh sapience
My lady that is vnder your protection
Your heyre also may rede at their election
Whiche if it may please your nobilitee

Of my labour I would reioysed bee.

Also for your heyres and for youre successours
In tyme commyng to haue a clere knowledge
Howe of thys realme the noble gouernours
Haue kept wyth helpe of Baronage
In victoꝝye, triumphe and surplusage
With Bꝛute it wanne in his pꝛoritee
It hath bene kept in worthy dignitee

But how this ysle enbrased with thys see
Vnedefyed was knowne first and founde
That Albion was named of properte
Of dame Albion that fyrst therein had grounde
And after long, howe Bꝛute therof was crowned
That of hys owne name called it Bꝛytayne
And builded it, where all befoꝝe was playne

20 The ende of the Pyrhane.

Here begynneth the Chronycle of Ihon Hardyng.

The fyrst Chapiter.

Of the. xxx. susters that fyrste inhabyted thys lande and named it Albyon, that now is Englande Wales and Scotlande.

Kyng Dioclesian and
Albyne his wyfe.



The whyle that Troy was reig
nyng in his might
In Grece there was a kyng
ryght excellent
That Dioclesian, some booke
sayeth that he hight
And of Surraue that had the
regiment

Dame Albyne highte his wyfe, a lady gente
Who daughters had. xxx. wedded to there degree
To kynges all of great nobyltee.

Whiche fell in pryde, and hys elacion
Thynkyng to be in no subteccion
Of husbandes moze, ne dominacion
But only by a fell coniection
Toke hole purpose and full affeccion
To kyll their lordes slepyng sodaynly
Soueraynes to be, and lyue all seuerally.

The second Chapiter.

Note that women desyre of all thynges soueraynte, and to my
concepte moze in thys lande then in anye other, for they haue it
of the nature of the sayd susters.

The yongest suster, the matter all dyscured
To her husbande, and to her father gente
For whiche she was of al that dede assured
But thei were put in exile by iudgement

So rightfull wer the princes of there entente
Thei iudged theim to bee putte in the see
In shippe to passe echeone fro there countree

As fortune woude, to make there auenture
Whiche by processe, with streames to and fro
And tempestes greate, and soze disauenture
Of sickenes greate and mikell other woo
And mooste of all, thei knewe not wether to goo
Till at the laste thei came vnto this isle
That then was waste, as chzonicles dooe compile

This chro-
nicle is not
true.

But I dare saie, this chzonicle is not trewe,
for in that ylike tyme, in Surraie was no kyng
He afterwarde, to tyme that Saull grewe
He no kyng was in Surraie euer liupng
That had that name, for Saull was y first kyng
Of Surraie realme, at the ende of the thirde age
In Samuels tyme, the prophete wise and sage

Saull was
the firste
kyng in the
thirde age.

The.iii. Chapter.

How that Hughe de Genests a Romain historiographer
declareth in his chzonicle all the kyngdomes of the worlde, &
all the names of suche kynges as ruled in theim, from Noes
floude vnto the birthe of Christ. In whiche chzonicle the fore-
said Hughe writeth, that Danais kyng of the Grekes had .l.
doughters and that Egistus his brother kyng of Egipte had
as many soones that married together, whiche doughtres kil-
led their owne husbandes, & for that cause wer banished, & sat-
tyng on the sea wer driuen vnto a certain isle, whiche, Albina
beyng y eldest suster of theim named accordyng to her name
Albion, and Brute after that called it accordyng to his name
Brytam.

Ne afore Brute, was in no realme y name,
No kyng on lue, that hight ne called so
But of Arginos the kyng of full hie fame
Had

Of the .xxx. sisters.

Had daughters fifty, whole name was Danao
The kyng of Egypte, his brother Egisto
Had soonnes also fifty together weade
In chyonicles of olde as I haue reade

Whiche daughters, slew their husbandes ech.
Long befoze Bzute was of his mother boze (one
So finde I by these women alone
And by these soonnes thus slain befoze
The chyonicle true, in their persones moze
Then in the daughters of Dioclesian
Were in no lande that tyme so hight kyng none

So in the pere of Moth iudge of Israell
These ladies here landed full weery and soze
Seuenty and twoo as Hugh dooeth tell
Whiche was I saie an hundred pere afoze
That Bzute came into this lande and moze
By fwe peares trulpy, and well accompted
Of peres olde so muche moze amounted

Also in Surraie there was no kyng befoze
Kyng Alexaunder dedde and expired
For Seleucius was the first kyng thoz
By all chyonicles that I haue enquired
That chyonicle should not bee desired
Seyng that it is not true ne autenticke
By no chyonicle vnto the trueth ought like

This the
wethe that
our chyon
icle is false
in the bee.

I dare well saie he sawe neuer Hugh Genesis
Ne he reade neuer the chyonicles of Surry
Of Israell Jude ne of Egipcus
Of Argiuos, of Athenes, ne Thessaly

Of

Of Macedon, Cesile, ne of Assyry,
 Of Lacedemon, of Lyde, ne yet of Latyn,
 Of Affricque, of Alis, ne yet of Babelyn.

Of Perce, ne Meede, Italye, ne Albany,
 Of kynge Alexander, ne of his successors
 That afore tyme reigned diuersly
 In diuerse realmes, citees castelles and toures
 Of Romany, ne of state of Emperours
 For had he sene all these and their stozies
 Of Dioclesian, he would make no memoizles:

The. iiii. Chapiter.

Howe these ladies had this Isle in the yere of Noth. lxxii. in
 the thirde age of the world, and she called it Albion of her name
 and tooke feautie and seruice of theim all, as souerayne ladye
 of this Isle, that now is Englande, Scotlande and Wales,
 as Hugh Genesis wyrteth in his Dyaloge.

These ladies so ay dwelling in this Isle
 The yeres of Noth seuentie and two
 no leeg.

Dame Albyne was, as men can copile
 The eldeste sister, and thoughte she
 would encrees

hir selfe aboue theim all vpon the dees
 Sittynge, she tooke feautie, then of theim all
 Crewe to her to bee, for ought that might befall.

And then she gaue this Isle a propre name
 Of Albion, out of hir name as chief
 And called it so, from thens forwarde thesame
 She ordained theim bowes to their relief
 Arwes & boltes and bowstrynges made in byel
 To slea the bere, the Bull and also the Boze
 The Beer and bydes, that wer therein befoze.

Of the .xxx. sisters.

With pitfalles great, & trappes thei did begyle
The beastes and byrdes to theyr sustenaunce
They gatte eche daye with nettes and other wyle
The fishe in stagnes and waters sufficiounce
Eche daye they made wyttie cheuesounce
To helpe theim selfe at their necessitee
For hungre, that they should not perished bee.

The .v. Chapter.

Howe spyrites gatte Stauntes vpo the ladies, which gatte
other Stauntes within this land. Before Brute came were
.xii. M. Stauntes, what in this lade that now is Englande
and the north that now is Scotlande, and the west & now
is Wales, as the Scotte Marston sayeth in his dialogue.

These ladies with meate & drynke replete
And of nature reuigured corporally
And all there care forgette and vnder fete
Had great desyre to playe theim womanly
As women yet wyl do full lounyngly
For to fulfull the werke of womanhed
And byng forth frute, the land to rule and led.

So wer they tempted with inwarde meditacio
And bayne gloze within theyr hertes implied
To haue conforste of mennes consolacion
And knewe nothyng, howe of them to prouyde
But inwardly theim they glorified
So hote that spyrites in mannes forme
Laye by theim their desyres to performe.

So durynge forth in suche lust and delpte
With nature of theimselfe and feminacion
The spyrites gatte children, & wer Stauntes tyte
Of theim throughe their owne pmaginacion

By

By feruente herte, moued with temptacion
Thus gat thei then greate Grautes full of might
Within shorthe tyme that were long and myght.

The. vi. Chapter.

¶ How the fathers laie by their daughters, the brethern by
their sisters, the soonnes by their mothers & every kinde
to other, as Hugh Genesis reporteth in his chronicles.

The fathers the by their daughters laie
No other ne sister again it not replied
Of childer fell soones & daughters ay
Thei gat eche daie and strongly multi-
Of theim this isle then was sore fortified (plied
So strong then was this generacion
None durste it noye for their malignacion.

¶ Among theim fell so greate unkyndenesse
Accordyng right well to their life inordinate
That echone of theim did other oppresse
That none of theim was left on liue of that estate
Of twelue thousande within a litle date
Whose pride fell afore the incarnation
Twelue hundred yere, by verie computacion.

¶ But Bartholomew de proprietatibus rerum
saith how this isle of Albion had name
Of the sea bankes full white all oʒ sum
That circuite the isle as shippes came
fro ferrome sene, as thei through the sea fame
Sailed by and by for ripen and roches white
To shipmen were greate gladnesse and delite.

¶ But Marian saith the chronicle to se we
b That

Albaine, why it was so called.

That dame Albion was the first that named it so
Bothe twoo might bee together clere and trewe
That shippes so sailyng to and froo
And at her commyng thei called so bothe twoo
And so bothe wates maie bee right sure & trewe
From whiche there will no chzonicle it renewe

Brutus.

Of this now will I sease and saie no moze
To time come est þ Brute hath wonne this lande
And slain theim all in battaill foughten soze
But now of Brutus ye shall well vnderstande
How that he did in Grece and tooke on hande
And of what bloodde he came by clere discente
And how in Grece he had greate regimete.

And how he gatte this isle by his pꝛowesse
And called it by name the isle of Brytain
And of his name for their worthynesse
He called his menne Brytaines aie forth certain
That Troyans were afoze not to laim
To whiche I pꝛaie the holy Trinitee
That is one God in persones thye:

The oraci
on of þ all-
ghoure for
þ makyng
of this bo-
ke.

Of help and spede to byyng this booke to ende
For symple is my witte of all science
Of rethorike as yet neuer I kende
And symple am of all intelligence
Yet will I not so hurte my conscience
On olde goddes to muse oꝝ to call
That false were euer and euer so will bee fall.

The na-
mes of false
goddes.

Of Saturnus ne yet of Mars ne yet of Venus
Of Iubiter of Mars ne yet of Venus

Of Dallas ne of Mynerue ne Megary
 Ne of Phebus Ceres ne of Geneus
 Of Cuppde ne yet of Thilophonous
 Dyan Bacchus ne of Cerbery
 All these I wyll refuse nowe and desye.

And to the God in heauen, I praye in maiestie
 My wytte to enforce with myght and sapience
 With language such as may ought pleasaunt be
 To your pleasaunce and noble excellence
 For I am bare and naked of eloquence
 By insufficiencye and all symplecitye
 To ende this booke as were necessitye.

The. vii. Chapter.

Howe Brute conquered Albion and called it Brit-
 tayne of his owne name, that nowe is Englad, Wal-
 les and Scorlande, and the armes of Brute in which
 he was clade first whē he entred this yle, after Ge- The ar-
 nesis the Italyan Chronyler, were of Bowles two mrs of
 Lions crowne of golde Rampant & combattaunt. Brute.

A S chronicles telleth & make notificacion Brutus.
 Whoso theim wel shal know & vnderstand
 Of what kynne, blood and generacion
 Brutus first came, that conquered this lande
 It to remembre, I haue nowe take on hande
 Through all olde stozies, by philosophers cōpiled
 In balade thus it shall be made and fylled

As out of olde feldes newe come groweth eche
 Of olde bores by clerkes newe approued (yete
 Olde knightes actes to mynstrelles tongue stere
 The newe corage of yonge knightes to be moued
 b it Where

Brute.

Out of old bookes cometh newe wisdom. Wherfore me thsketh, old thinges shuld be loued
 Sith olde bokes maketh young wittes wyse
 Disposed well with vertues exercyse.

Adam. At olde Adam therfore I wyll begyn
 Who was I fynde, the first olde creature
 Conueyng downe lypally in kyn
 As discent in byrth and in gendure
 Nerte vnto Brute, as mencion maketh scripture
 I shall reporte, as God wyll please to lede
 My symple ghoste with language it to fede.

**The gene-
racyon of
Brute.** For well I wote, without his suppoztacion
 For to reporte his very genealogye
 Howe he by discent in all generacion
 From Adam downe to Troyane auncetpe
 Gotten and bozne certeyne in Italye
 Full herde it is, although I would full sayne
 So symple be my spyzites and my bzayne.

**Adam.
Seth.
Enos.** Of Adam whiche was the fyrst creature
 Came Seth forsoth and Seth gat Enos than
 And Enos gatte afterwarde full sure
Canayn. A sonne that hight and called was Canayn
Helaliel. Who gatte Helaliel, as scripture tell can
Jareth. Who gatte Jareth, of whom Enoke came
Enoke. That Matufale gatte of mykill fame.
Matufale.

Lamech. Matufale gatte Lameke, who Noe gatte
Noe. And Noe Japhet, who gatte Cichym than
Japheth. That Cipre gatte, after whom Cipres hatte
Cichym. Cipre gatte Crete, that the yle of Crete began
Cipre. A famouse and a ryght notable man
Crete.

And

And Crete gatte a sonne hight Cely
Who gat Saturne a wyse man and a wyttie

Ely
Saturne

Of whom came then Iubiter of frigy
Whiche is Turky wherin Tropes citee
In honour stood and in greate victorie
And Iubiter gat Dardanus no lee
That of fryg is great felicitie
So reigned kynge greatly magnified

Iubiter

Dardanus

Of whome came so hys sonne Critonus
Who gat a sonne that fyrst Trope edelyed
That Tropes hight of whom came kynge Iliis
That Iliis made a palyce of great pryde
Whiche for passyng other was both long a wyde
Where Hercules slough kynge Lamadone
And led awaye the ropalles of the towne

Critonus

Troplus,

Ilys

Ilyon

Hercules,

Lamadone

Lamedone gat the kyng Priamus
Who made agayne his palais Iliis
And Tropes citee also more glorious
Then thei were befoze their subuercion
And ropall wythout peruercion
In ioye and myyth thei stode many a yere
And Achilles with him his brother dere

Priamus

Achilles
was Prya-
mus bro-
ther,

The. viii. Chapiter.

A short lamentacion of the maker, for that kyng Lamedon
lost hys lyfe and hys estate that myghte haue stonde in peace
and suretye, for a lytle souccoure of Iasone, in hys voyage



Lamedon of Trope, that bare the crowne
What fortune droue the, to do Iasone an
kyndnes

b.iii. wher

Write

Where he to paye, was so redye and botome
For his vitayle that came in by distresse
Of tempest great, standyng in heuinesse
Hym for to dyue out of the region
And not refreshe hym at his requisicion

Lamedon:
showed to
In one vn-
kindnes,

Whiche was the cause after of thy heuines
When he the sloughe and destroyed all the cytee
And cast doune all thy might and great noblenes
With lytle thyng that saued myghte haue bee
O good Lorde: why shoulde thy royall dygnities
To straungers shewe that cruell unkindnes
That to thy lande purposed no dystres

Hector,
Troilus
Dephebus
Helenus, &
Paris cam
of priamus

Of Pryamus came Hector and Troilus
Dephebus Helenus and Paris
Of royall bloodde and dukes full gloxious
Of excellence and greatest of Empryse
Whiche were all slayne by fortunes excercyse
At the syege of Troie knyghtly in the defence
In mercyall actes as prynces of excellence

Greekes,

The palayes greate and the noble citee
By Grekes sieged, longe and many a yere
Was wonne at laste and waste as inenne yet see
This kyng & quene both two were slayne in feere
Where Anchises and Eneas his sonne were
And Ascanus the sonne of Eneas
Escaped awaye and on the sea byd passe

Anchyses
Eneas, &
Ascanus,

The.xi. Chapter

Howe Eneas cryed out of Troie came to Cecyle and to
Affryke to the cytee of Carthage, and frome thence to Italye,
and there was made kyng of Tyskayne and of Latene,

And



Ad in Ciele thei after did arise
 Where Anchises died & was dispenste.
 Eneas & his soone to the sea gan dzeue
 With shippes twelue to Italy had thei Eneas.
 But winde theim droue, again there entere (meute
 Into Affrique, where for Eneas sake
 Thei welcomed wer and worthely vptake.

From thence he tooke the sea again
 And landed then in Italia
 In Tibze mouthe with trauaill and with pain
 Where the towne and porte is of hostia
 Where by the God he bidden was to ga
 To helpe the kyng Euandze in his right
 For after hym the God that lande hym hight.

Euandze.

To whom he went as hym was prophetic
 And welcome was into Italy
 Of kyng Euandze greatest magnified
 For his wisdoms fame and chivalry
 For his worshippe and for his auncetry
 He gaue hym then worshippe and riches
 And golde enough right of his worthynes.

Kyng Euandze made warre on kyng Latene
 In whole defence Turnus kyng of Tuskain
 Came, with greate hoste of Tuskalayns
 Again Euandze, where Turnus then was slain
 Eneas did that deede and that dectain
 With mighty strokes courage and cheualrous
 He wan the felde in battaill fortunous.

Latene.
 Turnus.

Betweene Euandze so and the kyng Latene
 v m. The

Brute.

The peace he made, reste and concordance
And kyng Latens doughter that hight Labine
Wedded to his wife, by verie good accordaunce
Betwene theim forth was no more disordance
And Eneas kyng was made of Tuskain
Of whiche the kyng Euandze was full fain.

ISone after then died the kyng Latene
Whose realme Eneas had also in peace
In whiche he made a castell faire and lyne
Labinion it hight without leace
His wiues name to worshippe and encrease
Of whom he gatte a soonne, and died afoze
That he was brought into this worlde and boze

This worthy prince, kyng Eneas mortally
Ended his life that was of high prowesse
Where so God will to reigne eternally
Within the house of fame, where as I gesse
Where knightes fell of noble worthynesse
That more desired in armes to haue a fame
Then bee the beste in deede, and bare no name.

The .x. Chapter.

Of the house of fame where knightes bee rewarded after the
merites in armes by Mars the god of armes some translate
with hircheues of pleasaunce and some with rynges and
ouches, their sepulture in the felde of pitee by beute gates
haue bee verie louers of their louers ladies and neuer paine
les but ate graces.

Siluius.

A. anius.

At then his soonne Siluius Posthumus
New borne so young and tendre of age
Kyng of this lande was made Ascanius
His brother dere that ruled his heritage
And peaceably kepte out of all seruage.

Twente

Twentie winter and eyght full mannely
And gat a soonne that called was Silur

Whiche Siluius gat and generate
His soonne Brutus on Crensa labius nece
All pryvillie by him de birgynite
And soze besought by his subtilties
And somewhat of her womanly peties
That tendred hym of good feminetee
As womanhod would of all humplitee

Siluius &
father of
Brutus.

So after soone, the fate of death would so
That passe awaye must nede Ascanius
He gaue his brother Siluius posthumus tho
His heritage and ryches plenteous
But Brutus waxed echedaye full beauteous
And in manhode well moze in all vertue
Was none hym lyke in no place that men knewe.

The prayse
of Brute

Of. x. yere when he was comen to age
At huntynge as he shot at a deere
He slugh his father to his great dammage
And at his byrth as sayeth the chronicler
His mother dyed as written is full clere
Inone after as he was of her boze
fo; whiche two causes his hert was wouder soze

Holme Bru
tis slawe
bys father.

Seyng Iuly this false fortunite
The sozoes greate in hym so multiplied
That there fo; shame of his fortunitee
In no wyse would he no lenger dwell ne hyde
But into Grece bys sozowes fo; to hyde
He went anone where exiles wer of Troye

Whose

Write

Whose sorowes great he leched all with lope

Helenus.
Pylamus
Anchyses
C Sir Helenus was Pylamus sonne of Troy
And Anchyses an olde worthy knyght
And. vi. That of hym had great lope
Of gentlmen of Troye exyled for ryght
That him besought with instaunce daye & night
To helpe them out of their great heped sorowe
In whiche they laye oppressed euen and moze.

Pandras.
C For whych he wrote his letter in that tyde
To kyng Pandras that kyng was of that lande
Requyring hym to let him passe and ryde
Freely, where so thei would wpythouten bande
For whych the kyng with powre tooke on hand
To syege Brutus within his castell fayre
To whom Troyans strongly gan repayre.

Brutus.
Anacletus
C To Brutus so, to helpe them at there myghte
Who then anone sent for Anacletus
Hys prysoner, whom he had taken ryght
Unto the hoste to tell them howe Antigonus
Laye in the wood stollen away frome Brutus
Antigon. Who went to them, that nexte the wood then laye
And bad them come and rescowe hym o: daye.

Whiche warde so brake and to the wood can ride
Brutus wyth that wyth all his hole power
There brake in and would no longer abyde
But slough the Grekes and toke the kyng in fer
But than as sayth the bette chronicler
No lenger would he there abyde ne dwell
But furthermoze as chronyclers doth tell

Wyth

With kyng Pandras, he made hys appoynt- Pandras
 hym to deliuer, on thys condicion (inent
 To wedde his daughter, by wyll and assent
 Dame Innogen and myppes of hys region
 With vitaille and rychesse, to wyn land and toune
 For there he would, no longer make sojourne
 But wyth Tropans, to their land attourne.

All these promysces and hole appoyntmente
 fulfulled and spedde, Bute wyth his wyfe
 So sailed furth throughe the Grekysh oriente
 To marptaine, and two pylers ganne he dyue
 That Hercules also wyth busy lyue
 To tyme he came to an olde cytee
 No creature therin, that tyme coude se

The pyl-
 lers that
 Hercules
 made of
 brasse.

But a goddas, merne called Diane
 That coude declare, and expounde destinyne
 To whome Bute anone went by alone
 And lape afoze her, there full deuoutely
 Wyth candell byennynge, and wyth cceremonte
 Besekynge her of soccour and grace
 Where that he myght her worship, in some place.

Diane the
 Goddas.

With his Tropans, therin for to abyde
 And inherite, to whom then sailed Diane
 By younde al Gaille, an ylle ful longe and wyde
 Enclosed whole, wythin the occyane
 With Giantes kepte is desteyned, the alaane
 And thy Tropans, to haue and enhabite
 Therin to dwell, for euermore and enherite

So sailyng furth, by Columeys of Hercules

which

Cornelius
captain of
the Troians

Whiche bene of brasse, by Hercules ther set
For when he came into the sea no lees
Of Spayne, where that his meny Troians met
Of their lynage as it was to their det
Thei came wpyth hym echeone by one accorde
Cornelius their capitain was and lorde

The. xi. Chapter.

Howe Brutus came from Grece into Albion, and named
it Brytain and howe he arrived at Cornesse in Deuynshyre



He sayled so forth by the sea Aquitain
Where that he arrived that now is
Guyan lande
And sleugh the buckes of which thei
were full fayne

Cornelius,

The bere and the boze and hartes al that thei fad
Without lycence or yet any warrand
Wherfore Guffor kyng of the lande ful fell
With Troians faught, Forine there bare the bel

Brute tooke shyppe and arrived in Albion
Where Diane saied, shoulde bene his habitacion
And when he came the coastes of it vpon
He was full glad and made great exultacion
Reioysed hyghly of his fortunacion
In armes of Troie couered and well arrayed
Of which Troians were full well apied

The armes
of Brutus,

He bare of goules two lyons of golde
Countre Rampant wpyth golde onely crouned
Which kynges of Troy in battail bare ful bolde
To whiche fro Troy was destroyed & confounded
Their childzen slain, the next heyre was he found
And in tho armes thys ysle he dyd conquere

As Marrian sayeth the very chronicler.

Marrian
chronicler.

At Totnesse so this Butus did arryue
Corneus also, and all their compaignie
The grauntes also he sleugh downe belue
Throughe all the lande in battaile manly
And left no mo but Gogmagog onely
In all this Isle, so had he theim destroyed
Whom in prison he kepte and anoyed.

Corneus

Gogma-
gog.

The. xii. Chapter.

Howe Corneus was killed with Gogmagog the glaunt
of the Isle, and sleugh hym.

But for he would knowe al his resistes
What he might do more the Corneus
He made them both do their sufficiencye
In all wastleyng whiche was moost
rigorous

And to defende o; sawte moost curious
On the sea banke, afoze Butus they mette
Where by accorde the daye and place was sette

This Gogmagog so thrauste Corneus
That ribbes thre were broken in his syde
Corneus then of might full laborius
Thought he would sone reuenge that tyde
With that he stode and sette his leggues wyde
And gatte hym bp betwene his armes faste
And ouer the roche into the sea hym caste.

Which place hight yet Gogmagoges saute
Because he leped there from Corneus
All yf it were nothyng in his defaute

But

Brute.

Corpu.

But by the might of Corpn, full bigorous
Who was alway in battayll fortunous
For whiche Brutus had hym in great deyntee
And gaue hym aye worshippe and dignitee.

This Brutus, thus was kyng in regalitee
And after his name, he called this Isle Briteyn,
And all his men, by that same egalitee
He called Briteynes, as chronicles all saie
Of whiche they all were full glad and saie
To Corneus he gaue to his auaile
Comens. The duchie whole, and lande of cornewayle.

The. xiii. Chapiter.

London.

Howe he buylded the cite of Troynouaunt, that
nowe is called London.

So was the name, of this plike Albion
All sette on side, in kalandes of achaunge
And putte awaye with grete confusion
And Briteyn hight, so furth by newe eschaunge
Briteyne. After Brutus, that slewe these Giautes straunge
And wanne this Isle, by his magnificence
In whiche he dwelled long tyme in excellence.

The citee great, of Troynouaunt so saye
He buylded then on Thamys for his delite
Unto þ north, for his dwelling & for his moste re:
Whiche is to saie in our language perfect (paye
Newe Troie, in bookes as I can nowe endite
And nouell Troie, in frenche incomperable
Of Briteyne, a citie moste profytable.

This Briteyne is in length eyght. C. myle

fro

fro Monsehole, that is Cornwaile right
 unto the northende of Catenes, to compile
 And also in bredth, from saint Dauid that hight
 To Yarmoth, that in Norffolke, is by sight
 Two hundred myle, accompted well and clene
 Is autours sake, this isle dooeth whole contain.

The length & bredth
 of the
 isle of Briteyne.

The. xliii. Chapter.

How Brute sette his lawes and peace of Trope in
 this isle without whiche a kyng is no better then
 his subiecte or his liege manne,

In whiche through out, his peace and
 lawe he sette
 Whiche been the floures of all regalite
 Without whiche, but if thei. ii. be mette
 There maie no prince holde principalite
 He endure long in worthy dignite
 For if these two, bee nought vp holden than
 What is a kyng, moze worth the his liege manne

This kyng Brute, kepte well this isle in peace
 And sette his lawes of Trope, with orde, rites,
 And consuetudes, that might the lande encrease
 Suche as in Trope, he knew was most profites
 Unto the folke and the common profites
 He made theim witten, for long rememore
 To rule this isle, by theim perpetually

This menne he did rewarde full royally
 With landes and rentes, & with hym suffred pain
 And Troynouant, he made full specially
 In archflaume his see cathed, all certain
 A temple ther of, Apolpne to optain
 By Troyane lawe, of all suche dignite

Brite.

As archebithop hath now in his degree

The. xv. Chapter.

How Britte departed Britaine in thre partes to his thre
sonnes, & twoo younger to holde of the elder, so that Wa-
les and Scotlande should dooe homage to Englande by
his ordinaunce by the lawe of Trope.

How Brit-
tis deuided
this yle.



His kyng Brit? this yle deuided i. iii
A litle afoze out of this yle he died,
To his. iii. soones & wer ful faire to se
After his daies to ioyse he signified
And when he had the yle all tripartied

Thre son-
nes of
Britte.

He called the chief Logres after Locrine
That dooeth extende fro Wölsehole to Hüber fine

Locryne
Cambre
Albanacte.

Fro Humber north vnto the Northwest sea
Of all Britain whiche he called Albany
fo? Albanacte the kyng therof to bee
His second soonne, that was bothe good & manly
To holde it of Locryne perpetually
And of his heires by homage and feaute
As to chief lord longe the sufferaintee.

And fro the water of Waage right in & southe
And Strigell castell to Seuerne all by and by
And so to Dee at Chester as it is full couth
Right in the North cambre he called fo? thy
fo? Cambre should it haue all plenerly
And on Locrine it should cuer bee homage
And of his heires euer moze in heritage.

The. xvi. Chapter.

How by lawe Tropans the soue. agnetie belongeth to the
eldest brother or sister.

After þ lawes of Troie þ soueraigne
 And all resoꝛte of right dooth apertem
 To the eldest bother in propertie
 The eldeste sister righte, so by righte
 should been

Soueraigne lady & ouer theim all quene
 By equitee of that ylike lawe and right
 In place where it is holden lawe perfighte.

This kyng Brutus made people faste till
 The lande aboute, in places ferre and nere
 And sowe with seede and get theim corne full well
 To liue vpon, and haue the sustenaunce clere
 And so in felde bothe farre and nere,
 By his wisdom and his sapience
 He sette the lande in sufficiency.

Brutus
 ordred þ
 people
 to sowe
 corne.

And as the fate of death dooeth assigne
 That nedes he muste his ghoost awaie relees
 To his goddag Dyane he did resigne
 His corpe to bee buried withouten lees
 In the temple of Apolyne, to encrease
 His soule among the goddes euerychone
 After his merites trononized high in trone.

Fro begynnyng of the worlde to Brutus
 Into this yle entred firste at Totnesse
 Foure thousande yere. lxxx. and foure were thus
 As the chronicles therof beareth witnesse
 And after the incarnation to expresse
 A thousande whole, a hundred and fiftene
 And of hely Judge of Jury was eightene.

Locryne.

In the thirde age he came into this isle
And in the yere as it is afore expressed
But how long that he reigned oꝝ Mozte whyle
Walter of Oxfoꝛde hath confessed
Foure and twenty yere, as he hath inpressed
And other sayne he reigned thꝛee and fourty yere
But Marian saith thꝛee scoꝛe he reigned here

Whiche is moſte like to bee verified
By all his woꝛkes and greate operacions
Whiche in Mozte tyme might not been edified
He perfoꝛmed with Mozte occupacions
But in long tyme by good consideracions
Rather it is like he reigned thꝛee scoꝛe yere,
By his greate woꝛkes & begynnyngeſ þ appere

The .xvii. Chapter.

King Locryne the ſoueraigne lord of all Britaine
had Logres to his parte, to whom his twoo bꝛethꝛ
did homage foꝛ Albeny and foꝛ Cambꝛy.

Locryne



His eldest ſone was king that hight
Locryne
Of al Bꝛytain hauing the ſoueraigne
Hauing Logres as Bꝛute did deter
To whom Cambꝛe and albanacte the free (myne
Obeing bothe vnto his royaltee
Their homage made as to the lord ſoueraigne
And emperoure of that lande of Bꝛytain.

There homage made and to Cambꝛe wente
Albanactus then roode to Albeny
And reigned ſo by life in one aſſente
Eche one other to helpe and foꝛtifie
And thus in peace holdyng their regalite

But

But as they satte so beste in peace and reste
kyng Humbar arose in Albyne full pzepte.

The. xlviii. Chapter.

Howe kyng Hubar slew Albanactus, wherfore Locryne and Cambre gathered a greate power and discomfyted kyng Humbar, & ceased Albany by excheter vnto Logres againe for defaute of an houre.



At the ryuer þe called is Humbar now
Where Albanactus anone did wyth
hym fyght
And in battell stroke Humbar on the
browe

And felde hym were he neuer so wight
But Humbar arose agayn with all his might
And in that houre was Albanacte slayne
kyng Humbar had the feld with mikyll payne

The de-
ath of
Alba-
nacte.

kyng Locryne then & Cambre els his brother
With hostes great vpon kyng Humbar faught
That of Humbarland was kyng w many other
In Albany that mikyll sorowe wrought
And with hym met, where he befoze had fought
Wher soze for fyght he fledde to the ryuer
And there was drowned in that water clere.

The ry-
uer of
Hubar,
wherof
it tooke
þ name.

A great part of his hoste was drowned also
As they dyd flee in that water clere
And many slayne that might no further go
And many other taken for prysouere
Locryne the felde had, and his brother dere
And to the shippes where they had all rycheffe
The 2 men to helpe that suffred there distresse.

Locryne.

All Albyne into his hande he sealed
And helde hole to Logres ioynd then agayn
As it was first, and that lande well pleased
Of the resorte, the people were full fayne
But in the shyppes a lytle from Almayne
He fande the kynges daughter of Germany
Daine Estrylde that was full womanly.

Whom for his wyfe he helde at his pleasaunce
For whiche the duke Corneus was wroth
But frendes then by noble gouernaunce
The playne truthe to saye in soth
Made hym to wed, all yf he were ful loth
The doughter so of duke Corneus
With all frendshyp they wer accorded thus

Daine Gwendolpne þ hight by proper name
Of whom he gat a sonne, that hight Maddan
And in the meane whyle, in preyw wyse at hame
He heide Estrylde as his loue and leman
Therof his wyfe ynwetynge, or any other man
And of her gatte a doughter full femynyne
That Sabzen hyght as chronycles do deuyne.

In this meane tyme Corneus so dyed
To whom the quene Gwendolpne was heyre
Whom kyng Locryne forsoke and replied
And Estrylde wedded agayne that was full fayre
But Gwendolpne to Cornewayle dyd repayre
With her power, and saught with kyng Locryne
Where he was slayn and had none other fyne.

She drowned Estrylde and her doughter dere

Howe
Locryne
was slayn
by the
sawle by
his wyfe
Gwen-
dolpne.

In

In a ryuer which that tyme had no name
But fro thens forth for Sauer farre and nere
That ryuer that was plentuous of name
was called then Seuerne that hath great fame
Thus Seuerne first had name in propertee
Of that lady, that drowned was in specyaltee.

The rpa
ner of
Seuerne
whereof
it toke þ
name.

The. xix. Chapiter.

Swendolena quene of Britayne had Logres and
Albany in peace and rest. xv. yere.

Gwendolynne so after fro kyng Locryne
had reigned hole. x. yere and was slayne
The quene was of al Logres lādes so fine
And of all Albanie also throught out incertayne
Crowned quene, and so reigned with mayne
And seruyce tooke of Cambre for his lande
Who gouerned well her tyme, I vnderstande

Gwen-
dolena.

Elfstene yere, and then her sonne she crowned
That Maddan hyght, and into Cornwayle went
And then she dyed, with syckenesse sore confounded
And to her goddes her wofull herte she sent
And thus this quene, in her best entent
To set amonge the goddesse euerychone
Euer to complayne her wedowhed alone.

The. xx. Chapiter.

Howe Maddan kyng of Britayne reigned after
Swendolena his mother, and reigned. xl. yeres.

Maddan her soonne was kyng of Bry-
taine then
Hauyng Logres and also Albany
That fourtie yere there reigned as a
manne

c iii keepyng

Madban.

Madba
kyng of
Britayn
& now
is Eng-
lad and
Scot-
lande.

Keepng the lande in peace from tyzanny
In whose tyme was none in his monarchy
Durst ought vary oꝝ any thyng displease
So was he dyed, and set the realme in ease.

Throug all Britayn durst none another dis-
So well the lawe & peace he dyd conserue (please
That cuery man was glad other to please
So dyed they hym they durst no thyng ouerterue
Agayn his lawe, noꝝ peace but theim conserue
So was he dyed throug his great sapience
Both in, and out, by all intellygence.

He dyed so, and to his father yede
His sonnes two Mawlyne and eke Mewpysse
A daye then set, whiche of theim should pꝛecede
To the croune, but then by couetyse
And that pike daye the yonger Mewpysse
Slewe his brother Mawlyne elder of age
To that entent to haue the herytage.

Mewpys-
se kyng
of Bry-
tayne.

Mewpysse thus kyng, destroyed his mē all out
Their lādes their goodes oꝝels their liues certain
He tooke from them all his lande about
Fulfylled all with pryde and great disdayne
His commons all with taxes did distrayne
So tirauntely, he left them nought to spende
By consequent, thyssteles he was at ende,

The
wret-
ched ende
of Mew-
pysse.

His wife he dyd refuse and foule forlake
Uysnge the synne of horribyltee
With beastes oft, in stede right of his make
Whiche by all right and equytee

Uenge

vengeaunce asked by fell bestialite
 And so hym fell, as to the wood he went
 A rout of wolffes hym slough and all to rend

Che. xxi. Chapter.

Ebranke kyng of Brytain had Logres and Albany.
 Also he had. xx. wyues. xx. sonnes, and. xxx. daughters
 he made yorke, Wamburgh, Edeuburgh, Dumbrytain
 and Alclude. Also he made an Archeffaume at yorke,
 and hys temple, that nowe is an archebyschoppe.



Ebranke his sonne then crouned was a
 none

Ebrank
 reigned
 lx. yeres

Who shippes great made on the sea to
 which helde his knyghtes with (sayle
 him so forth to gone

Upon warre he went wythout sayle
 Then into Gaule wyth a ful manly tayle
 Where that he had ryches innumerable
 To holde estate royall incomperable.

Twentie wyues he had as chronycles sayth
 And. xx. sonnes of hys owne generation
 And daughters say. xxx. that were not layth
 Which daughters so for their releuacion
 Into Italy wyth great supportacion
 There to be wedded in Troian blood and married
 For ladies there, wyth Troyans wer alped

In Albany he made and edefyed
 The castell of Alclude which Dumbrytain
 As some autoures by chronycle hath applyed
 And some saye on the pight wall certain

The ca-
 stell of
 Dumbry
 tayne in
 Scotlād

At

Ebranke

At the west ende is stode that now is plaine
And some men say it is Porke cytee
Thus stand men now in ambiguytee

But sooth it is, he made this Dunbrytain
A castel strong that standeth in Albany
Upon a rocke of stoon, harde to optain
About the which the sea floweth daily
And refloweth again nocturnally
Twyle in his course and to the sea again
In the which no horse may dunge certain

The castel
of Edinburgh

He made also the mayden castell stronge
That men now calleth the castel of Edenburgh
That on a rocke standeth full hye out of throng
On mount Agwet wher men may se out throughe
Full many a towne, castel and borough
In the shire about, it is so hye in syght
Who will it scale he shall not finde it light

The castel
of Bamburgh

He made also upon mount Doloious
A castell strong that this day Bamburgh hight
That on a rocke is set full hye and nopous
Full hard to get, by any mans myght
The castel is so strong and so wel dyght
If men therein have stufte sufficient
Or it be won many one must be shent

His sonnes all he sent to Germanie
To winne the same lande by labour and conquest
Under the rule of their brother Anayle
Duke Assarake that was the eldest
A worthy knyght proued with the best

All Germaigne they gat at their entent
And lordes were made ther as their father mente.

Sixty yere whole he stode and bare the crowne
Reignyng fully in all prosperite
No enemyes durst again him by ne doune
Warre, ne do in no wyse again his royalte
He made a temple in Ebzanke citee
Of Dyane, where an archeflame he set
To rule temples as that tyme was his det

That is
yoke.

The. xxii. Chapter.

Howe after the death of Ebzanke reigned Brutus
greneshylde.

Brutus Greneshylde then by hys
name ful ryght
Both good & true, & easy of al porte
His people al, & came into his sighte
Whal his might ettermoze he recofozt
Of all their sorowe that thei to hym repozt
And why he hyghte Greneshylde to hys surname
Because he bare on grene, as where he became

Brutus
greneshild
reigned
xii. yeres.

Twelve yere he stode reignyng ful wel in peace
And dyed so and by hys father buryed
In Ebzanke afore Dyane no lees
With Bytons hole thither accompaned
With al honours that myght be multiplied
In any wyse with all scruple funerall
Is longed to the fate of death ouer all

The. xxiii. Chapter.

Leyle kyng of Brytain had Logres and Bistayn, he
made at Carlele a temple flampe, & a flaume to rule it

That

Leyle and Iudhudebras

Leile king
of Britain
reigned
xxv. yeres

The Leyle his sone was kyng of Britain so
That Carelele made that time in Albany
That now Carelele is called by frend & fo
Which in Englysh is to say fynally

The cytee
of Carelele
by whome
it was bu
ilded

The cytee of Leyle, for in Britain tounge plainly
Cair is to saye a citee in their language
As yet in Wales is their common blage.

This ilke kyng Leyle made then in that cytee
A temple great, called a temple flaumyne
In which he set a flaume in propertee
To gouerne it by their lawes diuine
Of Jupiter, Saturne, and Appolynne
That then were of all such dignite
After their lawes, as now our bishoppes be

When he had reigned hole. xx. yere and syue
In youth ful wel, and kept lawe and peace
But in his age his people began to stryue
Failyng his lawes, cytees woulde no warre cease
Cyuill warres greatly began to encrease
And he dyed then setting no remedy
Buried at Careleyle in his citee royally.

The. xxiij. Chapter

Iudhudebras kyng of Britain had Logres and Al
bany, he made Cauntorbury, Wynchester and Shaf
tesbury, and thre temples and thre flaumes of them.

Iudhude-
bras kyng
reigned
xxxix. ye-
res.



Iudhudebras his sone was kyng anone
Cair kent he made, & now is cauterbury
Cair wet also & builded of lyme & stone
that wichester is now, a tounne ful mery
Caire

Caitre Daladoure, that nowe is Shaftesbury
where an Angell spake syttyng on the wall
whyple it was in workyng ouer all.

In whiche citees, he made then temples three
And flaumes also, as nowe these bishoppes been
To kepe the rites after their moralytee
Of the goddes, as in there bookes was seen
Of their false lawes, as they did meen
When he had reigned by thyrtye yere and nyne
The dulfull death made hym to earth enclyne.

The. xxv. Chapiter.

Bladud kyng of Britaine had Logres & Albany. He
made an vniuersitee and a studie at Stamford and a
flaume, and his temple at Bath his citee, which vni-
uersitee dured to the comyng of saynte Augustyne,
and the byshoppe of Roome enterdited it for heresies
that fell emonge the Saxons and the Britons toge-
ther murre.



Bladud his sonne, sone after hym dyd
succeede

Bladud
reigned
xx. yere

And reigned after then full. xx. yere
Caitr Bladud so that nowe is Bathe
Frede.

He made anone the hote bathes there in fere
When at Athenes he had studied clere
He brought with hym. iiii. Philosophiers wise
Schole to holde in Britayne and exercyse.

Staford he made, þ Staford hight this daye
In whiche he made an vniuersitee
his philosophiers, as Wiclif doth saye
Had scholers fele of great habilitie
Studyng euer alwaye in vniue
In all the seven liberall science

Stafords.

Ley.

For to purchase wisedome and sapience.

And dec-
hed in fe-
thers.

In Cair Bladim he made a temple right
And sette a flampyne therein to gouerne
And afterwarde a fetherham he dight
To flye with wynges, as he could best discern
Aboue the ayre nothyng hym to werne
He flied on high to the temple Apolpne
And ther brake his neck, for al his great doctrine.

The. xxi. Chapter.

King Ley of Britain gaue away with his daughter
al his lande, & had it all agayn, & dyed king possessed.

Ley king



As soonne was kynge, highe sette in
royaltee
Of all Brytaynes by name that hight
kynge Ley.

Who Laiceter made, after hi called to
Cair Ley his citee, & builded was ful fayre (for
he had daughters thre, to bene his heyre
The first of theim was called Gonzelle
The nexte Ragan and the youngest Cordelle.

Amonges theim, as Ley satte on a daye
He asked theim, howe muche thei hym loued
Gonzell saied, more then my self ay
And Ragan saied, more then was after proued
For loye of whiche, the kynge was greatly moued
I loue you more then all this worlde so fayre
He graunted theim two, of thre partes to bee heyre.

Cordell the youngest then sayd full sobetly
Father as muche as ye been in value
So muche I loue you, and shall strictly

It all my might and all my hearte full trewe
 With that he greued at her and chaunged hewe
 Sene thou me loues, lesse then thy sisters twain
 The leest porcion shalt thou haue of Brytain

With that Maglan duke of Albany
 Gonozell wedded, and had the lande all out
 Euen of Wales, and of Cornewayle there by
 That duke was of those twoo landes stoute
 Ragan wedded, to whiche twoo dukes no doubt
 Kpng Ley? gaue rule and gouernaunce
 Of all Brytain, for age and none puissance

The. xxvii. Chapiter.

How Ley? made a temple, and a flamynge to
 rule at all Laicette.



Temple that in this citee of Kaireleir
 A flamynge also, as he a bishop were
 In name of Jan? & folke into repere
 And then he went, Gonozell to requyre
 Of the greate loue, that she aught hym so dere
 That of her promise she failed unkyndly
 Wherefoze he wente, vnto Ragan in hie.

She failed also for all her greate promise
 And to Cordell that wedded was into Fraunce
 Long after that he wente in greate destres
 To helpe to wyne hym his heritaunce
 She succurred hym, anon with all plesaunce
 Bothe with gold & siluer of right greate quatites
 To gette his lande again in all suertee

Aganippe her lord, was kpng of Fraunce
 That

Cordebell quene.

That graunte hym menne, and good sufficiente
And sent his wife with hym, wth greate puissaunce
With all aray, that to her wer apente
His heire to been, by their bothes assente
For he was olde, and might not well trauaill
In his persone, the warres to p^{er}euail.

Thyng Ley^r thus waⁿe his lande, wth all might
And reigned well there after full thye yere, (again
And died so, burped at Kairleir menne sain
In Janus temple, in whiche tyme for age clere
The kyng of Fraunce, Aganipe in fere
Died, wherfore Cordebell his heire was soo
To rule Brytain alone withouten moo

The. xxviii. Chapter.

How Cordebell quene of Fraunce and doughter of
kyng Ley^r, reigned after the death of her father.

Cordebell
quene of
Fraunce.



Cordebell quene of Fraunce, and doughter
to kyng Ley^r,
Quene of Englande after her fathers
daie

fiue yeres reigned, as for her fathers heire,
And gouerned well the realme, all menne to paye
His sisters sonne, then Morgan of Albany
And Condage also of Cambre and Cornewaill
In battaill greate, her tooke and putte in baill

For sorow then, she slewe her self for tene
And burped was, by side her father right
In Janus tēple, whiche kyng Ley^r made I wene
At Kairleir, so that now Laicestre hight
Thus died this quene, that was of muche might
Her

her soule wente to Janus, whom she serued
And to Mynerue, whose loue she had deserued

The xxix. Chapiter.

Condage kyng of Albanie, that claimed all Brytain
but this isle of Britain was departed, for this kyng
had but Albany.



Morgan the eldest soone of Dame Co-
nozell,

Claimed Britain, as for his heritage
Warred sone of Condage as I spell
That kyng was of Cambre, in youg

Duke of Cornwaile also for his homage (age
But this kyng Morgan was kyng of Albany
Soonne and heire of the eldest soonne verely.

Condage was kyng of Cābre, & Walis is now
And Duke of Cornwaile his patrimony

Claimed Logres as soonne and heire to Regawe
The middill sister for his mothers propete

Is she that aught to haue her partoury

At Glomorgane, with Morgan did he meete

In battail slewe hym, there casten vnder feete

Cambre
is þ which
we now
call War-
lis.

The xxx. Chapiter.

Condage kyng of Logres, Cābre, and duke of Corn-
waile, gatte all Brytain again, and made a temple
with a flampne at Bangour.



Condage was kyng of al great Britain

And in his hande, he sealed all Albany

For his eschete, & ought to hym again

Resorte of right, and returne verely

He made a flampne, a temple also in hie,

Of Mars at Perche, & now is .S. Johns towne

In

Condage
reigned
.xxxiii.
yeres.

Ryueall, Burgustius and Scicilius.
In Albany that now is Scotlande region.

THe made another temple of Hynerue
In Canbze, whiche now is named Bangour
The thirde he made in Coznwaile fo: to Ierus
Of Mercury, in place where he was boze
Fo: his people to serue the goddes there
Wherby he reigned thirty yere and thzee
In rest and peace and all tranquillitee.

Ryueall
reigned
xxii yeres

Ryueall his soonne that was pacificall
Crowned was then easie of gouernall
In whose tyme the greate tempest did befall
That daies thzee the fites did hym assaile
Enuenoned foule vnto the death no faile
And rayned bloodde thesame thzee daies also
Greate people died, the lande to mykell woo.

Burgusti
us reyg-
ned. xv.
yeres.

Burgustius his soonne so reigned then
In mykell iope and worldy selinesse
Kepyng his landes from enemies as a manne
But drunken he was echedate expresse
Unaccozdyng to a pynce of worthynesse
Out of drunkennesse succedeth euerp vice
Whiche menne should eschew if thei wer wise

Scicilius
reigned
xiii yeres

Scicilius his soonne then did succede
In whose tyme echeman did other oppresse
The lawe and peace was cxiled so in deede
That ciuill warres & slaughter of menne expresse
Was, in euery parte of the lande without redresse
And murderers foule thzough all his lande daily
Without redresse o: any other remedy.

Jago

C Jago succeeded, and kyng was of this lande
 As ciuill as was the kyng of Scicilius
 Thesame vices, as I vnderstande
 Orels wourse, and moze malicious
 Wherfore our lord, toke vengeaunce of hym thus
 He smote thein bothe, in suche aletargie
 That sone thei dyed, for inatrid with frenesse

Kyng Ja
 go reyg-
 ned xxv
 yeres.

Caymar his soonne had then the diademe
 And kyng then was, with all kyndes of royalte
 Keppng his lande, as well did so hym seme
 In lawe and peace, with greate felicitye
 The common weale and their vtilite
 He did prefer euer in vniuersall
 Whiche to a pynce is a vertu principall.

Kyng Kay
 mar reyg-
 ned .xx. y
 yeres.

C First if he kepe not lawe noz peace certai
 His people will nothyng dyed ne doubt
 Then stande he mozte in parell to bee slain
 Orels putte doune right by his vnderloute
 No better is he bee he neuer so stoute
 Then is his subiect, oz another wight
 That with rebell, vnlawfull kill hym might.

C Corbonan that was his soonne and hette
 Was kyng, who had that tyme but soonnes twoo
 The eldze hight Ferrer that was full faire
 The younger hight Dorer whiche discorde so
 That either of thein was alwate others soo
 For that the father sente Ferrer into Fraunce
 To kyng Spwarde, that was of greate puissaunce

Corbona
 reygued
 xi. yeres.

C But after long, when he had reigned .xl. yeres
 D

Died

Clotane.

Died a waste from all royaute
Leuyng his lande by his good rule in clere
In sufficiente and all prosperite
Ferrer heryng of his mortallite
With power strong came to this lande again
And with Dozrex fought soze where he was slain.

For sorow of which their mother & Andō hight
To Ferrer came with her maidens all in pye
Slepyng in bedde slewe hym upon the night
And smote hym all on peces sette a fyre
Loo this cruell mother sette on fyre
With suche rancoz that she could not ceas
Whiche soz passyng pye was merciles.

The .xxxi. Chapter.

Clotane, Pinner, Ruddan and Stater reigned with
barons warres .xl. yere, howe this isle of Brytaine
was departed in foure parties and stode departed
.xl. yere in barons warres.

Clotane
with his
feloes rei-
gned .xl.
yeres.

Clotane that then was Duke of Cornwaill
Next heire then was by all succession
But Pinner the had Logers in gouernall
And kyng therof was by wrong ingression
Ruddan had Cambze in his possession
And Stater was then kyng of Albany
Thus was this isle then ledde by tyranny.

Thus Brytain was to foure kynges deuided
Echeone of theim warryng on other
The barons also on warre were so prouided
That all the people to waste fater and mother
Thei spared none, all wer thei sister or brother
And eche citee on other bothe towne and towne

And

And eche tyrante was a conquerour.

And lordes false subiectes then to been,
The pooze men that afore the warre wer desolate
Of all honour and worthyp that was seen
Throughe their manhode with people congregate
Lordship conquered and roole to high estate.
Laddes and boyes, the ladies tho did wedde
Their kynne afore, nether lande ne hous had

Fourty wynter thus duryng barons warre
This Ile so stode in sorowe and in strife
In faute of might, the weaker had the wer
And suffred wrong that was then their life
For who that might, aught gette w spere o; knife
He helde it forth, as for his heritage
And waxed a lord that afore was a page.

Defaute of peace & lawe, set them on hight
To ouerrunne lordes, and be victorious
As worthy was for of their wrongfull might
The lordes were cause that they were rygorous
That would not so their wronges malicious
At first withstande and punishe trespassours
But suffer them endure in their erroures.

The. cxx. Chapter.

The concept of the maker of this booke touchyng
barons warres, in defaute of peace and lawe.

Defaute of lawe, was cause of this mischief
Wronges susteined by mastery & by might
And peace layed downe that should haue
been the chiefe,

d ii Throughe

Dunmalle.

Through whiche debates folowed all bnt right
Wherfoze vnto a pynce, accoꝛdeth right
The peace, and lawe, euen with equitie
Within his realme, to saue his dignitee.

What is a kyng, without lawe and peace
Within his realme sufficiently conserued
The poꝛest of his may so encrease
By iniury and foꝛce, of men pꝛeserued
Till he his king, so w strength haue ouerthꝛowed
And sette hym selfe in royall maiestee
Is traytour Cade made suche an ieopartee.

O ye my lordes of Poꝛke and beraye heꝛe
Of Englande, so this matter well impꝛesse
Depe in your bꝛeste, let it synke soft and seꝛe
And suche defaultes, set you aꝛe to repꝛesse
At the begynnyng, let your high noblenesse
The trespasseours to chastise, and to restraine
And let them not, lawe, ne peace disobeine.

O ye lordes, that been in high estate
Kepe well the lawe, with peace and gouernaunce
Lest your hurtes you hurte, and depreciate
Whiche been as able with wꝛongfull oꝛdinaunce
To reigne as ye, and haue also great pꝛissaunce
Foꝛ lawe and iustices, in lordes vnꝛeserued
Causeth many of them to bee ouerthꝛowed.

The. xxxi. Chapter.

Dunmalle Woluncus kyng of Cornwale conquered
Logres, Cembry and Albanie, as right heꝛic of
Brytain, he gaue fraunchises to the temple, plough,
machettes, seꝛies and hie wayes, so that none should
disturbe by lawe nor by wꝛong, he made sixe rꝛyles in
Logres

Dunwallo. fol. xxvii.
Logers, Cambrie & Albane & as many flauynnes to
rule them of estates as bishops uolue doon.



Kynge Clotein dyed, that reigned in
Cornewayle

Wherefoze his soonne Dunwallo

Moluncius

was kyng of all his realme with-
out faple

Dunwallo
reigned.
xl. yeres.

A manly pynce, in armes full courageous
Assembled his hoste, and came full vigorous
Of kyng Wyner in Logers intrusour
And sleugh hym there as wrongfull gouernour.

Thyng Buddan and kyng Stater
Of Albanie with hostes strong and wight
Gaue hym battayle with mighty power
Where Buddan & Stater wer slain downe right.
With all their hostes and they; great might
And Dunwallo had the victorie
With myche ioye and manhood mightely.

Dunwallo so called Moluncius
At Troynouaunt with ropall diademe
Of golde crowned, mooste riche and precious
Upon his head, as did hym well beseme
The first he was, as chronicles expreme
That in this Isle of Brittain had crowne of golde
For all afore, coppe and gilt was to beholde.

Dunwallo
was the
first kyng
of Bry-
tayn that
was crow-
ned with
golde.

He graunted pardon vnto all trespassours
Of which they were full glad and ioyous
Amendynge all they; fautes and errours
With all their hartes full beneuolous

D iii Charyng

Dunwalle.

He eked then by his witte full curious
With his lawe called lawe Woluntyne
Chargyng all men to theim fully to enclyne,

He graunted vnto the temples every one
And to the plough and all commen wayes
To markettes and saires where me shoulde gone
Fraunchesies so great and liberties alwayes
That al men beeyng in theim night or dayes
Should not be taken ne troubled in any wyse
Neither by lawe no; by no maiestries.

Six temples he made in Cabye & Logres als
And in the lande also of Albany

This temple was s.
Doulles
church in
London.

Of Flampnes as fele, to serue their goddes fals
A temple also in Troynouaunt sothely
Of peace and concore he made verely
In whiche when there fell any discorde
Among his lordes, there wer they made accorde

When he had stande so kyng by fourty yere
He dyed awaye, and buryed was full fayre
In his temple then of concore full clere
At Troynouaunt with great repayre
To whom Belyn was eldest sonne and heyre
And Bzenny next was bozne of younger age
Wherfore Belyn had all the whole heritage.

The. xxxi. Chapiter.

Belyn kyng of Brytain who gaue to Bzenny his brother, Albany that made hym homage for it, and soon after made hym great warre and was false to hym & after frendes agayn in other landes, but not in Englande ne in Scotlande.

Belyn

Belyn was kyng and sat in royall trone
 Crouned with al maner royalte
 To Brynny his brother he gaue the land &
 Of Albany, so; whych homage & feaute (none
 He made forthwith as to the soucrayntee
 His man became and kyng of Albany
 Confyrmmed was and made ful honourably.

But after sone, hys men hym set to warre
 Upou Belyn that fought in batayl so;e
 But Brynny fled and hys men dyscomfyte wer
 So; then he went vnto Norway therfoze
 And in that he dwelled thoz
 Wher he wedded the kynges daughter sayze
 That taken were by sea homewarde in repayze

By the kyng of Denmarke, & Cuthelake hight
 Who by tempest into Logres were dyscure
 And brought vnto Belyn mykel of myght
 Wher he bande hym, as chronycles do th briebe
 Denmarke to holde, of Belyn to haue leife
 Home wyth his wyfe to passe so anone
 Who Belyn graunted home agayn so to gone

Bryenne anone great host of Belyn brought
 Wher in the forest that tyme of Colatre
 In battayl strong, kyng Brynny all so; fought
 Dyscomfyte, fled in Burgoyne so; feare
 To duke Segwyn, to whom he gan hym beate
 So manfully and wysely in all thyng
 That he hym wedded vnto his doughter ying

Sone afterwarde thys duke Segwyn dyed.

Belyne

So Bjeny than was duke by hys wyfe
That to hys brother alwaye full soze anoyed
Came wyth great hoost to fight with him ful ryf
Conwen their mother by her prerogatyfe
Betwyx them treated and made ther well accord
On her blyssyng no moze so; to dyscord.

Wyth wordes peteous, and mothers naturelle
Sweyng her pappes & wombe w greate beutle
Lo, here the wombe that bare you wyth sykenesse
As womanhode would and feynynite
Lo here the pappes, as was necessite
That fed you oft in your tender age
So; my loue now let be all thys outrage

The. xxxii. Chapiter

These. ii. brethren wanne al Fraunce and al Italy to
Rome, & beleged Rome, gat it and were Emperours of it

So made the theim at one and well accorde
And made the kyffe & councelled theym to
To their lādes lest thei after discorde (gone
Which thei did with hoostes great anone
With manly men of armes full great wonne
All Fraunce, thei wan Sauoy and Lunberdy
Tulkain also and all great Italy.

Thei seged Rome, wherfore their councelours
Galbo and Drocenna came it to rescue
With hoostes great, wher then these Emperours
Slewe sy; Galbo and Drocenna the true
And Rome thei wan that alway was vntreue
Italy th;oughout obeyed their dominacion

Without

Without moze stryfe oꝝ alteracion.

Thyng Belyne there no lenger would abyde
 But lefte Bryenny alone wyth all that lande
 And home he came with mykell ioye and pryde
 And Albion he leased in his owne hande
 And so kyng and loꝝde of all Brytayne lande
 A citee fayze he made that haire yske hight
 Which men now call Carlion by name ful ryght.

The. xxxiii. Chappter.

He made the hye wayes throughout Britain, and he
 founded thre archeflampnes, at Lodon one for Logres
 another at yorke for Albanpe that now is Scotlande
 for that tyme fro Dumbrie north that was þe tyme Scot
 land, and the thyrde at Carlion in Wales, for al Wales

In Britain then he made from Cornwel sea
 Of lyme and stoue throughe all Brytayne
 That myght ryde and go in all suretie
 Unto the sea by north Catenes certaine
 Which unto all men was brode and playne
 Another he made in bredth fro saint Dauid toun
 Unto the sea flowyng at Southampton

The archeflampnes he made throughe al Bry-
 As archebyschops now in our lawes bene (tayne
 There temples al to gouerne and domayne
 At Troynouant on Logres to ouerfene
 Her fals goddes to serue and to queine
 At Ebzanke another for Albany
 And at Karleon for Cambye on souerainly

At oue he mande ful hye that hight Belingate
 At

Belpn

At Troynouant his cite moost royall
Chyrene flamynes of bishoppes hygh estate
And temples as many, in citees all
So that there were in hys tyme ouer all
With other so afoze edyfyate
xxviii. flamynes in temples ordinate

And at hys death, he had hys corps to be byent
Into powder all in a barell of golde
To put, and set vpon his toure to represent
His body hole, who that sene it woulde
His triumphes all, that enemyes myght beholde
Well wrought about, in ymagerys and scripture
ful royally wrought for to refigure

He reigned had then. xli. yere
When he thus dyed and to his God had sent
Hys wofull ghost out of hys corps full clere
Among the goddes, euermore to be p̄sent
For which his people of wepyng could not styrte
Their sorowes great intearis bitter thei did stepe
Which in streames ranne and fro their eyen dyd
wepe.

The. xxxiii. Chapter

Gutgwin
reigned
xxx. yeres

Gutgwin his sonne was crowned after him
Of Brytain bare then the diademe
Who made his lawe, vpon life and lymme
His peace also he kept, as he did deme
As his iudges could it ful wel expyine
Into Denmarke he went for his truage
Which kyng Cuthelake graunt hym in heritage

he

The slewe þe kyng, and Dances great multitude
his seruyce had, and made the lande to enclyne
To hys lordeshyppe and to his altitnde
There truage paye, sothward nomoze declpne
And as he came by sea then homewarde fyne
De founde shippes. xxx. full of myghtie men
Accoꝝdyng well as many saye women

At whose request, of hys specyall grace
he gaue to them the lande, that now is Irelande
wher thei dyd won & make their dwellyng place
There gouernaunt, so then I vnderstande
Was Bartheleyn to holde it then him bande
Of kyng Burgun and all hys lynage
Perpetually by feaute and homage

Neuertheles some chronycles report
That Irishman their capitain had to name
By whomin it was so bigged and suppozte
That out of Spain weee exiled & thither came
And some sayth that Hiberus of greate fame
There duke was than and there gouernoure
That of Spain afore had bene the flour

Howe Ire
land was
holde of
this kyng
and hys
heires.

This kyng Burguin his surname was Batrus
Came home agayne after the voyage soze
Al so, beten, so was he couragous
That frome hys corps his gooste departed thore
Reigned that had. xxx. yere afore
In Carlyon after his hygh degre
Was buried so with ful great rogalte

Gutelyn.

The same Gutelyn kyng of Brytayne wedded Marcian his
wyfe, that Marcian lawes made by her great wysedome.

Gutelyn
reigned .x.
yere.



Gutelyn his sone gan reigne as heire
Of al Brytain about, vnto the sea
Who wedded was to Marcian full
that was so wise i her feminite (fals)
That lawes made of her singularte
That called were the lawes of Marcian
In Brytaine tongue of her owne wit alane.

This Gutelyn was good of his estate
Full iuste he was in all his iudgement
Wysse and manly of port erly and late
Ryght meke and good euer in his intent
Although of state he was ryght excellent
With eche pooze man that came to his pzeence
Throughe which he wared of mooste hye sapience

When he had reigned full peaciably .x. yere
He lefte the realme to his sonne and heire
And to his wyfe to be hys counselloure
For his sonne then was .xlii. yere olde full saye
Whom at her death she sente for all repayze
Of Barons all there she deliuered hym
To kepe, in payne of losse lyfe and lymme.

Stellius
reigned
xxliii. ye=
res.

Stellius his sonne reigned. xxliii. yere
And crowned was and died in iuuentude
That gouerned wel the realme ful wel and clere
At Karlion burped after consuetude
As kynges afoze in all similitude
With al repayze of al his Baronage

Is well accorded vnto his hys parage.

Kymar his sonne the barons dyd crowne
With honoure suche as fell to his degree
Who twentye yere and one so bare the crowne
And kepte lawe and tranquillitee
And petyous was euer, as a kyng shoulde bee
In righteousnes, accordyng with his lawe
Hauyng pytee and mercy where hym sawe.

Kymar
kyng.

Danius kyng his brother did succede
Durynge .x. yere in warre and great payne
Withouten reste, he was alwaye in dede
The lawe vikepte, was cause there of certayne
As myne autour it lyste nothyng to layne
I wyl it so we wyte and in this boke expresse
That men may knowe his folp and lewdenesse.

Danius
kyng.

The. cxxvi. Chapter.

Howe Moruile kyng of Britayne was slayn by his
owne immoderate yre, without knowlage of any man
with a fysh the best of the sea.



Moruile his sonne a bast gotten and
boze

Moruile
reyned
xvi. yere.

On Augustus his special paramour
Was crowned then after faughte
full soze

With the kyng of Moztians as a
conquerour

Where he hym kyled and had the feld that hour
And left no man on lyue and bent them all
His yre excuded his wytte and gouernall.

Sone after then came fro the yrishe sea
A bestyous

Exemple.

A bestious fylhe, a monstre some did it call
Wherof afrayde was all the comontie
For it deuoured the folke both great and small
Wherfore the kyng his pze myght not apall
He ceasse, afoze he foughten with it had
All sodaynly alone, as a man right mad.

Where both wer dead o: any man it knewe
His pze full fel was and vntemperate
His discrecion out of his bzayne flew
But he coulde not by reason o: dypnate
Prozoge his wyl ne pze inozdinate
By other meanes with people multitude
It to haue slayne by wytte and soxtitude.

He reigned had that tyme but seuentene yere
When he thus dyed and sondly dyd expire
Unsemingly of any pzynce to heare
That he with suche a monstre should desyre
To fyght alone so pzeuely of pze
But sonnes he had full fayze then fyue
Of manly men also substantife.

Gorbont
an repg
gued. r.
pcc.

Gorbontan his eldest sonne of fyue
Was after kyng and helde the maiestee
Righteous and trewe to euery creature
In peace his realme and al tranquillitee
And to his people he helde all equitee
Cyllers of lande with golde he dyd comfozte
And soudiours all, with goodes he dyd supporte

Arthegall

Arthegall his brother signed with Diademe
The kyng was then with solempnitee

By

By natife birth next brother as menne Deinde
 who good menne hated of his inquite
 Oppressyng theim by greate subtilite
 And all false folke with riches did auance
 his barons all deposed hym for that chaunce.

The. xxvii. Chapter.

How this kyng was crowned in defaute of his elder
 brother, and of pure pite crowned his brother again.



Eledoure the þ third brother generate
 Was kyng create by all succession
 And bare þ crowne w all royal estate
 By lordes will and their confession
 That ruled well without oppression

Eledoure
 kyng reig
 ned. v. yez.
 res.

When he had reigned so fully five yere
 Arthegall he founde that was his brother dere

As he was gone on huntynge for his disporte
 In the forrest and woode of collatre
 That sought had frendes & founde had no cōfort
 But heuy was and of full simple chere
 Whom Eledoure tooke in his armes clere
 And brought hym to citee of Alclude
 That then was of greate might and fortitude.

In Albany then was it the greateste citee thoo
 Beside the woode that tyme of collatre
 Where his Barons and many other moo
 At his bidding were come and presente there
 Whom spngulerly he made theim for to swere
 Unto Arthegall his brother to bee true
 So purposed he, to crowne hym all newe.

Arthegall
 reigned. x
 yez.

And

Eledoure.

And then anon in haste so forth thei toode
To Ebzanke and helde then his parliamente
Where of good loue and tender brotherhod
The crowne he sette with verie trewe entente
On Arthegalles hede, & thought it was well spet
By whole decrece and iudgemente of his mouthe
And made hym kyng again by nozthe and southe

Arthegall kyng crowned so all newe again
Full well his lordes after did loue all perlees
Forsoke all vices and tooke to vertue plain
And set his lande and people in all kyne and ease
Reignyng tenne yere, he fell in greate discafe
In malady of diuerse greate sickenelle
Dedde and buried at Carleile as I gesse.

The. xxxvii. Chapter.

Whom Eledoure was the seconde tyme crowned
kyng of Brytain for his good rule.

Eledoure
reigned
.xiii. yere.

He Brytaines all crowned Eledoure
That reigned after. xiii. yere in dignitee
So well theim paied to haue hym gouer-
for his goodnesse and his benygnytee (uoure
And for he was so full of all pitee
That in all thyng mercy he did pzeferue
Well better euer then menne could it deserue.

Fuge and
Beredoure
reigned.
vii. yere.
together.

Fuge with force and eke sir Beredoure
His brethren twoo on hym rose traitorously
Deposed hym out of his high honoure
And prisioned hym full soze and wrongfully
All in the towre of Troynouaunte for thy
And parted the realme betwixte theim twoo
Togethet reignyng seven yere and no moo

And

Elebourne then had all the lande full cleere
And crowned was, reigynng after woꝛthely
His lawe and peace, keepng full well foure yere
And died then, and to his goddes full hie
He passed so, and buried full royally
After their rites and their olde blage
With greate honoure by all the baronage.

Bara-
bour re-
igned by
hymself
iiii. yeres.

The. xxxij. Chapiter.

Elebourne kyng of Brytain thise crowned, for his
good rule and good condicions.



Elebourne was kyng all newe made
again

Elebourne
reigned
i. yeres.

Thise crowned that kepte his olde
condicion

Of who the lordes & commons were
And soꝛy for his wꝛongfull depolition (full fain
He reigned so fro losse and all perdition
Reigynng after full peaceably tenne yere
Buried full faire, at Alclude his citee cleere.

Gorbodian that was Gorbodians soonne
The croune after his vncl in all thynges
That ruled well fro tyme that he begonne
Full well beloued with olde and also with young
He reigned tenne yere of Brytain kyng
And died then with woꝛship whole entered
As to suche a pꝛince of right should bee required

Gorbod-
ian king
of Bry-
tain.

Morgan was the soonne of kyng Arthegall,
Was crowned then and held the roialtee
Full fourtene yere he ruled the realme ouer all
The lawe and peace with all tranquillitee
He kepte full well in all prosperite
For whiche he was full greatly magnified

Morgan
reigned
.xiiii.
yere.

In

Emman.

In all his realme with people landesied

Emman
kyng rei-
gned. vii
yere.

Emmau his brother so was crowned kyng
Seuen yere reigned in all kynde of tyranny
For whiche he was deposed as an vnderlyng
When he had reigned seuen yere fully
That to God and manne was euer contrary
Till all his lordes and commons euerione
Whiche were full glad alwaie that he was gone

Kyng
Jual rei-
gned. xx
yere.

Juall the soonne of kyng Jngen did reigne
Louyng alwaie to kepe all righteousnes
Hatyng all vices, and of good menne was fain
All vicious menne, he helde in soze distres
Helpyng pooze menne fallyng in feblenes
When he had reigned full well by twenty yere
He died alwaie as saith the chronicler.

Kyng
Rymo
reigned
xvi. yere

Rymo the soonne that of kyng Paradoure
Crowned was then, louyng all gentlenes
All vertue euer he loued and all honoure
And in his tyme was plenty and larges
Of his people full well beloued I gesse
And died so in all felicity on hie
Sixtene yere whole when he gan die

Kyng
Gerenn-
es reig-
ned. xx.
yere.

Gerennes then the soonne of Eledoure
To reigne beganne and ruled well this date
And sone the deathe hym tooke and did deuoure
If I the truthe of hym shall saie
That twenty yere he reigned all menne to pae
The lawe and peace full aye conserued
Of his commons the loue aye deserued.

Catellus

Catellus his sonne then gan succede
 keepyng the lawe and peace as he dyd hyght
 Oppressours all, that poze men dyd ouer lede
 He hanged euer on trees full high to syght
 That ensample of them euery man take myght
 Ten yere he reigned ful of felicityte
 And dyed so vnder his vnsure deite.

kyng
 Catellus
 reigned
 x. yere

Cople his sonne after hym succede
 And crowned was, reynyng so. xx. yere
 In lawe and peace as to his worthy hede
 Accordyng was, for lawe & peace conserved clere
 As euery man may se both fatte and nere
 The flouris bene of royal dignite
 In which he reigned. xx. yere, ere he dyd dye

kyng
 Cople
 reigned
 xx. yere.

Dorrex his sonne was crowned in his astate
 Ely of port to speake wyth euery wyght
 Their comunyng to him was delicate
 Who reason spake he fauoured as was ryght
 Who vicious spake or dyd in his syght
 He chastised them after the cause required
 Reynyng. v. yere, of no land had he fered

kyng
 Dorrex.

Cheryn his sonne noysshed in dronkenness
 Customably, to whych folowed all kynd of vyce
 It exiled wyte out of hys brayne doubtles
 And reason after that, made hym ful vnwise
 He was of all his gouernance so nyce
 And reigned so in Bityayn but one yere
 When he dyed, layed was on the bere

kyng
 Cheryn.

Chis sonne fulgen reigned but one yere

Fulgen.

e.ii. Eldred

Fulger Eldred hys brother and Androge hyght the thirde
Eldred & kynges after hym echeone were singuler
Androge A yere reygnyng whose good rules are hyd
 For why, vnto no man was it kyde
 Thei dyed sone, for long they myght not dure
 In such droukenes, ful weke was their nature.

Gryan **G**ryan the sonne of kyng Androge
 Thre yeres reigned, that was ful lecherous
 A mayden young, where he dyd ryde or go
 He had euery day, he was so vicious
 But yet he was gentyll and bounteous
 All yf he had maidens in such chartre
 Weddowes and wyues, he had in great plente.

Elynde **E**lynde was kyng, & fyue yere bare the crowne
 Ful wel ruled the realme in al kynd of thing
 In astronomy, ful redy aye & bowne
Dedancius also reigned fyue yere full young
Dedancius Who the realme ruled in al maner thyng
 Ful peaseably from that Elynde was dede
 Both two dyed in their flopyshed youthede

Deton **D**etonus then was kyng reignyng two yere
Gurguncius Gurguncius so two yere bare also the crowne
Merian And Merian two yere by wytyngne clere
Bledudo Bledudo then ful redy bowne
Owen Two yere also bare the crowne
Sicily Cappe and Owen and then Sicilius
 all these reigned eche of them .ii. yeres.
 Eche after other by two yere reigned thus

Bledud **B**ledud Grabred reygned, expert in songe
Grabred And in all musyke instrumentes

farre passyng was al other and had bene long
Such was his cunning & his sentementes
That for a god in all folkes ententes
In myrth & ioye and maner of melody
They honoured him .x. yere onely

Archipual, then his brother reigned so
And Eldol after his sone, succeeded anone
And Redd then his sonne, came nex him tho
Redd like his sonne, when his father was gone
Croune & septer receaued, hath anone
Samuel, Pirre, Denysel, & Capre
Seuerally eche one reigned two yere.

Archy-
ual, El-
dol, Red-
don Red-
dyke
Samuel
Pirre
Denysel
& Capre
eche of
these re-
igned .ii
yeres.

The .xl. Chaptyr.

Elynguellus kyng of Brytany had great wyl to here al
men wher thei came to him, which is a vertue. For great
cunning maketh a man wyse and to knowe muche, and
for myscheces to fynde remedies, as my lord Amfretwil
commended neuer a manne, that puttereth a myschese, and
can fynde no remedy therfore.

Elynguellus which was Capre his sonne
Both wise & sad, & in his realm held right
He herd al men what counsel & thei counne
For oft tyme a symple man to syght
More wysedome hath in his insyght
And better reason can in hys braynes fynd
Then can a lord, though he may betes bynd

Who in his land did wrong or any vntyght
He prysoned hym in soze and great destres
He gaue hys men & souldyours were ful wyght
A puelode to lyue vpon, from al dysstres

He'p and Lud

Sicke folke and poze cast into feblenes
He visited aye, and reygned had. vii. yere
When that he died & left his realme ful clere

Botwe
Hely the
sonne of
Elyng
wellus
made
ysle of
Hely.

Hely hys sonne, in al thyng good and wys
Succeded then, the isle of Hely made
Hys palays gape that myght ryght wel suffyce
He buylded ther that was both long and brade
Wherin he dwelled much, and most abyde
The lawe and peace, he kept and conserued
Which him byheld that he was neuer ouerturied

Byng
Hely re
reygned
ix. yere.

Thye sonnes he gat, Lud and Cassibalain
The third was called that tyme sy; Aemynus
When he had reygned sixty yere in certayn
The death cruel to men that is aye noyeous
In hys comynng that is alway douteous
Hym sleugh away, who was at Hely buried
Afore hys god that there was edified

CThe. xli. Chapter

Lud kyng of Brytayne buylded frome London stene
to Ludgate and called that part Luds tounce, & after
by procelle, was called London by turning of roges

Byng
Lud re-
igned. xl.
yere.

His sone & heire was Lud of much might
Then crowned by al baronage
His citees all eke his heritage, castelles
He dyd repare that wer his herptage (twight
And where was worthy his seruelle and homage
To hym was done, in landes al about
Was none wythstode, so was he dzed and doute.

With walles fayre, and toures freshe about

Bys

His citee great of Troynouaunt ful fayre
ful wel he made and batelled throughtout
And palays fayre, for royales to appare
Amendynge other defectyfe and unfayre
from London stone to his palays royal
That nowe Ludgate is knowen ouer al.

This pa
lays is
now the
byschop
of Lens
dons pa
lays bes
side Bos
les.

¶ Betwene Londonstone & Ludgate forth right
That called was then for his name Ludstone
He made men buyld, that London so then hight
His Palays fayre, then made he there anone
With toures high, both of lyme and stone
Besyde Ludgate, and his temple nere thereby
his God to serue and hym to glozifye.

¶ When he had reigned by fourtie yere al out
he died so, and in his temple fayre
Entoumbed was, with stories all about
And rogeus was then his sonne and heyre
Passyng of sight and July fayre
Tenancius his yonger sonne of age
Whiche wer to young to rule the heritage.

¶ Cassibalan there vncle then was kyng
And founde his nephewes full honestly and wel
And noutried them whyle they wer chylder ying
And at their age when they could reason fele
He them auanced right worshipfully and wel
And roge he made and created duke of Kent
Of Troynouaunt also by whole entent.

Cassib
alan rei
gned.
ccxiii.
yere.

The. xliii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Julius Caesar came to Britayn, that nowe is
England, and aryued in Thamys, & fled to Fraunce
for newe succoure.

¶ He

Cassibalan.



Cmade also then Cenancius
Duke of Cornewale, that tyme of
mykeill might

In whiche tyme so came Caesar
Julius

Into the lande of Fraunce þ nowe

so hight

And on a daye walkyng bp and downe full right
On the sea syde, where he this lande did see
Delyryng sore of it the souerayntee.

This nauye great with many souldyours
To sayle anone into this Brytain made
In Chamis stoue, wher he had ful sharpe shoyes
And countred was with Brytons that abade
With Cassibalan the kyng of Brytons brade
Where after battayl synpten and forfought
Julius fled and then pꝛeuayled nought.

To Fraunce agayne, and there he did sojourne
The frenche were layne of his discomfiture
And trowed to make hym so fro theim retoꝛne
But the Brytons full busely did their cure
In this battel, as came theim of nature
The dukes of Kent and eke of Cornewale
And Remynus theyꝛ eme did moſte pꝛeuayle.

Crudan the kyng that tyme of Albany
Guechet the kyng also of Uenedose
That northwales nowe is called specially
And kyng Bryetayle, that was ful vertuons
A manne in armes passyngly curious
Of Deneyce, southwales that nowe hight

He

He asked helpe of Fraunce that ſayled hym right.

Then ſent he to all landes there about
To poore men al, he gaue full great riches
And expled menne of warre that were ful ſtoute
He gaue liuelode and felons all douteles
He delpyered quyte fre of all diſtrec
Al outlawed men he graunted ful pardon
The bondemen alſo of euerp region.

The. xliii. Chapter.

Howe, when Julius Caesar ſayled power, he gatte
newe power by wily polycy, to haue his purpoſe, and
came again to Britayn and fled the ſeconde tyme.

In whiche meane tyme, when he was
ready ſo
With his nauye came to Britayn a-
gaine
Into Chamis wher Caſtibalaſyn the
Great pyles of tree and yron ſet hym againe
His ſhippes to perſhe, and ſo he did certaine
Throughe whiche, greate parte of his nauye was
And ſome other in batayl wer cōſouided. (Drowned)

Then fled he eft, with ſhippes that he had
Into the lande of Fraunce, where he was ere
hym purpoſyng to Rome, ful wo by ſtad
Of his rebuke with ſorowe and with care
But then the kyng full glad of his euell fare
A feaſt royal at Tropnouaunt he made
Whers great diſcorde, with his newewes he had.

The. xlv. Chapter.

Howe Julius Caesar came again to Britayn the thyrde
tyme & accorded with þe kyng and had truage of hym.
Purpoſed

Cassibalan.

Purposed fully on thē to bee auenged
For whiche they sent anone to Julius
And prayed to come his right & he had chale
To clayme it hole, they wrote him right thus (ged
They should hym helpe with people plenteous
Throug whole councel, full gladly then he came
At Douer arryued, with mykell ioye and game.

Where then the kyng Cassibalan he met
And fought full soze, where that Androgeus
Out of a wood on Cassibalan set
And to a mount hym dꝛoauē, where that Julius
And he hym sieged again full coragious
He fought full soze with all manly defence
All nyght afoze, by mighty resistance.

But sone for dꝛede of famyschement
He treated with the duke Androgeus
To paye his trybute to Roome in good entent
And to amende all thynges greuous
With all his might and hertes beneuolente
Androgeus to al this did assent
And made Julius to this fully consent.

This truage was .iii. M. li. wel payde
Eche yere to Rome, of siluer good and fyne
These pꝛinces thus accorded wer and dated
In peace and reste, and Julius went fro heyne
To warre vpo Doinpey, & nought would enclue
To Romes Senate after that Julius
Hym had conquered by warre ful fortunous.

With whom then went the duke Androgeus
And

And in Brytain no lenger would abyde
 He lefte hys brother duke Tenuancius
 In Brytayne wyth Cassibalain that tyme
 And so to Rome wyth Julius dyd tyme
 But Reminus brother of Cassibalan
 ful manly fought on Julius tymes tweyne.

Wyth strookes soze, ayther on other bet
 But at the last this pryncce sp? Julius
 Crocea mors, his sweard in sheld set
 Of the manly worthy sp? Reminus
 whyche of manly force and myght vigorous
 The swearde he brought awaye out of the felde
 As Julius it set fast in hys shelde.

Throughe which stroke, sp? Reminus then died
 And buried was at the north gate certayne
 Of London then, wher now is Scotland caryed
 London cyte royal of al Brytayne
 Thus this worthy knyghte in his graue besayne
 Crocea mors, hys sweard layde by hys syde
 Whych he broughte frome Julius that tyme

After whych accorde thys kynge Cassibalan
 Reigned fully in Brytain then seven yere
 Payng trespase to Rome alwaye certayne
 Rulynge hys land in lawe and peace ful clere
 And reigned had in all, ful thyrtye yere
 And fourte aboue vnto hys god so yede
 Buried at Ebzanke w all knightlie worthihede.

The. xlv. Chapter.

Tenuancius

Senancius
reigned
xvii. yeres

Senancius

Senancius hys newewe then ful faire
King Judas sonne þ Duke was of Corne
With Diademe was crowned as (wayle
Of al Brittain had the gouernale (ryght heyr
Who kept the lād in his time by good gouernale
ful. xvii. yere to his god then went
Buried ful fayre as to such a pynce appent

Kimbalin

Kymbalyne so was his sonne and heyr
Nourished at Rome instruct myth cheualre
That knight was made with honour great & late
By Octavian reigntyng then interly
Emperour then of Romes great monarchy
In whose tyme was both peace and concorde
Throug al the worlde, and bozne was chyst our
(lozde

This Kimbalyne reigned fully. x. yere
And ruled thys land in lawe & peace ful wel
And dyed then as sayth the chronyclet
That ilke same yere that Chyst was bozne w ze
Of hys mother & mayden fayre & wele
For chysten folke by grace then to redeme
From payne of hell to blisse as clarkes deme

From time þ world fyrst was begonne & made
Unto the tyme of Chystes natiuite
Accompted were throughe chystendome full byade
fiue. M. yere. ix. scoze and. xix. be
O; Goddes sonne came man for to be
As Crosius the dysciple of Austyne
In thys wyptyng so as he could determyne

Guyder

Guyder hys sonne and heyr full corageous
That

that crowned was and kyng of excellence
the tribute whiche the Romans had of vs
denied then and made greute resistance
with greute trouble and manly violence
unto the tyme that he had reigned clere
In Brytain by fourty and foure yere.

reigned.
.xl.iiij.
yere.

In whiche yere then thempetour Claudius
at Caetre peers that now Dozchestre hight
Attuned a lande with people corageous
he closed the gates afoze with mikill might
And the citee assauted bothe daie and night
The citezens to famishe and conquer
his name in armes and honoure to proffer

But king Guider fought there w thempetour
And slewe menne on euery syde aboute
Kelsowed the towne as verie protectour
And made hym to fle, wether he neuer so stoute
But one Haimon roode faste into the route
Raupng on hym the Brytains sygne of warre
Who in the pces slewe the kyng Guider.

The. xlii. Chapter.

How Arviragus kyng of Britain reigned. xliiii.
yere. And how in his tyme Claudius emperoure
had truage of this lande, and married his doughter
to the kyng.

A Arviragus that sawe his brother slain
his brothers armes vpon hymself he cast
And kyng was then of all þe great Britain
Upon Haimon pursued till at the laste
he drowe hym into the haven full faste
And drowned hym there, after hight Hamo towne
That

Arvirag^s
reigned.
xl. & foure
yere.

Arutragus.

That menne now call Hoſte ſpeche Southhāpte

To wyneſtre kyng Arutragus roode
Whether Claudi⁹ came to Romans full of pryde
Where Arutragus with Brytains hym abode
But as thei ſhould haue fought in that tyde
By bothe their counſailers thei wer drawe on ſide
Claudius doughter to wed thei were accorde
And truage to paie eche yere without diſcorde.

Then Claudius ſente for dame Gemme
His doughter faire full womanly to ſee
She came in haſte as then it might ſuffiſe
To come out from ſo farre lande and countree
And in a mede with floures of greate beaute
Wedded thei were, where Claudius then made
A citee faire Caire glawe to name it had

Where of
Glouces
ſter was
ſo named.

Of his name it was ſo denominate
Now Glouceſter ſtandynge on ſeuerne ſyde
The mariage after Chriſte was incarnate
Was in the yere fourty and ſyre that tide
So in Brytain twoo yere he did abide
Bycades iſles in the meane tyme he conquered
In whiche he enfeſſid the kyng & hym preferred.

And home to Roome he paſſed ſo again
But after again, the kyng truage denied
And none would paie, wherfore Vaſpaſſan
Hether was ſente with Romains fortified
At Rutepoſte that now Sanwicke is notified
The kyng hym inette and putte hym fro the lande
To Toteneſſe wente and notwithſtandynge lande

Es

So wente he forth to Exceter his wate
 Caire Denelgozte then hight and it assaied
 where then the kyng hym mette þ̄ scuentene daie
 with hoste ful strong, but then þ̄ kyng preuailed
 But Gennise the quene greatly auailed
 By her treaty made thein full well accorde
 That with Roome he did no moze disorde.

The. xliiij. Chapter.

Holy Ioseph Aramathie came vnto Brytain with
 Waspasian, and christened a parte of this lande,



Waspasian wintered then in Brytain
 At the prater of quene Gennise
 And had truage then fully paid again
 To Waspasian, as befoze was the gyse
 With whom Ioseph full holy and full wise
 Of Aramathie with his feloes fourtene
 Into this lande then came and gaue contene.

Waspasian

For whom so then Waspasian prayed the kyng
 The quene also to hym to bee good lord
 And good lady, whiche thei graunted in all thyng
 Declaryng then, and fully did recozde
 This worthy Waspasian by his owne woozde
 How he hym tooke out of Cayphas prisione
 Preserued by God and not by mannes reasone.

For forty yere and twoo he in prisione late
 fro Chyistes death to tyme that he hym fande
 Without meete oꝝ drynke by any maner wate

But

Vaspasian.

But onely was comforted by Godes sonde
And how he hym brought out of Jerusalem lode
All this he tolde, the kyng and eke the quene
And praied theim his supporters to been.

After the wynter nerte in somer tied
Vaspasian to Roome then wente again
Joseph abode and fully landified
The lame of Chyiste, to whiche he was full sain
And the kyng gaue the south to sain
Twelue hides of lande that then Dewtryn hight
Whiche Blaistenbury is now named full right

In Brytain then this Joseph did conuerte
Brytons ay, how to know the incarnation
Afore that Dagnins and also peruerter
He taught theim of his conuersacion
Of his passion and his resurreccion
With other thynges as the chronicler saith
That apperteineth to Chyistes faith

Agrestes. Agrestes reigned by sixty and foure yere
When he was dedde & in caire glawe was buried
In a temple entoumbed faire and clere
Of his goddes that there were deified
About the whiche tyme so our lady Mary died
Orels assumpete in body and soule on liue
Unto the blisse after her ioyes fiue.

But Vaspasian with his hoste full ropall
And Joseph also came into Brytain
The yere of Chyiste was then accompte in all
Seuenty and sixe the sooth for to sain

When

Howe Maspassia to Roome retourned home again
The kyng endued Joseph in meutryne

The. xlii. Chapter.

How Joseph converted this kyng Arutragus and
gaue hym a shilde of the armes þe we call saint Ge-
orges armes whiche armes he bare euer after, and
thus became that armes to bee the kinges armes of
this lande, long afore saint George was gotten or
borne, & as Marian the profounde chronicle saith
he bare of siluer in token of clenness, a crosse of gou-
les in significaciō of the bloodde þe Christ bleed on þe
crosse, & for it must nedes of reaso be called a crosse.

Joseph converted this kyng Arutragus
By his prechynge to know the lawe deuine
And baptized hym as writte hath Menius?
The chronicle in Britain tounge full spene
And to Christe lawe, made hym endlyne
And gaue hym then a shilde of siluer white
A crosse endlong and ouertwhart full perfecte

These armes wer vused thzough all Britain
for a cōmon signe eche māne to know his naciōn
from enemies whiche now we call certain
saint Georges armes, by Menius enformacion
And thus this armes, by Josephs creacion
full long afore saint George was generate
Were worship there of inikell elderdate

The. xlii. Chapter.

Marcius the kyng of Britain reigned sixty yere and
thre, how the þeighres inhabited firste in Albany
that is Scotlande now in these daies, in Catenes &
thei were the north þeighres, and a parte of theim
inhabited sone after bitwixte the Scottes sea and
twelid that were called South þeighres.

f

Marcius

Augustus.



And his soonne was the intrengate
And sette on high in trone of maiesty
With croune of gold full roially coro
As worthy was unto his roialte(nate
Who nourished was at Rome in his
With his mothers kinne & beste of theprie(iuete
With Claudius also, & was his owne graundfere

In whose tyme a Deight hight Rodryke
With power greate by sea came fro Sythy
As proude and byrme as lyon marinerlike
Arrived so by in Albany
Destroyng whole the lande all sodainly
With whom the kyng then fought in greate bat-
And slewe hym without any fail. (tail

Where then in signe of his high victory
He sette there by a stone in remembraunce
Of his triumph, of his aduersary
Titled on it, his same so; to auauce
How the Deightes, there brought to vttraunce
Where the redde crosse is now in Westmerlande
In Stanes moore, as I can vnderstande.

Then to & Deightes lefte a liue, he gaue cate-
To dwell vpon and haue in heretage (nesse
Whiche wedded were, with Irishe as I gesse
Of whiche after Scottes came on that linage
For Scottes bee to saie in their language
A colleccion of many into one
Of whiche the Scottes wee called so anone.

The. i. Chapter.

How

Howe Scottes came of Scots kynge Pharois daughter that came after many day into Albany, so that of wightes, Irish & Pharois people collect together were Scottes named. For at the taverne or at a gathering of people or of money is called a scotte & so came first the name of Scottes, which Scottes inhabited them betwixt Carnes and the Scottishe sea.

But Metwynus the Bryton chronicler saith in his chronicles otherwysse That Gadelus and Scots in the yere Of Christe seuentie and five, by assise At Stone inhabited as might suffice And of her name that countree there aboute Scotlande she called that tyme withouten doubt

This Scots was, as Metwyn saith the sage Daughter and bastarde of kynge Pharois & daye Whome Gadele wedded, and in his olde age Unto a lande he went, where he inhabited ay Whiche yet of his name is called Gadelway And with the peightes he came into Albanie The yere of Christe aforesaid openlye

Howe
Gadelway
had first
the name
of kynge
Gadelus

And at her death she left a precious stone In Albany, on which Moles did preache And buried there she was by her selfe alone Which stone was holy, as some men the did teache And did miracles, so was the common speache In honour it was had, bothe of great and small And holden for a relique moost speciall.

This stone was called the regall of Scotlāde On whiche the Scottissh kynges were bycheleisse set At their coronement as I can vnderstande

The regall
of
Scot-
lande.

Harpyus.

For holynes of it, so did they of debte
All their kynges vpon this stone was sette
Unto the tyme kyng Edward with long shankes
Brought it away again the Scottes vnthakes,

Subjec-
tion of
Scot-
lande.

At Westmonestery it offred to saint Edward
Where it is kepte and conserued
To tyme that kynges of Englande afterward
Should cozoned bee, vnder their sete obserued
To this entent kept and reserued
In remembraunce of kynges of Scottes alwaye
Subiectes should be, to kynges of Englande ay.

Also afore the fift kyng Henryes daye
Their silver coigne was, as it ought to bee
The kynges face loked on syde alwaye
To his soueraigne loyde of Englande as I see
Whiche to been hetherward of egalitee
Unto their loyde they haue of newe presumed
To loke euē forth, which would now be consumed.

Kyng Harpyus kepte þe realme in lawe & peace
Full of riches and of prosperitee
And dyed so at Sarum buried douteles
When he had reigned sittle yere and thye
His tribute payed, full well to Roome citee
Of Chyistes fapth sum what he was enformed
But muche moze he neded to haue been reformed.

Coylus
reigned
xiii.
yere.

Coylus his sonne was kyng then crowned so
Who nurtred was at Roome in great vertue
Held well his lawes, equall to frende and fo
And in his doopnges full iuste he was and true
His

His life alwaye and rule in vertue grewe
That full great name of hym was notisped
And in all landes of honoure multiplied.

The lordes, gentyles, peimen and commontee
He cherished well, and in no wise oppressed
And to them gaue, where was necessitee
And tribute payde to Roome vndistressed
And at his death with sickenelle impressed
He buried was at Nozwhiche then ful clere
When he reigned had fully. xlii. yere.

Somewhat in fayth of Christ, he was instruct
But not fully, as was necessitee
Like as he was in Rome with hym inducte
So helde he forth in all stabilittee
And as he harde in all similitee
Howe Joseph had his graundser enformed
With benyng herte and wyl, he hym confyrmed.

The. li. Chapter.

Lucius kyng of Britayn reigned. liii. yere, and was
the seconde Christened kyng of Britayn by Faggan
and Dubyan that baptized al this land. and for the
same cause bare the same armes after he was bapti-
zed. Also he made of. iiii. arche-lampnes in Britayne
thre archbischoppes at London, Yorke and Carlion.



fter king Coile, his sonne then Lucius
So crowned was with royall diademe
In al vertue followed his father Col-
lus.

To compare hym in all that inrght beseme
He put his wyl after as his witte could deme

Lucius
kyng.

Lucius.

In so farre forth, that of Chyristentee
He continued so a Chyristen man to bee,

And in the yere of Chyristes Incarnacion
An. C. foure scoze and tenne
Eleuthery the first, at supplicacion
Of Lucius, sent hym twoo holy menne
That called wer faggan and Duuyen
That baptized hym, & all his realme throughtoute
With hertes glad and labour deuoute.

They taught þ folke, þ law of Chyrist eche dape
And halowed all the temples in Chyristes name
All inawmentes and Idols caste awaye
Throught all Britayn, of al false goddes thesame
The temples flampnes, the Idols for to shame
They halowed eke and made bishoppes seeg
Twenty and. viii. at dyuers great citees.

Of. iii. archflaming, thei made archbischoppes
One at London, Troynouaunt that hight
For all Logres with lawes full autentikes
To rule the churche and Chyristentee in right
Another at Carlion a towne of might
For all Cambre, at Ebzanke the thryde
From Trent north, for Albanp is kyde.

All these woikes Eugenp then confyrmid
The kyng then gaue to faggan and Duuyen
The yle of Analoon and by chexter affirmed
That was called otherwyle Mewtryen
Also frely as Ioseph and his holy men
Had it afoze, then forth for theyr dispence

Wherof

Wherof thei were glad, and thought it sufficiency

C But when this kyng had reigned in contemplacyon
fiftie and .iiij. yere in all prosperitee (cyon)
He departed to God, desirynge his saluacion
In heauen to dwell, with all felicitye
Where the angelles syng incessantly
Glorie, honour and everlastyng prayse
Be to the lamb: of God, nowe and alwayes

At Cantelowe buried, after his dignitee
for whom all men made great lamentacyon
Who bare before the baptyme of prosperitee
His auncestres armes, and after with consolacion
He bare the armes, by his baptisacion
Which Ioseph gaue vnto Aruigarus
As the Briton sayth, that byght Mewynus

For cause he had none heire to kepe the land
Through al Britain the barons gan discorde
Unto the tyme that Romayns toke on hand
To chosse a prynee by their stedfast accord
But .iiij. yere were gone or then thei could accorde
In whych tyme then Seuer the senatour
Hether came to be their gouernour

The .liij. Chapter.

Showe that there was Britons warre .iiij. yere after
the deathe of Lucius.

S Seuer thus the worthy senatour
Descended doune, right heire to Androgeus
The eldest sonne of Lud that with the em-
perour

Seuer
kyng

Seuerus.

Out of Brytayne that went wpyth Julius
Whych the Senatoure also sayde Seuerus
To Brytayne came and was in troympate
And wpyth a crowne of golde was coronate

He brought wpyth hym from Rome two legyōs
Wpyth whom great part of Brytons held full soze
And other part of the Northen Brytons
Wpyth Fulgen Rode, was kyng of Scotland boze
Gathered great people moze and moze
With whom þe Wyghtes & fugitiues. viii. c. senable
Destroyed the lande by warre full violable.

The. liii. Chapter.

Howe Seuer made a dyke wpyth a wall on it, of tur-
ues and soddes to kepe the Wyghtes and the Scot-
tes from the Brytons, ouer whar the lande frome
the east sea vnto the west sea.

But king Seuer hym dyoue w battaile
Far north vnto þe Scottish sea (soze
Where thei abode & dwelled for cur-
moze

Betwne þe Scottish sea & the dede moe lee
But some boke say to Tyne in certayne
And so is lyke, for Seuer thei dyd make
A dyke, and wal for the Scottes & Wyghtes sake.

From Tynmouth to Alclud his sayze cyte
With turues & soddes & wer them to agaynstade
Wher the water myght not the Cneympte
Kepe of warre frome hys true Brytayne lande
By. l. myles accompted I vnderstande
To the west sea, that was of great Brytain
This wal w dikes, pyghtes & Scottes did refrain
But

But kyng Fulge of Bightes & Scottes again
With hoost ful great, sieged Ebzanke citee
Whiche Seuer rescowd, and was slayn
And Fulgen also for beten there did dye
Receaved his guerdon for hys tyzannye
At Ebzanke the kyng Seuer was buryed
With victoꝛpe and honours gloꝛyfyed.

Getan his sonne, a Romayne generate
The Romayns then, hastily dyd crowne
And Byptons blode to gether congregate
By hole assent, and playue election
Bassian chace wpythout collusion
For bozne he was of the semynities
Of Brytany bloode and consanguinitie

Best king
of Brytain
chose by
Romans.

This Bassian with Getan then dyd fyght
In great battayl wher Getan so was slayn
To Bassian so dyscended al the ryght
Of whych the Byptons all were full fayn
Within.iiii. weekes was al thys done ful playn
But Bassian then hys brother buryed
And Romaynes al on hypes mortifyed.

Bassian
reigned
vii. yere.

Bassian then was crowned kynge of Brytain
ful wel he held the realme. vii. yere in peace
To time Caranse confedered him agayne
With Scottes & Bightes wpo him gon increase
All fugitives, outlawes to him came pzease
for long he had a robber bene by the sea
And richer was then any king might be.

By his manhode set al on robberie

Of

Carence.

Of lowe blode came, rylen by insolence
To foudpours he gaue wages ful greatlpe
For to betray the kyng by dylpence
He to the kyng made by violence
Whych pryncple kepte, he slewe the kyng anone
In place wher as thei wer wpth hym alone.

The. liiii. Chapter

Carence kyng of Bypayn reigned. iiii. yere by treason
borne of lowe bloode and rose vp of robbery by the sea.

Through treason of Carense Scottes
and the Wightes
Assented so by fals confederacion
Throughe his giftes and his subtile
sightes

Carence
reigned
iiii. yeres.

Betwene them wrought in counsaile priuatly
This false Carense so gat the monarchye
Of all Bypayn wpthin the sea aboute
Foure yere he reigned, of port that was ful stoute

The barons were so wpth gold englapmed
By this Carense and by hys language swete
Semyng lyke truthe in maner as he proclapmed
As nothyng is moze redy for to mete
Then couetous and falsehode as men lete
So were they al with his giftes enfecte
The kyng was slayne and he was electe

But when to Rome was knowne þ false dissent
Of thys Carense and his wrong intruccion
The senate sent a letter by theyr concepte
Hym to destrope by due execucion
Who for hys faute gaue hym absolucyon

In batell stronge lewe hym and had the felde
And Scottes all and pyghtes þ with hym helde.

The. lvi. Chapter.

The wordes of the maker of this boke vnto my Lord
of Yorke touchynge gouernaunce of this land, by ex-
ample of this kyng Karanle through robbery celen
of poore bloods to for all estate.



Worthy lord and duke of Yorke that
been

Consydre well this case ful lamentable
The righteous kyng wel gouerned as
it was sene

Thus murthered was, of hym that was vnhabile
And set hym selfe in trone moſte honourable
Of all Britayne, yet came he by of nought
And of lowe bloude, and it wer wysely sought.

Good lord when ye be set well vnder crowne
With treptours and misruled rpatours
Dispence right so, with all suche absolucion
And lette hym seke no other correctours
But maynteyne theim, your lawes gouernours
And ouer all thyng, be ye the cheſe iustice
To kepe the peace, that no false you suppyse.

The. lvi. Chapter.



Alecto then crowned and made kyng
Of al Britain reynynge fully yeres thre
And wel he ruled in all maner werkynge
By power of the Romans great postee
That brought with him from Rome legions thre
But Britayns then dyd set a parliament
And chace a kyng by theyr hole assente

Alectus
kyng reig-
ned . iiii.
yere.

Alcliptade

Asclepiadote.

Asclepiade that was duke of Coznewayle
Who with Bytons to Troynouaunt came
Whylest Romans wer by theyr hole gouernalle
At sacrifyce of their goddes faynte and lame
Agaynst whom Aleto of great fame
Full mightly then faught tyll he was slayne
But Gallus dreyne all Romaynes in agayn.

And kept the walles for whiche Asclepiadote
The siege about the cytee strongly layde
In which meane while Bytons brake in, god wote
And slewe Gallus and Romayns soze astrayde
All out of araye and soze dismayde
Besyde a broke that walbroke men now call
That Galbroke then was called there ouer al.

Of Gallus name, that slayn was in that place
And some sayne of Walsheimen afterwarde
Walbroke it called for a sodaine case
That then besel vpon a dape full harde
Of the Bytons that with theim so miscaryed
Ouer that ylike broke ful soze & harde distressed
By Cozynshimen slayne downe there, & oppressed

The. lvi. Chapiter.

Asclepiadote kyng of Britayn reigned. x. yere in whose
tyme was great persecucion in Britayn, saynt Albons
slayne and many thousandes slaine for Chyistes sake.

Asclepia-
dote re-
igned. x.
yere.



Asclepiadote was crowned king again
In royall wise with all solempnitee
The lawes wel he helde and putte in
greate payne
Ouer trespassours, for their peruersitee

Theues

Theues and robbers on galowis hanged to bes
But in his tyme theimperoure Dioclesian
Into Bypain then sente Maximian.

This Maximian to surname Hercelius
A tiraunte falle that chystenty annoped
Throug all Bypain of werke malicious
The chystened folke felly and soze destroyed
And thus the people with hym foule accloyed
Religious menne the pzeestes and clerkes all
Women with childe and bedyed folkes all

Childzen soukyng vpon the mothers pappis
The mothers also withouten any pitee
And chldzen all in their mothers lappis
The crepiles eke and all the chystentee
He killed and slewe with full greate cruelties
The churches byente all bokes oꝝ oznamentes
Belles, relikes, that to the churche appendes

The. lviij. Chapter.

This persecuciō was in 7 yere of Chyistes bieth .C.
lxxviii. yere and the .x. yere of kyng Asclepiadote.

Hewe that tyme and martired saict
Albone
And with hym also Julius and Arad
And Amphimaball that woulde not
Dye alone

But offered hym to die with hym anone
foꝝ Chyistes loue as faste as he might gone
foꝝ thousandes sele were martired in those daies
Whose soules bee now in blisse and shall alwaies

Asclepiadote reigned fully but tenne yere
who

Coplus.

Who for grete feare suffered all this pain
And durste nothyng again this tiraunt steare
But hym withdrew to hide hym was full fain
This persecucion as some chyonicles sain
The tenne pere was of Asclepiadote
For whiche duke Coyle again hym rose full hote.

The duke Calre Colun that hight Coplus
Whiche citee now this daie Colchester hight
Then crowned was that slewe Asclepiadotus
For cause he came not forth with all his might
The tiraunte fell to againstande as he hight
Wherefore Brytains wer all full glad and fain
Of kyng Coplus that succurred all their pain.

The.lix. Chapiter.

Kyng Coyle of Brytain reigned eleuen pere, that
was father to saincte Eline.

King Cop-
lus reyg-
ned eleue
pere.



He ruled the realme in lawe & peace
full well
That for his witte and vertuosite
Able he was as chyonicles coude
To haue ruled all theperalite (sele
for righteousnes, manhode, & mo-
A doughter had he and none other heire (calites
Eline that hight farre passyng good and faire

That afterwarde she was and is canonized
In thynne at Boome that is sainte Eline
Her father Coyle sette her to bee excercised
In philosophie and other science clene
In whiche she could her self right well demeane
That she was able by witte and sapience

The

The realme to rule and haue therof the regence

The. lx. Chapter.

How Constantine Senatour & emperour of Rome
wedded sainte Elin, & by her was kyng of this lāde

The Romans sēte to Britain Cōstācius
That Spain had put in hole subiection
Unto Rōome, as chronicles haue writ-
ten thus

who landed here without relection
To whom kyng Coyle by good derection
His message sente, offering hym his truage
And he to stande kyng, and holde his heritage.

Of whiche, Constance was glad of his entente
And here abode at praiser of the kyng
His doughter wed by their whole assente
Eline his heire that was bothe good and yong
Of his high wisdom and womanly connyng
And there with all the faireste that menne knewe
More Angelyke then womannyshe of hewe.

Within fīue weekes after her father died
Buried at Caer Colone his owne citee
Greatly commended, well famed and laudified
Bothe on this side and beyonde the see
Eleuen yere reigned in greate dignitee
And ouer all thynge alwaie common publike
Of his realme wroughte not many kynges hym

The. lxi. Chapter.

(like

Constance was kyng crowned wth Diademe
And Elin quene throug^h al great britain
On whō he gatte a soonne & had baptis-
m

That

Constance
kyng reig-
ned fiftē
yere.

Constantyne.

That Constantyne called was then in certain
But kyng Constaunce of Roome was his chieftain
By the senate firste made the emperoure
And after kyng of Brytain and gouernoure.

Whiles he laboured for Roomes publike pro:
With his feloe that hight Galerius (fite)
That emperoure of Roome by greates delite
Whiche of maxence of poete malicious
Warred full soze with werke full cheualtrous
And all the weste this Constaunce had and helde
Galerius had the Cite therein to buyde.

And after when this Constaunce of Brytain
Was crowned kyng the common wele preferred
Of all his realme not lettynge for disdain
He wrought it aye and no tyme it differred
As chronicles of hym saied and referred
And when he had reigned whole fiftene yere
At Eborake was he buried full clere.

The lxxi. Chapter.

Constantine kyng of Britain sooone of Constaunce
of sainte Elpne, by .cccxiii. yere was first kyng of
Britain, and afterwarde emperoure of Roome.

Constantyne reigned .ccc. & iiii. yere.



As sooone full younge Constantyne
his heire
Then crowned was by all þe baronage
Who likeli was, semely & right seire
Of fiftene yeres, so in his tender age
Greate manhode had to rule his heritage
Of greate wysedome was and of sapience
By discrecion had he intelligence.

¶

The had also a lambishe pacience
To here all pleintes mekely with sobernes
Alvons chere in felde with good regence
Discrecion good, to chastice wickednes
The welfare of his realme with busines
Preserued euer and kepe in regymente
And where nede was, he made suppowelmente

The senatours of Roome by letters wel endite
Prayed hym to come to Roome as emperoure
fo: to destroye Maxence and disherite
Of chysten folke the cruell turmentoure
Of chisten faith, the cursed confoundoure
fo: of his birth thei saied it sette hym so
Maxence to stroye that was his fathers foo

Fo: whiche he went to Roome w greate power
Of Byttons strong, with flemynge & Barbayns
Henauldes, Gelders, Burgonians & Frenche full
Duchmē, Lübarde also many Alinaignes (clere
The pere of Chyste. CCC. x. with Romains
Wette with Maxence and with Dioclesian
And their feloe that hight Maximian.

Sumwhat afrated of their multitude
Constantyne then he helde bp to heuen
And sawe a crosse in whiche was enclude
This reason good in hoc vinco, full exine
His ferdies so anone then did hym leuen
In signe of whiche, a crosse of goules he bare
In his baner white, & with hym fought he there

The had the felde and putte them to the flight
g where

Constantyne.

Wherefoze euer after he bare twoo armes clere
In all likenesse to euey mannes sight
And Englisheimen in this land bare theim here
Saint Georges armes now called wouten were
Thus hath the kyng of Englande, to theim right
Throughe elders gotten, by Godes verie might

The senate whole, hym mette and magnified
His triumphe, and mighty victoꝝ
With laude and honoure fully glorified
As blage was, that tyme in Romaine
At certain gates sette vp for memoꝝ
And crowned hym in imperiall trone
That so manly had quit theim of their sone.

The. lxiij. Chapter.

The aunswere of Constantine when he was a leper
and would haue been heled with the bloodde of in-
nocentes, and how he sente his mother sainte Eline
to seke þe holy crosse. And how he gaue his palays &
dignite imperiall of Rome to Siluester. And how
he wente to Besaunce and buylded it all newe, and
called it Constantyne and destroyed all the Arianes
heresies & died there at sainte Apchomedie whose
daie is halowed with the Biches in the twety and
one daie of Maye.



At how that he a leaper after grew
And by his leches, bitterly isfourmed
Many innocetes whiche there were
borne newe
For his healthe shoulde slain been
and disformed
By theim into heale again returned
In whose bloodde bathed, he shoulde haue been
His leproous swames, to haue washed of clene
But

But howe their death of imperiall pitee
 He then released, rather to haue his pain
 Then to recouer by tyranne crueltee
 His health and life so to gette again
 For who these innocentes, should haue been slain
 And howe he was, by Siluester made clene
 With holy water that yet in Roome is seen.

Sorcerye.

Now howe he sent his mother sainte Elin
 To seke the holy crosse, whiche she hym brought
 He howe she brought the clerkes with her again
 Of Jewes lawe, it to approue for nought
 With Christen clerkes, by reason well out sought
 He when our lawe by Siluester for trewe
 Was best approued, that other lawe vntrewe

Howe then he gaue his owne palays royall
 With Roome all whole, and all the dignitee
 Through out Romany, with sea imperiall
 To Siluester that had the papall sea
 He gaue it to hym all quite and free
 And to his successours perpetually
 He howe he destroyed the arpan heresy.

Constan-
 tyne first
 graunted
 to the B.
 of Roome
 the prima
 cpe.

Now howe he went from Rome to Besaunce
 And of his name, then called it Constantyne
 Nowe menne it call, by all remembraunce
 Constantyne noble, where to dwell he did enclyne
 There his lawes to kepe and to determyne
 And there he sette his throne imperiall
 And for his domes, his sea iudiciall.

Now howe he dyed, after that Richomeyd

g it

In

Octavius.

In cathologe among the saintes nombred
Of Maye the twentie and one daye in dede
Under myne buryed and subumbred
Among al Christe kynges worthy to be remebred
Whole daye and feast the Grekes haue eche yere
Solemply, as for a saint full clere.

And when he dyed, reigned had and imperate
In Brytain, Roome, and also at Constantyne
By thirty and foure yere ende, and determinate
And in the yere of Christ as men did determine
When this worthy emperour, his life should fyne
Thre hundred was and forty also full euen
So when his soule was rauished into heuen

And these logyng not to Brytons gouernaunce
But vnto Roome and the empire
Whiche me nede not with my stile auance
For Marian hath the Romayn chzonicle
All the whole substaunce and the mater
So wel it maye with rethorike termes sayed
Whiche by my simplenes I would not wer appar-
(red)

Octavius

But after his daye came one Octavius
Duke of Westesex that crouned was for kyng
That sleugh the werdeins of Constātnus
Whiche that he sette for Brytain gouernynge
In his absence to kepe it in all thyng
For whiche the senate Traherne to Britaine sente
Saint Elyn's vnckle that into Britayn wente.

With legyons thre, at Portesmouth did land
And to Wychester then rode forth right
Where

Where Octavius came, hym to withstande
 And with hym faught and put hym to flight
 Went to Portemouth again full right
 Where then he shipped full fast to Albanye
 Where on Stanemoze thei faught again on hys

Where Traherne wan the felde with victorie
 And into Logres came, crowned with dignitee
 And well did rule then all his monarchye
 All men hym loued for his sanguinitee
 In his tyme in great nobilitie
 He kepte it well from all tyranny
 foure yere complete in all thyng worthely:

King Tra
 herne.

In whiche tyme, so then the said Octavius
 Procured his death, by which then was he slayn
 By a traytour full false and odious
 So was he kyng of Britayn the again
 And sone then after, he fell in age vnbain
 A daughter he had, that was both good and faire
 Whom some counsailed, because she was his heire,

To Conan Mervadoke anone for to mary
 And other counsailed vnto Maximian
 kyng Traherne his sonne a prince of Romany
 To Constantyne next heire he was alaane
 Whiche mariage was fulfilled and tane
 Maximian her wed, then Octavius
 By fourteen yere then reigned and dyed thus.

Maximian after hym ganne succede
 And crowned was maugre of all his sone
 for yre of whiche Conan departed in dede

Marimian
reigned in
al. xxxiii
yere.

Marimian.

And warred sore on Logres so anone
Wherfore the kyng, full faste with hoste gan gon
And countred hym with bataile fell and strong
The kyng preyayled, that other so did emong.

Till on a daye, their frēdes made theim accord
The kyng ruled the lande, full well in peace
Fue yere fully, without any disorde
In whiche tyme he gatte full great ryches
Thought in hym self, ouer the sea to passe
Hauyng no wyll, in Bryton long to abyde
But into Fraunce, he was so sette in pryde.

With hoste ful greate he landed in Armoyske
A duchy that was longyng vnto Fraunce
The lesse Brytayn, nowe of Gaule kyngyske
And conquered it by marciall gouernaunce
To Conan then, it gaue hym to auauunce
To holde of hym, and called it lesse Brytain
And stuffed it then with Brytons, soth to sain

And forth he went & wan the realme of Fraunce
And so by processe, Almaigne hym obeyed
So did a great parte of Italy, by accordaunce
He put to flight Gacian, that hym desobeyed
And Valentinian, with hym conueighed
And sleugh by battayle, Fulgen mightely
And Emperour was made of Romany.

Conan the kyng, then of litle Brytain
To Dyante the duke of Cornewayle sent
For Ursula his daughter letters plain
His wife to bee, in very good entent

With her also of maydens, that were gent
xi. M. in his lande to be wed
for French women, thei would haue none to bed.

The. xl.
M. v. p.
gens.

This Dionate, custos was of Brytain
his daughters with those bigins the forth he set
In Chamys shipped, and cast in Almayne
By tempest great, their shippes al to rent
Many of them were dead, and many went
In sickenes, frayd in stormes, & soze tempest
That ful fayne the ther, wold haue had there rest.

Guaymes was then kyng of Houndland
And Malga kyng of Bightes, painimes hatous
In whose landes thei arriued, I vnderstand
Unto theym then, thei were ful odious
Passyng yzeful, and ful malycions
And for thei would not, be deuirginitate
Thei slue them al, thzough cruelte and hate

Which now be sayntes, & mecters everychone
In nonnes mynster, conserued in Coleyn
That nombred bene, both wyth frend and soone
xi. M. birgins, of great Brytain
Marimian the emperour of Romayn
When he had reigned xxxiii. yere
By Bractias frendes was buried, & layd on bere.

The. lxxiii. Chapter.

Bractian kyng of Brytain, in whose tyme kyng
Malga and Guaymes destroyed al Brytain.

Bractian
kyng.

Bractian, when Marimian was slayne
To Brytain sent then, by the Senatours
In whose time big Malga & big Swaine
g. llll. Thys

Gracyan

Thys land ouer road, standyng in al honours
That mortal foes, and cruel tormentours
To Chyften sayth were al malycious
Al mercyles and passyng rigorous.

Whych kynges two, roote of all crueltee
ful false payneimes replete of felony
The churches bzent, and slewe the commontes
Wyues nor chyldre, ne yet the clargye
Ne religyous ne yet the prelacie
Thei spared not, but mercyles theim kyled
Of wykednes so foule, thei were fulspilled

But Gracyan that crouned was and kyng
In domys false, and in his iudgementes
fel dispiteous great tallages takyng
Both of the lordes there landes and rentes
And of gentelnes agayne all there ententes
So dyd he also of al the commontee
For whyche thei slewe hym wythout pyte

Swames and also Malga the kynges two
Destroyng Bypain without any rest
The Senate sent a legion of knyghtes tho
Into this land, of eche regyon the best
Chosen out of all the worthiest
The which put Swames and Malga to flyght
That shpypped home vnto there land ful ryght

The. lrb. Chapiter.

The Senate of Rome sente a legyon of knyghtes in
to Bypayn, who made the Bypions to make a walle
of lyme and stone frome the east sea vnto the west sea
and called it the pyghte wall

This

This legyon and Brytons hole assembled
That made a wal wel wrought of lyme and
stone

where Seuer made of turues and soddes scbled
with castels strong and toures for the nones
at eche myles ende to agaynstand al the foonyse
from sea to sea as yet it is wel sene
In diuers places, where it was wont to bene

This legion home returned then again
for Britayn then suffered great disease (payn
The Scottes & Pighes ther did theim ful great
Spre yere then next, of whyche to haue some ease
To kyng Aldry there sorowes to apease
Of lesser Brytain, then sent them Constantine
To be their head and also their medicine.

This Constantine king Aldries brothers wife
was crowned then with royal diademe
At Caircester as Brytons could deuyle
That wyth his hoost royal as dyd hym seme
Gwayne and Malga, as chronycles do expreme
The Scottes & Pighes he benged & ouercame
That Brytain wrought afoze ful mykel shame

Constanty
ne reigned
x. yere.

Thre sonnes he had full fayre by his wyfe
Constance then was the eldest sonne of all
That was not wyse, wherfoze then in his lyfe
He made hym monke, he was so bestpall
To get the lyfe aboue celestyal
His seconde sonne that hyght Aurelius
His surname was called Ambrosius

The

Constantyne.

The yongest sonne hight Alterpendragon
These two wer wyle, but yong thei wer of age
To their vncler sent, to be at his direction
Nurture to learne, and al maner language
By which after thei may haue knoulage
With discrecyon and al good ordinaunce
To rule & haue the realme by gouernaunce

When Constantine had reigned wel. x. yere
Upon a day, as he in his garden went
A weght that was in his house, hym ful nere
Hym slew anone, by treason and consent
Of Mordret, that euer in his entent
Conspired had, to haue the regalte
Of great Brytain, the kyng so to be.

The. lxxvi. Chapter.

Constance kyng of Brytain reigned but one yere, that
was monke first, and after made kyng, and was not wise
but an ydiote, whom Mordret crowned to that intent to
make hym selfe kyng by false contempnyng, sepyng & king
ful symple to rule the lande.

Constance
kyng,

Constance his sonne that monke was in
Cairgwent
Mordret duke of westsex, was that day
In hast crowned, by barons hole assent
Knouyng he should, be but a foole alway
The realme to saue, and kepe out of dyscray
He waged weghtes, an. C. to serue the kyng
Alway vpon his body abidyng.

He made the kyng, ful certainly beleue
Thei should espye among the enemytee

by their frendes, & no Dightes should him greue
 As Scottes of their great peruersite
 But thei of it, afoze in certaynte
 Should let hym wyt, there malyce to vnderftand
 Such subtyl meane, to fage the kyng he fande

And vnder that, a while he payed their wage
 ful wel with chere, ful good & al pleasaunce
 Unto a day he layed, to their knowledg
 The kyng nomore would haue their attendaunce
 But were he kyng, he would them wel auauce
 which thyng, & euer came to pefe
 About his persō, thei should be cherished as chere.

Their wages also, ful wel should be pated
 for which behest, anonc thei flue the kyng
 And brought his head to hym ful foule & rayed
 Of which he made hym wroth, in al sempyng
 But to Lodon, by his subtyl wrytyng
 He gaue charge, the Dightes al to kyl
 And none escape, nether for good ne yll

This Mortiger, protectoure was that pere
 And in his hādes, the kynges castels al
 He had, & sawe he myght the crowne ful clere
 haue at his wyl, so dyed the lordes temperal
 And prelates hys, that were spiritual
 His heuines and indignation
 That thei assented to his coronacion.

Whē Cōstaunce thus, the kyng had bene one pere
 And could nothyng, of rule ne gouernaunce
 The commons sawe, he was an idiote clere

These

Uortiger.

Their boyces al gaue, wyth al their obeysaunce
To Uortiger wyth theyr hole attendaunce
As commons would euer yet of olde and newe
Eche yere their kyng to chaunge and renewe

CThe.lxxii. Chapiter.

CHowe Uortiger kyng of Brytain reigned. xviii. yere
through his falshe and treaso conspyred with Weigh-
tes, to slea his kyng. And how Engist and Horsaſus pay-
ens landed in Kent and were beloued with Uortiger,
and howe wednisday and fryday had name, and what
goddas and goddises they honoured. How and when
Engist and Horsaſus landed in Kent, and made Ebor-
caſtre and hore caſtre in the countee of Lincolne, and
how Engist ſent for his doughter & married her to kyng
Uortiger, and brought in wyth her great myltitude of
paiſes, & accombred al þe realme both of warre & of chy-
ſen ſapth, wherfore þe Britoſ crowned the kinges ſone

His Uortiger then crowned kyng of myght

The Wyghtes & Scottes for he their kyng
ſo kyled

Uortiger
kyng of
Brytaine
reigned
xviii. yere

They ſlaundered hym, that mykel good he hyght
Unto Weighes, the kyng haue ſlayne and ſpilled
By ſuch treaſon hys wyll thei ſo fulfylled
And after by his pzeup ozdynaunce
He made the ſame be ſlayne, for theſame chaunce.

Cfor which thei aroſe on him to bene aduenged
With ful great hoſt deſtroied both roine & toun
And bzent his land, and felly reuenged
In which tyme came into thys regyon
Engiſt and Horsaſus dukes of great renoune
By ſort ſent out all boyde of Saronye
With men of warre alſo of Germanye.

CIn

In Wyppes there arryued so then in Kent
When Wortyger at Caunterbury laye
Whiche he withhelde anone, and for hym sente
To warre on the Scottes and Wyeghtes aye
That bzent his lande and noyed daye by daye
Peynemis they wer and trowed of Mercury
And on Venus their goddesse of Wapany.

That Mercurie woden, in their language
was called so by his propre name
for whom they honoured of olde and age
The fourth daye in euery weke at hame
And so of Mercury geuyng it a name
And of woden called it wednysdaye
Of olde custome as they haue vsed also.

Wednys
day, wher
of it was
named.

And Venus also, was their high goddesse
for whom alwaye they halowed the sixte daye
Of euery weke in prayer and holynesse
Who in theyr tonge fridaye was called alwaye
for whose honoure, that named was frydaye
The Sonne, the Moone, Jupiter and Saturne
And Mars the God of armes, they did adorne

The yere after Christes incarnation
foure hundred full fourty and sixe also
was when Engist into this region
first came, and hauen to the shippes and no mo
As saint Bede sayeth in gestis anglozum so
with Scottes & Wyghtes thei faught full mightely
And droue them out, and had the victoꝝ.

This Engist had then none habitation
Despyng

Uortiger.

Desiring so a castell into dwell
Hym and his men, to kepe from all aduersacion
Of Scottes and Deightes & enemyes were then fell
As all olde Chronyclers can you tell
Asked as much grounde, as a bulles skyn thonge
Might circuyte fully of brede and longe.

Which the kyng hym graunted then anone
He made a thonge then of a bulles skyn
So smal and longe, that rounde aboute did gone
A stony grounde to set his castell in
And thus by subteltee and his slepyghty gyn
Where then he made Thongcastre as men tolde
In Lyndesey, that now is Castre of the wolde.

Engist then sent for his doughter Rowan
That came anone, with myppes eyghtene
Well stuffed of men, for they wer of Britayne
Agayne the Scottes and Deightes to opteyne
Whom Uortiger then, thought full longe to sene
She proffered hym a dynke and sayde wassayle
As he was learned, he sayd to her dynke hayle.

Which wordes fyrst came by so into this land
With that he set his herte, her for to loue
That he her wed by all kyndes of lawfull bande
As then the churche could best hym learne & moue
And thus the Saxons by Uortiger set aboue
For whiche his sonnes, and all the baronage
Hym hated sore right for his marpage.

Of Painimes bloodde, for to their ydolatre
Greate people were then turned and peruerre

And

And greate also in Bilagian heresy
wer accombez, and whole to it aduerte
wherefore his soonne, the people to conuerte
for Lupus sente, and his feloe Germain
Christen faith to preache, in all Britain.

¶ Whiche bishopps twoo the folke conuerte did
By processe so, & home again then wente (again
this Engiste then, to please the kyng full fain
for his soonne Occa, to Germany sente
for Ebissa and Cherdyk by consente
Of Mortiger, that thre hundred shippes brought
Of menne of warre, & beste that might bee sought

¶ Of whiche his soonne, & then hight Mortimer
Of his firste wife, and also the barons all
Of suche multitue of people, affraied wer
And to the kyng, as then it did befall
Compleined had, without helpe in generall
Wherefore anone, together thei did consente
This Mortimer to crowne by whole assente.

¶ The. lxxiij. Chapter.

¶ How Mortimer the soonne of kyng Mortiger, kyng
of Britain to withstande the power of Engiste, and
of Saxons was twice crowned. How this Engiste
vnder treaty slewe all the baronage of Britons on
the plain of Salibury.



¶ Mortimer thei crowned anon right
With royalte, that might to it appede
That was full wyse approued, like a
knight
In all courage, that to knightthod did

Mortimer
kyng of
Britain.

extende

for

Uortimer.

So to assaile orels soz to defende
Who with misereantes fought soze vpon Det
So did he els at all place where he wente (wente

At Abirforth he fought with them also
The better aye he had where as he pede
But Catigerne his brother was kyled tho
And hozne also was slain by greate manhode
And thus Uortimer victorius where so he pede
Another tyme vpon the north sea bankes
He fought with them, in battaill their vnthankes

Thei fled vnto the isle then of Tenecte
Where he them sieged fearfully and assailed
He slewe them doune on heapes aye as thei mette
That their power almoste then was failed
All forefoughten and full soze battasled
Besought the kyng thei might haue his licence
To Germany to make their reuertence.

So wente thei home, with litle folke aliue
That in his tyme, thei came no moze again
But citees all, and churches amended full riue
The chrystentie to maintain was full sain
But then anone the subtle queene Rowain
Made hym to bee popsoned, of whiche he died
With her ventimes thus was he mortified.

In a piller of brasse he laied on hight
At the gate wher Saxons, had landed afoze
He bad his menne soz also farre as he might
Hym se, he truste thei would not nere come thoz
But neuerthelesse, thei letted not therfore

But

But buryed hym at Troynouante citee
As he theim bade, with all solempnitee

Thyng Uortiger was crowned then again
fo; Engest sente and bade hym come anone
fo; Uortimer his soonne was dedde and slain
who w thre hundred ships full of menne echeons
In Bytam landed, and to the kyng gan gone
Of whom he was full glad and well reioysed
And of his folke that were of greate power noised

But Byttons all, and also the baronage
To fight with hym, arose by whole consente
fo; whiche he sente to theim by message
That to the realme, none euill he mente
But fo; to helpe the lande in his entente
And if thei wer of his hoste, displased
As thei could beste deuise, thei should been eased

And bade theim sette a daie where thei might
By their aduise his power home to sende (mete
D; all to holde, fo; their common quiet
fro their enemies, the realme fo; to sende
All his defeaute by their aduise to amende
The Byttons thought his proffer reasonable
And to the realme also full profitable.

Thei sente hym woorde to mete the first daie of
With foure hundred so on euery syde (Daie
Upon the plain of Sarum in meeke araye
That Caire Cradok was called so that tyde
Beside Amesbury full faire edefied
Again whiche daie, this Engist bade his menne
h With

The
crafte &
policy of
Engiste.

Engiste.

Within their hoses a long knife to haue then

¶ And when he saied Remith, your sexes then
Echman then slee, a Byton with his knife
For so I shall, vs marshall as I can
A foze a Byton, a Saxon sette full rife
So shall we rive them sonest of their life
And sette vs aye in reste and moste quiete
At a daie linete, together when we mete

¶ A daie assigned, as was his ordinaunce
The watche woozde saied, eche Danime a Byton
Foure. C. lordes, of Chyestes holy creaunce (sewe
Betraied wer, by Engiste so vnttrue
The death of whom, many a Byton did rewe
Whose corps all, wer buried at Alwimbury
Whiche after that daie, was made a nonry

¶ With the hoste of Danimes came full faste
And toke the kyng, helde hym at Troynouaunte
For marred soze and greatly was agaste
What so thei asked, anone he did them graunte
The citees all and castels sufficiaunte
To lette hym passe awaie without troublauce
Whiche Engiste graunted, because of alsaunce.

¶ The. lxx. Chapter.

¶ How Engiste caused Logers to bee called the
Engestlande, of whiche the commons put gest
awaie in their common speache, and call it En
glande for thortene of speache.

Engist

Engist with his hoste had all thozient
 The South & North, in all þ great Brit-
 In his keepng, excepte thoccident (tain
 whiche Bytons held of warre and muche pain
 By olde chyonicles, as I haue herde sain
 And then anone, he called it Engestes lande
 which after was shorted, and called Englande

Englad
 wherof
 it was
 so naz
 med.

Through the comons, þ thought it long to say
 And muche lighter, in tongue to saye Englande
 Then with their mouth ouer long to name it aye
 By long producyng, to call it Engistis lande
 And thus came first in, as I vnderstande
 As I conceiue, thus came first Englandes name
 for short speache, corrupt per sincopene.

But Engist then, gaue all the lande about
 To Saxons all, and kyng was so of Kent
 But Uortiger in Cambze sought through out
 To buylde vpon a castell to his entent
 To holde hym in, fro the panymes violent
 Whiche in Cambze, the castell of Genoxen
 He made full strong, in the lande of Hergigven.

Upon the ryuer of Ewep, on Cloarte hill
 But of dragons and of the water vnder
 That Merlyn saied, that castell did so spill
 He of his birth that many men on wounder
 Of that werke, both aboue and vnder
 That no father had, ne of his prophecie
 I cannot wyte of suche affirmably.

Notwithstandyng, that philosophers wise
 h ii Affyzms

Aurelius Ambrose.

Affirme well, that spirites suche there been
Betwene the moone and therth called Incubice
That haue gotten chyldren of women vnseene
As in stozies diuerse I haue so seen
Howe the philosophier, wise Poganclus
Affyrmeth it also, and Apuleius.

The. lxx. Chapter.

Aurelius Ambrose kyng of Brytain the seconde
sonne of Constantyne.

Aurelius Ambrose brother of Constaunce
Into Brytain with strong & great power
And seged then Wostiger by ordinaunce
In his castell of Genozen full clere
Whiche with wild fire he bzent, and hym in feere
And crouned was by all the baronage
To reioyse Brytain that was his heritage.

The sought Engist that panyne was full grym
With hostes they faught, but Aurele had y better
The Saxons fled, before that wer ful byrme
For in their quarel, it might bee no better
Duke Eldoll toke Engist and did hym setter
In Kent as he hym mette awaye slepyng
At Conanburgh hym brought to the kyng.

Wher he was heded with swerd, and decollate
And Occa then and his sonne Ebissa
His coulsing Dere at Porke came in full late
And with hym Saxons full many one moo
Where then the kyng, hym seged with much woo
But Occa then and al his compaignie
Came to the kyng to whome he gaue mercy.

The

The kyng then made a worthy sepulture
 With þe stone henges, by Merlins whole aduise
 For all the lordes Byrons by nature
 That there were slain in false and cruell wise
 By false Engist and his feloes vnwise
 In remembraunce of his forcasten treason
 Without cause, or any els encheson

But Pascencius the sonne of Vortiger
 With host of Irish, Cambze he destroyed
 With whom the kyng faught with his power
 And droue hym out, to Irelande fore anoyed
 Of his people many slain and foule acloyed
 But Eopa then clad in monkes clothynge
 With his popsons, then popsoned had the kyng.

But then the kyng of Ireland and Pascence
 In Cambze bent, the kyng full sicke then laye
 He sent Uterpendragon for defence
 With host royall and mighty great aray
 He faught with him, for whiche thei fled that daye
 With shame and hurte to Ireland home agayn
 Uterpendragon the felde so had full playn.

Then Uter sawe a starry beame full bright
 And asked Merlyn, what that it might meane
 He said it is Stella Cometa right
 It signifieth the kyng his death to been
 That now is gone to the blisse Iween
 The dragon also, thy self dooeth signifye
 With beames two extendyng seuerally.

The beame southward, to Fraunce þe dooeth ex-
 b iiii

(tends
 Thy

Uter Bendragon,

Thy soome that thou shalt haue doeth signifie
That shall conquere all Fraunce vnto thend
Almignie also and all Germanie
And so to Roome, throughout all Romante
Aboue all princes, in his tyme moste famed
Through Chyistentie moste dzed and best named.

That other beanie to Irelande extendyng
Thy doughters eke dooeth also signifie
Their childzen also, that of them shalbe compnge
The realme to haue with all the regalpe
Thus Merlyn to hym dooeth specifie
So went he forth anone to Cairkewent
Where he had worde of his brothers enterrement

Within the Giautes Carole that so then hight
The stone henges, that now so named been
Where prelates & dukes, erles & lordes of might
His sepulture to worship there were sene
Thus this worthy kyng, was buryed by dene
That reigned had that tyme but thyrten yere
When he was dead and layed so on beere

The. lxxi. Chapter.

Uter Bendragon kyng of Brytain and of his
armes that he bare.

His brother Uter, at Cairgwēt was croud
In trone royall then fully admit
Two dragōs made of gold royall & stoude
That one offred of his deuoute witte
In the mynster there as he had promytte
That other befoze hym, cuer in battaile bare
Of gold in goules, where so he gan to fare
Tharmes

Charmes also of Trope, that Brutus bare
 Charmes also, of good kyng Lucius
 which after Baptyme, his armes alway ware
 thesame armes that kyng Constantinus
 At his battail against Marencius
 So bare alway, that saynt Georges armes we cal
 which Englyshmen now we worship ouer al.

And for he bare, the dragon so in warre
 the people al, hym called then Pendragon
 for his surname, in laudes nere and farre
 which is to say, in Britain region
 In their language, the heade of the dragon
 And in the north, as he a castel made
 Pendragon hyght, wher he his dwellpng had

But Occa sonne then, of that false Engist
 And Oysa also, the sonne of Occa wyth
 that northland byent, of whych when Uter wyf
 he faught wyth them, ther saued them no grith
 nor none of the people, that came them wyth
 he tooke Occa and Oysa, in battayle
 Beside Dane hil, wher thei dyd him assayle

The Saxons also he slewe, that with hym came
 And had the feelde, wyth al the victorie
 for ioye of which, he made great ioye & game
 Proclaymed his feast, of Pasche solemnly
 To holde at London, wher then he made his crye
 That euery lord, hys wyfe with him should bring
 for wo:shipp of that feast, and of the kyng.

The. lxxii. Chapter

Howe

After Pendragon.

Howe the king was an amoured of the duke of Goz
loys wyfe, and howe he got on her kyng Arthur

Emonges other, Gozloys duke of Cozne-
wayle

His wife did bring Agrene sayre of figure
Whose beaute there, al others made to faile
So wel and hole auised was nature
Her womanhede excided euerpe creature
That though nature, her beaute wold haue amed
Her connyng myght therto in no wyse extende

Of whych beaute, and of her godlyhede
The kyng with loue, so greatly was oppressed
It chaunged al his cozage and manhede
In kalendes of eschange, he was so unpzessed
For whiche the duke wyth her then home adzessed
Perceauyng wel, the kynges fpekernes
Was set for loue, on her womanlyneg.

In Tintagel his castel stronge, he her set
Hymselfe then laye, in castel Dimioke
Wher then the kyng hym sieged her to get
But Merlayne then, from it hym dyd reuoke
And by hys councel subtely dyd prouoke
Knowyng his loue, he had to dame Agrene
By coniurifons made in hast ful yerne

He made the kyng vnto duke Gozloys lyke
Himselfe lyke to Bzethel in al semblaunce
That then was the dukes pzeup miike
And Alfin lyke, by al kings gouernaunce
Vnto Jordan in al maner consaunce
That most knewe of the dukes pzeuptee

By whych he brought to Agrene al thye.

Thus lay the kyng her by,, euer whē he would
 She trustyng then, that he had bene her lord
 But euer his siege he made sadly to bene hold
 His people assaunting the castel by one accoꝝd
 But Goꝝloꝝs men, then pleyfully dyd recoꝝd
 Their lord was slayne and water had the felde
 Of which she merueyled, & then fast him behelde.

There gat he then, on her a sonne ful fayre
 And fro her went, vnto hys hoost agayn
 The duke was slain, with al his most repayre
 Of which the kyng, glad is not to layn
 To Tintagel with al his hoost ful fayn
 He came anon, and had it at his wyl
 He comforted her, and bad her hold it styl

But then betwene them two he dyd discure
 The priuite in al, as it was wrought
 And set hys day to wed her and to cure
 Of heuynes, that she was then in brought
 Her lordes death so much was in her thought
 For her so slayn, her wyfchode also defouled
 Afoꝝe that tyme, that euer was kept vnfouled

And at the daye, he wedded her and croud
 And she fersforth with childe was then begonne
 To comfort her, he set the table round
 At Wynchester, of worthiest knyghtes alone
 Approued best in knyghthode of their foone
 Which table round Joseph of Arimathie
 For byether made of the saynt Gyal onely

After Pendragon.

In which he made, the siege perclous
Wher none should syt, without great myschefe
But one that should be most religious
Of knightes al, & of the round table cheiffe
The saynt Gyal, that should recouer & a cheue
By aduventure of his fortunite
And at his death, a birgyn should be

But at her time, the quene had bozne a sonne
That Arthure hyght, and was of stature fayre
More large of lymme, and wysest vnder sunne
Of his age then, to be his fathers heyre
Of al his limmes, ryght comly, strong and fayre
But Occa then and Oysa, that afore
Stale home, were come, & warred in Brittain soze

The kyng sent forth, syr Loth of Lowthian
A worthy pryncce, hardy and bounteous
His daughter had wedded, that hyght then dame
A manly man, and ryght cheualrous (Anne
The first knight, that was elect ryght fortunous
Of the table round, that oft wyth them dyd fight
That ofte preuayled, & some tyme put to flyght

For which the kyng, ordeined a horse lytter
To beare him so then, vnto the berolaine
Wher Occa laye, and Oysa also in feer
That saynt Albons, nowe hight of noble fame
Bet doune the wales, but to hym forthe thei came
Wher in battayl, Occa and Oysa were slayne
The felde he had, and therof was ful sayne.

There was a wel, which his enemyes espyed
That

That he bled the water ofte to alay
his drinkes, al his sores to be medified
which thei benomped, with poyson on a day
Of which he died, and went to blyss for aye
In the carole, besyde his brother dere
As to such a pynce, it dyd ryght wel affere.

He reigned had then, xxxix. yere
And in the yere of Chyestes natuige
foue. C. xvi. then was ful clere
The realme he left in good felycete
Arthure his sonne, to haue the royalte
To reigne & rule the realme, that then was able
That of his age, was none so commendable

The. lxxii. Chapter

Arthure kyng of Brytany, reigned. xxvi. yere. How the
kyng bare lyre banners in his warre, and howe he re-
newed and increased the table rounde, and held vp roy-
ally the rule of it, and howe he conquered Irelande &
Denmarke wyth all the ysles of them.

Arthure his sonne vp growen, then perelasse ^{kyng Ar-}
throughout þe world approued of his age ^{thure.}
Of wit & strength, beaute and largesse
Of person hye, aboue his baronage
And other al, of Brytons basselage
By his shoulders, exceded in longitude
Of al members, ful fayre and latitude

At Circestre then of. xv. yere of age
When Dubryk archebysshop of Carilion

With

Arthur

With al estates within his heritage
Asssembled ther duke, earle, lord, and baron
And commonte of al the regyon
Upon his hed did set the diademe
In royal wise, as wel him did beseme

The yere of chrystes byrth .v. C. and sixtene
Was whan he was crowned al with gold
Wher than he made, a bowe for to sustene
The Chrysten fayth, the church also to uphold
The peace & lawes, maugre who so other woulde
The Saxons also, to warre and destroy
That of long tyme, had done vs great annoy

Kyng Arthure sought þe Saxons in Scotland
His chefe banner of goulles was to se
An ymage of our lady of gold enthroned
Crowned of gold, as fresh as it myght be
His other banner was of the Trinite
Of gold and goulis of saynt George was þe thirde
The fourth was Brutus armes knowne and kid

The .v. baner of goulles .iii. crownes of gold
The sixt of goulis, a dragon of gold fyne
With hoost ful great, of Britons that were bolde
On Douglas water the Saxons he did bntwine
Colgrim that was their capitain fled fro thine
To Porke anone, and it with people helde
His men then slayn, the kyng had so the felde

Cheldryk & Baldosse, two dukes of Germanie
With hoostes great, then landed in Brytain
To Colgrim came, and bent that lande in hys

But

But to Arthure kyng Howell came full fain
With hoste greate, his sisters soon ne certain
Of lesse Brytain, that with his vnckle wente
Again Colgryn to fight in his entente.

Cado: the duke, that tyme of Coznewaill
The kynges brother of his mothers side
Came to the kyng, with people that might auail
So did all other, of all Brytain full wide
With their enemies then mette of mikell pryde
And bainequeshed them at Lyncolne then segyng
For whiche thei fled full faste that siege leauyng

To Calidon woode nere vnto the sea
Where the kynges twoo, theim seged soze aboute
That for famishment and fight thei swoze to bee
The kynges menne and their lande throughtout
For to voyde their people, of all þe lande out & out
Colgryn, Baldolfe, and also duke Childyk
That chieftains wer with doughty duke Cozdyk

And leide hym hostage, all this to spede
And when thei wer vpon the sea again
Thei landed est at Cotnesse so in deede
And segid Bathe where Arthure was full fain
Their hostages hanged in their sight full plain
And with theim fought Colgryn & Baldolf slew
To Cozdyk gaue Westser to bee his manne true

Duke Cado: then foloed vpon the chace
And slewe Childyk, and his of Saxony
And to the kyng again came for this case
That kyng beleged was in Albany

Wherefore

Arthure.

Wherefore thei wente, with hoste full many
To Alclud, wher Scottes & Deightes late about
Thein discomfited, and hym deliuered out

The scottes & peightes, he droue into out isles
Of Scotlande then, and there became his menne
To liue in peace, that euer wer full of wiles
But Gwilomare, the kyng of Irelande then
Ouer kyng Arthure, full harde warre began
With hoste full greete, of Irishe and Saxony
In Scotlande bzent, and also in Albany.

But then þ kyng hym met, & with hym fought
Discomfited hym, and putte hym to the flight
Unto Irelande, with battaill soze vnsought
Of Scotlande, then of Lothian by right
The kyng was then, that Loth of Lothian hight
The firste knight, was so of the table rounde
To Arthure trwe, and also his liegeman founde.

His sister Anne, vnto his wife had wedde
On whom he gatte the courteous knight Galwen
In Dunbar castle, his life there he ledde
And Aguzell was kyng, that tyme certain
Of Albany, and Urian, of Murrel plain
The kyng was then, to kyng Arthure full trwe
His liegeman aye, and chaunged not of newe

The kyng Arthure, then wedded to his wife
Swaynoze faireste of any creature
That tyme accompted, for passyng birth natife
So Iuly faire, she was of her figure
More Angelike, then womannishe of nature

In

In so ferfurth, menne thought theim selues well
Her to behold, so well all folke she pleased. (eased)

The table rounde, of knightes honourable
That tyme wer boorde, by greate deficiencie
For many wer, through actes marciabie
Dispended then, by warres violence
Wherefore the kyng, then of his sapience
The worthieste of euery realme aboute
In the table rounde, then sette without doubte

The thre kynges forsaide of Scotlande
Two kynges of Walis, full chivalrous
Howell the kyng of lesse Brytain lande
And duke Cadoz, of Cornewaill corageous
And worthy Gawen, gentie and ainarous
And other fell, their rule was wronges to oppresse
With their bodie, where lawe might not redresse

The faith, & church, maidens, & widowes clene
Childzen also, that wer in tender age
The common profite, euer more to sustene
Again enchauntementes, his body for to wage
Again wycheecraft, of the deuilles rage
Theim to destroye, and all kynde of soycery
Of whiche wer many, that tyme in Brytainy

On witsondaie, alwase euery yere
Thei should eche one at the feaste bee with þe kyng
In any place, where euer so that he were
But if he wer in prisone, or harde lettynge
By deede of armes, death, or els sick liynge
In whiche cases, one of the table rounde

Should

Arthure.

Should seke hym all the yere, till he were found.

Also their rule was eche one should tell
His owne actes of warres auenture
Afore the kyng at meate how hym befell
In his trauaile or his misauenture
The secretoꝝ, should putte it in scripture
For none auaunte, it should not then betake
But for his rule to holde, & kyng then did it make

Also to stee and moue young knyghtes corage
To seche armes and warres of worthynesse
And of dyuerse landes, to learne the language
That els would liue at home in ydlenesse
For honour & ease, abideth not together doubtles
Also it moueth these pooꝛe and young knyghthod
To bee auaunced, by their ladies liuelthod.

For doubte it not, ladies ne gentlenwomen
No cowardes loue, in maner that is abusyon
And shamefull also repꝛeuable emonges meene
His cowardnesse dooeth hym greate confusion
A manne to withdraue hym, by fainte collusion
For better is, with honoure for to die
Then with life, aye ashamed for to bee

The somer nexte, Arthure wente to Irelande
With battaill soꝛe foꝛefoughten it conquered
And of the kyng had homage of that lande
To holde of hym, so was he of hym feared
And also gatte as chronicles haue vs lered
Denmarke, Friselande, Gotelande, and Noꝛwale
Iselande, Gꝛenelande, thisle of Man & Dyknate
He

He conquered these, to holde of hym euermore
 He made kyng Loth that was of Lowthian
 Of Nozwaie kyng, where he fought full soze
 And Lowthian he made his soonne Cawain
 The kyng to holde of hym by homage then
 For Nozwaie was his vertie heritage
 Discent of bloodde of kyng Sechelnes linage

Kyng Arthure then, through Chyristenty moste
 And conquerour aboue all kynges royall (famed
 Was then moste doubted of manhode & beste na-
 But kynges and princes of septentrionall (med
 His to presente moste high emperiall
 Eche date came newe, that the more like it semed
 In heuenly life, then earthely as inenne demed

He helde his housholde, and the rounde table
 Some tyme at Edēburgh, some tyme at Striue-
 Of kynges renomed, and moste honourable (line
 At Carlelle somewhile, at Alclud his citee fine
 Emōg all his knyghtes and ladies full femerine
 At Bamburg also and Ebzanke citee
 At London at Wynchester, with greate royaltee

At Carlton, Cardif, and Aualine
 In Coynewaill also Douer and Cairelegion
 And in Scotlande at Berth and Dumbzptain
 At Dunbar, Dumfriesse and saint Jhons towne
 All of worthy knyghtes, mo then a legion
 At Donidoure also in Murith region
 And in many other places, bothe citee and towne

But euer as next, the baleys is the hill

After

Arthure.

After longreste commeth sharpe labour
K yng Arthure then had so firmly sette his will
To conquere Fraunce as his progenitoure
Marinian did, with full greate honour
Wherefoze he sente, to all his homagers
That to hym came with all their powers.

CThe. lxxiij. Chapiter.

How kyng Arthure conquered Fraunce, and slewe
kyng Froll of Fraunce, & won many landes thither
warde, and when he had wonne Fraunce and ruled
it nyne yere, he came to Carlis and he and the queene
were crowned there again with greate solempnitee
and dewe seruike dooen by his homagers.



And into Fraunce anone so forth
he wente
And in Paris Frolle that was go-
uernoure
Beseged the, who vnto Arthure set
Proffered hym battaill, with full greate honour
With hande for hande, for right of the emperoure
To fight with hym, to iudgen all the right
Whiche to fulfill, Arthure graunted and hight.

At a daie assigned thei, twoo together mette
Within an isle without Paris citce
Where ether other, with wepons soze then bette
But kyng Arthure, by greate humanitee
That daie haupng, of hym the soueraingtee
Slewe Froll þe daie, with Caleburne his swerde
For whiche all Fraunce, of hym wer soze aferde

Paris thei yeld, and all the realme of Fraunce
The royals all, to kyng Arthure obeyed

Service

Seruite did hym, and all whole obeisaunce
As to their kyng, and hym nomore disobeyed
He sent Howell, with hoost and hym conueighyd
To Guyan then, who made Gypcar obeye
To kyng Arthure, with all that cuer he maye

CAuerne and Spain, Portyngale, Aragon
Prouince, Sauoye, and Langdok with also
Flaundres, Bryaban, Henauld and Burgoyne
Dyliaunce, Doytiers and Lecto
Cateloigne eke Almaine and many mo
Holande, Selande, and Gelders within fere
His inenne became, as pynce without pere

At Paris then he feasted all thastates
By fourty dayes, were he and also the quene
Were crownded then and had the lande subiectes
In all honour and royalte as was seen
He feasted all the commonalte full clene
The pzelates whole and the vniuersite
And ladies all, with their feminine.

Aine pere, he helde his thzone rotall in Fraunce
And open hous, greatey magnified
Throughe all the world, of welthe and suffisaunce
Was neuer pynce, so highly glorified
The rounde table, with pynces multiplied
That ad uentures then sought cotidianly
With greate honour, as made is memozy

And when he had, so ruled Fraunce nine pere
To Brytain went, he home then agayne
At Castron his citee faire and clere

Arthur.

At wiffondaye to se, his knightes faine
He set his feast royall, the soth to sayne
By fourty dayes, for all that there would be en
Moste for his knightes, that he desired to se en

At whiche feast he, and the quene also
Crouned were, with royall diademe
By Dubrice, that tharchbishop was tho
At Carlion as the church did deme
With all roialtie as well did be seme
Tharchebishops of London and Ebyanke
Came to that feast, and had full muche thanke

At the enoynting of this moost noble kyng
Tharchebishop of London the right arme
Tharchebishop of York by all wytyng
The left held by, without any harme
While the people to see that sight, did swarme
This was their charge and very dewe seruisse
Of anunccion tyme, to dooe and exercise

Kyng Agurell that was of Albany
The kyng Dosses of Southwales that hight
And of Northwales Ewayn the kyng manly
And duke Cader of Cornewayle by right
Afoze the kyng, bare four sweordes full bright
Whiche was seruisse of great antiquitee
For their landes dewe, to his souerentee

Afoze the quene Ewaynour, the quenes came
Of Southwales, Northwales and Albany
And the duches of Cornwalle, of great fame
Right well be seen of chere benyngly

Eche

Eche of thelm bare on her hande on hys
 A turteldoue, that was of coloure white
 To please the quene, so was her moste delite.

CSy: Kay was then the duke of Aungeoy
 At Darys made by Arthur and create
 His stewarde was that had with mekell ioye
 A thousande knightes, to serue early and late
 Ententyfly not feynt, wery ne mate
 Duryng the feast, clothed all in Ermyne
 For best araye, that he could best ymagyn.

CSy: Bedwer then at that feast was boteler
 A thousande knightes with hym consociate
 The feast to serue, of wyne good and clere
 Clad al in graye, of pellury p:ordinate
 That was full riche, acco:dyng to there estate
 Thetis goddesse of waters there had no might
 For Bacchus god of wyne, shed his power right

CThousandes many, of lordes and knightes ho:
 norable

Eche daye duryng the feast impertall
 Afoze the kyng and quene incomperable
 To masse and meate, went in especiall
 A thousande ladies of estate tempo:all
 Besydes thousandes that were of lesse degree
 Wyues and wydowes with other virginitee.

CThe. lxxv. Chapter.

CA good cause to make knightes worthy & coragious
 and ladies and gentillwomen to lyue in great cleunnes.

Arthur.

Here was no knight, accompted of honour
But if he wer, in warre approued thysse
Nor with ladies beloued as paramour
Whiche caused knightes, armes to exercyse
To be verteous, and clene of life and wise
It comforte also ladies, and theyr femynitee
To lyue the moze, in perfite chastitee.

And when this feast royall was dissolued
The kyng rewarded so highly, eche estate
And in his mynde, ymagened and inuolued
Howe sone and when, at tyme pzeoꝛdinate
They might agayn bee consociate
And commaunded them, at the next Pentecost
There foꝛ to bee with hym, both least and moſte.

Edubricius, then archbyſhop of Cairlyon
Wekely ceaſed, and hole foꝛſoke his cure
Purpoſyng ſo of good religion
An heremytes lyfe, thence foꝛwarde to endure
In whole ſteade, Dauid of life full pure
Was ſet to rule the churches dignitee
To Gods pleaſaunce with all libertee.

To Mangaueto, the ſea Pontificall
Of Chicheſter he gaue withouten lette
Of Wyncheſter with the commoditees all
To Duupan he gaue, and hym in ſette
To God and the churche, as fell of dewe dette
Thysſe of alclud alſo Pontificall
To Eledoure he graunted, as might befall.

As then befell, the feaſt of Whytſondaye
That

That al his knyghtes, of the table rounde
To hys p[re]sence, were comen in good araye
And euery knight, hys aduenture that stounde
Had told the kyng, as his order was founde
Which aduentures, the kyng made al be wyttten
In his register, euer to be knowen and weten.

CThe. lxxvii. Chapter

Howe Galaad came to kyng Arthure and acheued the
siege perelous in the round table, and howe the saynt
Gaal apered at supper in the hall, wherfore he made
a vowe, neuer to abyde. ii. nyghtes in one place, to time
he knew what it was, and that he myght se it agayne.

Galaad that tyme, was. xv. yere of age
The goodlyest afore, that men had sene
Whō Lancelot gat in very clene spousage
On Belles daughter, that king ful long had bene
Of Venedose, that Northwales is now, men wene
Clene armed, came at meat, and obeyed the kyng
The quene also, and estates there sytting.

And sat hym doune, in the siege perelous
Of the table round, where none durste spt a fore
But Joseph, that was ful relygious
That made it so, ere Galaad was boze
And kyng Arthure, that sat therin therfore
And neuer mo, that it had ought presumed
But thei were bzent therin, hamed & consumed

Which Joseph sayd, afore that tyme ful longe
In Hewing booke, the Bytayne chronycler
As wyttten is, the Bytongs iestes among

Arthur.

That Galaad the knyght and virgine clere
Shuld it acheue and auentures in al fere
Of the sepnt graale and of the greate Bytein
And afterward a virgyn, dye certein

But the knyghtes al then of the round table
Conceaued wel and fully then beleued
He was the same person in comperable
Of whō Merlayn sayd euer shoud be wel cheued
Most fortunate of al knyghtes that then lyued
For which thei al anone to him attende
In al thinges that to knyghthode dyd appende

At supper as he sat agayn at euen
In the same siege with ful knightly constaunce
That proued wel, which made the m al beleuen
That by his rule and noble gouernaunce
To al knyghtes he shoud do great plesaunce
In specyal to al of that order
Ful great worshyp and al knyghtly honour

So sodenly, doores & wyndoues al clapped
With hideous noyse, far passyng meruelous
Opened and spared, al by them selves fast rapped
For which thei trust of some cause meruelous
As wyth that noyse the saynt Graal precyous
Flowe thysse about, wythin the hal ful oft
Flyttering ful fast, aboue them high on loft.

And as it came sodenly vnknewen
Right so it went awaye withoute lees
The knyghtes al that time that had it sowen
Auerueled wer, of it doubtles

Wherfore

Wherfore thei al with weapons gan to presse
To se and wete, what thyng it myght be
But whether it went, thei could no moze se

CThe. lxxvii. Chappter

Howe Galaad and the knyghtes of the round table
made thei auowes to seke the saynt Graal, some tyl
thei founde it, and some for a yere



But on the morowe, Galaad and o-
ther knyghtes

Afoze þe kyng by one consent copared
Wher Galaad made his auowes &
hyghtes

Neuer to ly, but he were prysoned

In one place in no maner of grounde

Two nightes together, no where tyl he it se

Besought the kyng his knyght that he myght be.

CThe kyng hym made a knyght of þe table round

And armes wold haue geue him, but he wold non

Afoze that he gat them in a strong ground

By auenture, or elles vpon his foone

And toke his leaue to passe so forth anone

The knyghtes all, then of the round table

Graunt him serupce a yere, then perdurable

CThe. lxxviii. Chapter

The lamentacion of kyng Arthure for his knyghtes
vpon thei departyng fro hym, and of the rule which
Galaad made among the knyghtes in the quest of the
saynt Graal, and howe at Auelon he founde a shylde
of the same armes, a speare and a sword that Joseph
left ther for hym, which armes, Aruicagus, Lucius
and Constantyne bare of splur a croffe of gonles.

Arthur.

HO? which þe king wold heuyn & dulful chere
Thus said: O god what shal I do o? say
That my knyghtes all, whiche I had in
Thus lodely fro me, þe passe away (quer
They my blysse, my hertes hele eche daye
My landes helpe, custodies of my crowne
And members of my corpes, to kepe my region

O God, þe deth wold best myne hert on twaine
Who shal mayntaine, my crowne and my rightes
I trowe no more, to se you eft agayne
Thus hole together, and so goodly knyghtes
Would God, I myght make myne auowe & high
To passe with you, in what land so ye go (tes
And take my part with you, both in well and wo.

This Galaad then rode forth, with his route
At euery way, he made a knyght for to departe
To tyme thei were, al seuerally gone out
And none with hym, so had eche one they; part
And yf any met, another at any arct
Hys rule was so, he should his felowe tell
His aduentures, what so that hym befell

And also sone, as their way laye on sundry wyse
Thei shoulde depart and mete nomore agayne
But aduenture, it made of exercyse
Of dyuers stretes, that together layne
Of this matter, is nomore to sayne
But when he had his felowes all conued
He tooke his waye, ful lyke a knyghte arayed.

Of aduenture he came to Auelon

Where

Where that he found a shylde, that was ful white
A crosse therin in Bowles, by it one
A speare also, a swearde of great delyte
The whiche with hym, he bare a waye full tyte
He gyrded hym with the swearde, anon full right
The shylde he hunge, vpon his shoulde light

The spere he toke on hande, full like a knight
But there he founde in bokes clerely wyten
Howe Ioseph losse that shylde, therin forth right
When he there dyed, as then it was wel weten
And also in scripture, left there wyten
That no man shoulde it beare, without mischeue
But one that shoulde, þe doughteous sieghe acheue.

That same was wyten, right there of þe swerde
Whiche Iacian left there, when he dyed
And of the speare, he was nothyng a ferde
Al, yf the same paryl of it was notyfed
Like as to fore of it was specyfied
But when that he had, laboured so foure yere
He founde in Wales, the saint Gyaal ful clere.

Then rode he forth, vnto the holy lande
Through God and holy inspiracion
To God he gaue his seruice, and hym bonde
To chastyte, and greate contemplacion
And kyng was made, by hole cozonacion
Of Garras then, and duke of Dyboyke
Of whome the people, ful well dyd theim like.

Sy: Boers with hym went, and sy: Percyuall
And other mo of the table rounde.

Whome

Arthur.

Whom knyghtes he made of the saynt Gyaall
Whiche order so he ordeyned then, and founde
At Sarras, that to Egypt lande doth bounde
To lyue chaste, and maynteyne Chyistentie
Like as Ioseph did of Arimathie.

But longe after vpon the whitsondaye
Sir Boers and Perciuall came to the kyng
With knyghtes all, that lpyng wer that daye
At Carlpon, but Percyuall did byng
Unto that courte full dolorous tidynge
Sp? Galaad his herte closed all with golde
Unto the kyng full openly and tolde.

Howe Galaad had acheued the auenture
In kyng Pellis householde with great honoure
That called was the saynet Gyaal by scripture
And kyng was made, by his worthy labour
As he that was of knighthode a worthy floure
Of Sarras so and duke Orboyrke
Besyde Egypte, where there was none hym lyke

The saint
Gyaall
what it
is.

Where then he made .xli. knyghtes of the order
Of saynt Gyaall in full significacion
Of the table, whiche Ioseph was the founder
At Aualon, as Aewyn made relacion
In token of the table respyguracion
Of the brotherhede of Chyistes supper & maundie
Afore his death of hygest dignytee.

And howe Galaad then at his death you prayed
His herte to bury, besyde kyng Eualake
And duke Saraphe, in golde thus arayed
Where

Arthur.

Wherethei bee buried, beside Joseph their make
And thus much he prayed you to dooe for his sake
In the chapell of our Lady, Christs mother
At Glastenbury, with diuerse saintes other

This kyng Arthure with princes & barons all
And all knightes of the rounde table
To Glastenbury then roode as might befall
And there entered þe harte of Galaad honorable
With all seruice for the death accordable
And ouer it he hanged his shilde that he bare
The whiche afoze, saint Georges armes were

And when this feaste, was come vnto an ende
The kyng Arthure also and quene Gawaynour
To all estates, greate gistes gaue and sende
As thei wer wonte eche yere afoze
For his greate honoure encreased moze and moze
Of high knighthode, household & al largesse
Aboue all princes moste famous he was doutlesse

These wer knightes then of the table rounde
Moued the erle that tyme of Gloucestre
Of Shrewisbury, the erle Heralde that stonde
The erle Hawren also of Worcester
The erle Ingence that was of Leicestre
Arthegall the erle of Warwike full corageous
The erle Cursen of Chestre full bounteous

Kymar then erle of Cauntorbury
The erle of Bathe, and Jonathall
The erle of Dorcestre, Gallus erle of Salisbury
The erle Surgen, of Herforde known ouer all
Beutse

Arthur.

Beuise, erle of Drenforde, that menne did call
Gwerande erle, that was of Ercestre
And Paradoure, therle of Wynchester

Cadoz the duke, that then was of Cornwaill
The kynges brother was, on the sister side
Dame Igrene was their mother, without faille
Gwptelen erle of Carleile, was that tide
Waldeue the duke, commended and lauded
Of Northumberlande, a lord of greate power
fro Humber north, to Twede then was full clere

Kying Aguzell, that was of Albany
Kying Urian, of Murref, with Ewaine
His soonne, that was corageous and manly
And the noble and curteous knight Gawayne
That kying was then, of all faire Lowthyan
And sister soonne, vnto the kying Arthur
Mordred his brother, was of the same ordure.

Loth of Lowthian, that kying was of Norway
Of Lowthian, that kying afore had been
father to Gawayne, and murdered was that date
Kying Urian of south Walis I wene
The kying Pellis, of Northwalis full clene
The kying howell also of litle Brytain
Boers and Hester, Diglonaunt and Ewain.

Sir Persiuall Launcelot, Delake and Kaye
Sir Colingraunt Bedewer, and sir Dagary
Gerin of Charters, þe douze pers of Fraunce gay
The kynges of Man, Dykeney, Irelande all thre
Of Iselande, Gotlande, and dukes of dignite

Of

Of Dortyngall, Hauerne, and Cateloyne
Of Spain the kynges, & the duke of Burgoyne

CSir Lionell Griffith, kynkar Olenius
Donalde Macoyle, Cimmerke, and Gozbonian
Kymbalin Rydran, Eualake, and Carthelius
Crade, and Cradok, Dunwallon, and Morgan
Gadwaloure, Eneas, and Ternuan
And many mo, that were full long to wyte
Whiche with my style, I can not now endite

CThe. lxxii. Chapter.

How the embassade of thempetoure Lucius was re-
ceiued solemply, and prested thempetours letters
vnto kyng Arthur, and also of the tenour of same
letters, thewhiche Lucius sente vnto hym.

But whils the kyng satte in his trone
royall
His prynces all, & knightes of dignite
Aboute hym there pambassade em-
pertall
Wer faire broughte vnto his royall
That prynces wer of aucthorite (dignite)
Of mooste ripe age, and reuerende chere
With ollesse bzaunches, in their handes clere

A token of message, and legacie
Astately pase, vnto his high presence
Where thei offered, of Lucius Hebery
The letters then, on knees with reuerence
Of whiche this, the woordes and compzevence
As foloeth now, when thei wer reede and sene
As chyonickers wyten, thus dooe contene
Lucius

Arthur.

Lucius of Roome, the empereour
Procurator for all the whole senate
Of the publike profite, chief gouernour
By whole senate made and denominate
To Arthur kyng of Brytain procreate
Sendyng gretynge, like as thou haste deserued
Now in Fraunce, whiche was to vs preserued

Amerueled much, of wroges y^e thou hast doen
Within our lande of Fraunce by greate rigoure
Without right, that better had been vndooen
But if thy witte amende, thy foule erreure
That sith of Fraunce, then wer the gouernour
No trybute pated, but as thyne owne conqueste
Haste holde it aye, vnder thyne areste.

And for thou haste no will, it to amende
And wer so proude, to dooe so cruell a deede
Kyng froyle to see, to vs that did appende
And mikell more, for cause thou takeste no hede
Of the greate imperiall, that we lede
To whiche all landes obey, and paie truage
Sane thou alone, against adeste of thyne outrage

Wherefore we bid straightly and commaunde
That from Auguste now, nexte within a yere
Thou come to Roome, and paie that we demaunde
The truage, whiche thou haste of thy power
Of Brytain long with holde, so in feate
And thy defautes, amende thou did in Fraunce
By sentence of the senates ordinaunce.

And els, we shall apwoche to thy countree

And

And what so thy folp hath vs bee refte
With sweordes, we shall it make restored bee
Till our senate, as first it was infeste
The liuelode, that thy father so the leste
Thou art like for thyne intrucion
To lose and bee brougt into confusion

Wrytten at Roome in the consistory
By whole aduise, of all the wise senate
At Pasche laste paste, to bide in memory
Their regestred and determinate
Leste thy pouthed, our letters and the date
Would couer, with feined forgetfulnesse
Trustyng in vs, the same defaute I gesse.

With þ the kyng, went to the Giauntes toure
With pynces all that wer of his counsaill
By their aduise, to wyte to the imperoure
For his honoure, and for his gouernaill
Of whiche so wise, would not forgette ne faill
So well wer made to Lucius and endite
Whiche saied right thus, as in my stile I write

The lxxx. Chapter.

The letter that kyng Arthure sente again to
Lucius the emperoure of Roome.



Arthure kyng of all þ great Brytain
And Emperoure of Roome, by title
of right
Whiche defozced by Luct⁹ Romain
Þretendyng hym for emperoure of
Unto the same Lucius, for thyne vnright (might
Usurper of the sea imperiall
Sendeth gretynge, as enemye moste mortall.

Arthur.

To the senate of Roome it is well known
How Julius Caesar with iniury
The truage had, Britain was brought so lowe
By helpe of erle Androgeus, and his traytoꝝ
That brought hym in, by his false policy
Without right oꝝ title of discente
Oꝝ any right, that to the senate appent

And what so he had, then by iniury
Lefull to vs, now is it to withstande
Foꝝ what euer thng, is take vniustly
Maie neuer bee had, as I can vnderstande
By any other, to holde it with strong hande
From hym that had it, well and rightfully
By none other maie bee had lawfully

By whiche reason, the wrong we shall defende
And holde oure realme so, in our firste estate
Of seruage free, as it to Bꝛute appende
Who helde it free, afoꝝe that Roome bare date
Whose right to vs, is now determinate
And by suche right, as thou dooest now pꝛetende
We maie claime Roome, & to the empire ascende

Foꝝ kyng Belyn, that was our auncetoure
And Bꝛenny also, the kyng of Albany
All Romain did win, by conquest there
Of Roome thei had, and all greate Italy
And slewe themperoure, by theiꝝ greate maistꝛi
And crowned were in the see imperiall
Where no pꝛince was, that tyme to theiꝝ egall.

But yet we haue, a better title of right

To

To thempire whiche nowe we will pzentende
for Constantyne, saint Elyn sonne of right
By right of bloodde, of Constaunce Downe discend
Emperour was, that Roome did well Defende
Against Maxence, and his feloes tweyn
Whiche there made, muche Chryste people to dyen

¶ Maximian kyng of greate Brytain
By whole decree, and will of the senate
Was emperour of Roome, and ruled almaine
Whose rightes we haue, and al their whole estate
And heire of bloodde, bozne and generate
Wherfore we clayme the throne emperyal
from hence forth, by lawe Judicial.

¶ As to the daye, which thou hast vs sette
To paye to Rome, the tribute and truage
We shall bee there, to chalenge of dewe debts
Truage of Roome, with all their rerage
And to enioyse and holde our heritage
Of Roome citee, to kepe the souereigne see
With all that longeth to themperaltee.

¶ And if thou wilt me soner haue or seke
Byng Romany with the, where so thou wyl
With me I shall byng Brytain ke
And whiche of vs, that daye maye other kyll
Bere Roome with hym, and Brytain also their til
Wryten at our citee of Caistrion
By whole adusse of all our region.

¶ The. lxxi. Chapter.

¶ He gaue to thambassadors royall gistes, and sent his
letters to his ambassates to passe to Rome with the in
cōpaignie & he with his hooft folowed sone after them.

Arthur.



He kynge then gaue vnto that hye
ambassate
full riche giftes and golde enoughe
to spende
And bad them geue their lordes in
whole senate

His letters so, whiche he then to hym sende
And bad them saye, that sone then he wend
He should hym see, befoze the daye assigned
In trust of whiche, them with his scale assigned

This noble kyng Arthur, his princes prayed
And barons all, and knightes honozable
To passe with him, at wages to bee payed
With their power, and their retenu able
For to directe, his right full reasonable
Marciall actes, thempire to obtain
To whom they all consented, whole and clene

And with the kyng, they passed forth anone
Into Brytain, wher Howel then was kyng
Wher then he hard, þ countre make great inone
For a Graunt horrible in all thyng
That rauished had, by his cruell werkynge
Kyng Howell sister Elein without pere
Betwene his armes, was slain and layed on bere

For whiche the kyng, to mount Michel then went
With that Graunt, that faught a batayl soze
With Caliborne his swearde, or that he stint
He sleugh hym there to death for euermoze
And charged Kay, for his victoize thoz
To suryte his hed of, then for memoize

In worſhypp of his worthy victoꝛpe

In whiche mount, kyng Howell her tobe made
A chapell faire, theron edefied
With that tyme hether, vpon that place abade
Wher that Gyaunt, and he were homycied
But all his hoost, and people hym magnified
And all the landes about, wholy, enioyed
Of that Gyauntes death, so felly anoyed

The kynges all, of Portyngale and Spain
Of Nauerne also, and eke of Catheloyne
Unto hym came, and dukes of Almaine
The dukes of Sauoy, and of Burgoyne
Douze peres of Fraunce, and the duke of Lozain
The kynges also of Denmarke and Irelande
Of Noꝛweye, Iselande and of Gotelande

Through Fraunce, Burgoyne, Sauoye & Lum-
Into Italy, and so through all Tuskayn (bardie
fro Tuskayn, then so into Romany
To Aube ryuer, kyng Arthure came so than
And loged on that water as manne
Wher wpyth Lucius, he faught, in batayle strong
Eith er other pꝛoued, with strokes soꝛe emonge

But kyng Arthure, and the pꝛinces all
His knyghtes also there, of the round table
So manfully theim bare that daye ouer all
That neuer their better were seen, noꝛ moꝛe able
So were Romaynes, that daye full comendable
Ne none might dooe better in any wyse
So worthely they faught without feyntise

Arthure.

And at the last the Byttons bare the bell
And had the felde, and all the victoꝝpe
Wher Arthure sleugh, as chꝛonicles dooeth tell
The emperor Lucius Hiberꝝ
And toke his feloe contributoꝝpe
But Lucys hedde, to Roome foꝝ his truage
He sent his corꝝps also, foꝝ their arerage

The.lxxxiiij.Chapiter.

Howe the senate and the citee of Roome, mette hym
in seven processions: and crowned hym and there win
fred hym by all the whole winter.

The senate sent vnto the kyng Arthure
And prayed hym, thempire to admit
Whiche became hym, & seined hym of
nature.

As Constantyne did in hꝛ honour sitte
And al truage foꝝthward, they would remitte
Of greate Bytarn, neuer to aske it moꝝe
But make it free, as it was euer befoꝝe

To whiche prayer kyng Arthure did consent
And came to Roome, in royall high astate
Wher the citee, by good and whole assent
Full rychehꝝ hym mette, and the senate
With the greatest lande, that might been estimate
At euery gate, his triumphe and his gloꝝie
Full curyously was wꝛought, in greate stoꝝe

The seven oꝝders in procession
Full solemꝛpꝝe, at Peters churche hym mete
The wifes whole by good discrecion
The wydowes after full deuoutly sette

In order came then, next as was they? det
The virgyns then, of pure virginite
And then the innocentes of tender iuente.

The orders al of goodly relygion
The pzeestes and clerkes secular
The byshop and cardinales in bypon
With the sacrament, and lyghtes clere
And belles ryngyng, therwith in fere
Euery order wyth laude and reuerence
Reioysed greatly of hys magnificence

At the Capitole, in the sea imperial
Thei crowned hym, wyth crownes thre of golde
As Emperoure moost pzyncipal
And conqueroure, that daye moost worthye holde
Where then he feasted, the cyte manyfolde
Of Rome the byshoppe, and al his cardinals
The senatours, wyth other estates als.

The. lxxxiij. Chapter.

How that tidinges came to the kyng at Rome, þat Mo-
dred had wedded his wife, and vsurped þat crowne of En-
gland, for the which he came home agayne, & gaue Mo-
dred barrayl at Douer, wher Arthure preuayled, & after
agayn at Winchester, where the round table began and
fell for euer.



At that witer at Rome he did sojourne
In palays of Mayns palacium
The somer came, that home he myght
retourne

At whyche somer, so when it was come
Tydings came to Arthure, hole and some

Arthur,

That duke Mordred, was kyng of Britayn
And wedded Guaynour, to his wyfe certayn

For which at Roome, he made his ordynance
To rule that lande, and al the hole Emprye
And whome in hast, with ful great purpauce
To Britayn came, to venge hym on that sire
That trayterously, agayne him dyd conspyre
To rauish hys wife, by strong and myghty hand
And also for vslurpyng the croune of his land

At port Ruppyn, which now Douer hyght
He landed then, where duke Mordred hym met
And fought ful soze, by al a day to nyght
Wher sir Gawen and Anguzell, were soze bet
And slayne both two, so soze thei were ouer set
But Arthur had the feelde, and Mordred fled
To Wycheſter that nyght, ful fast hym sped

The kyng folowed fast, vpon the chase
And there he fought agayne, wyth hym ful soze
Where manye prynces and lordes in that case
Were slayne on bothe sydes, for euer moze
Of the round table, that lange had bene afoze
Manye worthy knyghtes, there were spende
For Arthures loue, that myght not bene amended

The rounde table at Wynchester began
And there it ended, and there it hangeth yet
For there were slayne, at this ylike battayle than
The knyghtes all, that euer dyd at it sit
Of Britayn bozne, saue Lancelot podye quyte
And with the kyng, folowed on the chase

When

When Mordred fled to Cornewayle, for that cause

The. lxxviii. Chapter

The battayle of Camblain, where Arthure preuailed and slewe Mordred, and Arthure had his deathes wounde, and howe Arthure dyed and was buryed in the blacke chapel of Glastenbury.



Here on the water, that called was
Camblayne

Mordred abode with myghtie host
and stronge

With Arthure fought, þe day of hie
ful oft alone, euer as thei met among (dysdayne
But Arthure slew Mordred, wyth his knyfe long
That Calibourne was called, of such vertue
That whomsoever he smote therwith he slewe

But this Mordred, gaue Arthure deathes wound
for which he yode, his woundes to medifie
Into thysle of Aulon, that stound
And gaue Brytain, that was full solitarie
To Constantine, duke Cader sonne on hys
His newew was, for Cader was his brother
As wel was knowne, thei had but one mother

Kyng Arthure then, in Aualon so dyed
Where he was buryed, in a chapel saye
Whiche now is made, and fully edified
The mynster church, this day of great repayre
Of Glastenbury, where now he hath his leyre
But then it was called the blacke chapell
Of our lady, as chronicles can tel,

The death
of kyng
Arthure.

Where Geryn earle of Chartres then abode
Besyde

Arthur.

Beside his tombe, for whole deuotion
Whether Lancelot delake, came as he rode
Upon the chace, with trumpet and clarion
And Geryn tolde hym, there all by and downe
Howe Arthur was, there layde in sepulture
For which with him to abyde, he hyght ful sure

And so they abode, together in contemplacion
And preestes were, aboute his tombe alway
In prayers great and holy meditacion
With heare, the fleshe repressing nyght and daye
Thre dayes eche weke, at bread and water aye
They fasted & lyued in great sorow and penaunce
To soules helth and Goddes hye pleasure

But when the quene Guaynour had perceaued
Howe Mordred was fled away then thysle
From porke then yode, lest she were dysceaued
On foote by nyght, with a mayden full wyse
To Carlion to lyue, in goddes seruyce
In the mynster of saynt Iuly, with Nonnes
In prayers whole, and great deuotions

This king Arthur, to who none was cōdigne
Throughe all the worlde, so was he then perelelle
His lyfe and soule, to God he dyd resigne
The yere of Chyyst, as chronycles expresse
Fyue hundred and two, in sothfastnesse
And fourtye also, accompted hole and clere
At his endyng, without any were.

The. lxxxv. Chapter

The

The commendacion of Arthure, after the conceipte of
the maker of this booke in fewe wordes, and also the
compleinte and lamentacyon of the sayde maker for
the death of Arthure.

Rigned he had then, sixe and .xx. yere
Moste redoubted in erth and moste fa-
mous
The worthiest, & wysest without pere
The hardiest man, and moste coragious
In actes marcyall, moste victorions
In hym was neuer, a drop of cowardise
Nor in his herte a poynte of couetyse.

There was neuer pynce, of gyftes moze liberal
Of landes geuyng, ne of meate so plenteous
Agayn his foonen, was moste imperiall
And with his owne subiectes moste bounteous
As a Lyon in felde, was moste douteous
In house a lambe, of mercy euer replete
And in iudgement euer equall was and discrete.

O good lord God, suche treason & vntyghtes
Why suffred thy deuyne omnipotent
That of theym had pzeience and fozsightes
That myght haue lette, that cursed violence
Of Mordredes pryde, and all his insolence
That noble kyng fozpassyng conqueroure
So to destroye, by treason and extoure.

Fortune false, executryse of weerdes
That euermoze, so with thy subtiltee
To all debates, thou strongly so enherdes
That where men euer, would lyue in charitee
Thou doest perturb, with mutabilittee

Why

Arthur.

Why stretchest thou so thy whele vpon Mordred
Agayne his eime, to do so cruel dede

Wherthroughe that high, & noble conquerour
Withoute cause, shuld algates percused bee
With so many kynges, and prynces of honour
In all the worlde, might none there better bee
O fals fallas, of Mordredes propertee
Howe might y so, in Gwynoure haue such might
That we the death caused of so many knyghtes

O false beaultie, of Gwynour predestinate
What vnhappye made the, false to thy lord
So good a prince, and so fortunate
Was neuer yet seē, as all men can recorde
The whiche betwene you made so great discorde
That he and all his prynces, wer there slayne
Thy chaungeable hert, to venge he was so fayne

But O Mordred tofore, so good a knight
In greate manhode, proudly aye approued
In whom thyne eime, the noblest prince of might
Put all his trust, so greatly he the loued
What vnhappye, thy manly ghost hath moued
Vnto so foule, and cruell hardynesse
So many to be slayn, throughe thyn unhappynes

The highnesse of thyne honoure, had a fall
When thou began, to do that iniurie
That great falshode, thy prowesse did appall
As soone as in the entred periurie
By consequens, treason and traitourie
Thy lord and eime, and also thy kyng souerayn

So

So to betrape thy felowes eke certayne

The. lxxxvi. Chapiter.

Constantyne, kyng of Britayn, sonne of Duke Cadoz of Cornewayle reigned foure yere.



Constantyne his brothers sonne was crownd

Duke Cadoz, sonne of Cornewayle bounteous

Afoze had been, one of the table rouse

In Arthures time, a knight was full auenturous

In trone royall was set, full pzeious

With Diademe on his hed signified

At Troynouaunt, where no wight it replied.

Who then anon, with Saxons soze did fight

And also with Mordred sonnes two

Their capitaynes wer, & put theim to the flyght

That one fled to Wynchester, and byd hym so

That other to London, with mykell wo

Where Constantyne theim both in churches slewe

At the aulters, where they were byd in mew.

This Constantyne set all his lande in peace

And reigned well foure yere in great noblesse

And dyed then, buryed at Caroll no lesse

Beside Uterpendragon full expresse

Arthures father, of great worthynesse

Whiche called is the stone, Hengles certayne

Beside Salysbury vpon the playne.

Aurelius Conan, his colyn sayze

The sea royall then helde, and ganne succede

To hym, as nexte then of bloodde and heyze

Aurelius
Conan,
kyng of
Britayne
reigned
iii. yere.

His

Uortypet.

His vnckle, and his sonnes two in dede
In pylson slewe, to crowne hym selfe I rede
That should haue been, kynges of all Britain
Afoze hym so, yf they had not be slain.

He mapnteyned aye ctyple warre and debate
Betwene citees, castelles, and countreys
Throughe al his realme, w^{ch} misculed m^e associate
Which was greatly against his royaltees
And but thre yere, he reigned in dignitees
As God so would, of his hys ordynaunce
For wronge lawes, maketh shorte gouernaunce.

Uortypet
kyng of
Brytayne
reigned
vii. yere.

Then Uortypet succeded after hym
Crowned was then, with all the royaltee
Against whom, the Saxons strong and grym
Made full greate warre, destroyed the comente
But in batayle, by greate humanitee
He them ouercame, and set his lands in peace
Unto the tyme, that death made hym decease.

Seuen yere he reigned, and his people pleased
And tender was he, of his comynalte
Aboue all thyng, he sawe that they were eased
The publique cause, afoze the syngulerte
Preserued also, as it of right should bee
For commons first, for princes supportacion
Were set, and nought been waste by dominacion

Malgo
kyng of
Brytayne
reigned
xxii. yere.

Malgo nexte hym, to the crowne attayned
Fayrest of other, that euer was in his daye
All tyranny, fully he restreyned
And conquered wholy, thysle of Dykenay

Ireland

Irelande, Denmarke, Iselande, and eke Norway
And Gotelande also, obeyed his royaume
He was so wise, full of fountaine

Within his realme was none so large ne strong
As none that was, in feacte of warre so wise
With swerde or axe, to fight in the throng
Nor with his speare, that had suche exercise
For to assaile his foes, and them suppress
And defence also, he had greates keenynge
As any prince euer had, or any kyng.

But one defaute he had, of greates offence
Of Sodome synne, he would it not amende
He haunted it euer, without any defence
Whiche greued God, & brought hym to an ende
Two and twenty yere, as did appende
His lande he helde, in peace and unitie
Without suppress of any enemye.

Carreis was then crowned kyng anon
That loued well in all citees debate
Betwene townes and citees euerchone
And in suche wise, mainteined early and late
Imagined of his will p̄ordinate
So muche in warre, that citees and countrees
Full commen wer, of his malitiousnesse,

Carreis
kyng of
Britain
reigned
iii. yere.

For whiche Britons, made hym full miskele warre
And Saxons also, vnto kyng Gurmounde sent
Of Africans, that then in Irelande wer
Who with his fleete to perfourme his entent
To Britain came, by all their whole assent
But Saxons then, and he wer full accorde

And

Gurmonde.

And Byttons also, that had civile discorde.

[The. lxxxvii. Chapter.

[How Gurmounde kyng of Africans, conquered Britain, and departed it in seven kyngdomes, to Saxons, and Englishe, and wente to wynn mo landes and made Gurmounde Chestre.



Gurmonde, that then was mightie conqueroure

kyng of Africans, moste dzedde in euery londe

With helpe of Byttons and there greate socoure

And of Englishe and Saxons had made theim
That dwelled þe tyme in Northumberlande (boud
And other places in Britain, vnder truage
Rose with hym whole, again the kynges outrage.

[And fought with hym, & put hym to the flight
To Circestre wente, and strongly helde the towne
But kyng Gurmounde, þe towne then sieged right
And gatte it so, with might and greate renowne
Wherefore he fled to Walis, for his proteccion
What came of hym mine authour nought expref-
But with the death, I trowe he was oppressed (sed

[But Gurmounde the, Britain whole destroyed
Bothe church and towne, & eke the chrysten faith
For he a painim was, and soze anoyed
The chrystent, as Gyl das wrote and saith
Through Logers þe whole was lost, with painim
The prelates all, curates, and religeous (lepyth
With reliques all fled awaie, full doloious.

[And hid theim the in hilles, woodes and caues
The

Tharchebisshopes, the one of London then
 And Tadiok of Porke, that fled fro knauis
 With saintes bones, to wildernesse faste ranne
 And hid hym ther, and Gurmound soze did hanne
 With crosse and bell, & with greate candell light
 Thei cursed hym, as farre as the churches might

This kyng Gurmouid gaue all Northūberlād
 From Trent North, & then hight Berun & Deire
 Northfolke, Southfolk & Cābridge shire at hāde
 Whiche Estangle, Bede calleth in his stozp
 And all Trent to Thamis, for memozy
 Wers he called, all to Englishe gaue
 That dwelled there, for euer to reioyse and haue.

He gaue all these, to Englishe men in deede
 Whiche came out of a lande, hight Angulo
 In Germany that was, and with woodes frede
 Replenished of wilde bestes, bucke and doo
 Sith that tyme hether, hath been and yet is so
 Wherefore thei wer, of it called Englishe men
 All Logers & Northumberlande, Englande then

He gaue Suffex then to the Saxons
 Essex, Midelsex, with Surry whole and Kente
 But then Hamshire, Barkeshire, toures & towne
 And Shropshire whole, & Gloucester as the apēt
 All these wer called, Westsex as Bede mente
 Thus dalt he the lande, to theim therin dwelling
 Whiche long afoze, paid truage to the kyng.

Then went he home, through fraunce and it de
 And many other landes and regions (stroyed
 But

A lamentacion.

But Bryttons then, to þe West parties soze annoyed
Drewe them to Logers, with all religiouns
To liue in peace, for drede of rebellions
For after Carreis was fled, thei had no kyng
To tyme Cadwan, was made by their chosynge

How the
Bryttons
met kyn-
gliste. xx.
pere.

TSo stode thei then, kyngles by twenty pere
fro the pere of Christ, fiue hundred and fourscore
And therto thre, as clerly dooeth apere
Unto the pere after that Christe was boze
Sixe hundred and thre, without any moze
When Cadwan was of Bryttons, kyng electe
And crowned was, to rule them and protecte

A lamen-
tacion of
the maker
of this bo-
ke to the
lordes.

O kyng Carreis, unhappiest creature
That in Britain reigned euer afoze
What infortune made the flee from thy cure
What caused the to maintein so euer moze
Ciuile disorde within thy realme so soze
That might haue reigned, ouer many a lande
Throughe whiche, thyne owne is lost I vnderstand

Mat. xii.

Thou vnderstandest full litle theuangelie
That euery realme, within it self deuide
Shall desolate bee made, as clerkes tell
And euery house on other, shall fall and slide
Thy wicked will, that now is knowen wide
That suffred so debate, betwene lord and lord
Betwene citees and landes, ciuile disorde.

The cause was of thy disheritson
And of thy realmes desolacion
That with lawe and peaceble constitucion

Might

Might haue been saued, with great consolacion
 And the church preserved, in great prosperacion
 The Christen faith, in thy lande destroyed
 That with the peace shuld haue be kept vnnoyed.

Twofull Carreis, thine heyres & thy Bytong
 Their children all, the widdowes and their wifes
 The comunalte in citees and in townes
 The church also may bane ful soze those strues
 By thy suppozte that rest so many their liues
 Wher lawe and peace, if thou had well conserued
 All had been saued, with thanke of God deserued:

Defaute of lawe, was cause of this mischiefes
 Wronges sustened, by maistry and by might
 And peace layed downe, that should haue been the
 For whiche debate folowed and vnright (chief
 Wherfoze vnto a pynce accorded right
 To kepe peace with all tranquillitee
 Within his realme, to saue his royaltee.

What is a kyng, without lawe and peace
 Within his realme sufficiently conserued
 The poozest of his realme, maye so encrease
 By iniury and foze, to bee preferred
 Till he his kyng, with strength haue ouerterued
 And sette hym self in royall maiestee
 If that he bee, in suche a ieopardie.

O ye lordes and pynces of high estate
 Kepe well the lawe and peace in gouernaunce
 Lest your subiectes defoule you and depreciate
 Whiche been as able, with wrongful gouernaunce

The coun-
 sell of the
 maker to
 duke Ry-
 charde of
 York.

Surmounde.

To reigne as ye, and haue as great purpauce
If peace and lawe been boyed, and vnytes
The floures are lost of all your souerentee.

O worthy prince, O duke of Yorke I meane
Descended downe of highest bloodde royall
Se to suche ryotes, that none sustene
And specially, that alyens none at all
Inhabite not with power, great ne small
That maye this lande ought trouble or ouerride
For twise it was so wonne, with muche pryde.

Through Uortiger, by Engist and Hoisus
Whom he recciued, whiche after hym destroyed
And with his helpe full false and noyous
The worthy bloodde of Brittain sore anoyed
At the Caroll murdred, and all accloyed
And nowe again, when Carreis was exiled
The kyng Surmod. & the Sarons hym beguiled

For Sarons, Deightes, and Englishemen
Reigned then through all the Logres lande
Deuided in seuen realmes fully then
Westsex Sussex, and Kent I vnderstande
Essex and Mers, Estangle & Northumberlande
That droue Byrons, into the West countree
To Wales and Cornewayle, fro towne and citee.

The. lxxviii. Chapiter.

Ethelberte kyng of Sarons,

His Ethelbert was reigynng kyng of kēt
W Saint Austyne sent by Gregorpe of Rome
bishoppe
Landed in Tenet, with clerkes of his assent
And

And many monkes, to teache the faith I hope
 That clothed were, echeone vnder a blacke cope
 Whiche in proceſſion, with croſſe and belles came
 The latines ſyngyng in Jeſus his name

In the pere of Chriſt his incarnation
 five hundredeth foure ſcore and ſixtene
 kyng Ethelbert, had in his dominacion
 All kent throughout, with greate ioy as was ſeen
 Were baptizd then, in holy water clene
 To whome Gregory ſent Mellito and Juſto
 With other clerkes, and doctours many mo

Gregory hym made, archebiſhop of Caunterbur-
 Of all Englande, hieſt then primate (ry
 And had the paule with hyeſt legacye
 By Gregorye, ſent to hym and ordinate
 fro London then, thus was that tyme tranſlate
 To Caunterbury, the ſea Metropolitane
 And London ſette, as for his ſuffrigan.

Saynt Auguſtine then, w helpe of Ethelbert
 Saynt Auguſtines made, & Chriſtes churche alſo
 That Chriſtes churche hight, as it was aduerte
 And ſacted ſo by hym, and halowed tho
 for the chiefe ſea, Metropolitane ſo
 Of all England, by Gregory ordinate
 And ſaynt Auguſtine, of all Englande primate:

Then Auguſtine made Peter a clerke deuoute
 Of ſaynt Auguſtines thabbot religious
 And made Mellito, as Bede clerly hath note
 Of London then byſhoppe full vertuouſ

Ethelbert.

A clarke that was then beneuolus
Who then conuerted, of Essex the kyng Sebert
And all his lande, baptized with holy herte

Kyng Ethelbert, saint Doules edefied
And kyng Sebert Westminster founded
Wessito theim both halowed and edefied
Austyn then, made clerke full wel grunded
Iusto that hight, of Rochester full well bounded
Then bishop then to preache, and helpe Austyn
And to baptise the folke by his doctrine

Saynt Austyn set ful nere to Walis his seane
That prelates all, bishops and doctours wise
Of Brytons bloodde, thither might well atteine
To make all rest and loue in humble wise
Throughe all þe churche and lande, by good auice
To whiche seane came, tharchbishop of Brytain
And bishops fyue, with doctours wise certain

In whiche Austyn setting as president
Archbishop and also the high primate
Required and prayed, with all his whole entent
As he that was of England high prelate
By Gregory sacred and ordinate
Of fraterne loue and due obedience
To helpe hym furth, with all their diligence

To conuerte and to teache the Saxons all
The Englishe also, in Christen feith and trewe
And baptise theim, throughe Brytain ouer all
The pasche to kepe, as Roome did then full dewe
To whiche Brytons answered, þe they not knewe
That

That he had such estate, in al Britayn
foz thei had thze archebyschoppes to obeyn

Of Caierlon, London and Porke cite
Bi bishops of Rome graunted to vs a oꝛdinate
ful long afoze ye had such dignite
Wherfoze we wyl obey no newe pꝛimate
And specyally none Englysh newe pꝛelate
foz Englyshemen, and Saxons haue vs noyed
And haue our land, and al our kyn destroyed

And Pasche we wyl holde forth as we afoze
And holy fathers, vnto thys day haue bled
We wyl not chaunge, foz your doctryne ne loze
Ther shal no newe emong vs bene abused
As saynt Ihon dyd, we haue it not refused
That on Chyistes bozome, saw his great pꝛiuetes
So wil we ble, and none other solempnitees

S. Austyn saied, syth ye nowe thus forsake
The seed of God, to seme by your doctrine
The Chyisten fayth, foz to encrease and make
By rightful dome of God, ye must enclyne
Under their handes, that fro the fayth decline
The cruel death to suffer, foz hys vengeaunce
Sith ye refuse Chyistes wyl and oꝛdinaunce

This time, eche kyng warred on others land
Of seuen kynges, of Saxons nation
And of Englyshe with Wightes I vnderstand
And Britons also, dyd great aduersacion
But Ethelrype of Englysh gouernacyon
Of Northumberland kyng, and Danime cruel
I iiii fought

Ethelfride
Fought wyth Aȝdan, the kyng of Scottes fell,

CThe. lxxxix. Chaptyer

Howe kyng Ethelfryd of Northumberlande had ser
uyce of Aȝdan kyng of Scottes, the yere of Chyſt. vi.
hundred and thre, after ſaynt Bede.

Homage
of ſ Scottes

A Degfaſtan, where Ethelfride pꝛeuailed
And ſet Aȝdan in his ſubiectiō
To Bedes dayes, the Scottes nomoze af-
Englande, but aye obeyed his edicciō (ſayled
And was his man, wythout contradicciō
And helde of hym, hys lande as was accorde
By many yeres, thence forth no moze dyſcorde.

This battayle was, of Chyſtes incarnaciō
Syrre. C. yere x. iiii. as ſayth ſaynt Bede
And of his reigne, by Bedes computaciō
The. xi. yere it was then, as I rede
That. xx. yere and. iiii. reigned there in dede
In al hys tyme, to whom the Dightes obeyed
And Jcythe alſo, and no moze hym dyſobeyed

In that ſame yere, of Chyſtes incarnaciō
The Bytōngs all, dyd ſet their parlyament
At Carlion, by good informaciō
Caſtregeoceſter hyght, as ſome men ment
That Weſtcheſtre is become of entent
Where thei dyd choſe, Cadwan vnto their kyng
Them to defende, fro their foes warring.

CThe. xc. Chapter.

Cadwan

Cadwan kynge of Brytayne, that fyrste was pryncce of
Northwales. This Cadwan was crowned in the yere of
Christ. vi. C. and. iiii. and after Bede by. xiii. yere reigned
ouer the Brytons, in the weste parties of all Wales and
Cornewayle.

This kynge Cadwā, at Winchester crowned
Was made þ king, of Britaine & Britons
Agaynste whome kynge Ethelfryde, that
Warred ful soze, all the regyons (stound
Where Brytons were, so did he al relygions
Who Westchester sieged, with violence
Where Brochewal therle, made great defence

But there he slewe Brochewall in battayle
And gat the toun of Westchester in that tyde
Where. xii. C. Monkes, wythout fayle
He slewe doune, ryght a lytle there besyde
That came to praye for peace, wythout pryde
fro Banger there, in hole processyon
That matters were there, by his oppzession

Whom kynge Cadwan, with myghtie host and
Met in feelde, ful redy for to fyght (stronge
But both their frendes treated, so them among
That good accord betwene them, was made right
Durynge their lyues, wel kept as thei hyght
With all frendshyp, great loue and bnytee
That both they; realmes, stode in great dignitee.

But Ethelfrydes wyfe, with childe farre gone
Violently exiled and repudiate
And wedded another, ful wrongfully anone
Wherfore she went, to recouer his estate

To

Cadwall

To kyng Cadwan, ful sycke and desolate
Whom he receiued, with noble reuerence
And sorp was, for her wofull offence.

But then his wyfe, as greate was goone with
for which he kept her in house to abide (childe
To tyme he myght, hym haue reconsiled
Her to receaue, and set the other on syde
But in the meane time, thei myght no léger abide
Both quenes deliuered, were of sonnes two
That one Edwyn, that other hyght Cadwallo

The childer two, together noyrshed were
In tender age, to tyme that thei were men
At which tyme, there rose full cruel warre
Betwene Redwald, kyng of Estangle then
And Ethelfride, that fought as folkes dyd ken
Where Ethelfride on Idel, was downe slayne
And Redwald the feelde had with payne

Kyng Cadwan then, out of this worlde so died
The same yere, so dyd Austyne also
And Laurens made fully, and glorified
Archebysshop of Caunterbury tho
And Ethelbert of Kente, to heauen dyd go
Thus chaunged thei their habitacion
Some to payne, and some to saluacyon.

Cadwall then, the sonne of kyng Cadwan
After his father had reigned. xiii. yere
Was crowned at Westchester as a man
Of Byptons all, as clerely dyd appere
The yere of Christ. vi. C. and. xvi. clere

That

That reigned well, full syrtye yere and one
 Aboue all kynges, as souerayne of echeone.

C But kyng Edwyn then, of Northumberlande
 The sonne and heyre, unto kyng Ethelfryde
 Was crowned kyng at Porke, I vnderstande
 For whiche, the kyng Cadwall hym despyd
 And made hym warre, with Britons fortifyd
 And sente hym worde, no crowne for to were
 And elles he should vnder it, his hed of there

Which Edwyn then accompted, at ryght nought
 But kepte estate full royall, and condigne
 With crowne of gold, at porke ful freshly wrought
 Elfrydes sonnes, of his wronge wyfe vndigne
 Gotei and bozne, he felly dyd repugne
 Hym dyd exyle, in Scotlande dyd abyde
 For his mother was exyled, by Ethelfryde.

And Ethelfryde hym gate, on his wrong wyfe
 And had exyled, his owne wyfe truely wed
 Edwyns mother, as knowen was full ryfe
 Full great w chylde, with hym, as Bede hath red
 Then made he welles, in dyuerse countrees spred
 By the hye wayes, in cuppes of copper clene
 For trauelyng folke, faste chayned as it was sene

And euery daye, he rode withouten reste
 With trompettes lowde, afoze him where he rode
 That euery wyght, myght suerly in hym truste
 That he wolde then, of his ryght wythode
 Do euery man right, without moze abode
 All complayntes here, & as lawe wolde reforme

So

Cadwall.

So all his lyfe to rule, he did confirme.

The sente vnto Ethelbalde, kyng of kent
His syster so; to haue, and wed her to wyfe
Dame Ethelburge, that was full fayre and gent
But Ethelbalde, then sent hym worde by lyfe
It was not good, but lykely to make stryfe
That a chrysten womā, to a Dapnū shuld be wed
And elles he sayde, his message had be sped.

Edwyne then sent his message so agayne
He wolde well, she kepte her owne creaunce
And bade hym sende, with her a chapelayne
And clerkes wyse, without any barpaunce
To kepe her in her fayth, and in all suraunce
And yf her fayth be better then is myne
When it is knowen, I wyll therto enclyne.

Kyng Ethelbald, her sent with Paulpne
That sacred was byshop of Porke that tyme
By Justo archbyshop, that was full fyne
Of Caunterbury to kepe her true Baptyme
And her beleue, that none her fethers lyme
With herselfe, to foule his owne creaunce
Thus wedded he her, at Porke in all suraunce.

The yere of our Lorde. vi. hundred & xx. tho
And fyue therto, as Bede hath clerely wryten
And in the yere. vi. hundred and twenty so
And syre therto kyng Edwyn as is weten
To westsex went, where batayle soze was smyten
Betwene hym, and byshop Dunchelyne
King kiniguls sonne, of westsex then so fyne.

Where

Where then he slewe, this manly Quinchelyne
 For cause he had, compassed his death before
 By pryuey wyse, as he coulde ymagyne
 He put the lande then vnder trybute soze
 And kynngell, the kyng of Westser thore
 Became his man, and helde of hym his lande
 At his byddynge to ryde with hym and stonde.

The. xxi. Chapiter.

Howe Cadwall fled, and was dyspuē from his realme
 by kyng Edwyn, & helde it in subiection, & was bap-
 tized by saynt Paulyn archbishop of Yorke.



kyng Cadwallo then, of al Bryttons
 The yere of Chyist. vi. C. & eightene
 By wrog coucel, on Edwins regios
 Create warres made, but Edwyne
 then full kene

faught with hym there, full soze as it was sene
 And to the flight hym droue, out of the felde
 All Brytain lande he conquered so, and helde.

Cadwallo fled vnto lytle Brytain
 And dwelled there, in heuynesse and in pain
 By dyuers yerres, and durst not come again
 For power none he might, not yet obteyn
 The Brytaynes durste hym not obeyn
 For kyng Edwyn, had hole dominacion
 Of theim and Saxons, & of the Scottishe naciō.

The sub-
 leccion of
 the Scots
 tes.

And in the yere of Chyist. vi. C. xx. and. vi.
 Edwyns doughter that named was Eufled
 At Yorke was bozne, to whom men did complex
 Maydens twelue, to take the chypstenede.

That

Cadwal.

That lordes daughters wer, of greafe worthyhed
Whiche saynt Paulyn archbyschop did baptise
In Yorke mynster, in full holy wyse.

¶ And in the yere of Christ. vi. C. xx. and seven
The chysten lawe, disputed among his lordes
Was founde beste, to wyne the blyffe of heauen
Wherfore Edwyn, by good an hole concozdes
Both of his comons, and also of his lordes
With all his realme, baptyme toke as goddes me
Of saint Paulyn, that archebischop was then.

¶ In that same yere, bischop Honorius
To Paulyn sent, the palle of dignitee
The kyng Edwyn, and this ylike Paulus
Yorke mynster made newe, of greafe beautee
And comons all, full well so baptized he
In Northumberlande, in Swale, Ouse, & Trent
And other ryuers in countrees, wher he went

¶ By thyrty dayes, and sixe labored he thus
And then he came, to Lyncolne with Edwyn
Where he conuerted Blecca, as Bede sayth to be
The Mayze, and all the comons by his doctryne
And Lyndsey hole, vnto the sayth deuyne
And made the mynstre of Lyncolne, at his costage
Of kyng Edwyn, and also the colage.

¶ And in the yere. vi. hundzeth and thyrty mo
Justo dyed, to whome Honoure dyd succede
Of Caunterbury, archbyschop made was tho
Whom saynt Paulyn, as wypten hath saint Bede
Dyd sacre then at Lyncolne, so in dede

In

In the minster that he and Edwyn founde
The kynges colage, named that yke founde.

And in the yere sixe hundred thirty and two
kyng Edwyne, by holy doctryne,
Of saint felix, an holy preeft that was thoo
And preachyng of the holy archebischop Paulyns
Of Chyestes wooꝝde, and verteous discipline
Conuerted Edoꝝwolde, of Estangle the kyng
And all the realme, where felix was dwellynge

At Donmok then, was felix first bisshop
Of Estangle, and taught the chrysten laith
That is full high, in heuen I hope
But then the kyng Edwyn, as Bede saith
Had made the people stable in the chrysten laith
To yorke went home, with hym also Pauline
To rule the lande, after the lawe deuine.

The. xcii. Chapter.

How Cadwall and Penda slewe kyng Edwyne
and reigned ouer Brytons again.

But in the yere sixe hundred thirty and
three
kyng Cadwall, of Brytaine that had
been

With kyng Penda, of Merces greete countree
Assembled strong, with hostes fell and kene
And Northumberlande bynt, as then was sene
And slewe bothe wif, and childe olde and yung
Preeftes and clarkes, thei spared there nothyng.

The churches all, thei byt and foule destroyed
Whom Edwyn mette, with power that he might
At

Oswolde.

At Hatfelde towne, in heate full soze anoped
All redy so, in battaill for to fight
Within Yorkshyre, where Edwin was slain right
And all his realme, was wasted and subuerste
By kyng Penda, that a Paimin was peruerste.

¶ The same yere then, for cause of warre & strife
Saint Paulin went to Kent there to dwell
With Ethelburge, that then was Edwyns wife
That welcome wer, as Bede surely dooeth tell
At Rochester, as that tyme befell
Saint Paulin was, vnto the sea translate
And bishop thereof, then denominate.

¶ Kyng Cadwall reigned full whole again
In Brittain lande, as prince without yere
Above Englishe, as lord soueraigne
Ouer Saxons, Scottes, and Deightes, clere
And Englishe also, as clere did appere
And Eufride then, and Oldryk painimes fell
Northumberlande then helde, as Bede dooeth tel

Subiects
of Scotts

¶ Whom Cadwall and Penda, kelly slewe
From tyme thei twoo, had reigned but a yere
Oswolde their cosyn, as knowen was full trewe
That in Scotlande nozished was full clere
To Englande came with mighty greate power
And gatte his right, and all his herptage
With helpe and socoure, of his baronage.

¶ The .xciii. Chapter.

¶ How Oswolde kyng of Englande reigned ouer
Byrons, Scottes, and Deightes, Jorthe, and o-
uer all Logers and Cambre.

Thus



His kyng Oswolde, in Englande gan
succeede

The yere of Christe sixe hundred was
then clere

Thirty and fiue, replet all of manhed
And after warde, full clerely did appere
As to suche a pynce, of nature, shoud affere
That Yorkes minster, repaired then all newe
Of yme and stone as Chaster pynce and trewe

Who for ayed then, into Scotlande sent
In holy monke he was and religious
And bishop sacred, after Christes entent
In Christes doctryne, he was full labourous
Whom for teachyng and preachyng vertuous
He made hym bishop of Northumberlande
Whose sea was chief then, at the holy isle lande.

In the same yere, Oswolde to Westsax roode
For Christes loue, at praier of saint Beryne
Where thei the kyng kynygill, of Daynpynhode
Baptized, and made a Christen manne full fyne
And sette Westsax vnder tribute fyne
For to bee paied to hym and his heires
Perpetually by yere, at certain feires

Saint Beryne bishop, thei made forth right
Of all Westsax, at Dorchester was his see
From Orenforde, but litle waie to sight
Kyng Oswolde wedded Beblam his wife to bee
Kyng kynygilles daughter, full faire to see
And on her he gatte, a soonne hight Edilwold
In Deire reigned, vnder his father Oswold.

m

And

Ofswolde.

And in the yere sixe hundred thirty and sixe
Kyng Penda slewe Ofswolde of Estanglande
In battaill strong, and mighty gan to bere
That wasted soze aboute hym every lande
As tiraunte fell, where he the Chyristen fonde
He slewe thein doune, and cruelly ouer ranne
Spar yng nother wife, childe, ne manne.

The kyng Ofswolde, so mighty was in deede
That ouer Scottes, Deightes, and Britaines
Frishe, Westsax, and Englyshe freede
And ouer Logers and all the Saxons
None so mighty aboue all regions
As fiores and Bede hath wrytten thus
Whose wrytynge is full vertuous.

As he at meate, did sitte vpon a dale
At Samburg, a palmer came to his gate
Asked some good, for Chyristes loue alwaie
To whom he sent his dishe of siluer plate
For cause he had not els for his estate
The pooze manne to refresh and comfozte
Saint Bede of hym, thus clerely dooeth reporte

An holy manne, within his heritage
Desired soze in his meditacion
If any better, of any maner age
Wer in the lande of any nacion
To whom was saied by reuelacion
That kyng Ofswold, moze holy was of life
Notwithstandyng, he had wedded a wife.

The .xciii. Chapter.

How an hermite proued saint Ofswoldes wife
at his desire by beddyng of saint Ofswold.

Wherefore



Wherefore he came, vnto the kyng

Oswold

And prayed hym, he myght knowe
his life

And of his reuelaciō then hym told

Wherefore he toke to hym his ryng

by life

And bad hym saye, the quene that was his wife

To dooe with hym on nightes two or thre

As she was wonte, at home to dooe with me.

¶ This token had he, he sat with her at meate
his meate & drynke, when he would haue the best
But water and bzead, he might none other gette
And then at night, she layde hym for to rest
Right with her self, so well her selfe she trest
And when he was ought set to dooe amisse
In water he was cast, his flethe to keele and lisse.

¶ But when the daye came, he was full fain
And of the quene, full soone he toke his leue
Vnto the kyng he went anone again
And prayed hym fast, he might passe home at eue
for of his life, he would no more proue
whiche more holy was one daye and night
Then all his life, he euer been might.

¶ But Cadwall the kyng of Brytons sent
The kyng Penda to warre on kyng Oswold
Whom Oswold mette, with great assemblente
In battaile strong, at Heuenfeld as God would
Where people fled, with people manyfolde
To kyng Cadwall, who with Penda anone
Assembled an hoste, on Oswold for to gone.

m ii Oswold

Oswy.

Oswold thel mette, on Marfeld that tyde
Where he was slain the yere of Christ was than
Sire hundred whole, and fourty and two besyde
His hedde and armes, as Bede the holy man
In his chronicle hath wypte, who so rede it can
Upon a tree was hong many a dape
That rotted not, no; in this world neuer maye

Oswy
kyng of
North
berland

Oswy then in all Northumberlande
The crowne had, and all the royaltee
with Cadwallo he hight alwaye to stande
As soueraigne lord of Bryton so was he
And ouer all other, had then the maiestee
But this Oswy made Humwald fo; to kyll
The kyng Oswyn, that feloe was hym tyll

Fo; cause he rose, on hym with multitude
And nought fo; thy, when thei together mette
All his people of full great fortitude
He withdrew then, and with Humwald sette
In pryue wise, without any lette
But false Humwald pruely hym drew
On whome he trusted, and trowed had bee trewe

Quene Eufled that was kyng Oswys wife
Kyng Edwyns doughter full of goodnesse
fo; Oswyns soule, a minster in her life
Made at Cymmouth, and fo; Oswy causeles
That hym so be slain, and killed helpeles
fo; she was kyn to Oswy and Oswyn
As Bede in chronicle dooeth determyn.

This Oswyn nowe is canonized in hyrne
Saint

Saynt Oswyn called, at Tynmouth gloriously
But kyng Oswy, to Cadwall did enclyne
And Oswalde his hed, and arme had leue to burie
Whiche he betoke to quene Bebla in hys
Who closed them in siluer, sayre and clene
And them betooke, to saynt Wydan I wene.

¶ This kyng Cadwall, his feast at Londo made
To hym all kynges, as souerayne lord obeyed
Hauing kyng Oswy, at home that tyme abade
For whiche he trowed, that he hym disobeyed
Wherfore he sent to Wenda, and hym prayed
To warre on Oswy, without delape
And make him, to his souerayne lord obey.

¶ In whiche meane tyme, this Wenda slew Anne
Of Estangle, that long had ben kyng
A Christen prince, and a full manly manne
And so came on kyng Oswy fast ryding
Wher on the felde, they met soze fghtyng
Whom Oswy slew, and .xxx. dukes also
That with him came, and .xxx. M. moo.

¶ The. xxi. Chapter.

¶ In the yere of oure lord God. vi. hundred and. lv. Wenz
duslew the kyng of Estangles, and the yere of oure Lord
God. vi. hundred and. vi. Oswyn slew Wenda kyng
of Marchelande, and the foresayde kyng Oswyn com
descended to holde and kepe his Easter accordyng to the
use of Roome and Caunterburie, the yere of oure Lord
vi. hundred and. lxxii. which before was celebrated accordyng
to the Jewes all custome.

Oswy.

These battayls two, after thincarnacion
Syre hundredeth yere, fyfty wet & also fyue
In the yere after, by computacion,
That kyng Oswy, made Wenda kyng belpue
Of Mercas lande, and to conuerte his lyue
By teachyng of Dwyma, made byshop there
And all his lande, by vertue of his lare.

Kyng Oswy made houses. xii. of religion
Sire in Dery, and sire in Beru to bee
With his doughter Ellice for deuotion
Whom he auowed, in clene virginitee
To sacre so, and lyue in chastitee
For his triumphe, and for his victorie
Of kyng Wenda, and his panymerpe.

The kyng Oswy, of Chyistes incarnation
The yere. vi. C. lx. and also thre
Had all the clerkes, of his domination
With many other clerkes, of farre countree
For to dispute the Pasche, when it should bee
The whiche afore, was held diuersly
One vse at York, another at Caunterbury

But this seynt Oswy, then helde it at Whitby
Where then saynt Hilde, in all deuinitee
Was hole instructe, amonge all the clergie
Where Wilfride, with Egilbert and she
Concluded all the clerkes of the countree
And fro thens forth, thei helde it in certeyne
As Caunterbury vse, and did obeyne

This kyng Oswyn, then died in the yere

Sire

He hundreth hole, sixtie and also ten
At Whitby then, wher Hild was abbas clere
At Streyneshalgh, named was so then
Among the couent, of this holy woman
And in Hildes scole. vi. byshoppes were infourmed
In holy wryte, as she had them confourmed

These were the names of the byshoppes ryght
Bosa, Oskford, Etla, and also Catfride
Ihon of Beuerlay the fyfte, that then so hight
The sixt then, was the holy man Wylfride
Al in the lawe of Chyist enfourmed that tyde
With this virgin clene, of royal dissent
Of kyng Edwyn and Oswold bloodde ful gente.

Which virgin clene, died so in the yere
Of Chyist. vi. hundred and foure score also
About which tyme, sainte Audrey that virgin clere
At Ely died, emonge her floures tho
Of holy virgins, and wyddowes also
Which she had gathered, & kept in cloister clene
Whyle she there was thabbasse, as was sene

Who wife was twise, in Westsax first espoused
The second tyme, vnto the kyng Egfride
Of Northuberlande, her maydenhed euer housed
I dare wel say it was neuer set asyde
There might no man, her hert from Chyist deuide
So hole it was set on chastetie
Inuolate she kept her virginite

For good ne golde nor anye great rycheffe
With her husbandes to bene deuirginitate

Her

Hetherto myght neuer eschaunge her sekirnesse
 So sad it was, it was neuer violate
 But euer clene, as in her fyrst estate
 By her husbande, for oughte thei could her byght
 But byrgyn died, though grace of god almyght

Thus Awdy then, fro Egfyde was deuorced
 For cause, she would not lese her maydenhede
 To trine her soule, were losed and bncursed
 In Elpe abode, where then she made in dede
 An house of Nonnes, as wyttē hath laynte Bede
 To serue the God, aboue celestial
 In prayers good, and matyngs nocturnal

Wylfride from Yorke, exiled and expelled
 The kyng of Suffer, and all his lande
 Couert al hole, and maumetre downe felled
 Wher, so thze yere afoze, I vnderstand
 Such vengeaunce, reigned in that kinges land
 That ther grewe no grasse, nor no maner of corne
 The people dyed, for hunger al forlorne

And that same daye, when thei were conuert
 The grasse and corne, that welked were afoze
 By thze yere passed, waxed grene and gan reuerte
 Through prayer of Wylfride, þe prayed therfoze
 For which the kyng, made hym byshop thozē
 That frue yere hole, ther so occupied
 The byshoppes cure, and Chrystes sayeth edified

And in the yere. vi. C. lxxx. and frue
 Kyng Egfyde rode wyth host into Scotlande
 And warred on pightes & Scottes w mekel streue
 At home

Whom then thei slew, as Bede could vnderstand
 With many worthy knyghtes, of Northūberland
 At Hettanmore, in an hye mynster buried
 A worthy place, in Scotland edified

The kyng of seuen, on other warred soze
 But kyng Cadwas, that was souerayn lozd
 Accorded them, as myster was ay where
 By his good rule, he made euer good accoꝝd
 Wher any strife oꝝ warre was, and discoꝝd
 And al the realmes, in Brytain hole baptised
 And byshoppes in them set, and autoꝝised

Tkyng Ethelꝛyde of Moꝝs, and quene Ostride
 His wyfe, doughter of Oswy Berdnay
 Buried Oswald, wyth myꝛacles gloꝝified
 Where many pere, ful styll there after he lay
 Unto the tyme the suster, as bookes say
 Of kyng Edward thelder, hym translate
 To Gloucester abaye, to his estate

Cadwallo kyng of Brytons, in the pere
 Of Chꝛyst Goddes sonne. vi. C. sixty & sixtene
 So died awaye, who reigned had ful clere
 Ful sirtie pere and one, as wel was sene
 That soueraine loꝝde, of al Brytain had bene
 After the diseale, of the good king Edwyn
 And made al seuen kynges to hym enclꝛne

He made his ymage, of laton ful clene
 In which he put hys body balsomate
 Upon an hoꝛse of laton, sayze to sene
 With a swoꝝde in hand, crouned like his estate

Full

Cadwalader
ful hye set vp, to syght on Ludgate.
His Battayles all, and his great victoꝝ
About hym wrought, was made foꝝ memoꝝ

The. xcvi. Chapter

Cadwalader kyng of Brytayne, and lord of all seven
kynge in Brytayne

Cadwala
dar kyng

Cadwaladꝛus, after hym gan succede
Both young & fayre, in floꝝishing, iuuent
That Cadwallader was called as I rede
Who of Brytayne, had al the soueraynte
Of Englysh and Saxons, in eche countre
Of Wightes, Irish and Scottes his vnder regẽs
As souerayne lord, and moost of excellence.

Subieccy
on of the
Scottes.

Kentwyne the kyng, of Westsex then dyed
The yere of Christ syxe hundred. lxx. and syxe
The mykel warre, had made and fortifyed
Upon Brytons, and felly dyd hym bere
So combruse he was and cruell gan to were
Whose realme the kyng Cadwalader conquered
And Sussex also, & strew the kyng w his swerde

In whych yere then, Gatta byshop died
Whose sea was then, at Herham vpon tyne
That Bishop was, of poꝝke notified
Foꝝ Wilfride was, holde out with mykel peine
And exiled from his benefice that time
Frome Poꝝke that tyne, by the kyng Alfride
Of Northumberland, whose cure Gatta occupied

After whose dyscease, then Ihon of Beuerlaye
was

Was made byshop of Poꝛke, and had the sea
 Then the Cathedꝛall at Herham so alwaye
 foꝛ wylfryde was in Suffer farre countre
 But then certayne Alfryde of cruelte
 Comaunded John, to bere and noye wylfryde
 But tender loue, they helde on eyther syde

The. cxlii. Chapter.

How Cadwalader fel in greate impotencye, & he might
 not gouerne the lande, wherfoꝛe in defaute of lawe & peace
 fell Barons warre and simple discorde in all the realmes.



He kyng Cadwalader beyng impotēt
 So euerye daye, and helde no gouer-
 naunce
 Nether lawe ne peace within his regi-
 ment

Wherfoꝛe Britons, dyed none oꝛdynaunce
 But eche one toke on other great benegaunce
 fro that time foꝛth, eche countre on other warred
 And euery cytee agaynste other marred.

Thus in defaute of lawe and peace conserued
 Comon profyte, was wasted and deuoured
 Percypall profyte, was sped and obserued
 And Venus also, was comonly honoured
 foꝛ lechery and aduoutꝛy, was moſte adoured
 Amonge thein was comon, as the carte waye
 Ryot, robbery, oppꝛeſſyon, nyght and daye

Of which came then, manſlaughtꝛ, & homicide
 And cyuple ſtryfe, with ſoze contencyons
 Thꝛough Britons land, euery where, on eche ſide
 With batayles greate, and fell diſcencyons

KadwaJabor.

As Bede wyrteth amonge his mençions
They dyed nother the kyng, ne god almyght
Wherfoze he sent vengeaunce on them full right.

A greete
plage.

That throughe the warre, þe tylth was all destroyed
Churches all, and husbandrye vnoccupied
That with hunger, the people were soze anoyed
That people great, in stretes and felde dyed
And muche folke, as Bede hath specified
The fayth of Chyrste, for hunger then forsoke
And drowned the selues, so soze þe payne the toke.

Their cattell dyed, for faute of fode eche daye
Without meate, or any sustenaunce
In towne and felde, and the comon waye
Throughe which their infecte, was to that chaunce
That multitude of folke, in great substaunce
On heppys laye, full lyke vnto mountaynes
That horrible was of sight, aboue the playns

Unburied hole, withoute Sacrament
By pestylence also, many one dyed
Some woode, some raynage went
And some were in lytargie implied
An other some, with batayle mortified
With murther also, amonge them selues dyspent
Full many were, that none an other lament.

Throughe which defautes, not ameded nor correct
The bishoppes fled, the prestes & clerkes anoyed
To Walys went, there to be protecte
In caups hyd, accombed and accloved
Full heuely diseased, and full greatly anoyed
With

With saynctes bones, and relpues many one
Mournyng ful soze, and makyng ther their mone

Then fell a pere of pardone, and of grace
At Rome, where the kyng Cadwaladus
All desolate, and soze for that case
In pylgrymage thither, purposed thus
With herte deuoute, and wyl beneuclous
With his Britons together consociate
Of worthy bloude so bozne and generate.

To haue pardone, and playne remission
Of their trespassse, synnes, and neglygence
That they put nought, reddout ne punissyon
By lawe, payne and discrete prouidence
On trespassours, that dyd violence
Through which their lād, & thei wer so mischeued
That w law kept, might wel haue bene acheued

To Rome they came, of whom þ bishop was glad
Sergio that hight, who them graunt remission
Of all thei synnes, with herte and wyl glad
Saue onely then, of their omision
And neglygence, of hote punission
That they put nought vpon the trespassours
Of cominen people, that were destroyours

Whiche was not in his power to relese
Without amendes made, and restitution
To common weale, and thei due encrease
As they were hurte, in faute of due punission
He charged them, for thei playne remission
The commontee to suppozte and amende

Cadwalader.

Of as greate good as they wer offende.

In þe meane while, whyles they at Rome so wer
The Saxons hole, and Englishe consociate
To all they; lande, liuelode and other gere
To Saxon they sente ambassiate
To Angulo to be associate
With many mo of they; countree men
For Britons all at Rome wer bidyng then.

And bad theim come in hast and tary naught
For they; owne helpe, and for their waryson
The which they did, and hither fast they sought
The Britons lande, they tooke in possession
And kept it forth with many a garyson
For Britons came nomore therto again
For kyng Cadwalader the dyed at Rome certain.

This Britons also dyed homeward by the waye
In dyuerse places, and some went to Britain
Other some to Fraunce, there to abyde for aye
And some also to Normandy, and to Spain
That to they; owne they came nomore again
But Saxons hole, and Englishe it occupied
Evermore after, and strongly edified.

Some chzonickers saie, he had by vision
Romore to come into Britain the more
But to the bishop of Rome with great contricion
Confesse hym, and take his penaunce thore
And absolucion for his synnes soze
And howe þe bishop of Rome buryed hym royally
And on his tombe, set his Epitaphye.

In

In laten letters, in marble stone well graue
 Declares whole his conuersacion
 Forsakynge all the worlde, heuen to haue
 And how þe bishop of Roome, by his confirmation
 Called hym Peter, whom Bede by relacion
 Calleth a saint in blisse, whole disposed
 fro whiche he maie in nowise bee deposed.

This Cadwalader of Byttons was the kyng
 That reigned full, as soueraigne lord twelue yere
 And in the yere sixe hundred and nynty beeyng
 And died so, as saith the chronicle
 That of Westser, then had bec kyng twos yere
 Of whom Walshemen holden opinton
 Of Englande yet to haue the reuerston.

When that his bones bee brought fro Roome
 Emong theim all, haue suche a prophecy (again
 And Englande then, eft sence called Britain
 Thus stande thei yet, in suche founde matesie
 In truste of whiche vaine fantasie
 Thei haue full oft, Englande soze anoyed
 And yet thei will proue, if it maie bee destroyed

The. xcviij. Chapter.

The lamentacion of the maker of this booke,
 and his counsaill to my lord of Yorke, for
 good rule in the realme of Englande.



O gracious lord, O very heire i right
 Of greate Britain, enclosed w a sea
 O berie heire of Logres, that now
 Englande hight
 Of Wales also, of Scotlande, whi-
 che all thre

Britain

Lamentacion.

Bytarn so hight, of olde antiquite
O berie heire of Dextyngall and Spain
Whiche castell is, and Lyons soth to sain

O berie heire, of fraunce and Normandy
Of Guyan, Deptowe, Bayen, Man and Angoy
Members of fraunce, of olde warre openly
O berie heire of Jerusalem, and Surry
All this meane I by you, that should enioye
Pea oꝝ your heires, my loꝝde of Poꝝke certain
That wrongfully haue been holde out to sein.

But O good loꝝde, take hede of this mischieue
How Cadwaladoꝝe, not keepng lawe ne peace
Sufferng debates, and common warres acheue
And fully reigne, and putte hym nought in pꝛeace
By lawe noꝝ might, to make it foꝝ to cease
Foꝝ whiche there fell so greate diuision
That he was putte vnto Deheriteson.

Not he alone, but all his nacion
Deuolued wer, and from their right expelled
Full fayne to flee, with greate lamentacion
From greate Bytarn, in whiche thei had excelled
In which their auncetour, afoꝝe lōg time had dwel
And knew their foes mortall, should it occupy (led
Foꝝ euer moꝝe without remedy.

Whiche is þe payne, moꝝte fell aboue all payne
A manne to haue been in hie felicite
And to fall downe, by infortune again
In misery and fell aduersite

How maie a manne haue a thyng moꝝe contrate
Then

Then to haue been well, and after too begone
Incomperable to it, bee paines eche one.

¶ Wherfore good lord, the peace euermore main
And ciottes all, chastice by prouision (teine
And lawe bpholde rightfully, and sustein
And ouer all thyng, se there bee no diuision
But rest and peace, without discencion
For where a realme, or a citee is deuided
It maie not stand, as late was berefied.

¶ In fraunce as fell, full greate diuision
Through whiche, the first Hery kyng of Englade
Quer rode their lande, by greate prouision
And toquered them, thei might not him withstade
All their citees, were yeld into his hande
For cause of their cruell discencion
Among them sustained by contencion.

¶ Rome, Carthage, and many other citees
And many realmes, as clerkes haue specified
Haue been subuert, and also many countrees
By deuision, among them fortified
Where vnitie and loue, had been edified
Might theim haue saued in all prosperitee
From all hurte, and all aduersitee.

¶ Wherfore good lord, thynke on this lesso now
And teache it to my lorde of Marche your heire
While he is young, it maie bee for his prow
To thinke on it, whe that the wether waxeth faire
And his people, vnto hym doeth repaire
And litle hath, theim to releue and pease

n.i.

Then

Then maie it hap, with it his people ease

20 For what sauer a newe shell is taken with
When it is old, it tasteth of the same
Oz what kynde of pumpe, in garden oz in frith
Pumped is in stocke, fro whence it came
It saoureth euer, and it nothyng to blame
For of his rote, from whence he doth out spryng
He must euer tast, and sauer in eatyng.

20 While he is young, in wisdom hyn endowe
Whiche is full harde to get, without labour
Whiche labour maie not bee, with ease nowe
For of labour came kyng and emperour
Let hyn not bee idle, that shall bee your successour
For honour and ease, together maie not been
Wherefore with now the wand, while it is grene

20 Endowe hyn now, with noble sapience
By whiche he maie the wolf, werre from the gate
For wisdom is more worth in all defence
Then any gold, oz riches congregate
For who wanteth witte, is alwaie desolate
Of all good rule and manly gouernaunce
And euer enfect, by his contrariaunce.

20 Endowe hyn also in humilitee
And wraath deferre, by humble patience
Through whiche he shall, increace in dignitie
And catche alwaie, full greate intelligence
Of all good rule and noble regimence
And to conclud, wraath will euer set a side (uide
All maner of thyng, whiche wisdom would pro-
Behold

Behold Bochas, what prices haue through pride
 Bee cast downe from all their dignitee
 Where if sapience and mekenesse had bee guyde
 Full surely might haue saued bee
 And haue stande alwaie in might & greate succree
 If in their heartes, mekenes had bee ground
 And wisdomé also, thei had not bee confound.

Here foloweth of the

the Englishe kynges and Saxones.

The. xcix. Chapiter.



His Cadwalader, now laied in
 sepulture

That some tyme was the kyng
 of greate Britain
 And of Westsax also therewith
 full sure

To whom succeded Iuore his
 sonne certain

Reignyng ouer Britons that did remain
 In Wales then, without any succour,
 But onely he became their gouernour

With whom Iue, his cosyn was at nede
 That warred soze the Englishe and Saxony
 Many winters, and nought preuailed in deede
 Sauyng thei reigned, vpon the Masselry
 That were out castes, of all Britany
 But Ingils and Iue his brother dere
 In westsax reigned, which Coredede his sonnes wer

Whom Englishe then, and all the saxon
 Theim chose and made, to bee their protectours

n. ii. Again

Again Iuoz and his cosin Iuy
 That were that tyme, the Brytons gouernours
 To Wales fled, for helpe and greate socours
 But Ingils and Iue of Englishe blud discent
 Then kept Englande, full well by one assent

And A were all whole, and then this Ingils died
 And Iue was kyng, of Westsax fully cround
 That reigned then, full greatly magnified
 Eight and thirty wynter, full well and sound
 With his brother, and what allpen that stounde
 In whole tyme, Theodoro then died
 Of Cauntorbury archbishop signified.

Whiche Ingile & Iue, did call this lande En
 After Inglis, as thei had harde afore (glande
 After Engest, it called was Engestes lande
 By corrupt speache, Englande it hight therfore
 And afterwarde, so that name it hath euer boze
 As Gurmound also, afore it had so named
 Whiche sith þtyme, hath been ful hougely famed

Kyng Iue and Ingils, in Westsax first began
 The yere sixe hundred foure scoze, and therto nine
 So did Iuoz and Iuy in Wales then
 Ouer the Walshe, that were of Brytons line
 In muche trouble and woo as fill that tyme
 Kyng Alfride in all Northumberlande
 Wittred and Welbard, in Kent I vnderstande

In Englande yet, were kynges seuen
 Under kyng Iue, that twenty battailes smote
 Upon Iuoz and Iuy, accompted curen

But

But in the yere, as Bede hath saied and wypte
That euery manne his debte, to kynd paye mote
kyng Iue dyed at Roome, then was the yere
Seuen hundred and seuen and twenty clere

And at his death, he gaue to Roomeeche yere
The Roome pence through Westsax al about
Perpetually to be wel payed and clere
for vnto Roome he went without doubt
And with them, lordes and gentils a great route
In pilgrymage, for Eld and impotence
When he might not the land wel Defence.

Rome
pence.

The. C. Chapter.

Edheldred kyng of Westsax protector of England
that reigned thyrty yere.

Edheldred in Westsax, to him gan succede Edheldred.
And kyng was then, and held the royalte
Protector was of England their in deede
And helde his tyme, euer furth in souereingtee
In heritage and perpetualtee
That thyrten yere reigned in good estate
Whiche cherished peace, and chastised all debate.

Where any wraath was, growyng in his lande
Among prelates or Lordes temporal
In cities or in cuntrees where he fande
Accordid them, in euery place ouer al
And in his tyme the kynges in special
Under his rule and sure protection
He kept in peace, by lawfull direction.

Who died so, of Christ his incarnation
The yere sixe hundred & forty accompted tho

n.iii.

Entombed

Cuthred.

Entombed at Bathe, with soze lamentation
Of al England, aswel of frend as foo
Whiche Bathe citee, sometyme was called soo
Achamany, in Britayn language.
By Achaman that had it in heritage.

20 In his tyme was Oswyke in Northumberlad
And died then, to whom Colwolphedid succede
Edbertpen in Kent I vnderstand
And Ethelbald in Wars was then I rede
In Essex also, was then reigntyng Selrede
And Ethelrede in Estangle that day
All these were kynges, and vnder him allway.

20 So fro that tyme furth, & fro the Scotische see
To Sulwath floud, and to the water of Tyne
The Beightes had and kept without lee
Wher kyng Edwin, there kyng was by right line
Rulyng that land in peace and lawe ful fine
That chaunged then mayden castel name
To Edenbrough a toune of great fame.

The. C. i. Capiter.

Cuthred kyng of Westsax protector of England
and reigned sixtene yere.

Kyng
Cuthred.

Cuthred was kyng, crowned of all Westsax
And protector of al England that day
His kynges vnder him, & then wer ful sure
Dyd him homage anone withouten delay
Sauc Ethelbald of Wars, that sayd him nay
For whiche he warred on him then ful soze
That bothe theire landes, troubled were therfore.

20 Ful oft they mette, & faught with great power
Some

Somethat one, soine tyme that othet had
 victorie in selde, with strokes bought ful dere
 But when that kyng Ethelbald was most glad
 This kyng Cuthred, that was nothpng adrad
 At Berford with him mette in strong battail
 And slewe him then, as Bede maketh reher sal

Whiche Ethelbald in Mers, one & forty yere
 Had reigned hole, and diuerse abbeyes founded
 In Mers land, at Crouland one ful clere
 Of monkes blacke, within the fennes grounded
 To whiche Turketyl his chaunceler founded
 Eage syre maniers, to theyr foundation.
 And abbot there was made by installacion

This battail was of Chyistes natiuitee
 Seuen hundreth and siue and fyftie yere
 Where Ethelbald of Mers, the kyng dyd dye
 To whom Bozrede, there was the kyng ful clere
 But this Cuthred of Westser layd on bere.
 Was in the yere of Chyistes birth to weten
 Seuen hundreth hole, and syre and fyfty writen.

To whom Segbert, in al regalitee
 His coulyn next of bloud by al recozde
 Was kyng crouned, and had the dignitee
 But ful he was, of malice and discozde
 That with his kynges, could no tyme wel accorde
 Wherfoze they would no lenger of him holde
 But droaue him out, of all his land ful bolde.

Sugbert
 kyng.

For lawe ne peacc, he did not wel conserue
 But Chaunged lawe, euer after his deuise

n. iiii. from

Bynulphe.

From good to euil, eche other to ouerterte
To spoyle and robbe, his commons to suppress
Thus in the land, he made ful great parties
Wherfore the kynges and lordes did him expel
That but one yere, he did in it excel.

¶ And afterwarde exiled, as he him byd
Within a wood, a swynherd made his ende
Then with his staffe, he slewe him so betyd
For al his high estate, thus was he spend
A prouerbe is of olde, whiche wise men bend
That wrong lawes, make euer shorte lordes
Whiche wise men yet remembre, and recorde.

The. C. ii. Capiter.

¶ Bynulphe kyng of Westsax protector of England, the
whiche reigned. cccvi. yere.

Bynulphe
kyng.

Kynulphe succeeded & had the gouernaunce
Of Westsax then, with al to it appente
Protector was by al thordinaunce
Of kynges al, and the lordes assent
As his elders afore had regimente
The yere of Christ. vii. hundredeth fifty and seven
As Bede hath written, and accompted ful euen

¶ Of all the kynges, and lordes of England
He toke feautee and royal whole homage
As soueraigne lord, honoured in al the land
And mightly mayntened his heritage
His kynges al, and al his baronage
The peace and lawe, he kept by diligence
Was none that woulde displease his excellence.

¶ Hereigned hole, in al kyndes suffisaunce

Size

Six and twentye yere fully accompted
In great honour and mighty great puyfauce
Was none him like, no: none him surmounted
But death alone, to his corps amounted
Dyuyng his solle, out of the worldly nest
To heauens blisse, eternally there to rest.

¶ At Wyncheste he was ful fayre buried
The yere. vii. hundreth foure scoze and also thre
Among the people, highly magnified
As to suche a prince, longeth of copaltee
Right wel beloued, of his lordes and comontee
In whose tyme Offa of Mers kyng
Unto the B. of Roome, sent his letters praiyng

¶ To depriue Lambert of Caunterbury
Of primacy, and also of the palle.
Whiche the byshop Adrian, anone hastely
Graunted him then, by bulles witten papal
Lambert depriuyng, of his sea primal
By whiche Aldulphe, byshop then of Lycheselde
Bye primate was, and the state there helde.

¶ The pal he had, and all the dignitee
Lambert depriued, without any delay
Of primacie, and al souerayntee.
Of al the churche of England hole that day
From Humber south, to Aldulphe did obay
And Lycheseld then for Metropolitan sea
Was set aboue, and had the dignitee.

¶ But Egstryde then, the sonne of Offa kyng
Of Mers, the pal and al the primacie

Byd wel restore, to Christes hye pleasyng
To Alward then byshop of Caunterbury
Where it abode, ever after worthly
Unto this day, with all the dignitie
As of olde right, it shulde haue souerayntee,

20 This tyme Kynot, of Byghthes was the kyng
fro forth to Carleile, and from the Scottishe see
To Tyne that tyme his lordshyp was a dwelling
The whiche he helde, by homage and feautee
Of the kyng then of Northumberland in fee
And was his man also in warre and peace
As his elders had doen, without leace.

21 In whose daies, tharchebyshop Egbert
Of Porke brother was as I can vnderstand
To the king of Northumberland Edbert
The primacye and palle, brought to Porkes land
By the S. of Rome graunted, without gainstand
Whiche from the death of the good kyng Edwyn
Had ceased long, from the tyme of saynt Paulyn.

22 Aboute this tyme, as well is expressed
August the kyng of Byghthes, rode in England
On warre, where then he was ful soze distressed
By the manly kyng of Northumberland
Where he atowed, yf he came to his land
A churche to make of ful great dignitee
In worshyp of saynt Andzewe shulde it bee.

23 And at his home commyng one Regalo
fro Constantyne by reuelation
Brought certayne bones of saynt Andzewe the

To kyng August, where by his relation
 he founded then, a mynster of his foundation
 Of saynt Andrew, where his bones shyned been
 As there in dede I was, and haue it seen.

Ignorance in
 those
 daies.

The. C.iii. Chapter.

Brightlike kyng of Wester protector of England reig-
 ned. xvi. yere, that began to reigne in the yere of our lord
 vii. hundred. iiii. score and thyr, and died in the yere. vii.
 C. four score and nyntene.

Brightlike cousyn, that was next of blode
 To kyng Kenulphe, by hole intelligence
 Of Wester, was kyng ful wyse & good
 And protector of England in regence
 whiche gouerned right wel, with great sapience
 The yere of Christ, vii. hundred. iiii. score & thre
 when that he took on him the dignitee

Bright
 like king

He wedded Eburge kyng Offa his doughter
 Of Mars, for loue & peace & good accorde (sayre
 Betwene theyr landes, with all theyr hole repayre
 The kyng Albert, also of good accorde
 Onely of purpose, to make conorde
 Of Eastland came, to Offa for peace
 Betwene there land, the warres for to ceasse.

And his doughter to wed, vnto his wife
 for more suertee of loue, and good accorde
 Whom quene Eburge, of Mars because of strife
 Afore had be, betwene him and her lorde
 And for she would not vnto the mariage accorde
 Made him to be slaine, in ful priue wise

Within

Within his bed, afoze that he might tye.

¶ For whiche Offa, greatly was agreued
And buried him, at Harford his citee
And Offa then and Humbert, as is breued
Bishop of Lichfeld, where then was his see
whiche kyng and byshop, with great royaltie
Translated that tyme, saynt Albone in thynne
Of siluer gylt, with stones sayre and fyn.

¶ Whiche Offa died, the yere of Chyist ful clere
Seuen hundredeth. iiii. score and thereto seuentent
When he had reigned so, ix. and thyrty yere
At Offa aye buried, that tyme as wel is sene
With al honoure, as to suche a kyng beseme
To whom Egfride his sonne, then gan succede
And after him, Kynulphe reigned in dede.

(peny)
¶ Whiche Offa gaue through Mars, the Rone
Unto the church of Rome, ful long afoze
Charchebyshopriche from Caunterbury
Unto Lychfeld, translated for euerinoze
By his wyl, euer to abyde thore.
So stode it then, for certeyn all his lyue
As flores sayth and doth it so subscribe.

¶ This Adulphe, kyng of Northumberland
Slew Wade his duke, that again him was rebel
Beside Moulgreue, where as men vnderstand
His graue is yet men say, vpon the fel
For his falsshed and treason, as boke tel
Betwene Gysburgh and Whithby, sothe to say
Where for treason, he was layd in the hye way.

In his fourth yere, with duke Rikike he fought
And drowe hym to his shippes then again
In Hunber, so that he had not to his fraught
But fewe persones, were left aliue vnslain
And in his yere eleuen, with mikell pain
With Danes he fought, again Yorkeshire right
Where many thousādes he slewe, þ̄ wer ful wight

And on a date, as he from huntynge came
All hote chased, his menne bottelles founde
In his chamber, in whiche was wine of name
Menne called þ̄ tyme, Vernage of straunge lande
Whiche wine was popsoned, as I vnderstande
Of whiche he drank, and popsoned was anone
Unto the death, and inight no ferther gone.

He died the yere. vii. C. lxx. and nyntene
At Tewkesbury, buried in sepulture
Of whose death, Edburge that was quene
Was blamed then, for that misauenture
For she did make that drynke, mēne saied ful sure
Certain persones by venim to haue slain
That loued her not, and was her euer again.

But what for feare, and what for speche she fled
With greate riches, of passyng greate measure
In fraunce vnto the kyng, full fast she sped
But of her rule, thence furth I set no cure
It was so leude to reporte in scripture
I will not breake my byayne, it to reporte
For woinens wele, the whiche I would comfozte

Egbert.

Egbert kyng of Westser, protectour of Englande
that reigned. rrrv. yere, & died in the yere of Christ
viii. C. thirty and thre, as after shall appere.

Kyng
Egbert.



Egbert, colin to thesaied Segbert
kyng of Westser, was royally accept
with all honoꝝ, & the lordes cuold aduert
And eche man glad, no creature except
So graciously fortune, then had hym kept
That all people ioyed, his cōdnacion
foꝝ cause he was, of Britons generacion.

And foꝝ doune he was, from Asserake discent
kyng Ebrank sonne, of consanguinite
Sith Cadwalader died, and was spent
Was none right heire, of Britons blud but he
As Chronicles tell, like as a manne maie se
foꝝ sisters sonne, he was to kyng Sigbert
Of Westser whole, as flozes could aduert.

Also menne saied, he came of Ingils blud
And verie heire he was, to hym and Jue
foꝝ whiche Englishe and Saxons, with hym stod
And held with hym, as foꝝ their blud natife
Protectour was he made, there so beliue
Of all Englande and Wales, whole conquered
And Cornewaile also, as it is croniced.

Then toke he, of all kynges leege homage
Ercepte Bernulphe, the kyng of Mers was tho
Would dooe hym none then, foꝝ his heritage
Wherfoze he byent his lande, & did hym mikil wo
And so thei gath;ed great hoost, on both sides tho
Where Bernulphe, then at Glenden hym met

In

In Mars lande, trowyng hym to ouerset.

¶ But kyng Egbert had then the victoꝝ
And slewe Bernulphe, foꝝ all his boſte and pride
To Ludican, he gaue that lande in hie
To hold of hym, as otheꝝ did on euery ſide
Thꝛough all Englande, þe was bothe long & wide
Then dꝛoue he kyng Balrede, out from all Kent
And all his realme deſtroyed ſoze and bzent.

¶ But Ludican was falſe, by foule treaſon
Whom kyng Egbert then ſlewe in battaill ſoze
foꝝ his falſhode, and his rebellion
And to Wilaffe, he gaue that lande right thoꝝe
Was Bernulphs ſonne, to haue foꝝ euermoꝝe
To hold of hym, of right and heiritage
By ſeruiſe due, of ſcaute and homage.

¶ Then in his tyme, the Danes ſoze deſtroyed
The Iſles of ſhepey, and Tenet alſo
And to the ſea, thei went again bnanoyed
And after ſone, in Noꝝthumberlande tho
Thei did ariue, and wꝛought full mekell woo
With whō Egbert, there faught with ſmall meny
That out of the felde, thei made hym to flie,

¶ Kyng Egbert dꝛewe ſouth, then into the lande
And held the felde, to tyme his ſonnes twoo
Athelwolfe and Ethelbert, I vnderſtande
With hoſte full greate, came ridyng to hym thoo
Where then he bare, the croſſe of golde ay ſo
In his left hande, and in his right a ſwerd
With which he made, his ſooes therwith al aſerd

¶ Foꝝ

Athelwolve.

For there he had the felde and victorie
And slewe Dardan, a knight full chivalrous
The kynges sonne, of Denmarke sekerly
And all his hoste, that was full malicious
By vertue of the crosse, patte precious
For whiche alwaie after, in his banner
Of azure whole, the crosse of golde he bare

Whiche armes so full, after this daie
Kyng Kenigyll of Westser, had theim boze
Fro his bapteme, then afterwarde alwaie
And all the kynges after, so did euermore
Of Westser, so in mynde of Christes loze
His crosse, his death, and his holy passion
Whiche Jewes him wrought, without compassio

When kyng Egbert had five and thirtie yere
Reigned in lande, and felt full greate sickenesse
Of whiche he died, of Christes birth full clere
The yere so then. viii. C. was expresse
Foure and thirtie, nother more ne lesse
At Wynchester, then royally buried
As fiores saith, and well hath notified

The. Cb. Chapiter.

Athelwolfe of Westser, reigned. xix. yere, and died
the yere eight hundred. lviij. after Christes birth.

* Synthes
first grau-
ted to the
clergye in
Englāde.



Athelwolfe was kyng crouned at his citee
Of Westchester, in all royall estate
To whō the kynges, & lordes made scaute
And homage leege as was preordinate
That reigned after. xix. yere fortunate
And graunted the church, tithes of corne & haye

Of

Of bestiall also through Westsex for ay.

20 In this yere eight hundred thirty and eight
The Danes arriued with shippes fourscore & thre
Where Aethelstane his sonne did with them fight
And duke Wolfward, by greate fortunitee
Theim toke and slewe with all felicitee
But Aethelstane, in that battaill was slain
Of his warres, that was the capitain.

20 And in the yere eight hundred thirty and nyne
The kyng faught sore with Danes at Mersyng-
Wher erle Harbart was slain a pynce ful fine (to
But Danes all were take and slain there a dounc
Without mercie, cracked vpon the croune
The kyng came home, with honour and victoꝝ
As flores saicth, right in his memoꝝ.

20 And in the yere eight hundred forty and one
The Danes watched thest sea coste throughout
With diuers hostes, for which þe kyng made great
Al helpes the, the Danes that wer so stout (none
In many places, with many diuerse rout
All harmlesse went without hurt oꝝ pain
By diuerse tyme, that yere home again.

In the yere eight hundred foure and fourty
At Catham then, the kyng full sore did fight
With Danes fell, and had the victoꝝ
And at Aluewik he faught, again furth right
With Danes also, wher kyng Redwolf that hight
Of Northumberland, and erle Alfride was slain
And full greate parte, of their hoste certain.

O. I. Kyng

Athelwolf

¶ Kyng Athelwolf came to the South countree
Where Danes then in battaill with hym faught,
In Somersetshire, where he made many dye
And gate the felde, and slewe all that he caught
Where great people þe daie the death hath raught
Tharchbishop with his full wise clergie
Beside Sandwiche, of Danes had victorie

¶ And in the yere eight hundred fiftie and one
The Daniſhe hoſte, in Thamis did arrive
Kent, and Southray, Suſſer, and Haſtre anone
Deſtroyed ſore, and through the South ga dyue
Where muche folke thei ſlewe, bothe man & wiſe
Which hoſt þe kyng, with battail ſlewe doune ſore
That whome again returned thei no more.

¶ And in the yere eight hundred fiftie and thre
The kyng Edmond of Eſtangle began
To reigne after Albert of greate beautee
That holy was, as his legend tell can
But Athelwolf the kyng buried then
The kyng of Mers, that had his daughter wed
All Wales wan, theim thought thei had well ſped

¶ This Athelwolf to Rome toke his waie
In pilgrimage with hym, his ſonne Alured
Cardinall was of Wincheſter that daie
Where then he had, the biſhoprike, in deede
A perfecte clerke he was, as ſaith ſainct Bede
A philoſophier wiſe, and well approued
And by the biſhop of Rome, comēdid well & loued

¶ And there thei were abidyng full twoo yere
And

And whome thei came, vnto the kyng of Fraunce
And his daughter Iudith there weddid clere
By assent of hym, and all his whole puysaunce
And so with worship, and noble gouernaunce
fro thence he came, soone into Englande
With her and with his sonne, as I vnderstande.

And in the yere, eight hundred fiftie and thre
The death his soule gan from his body dzyue
Vnto the blisse eternall, there to bee
In heuen aboue, where is everlastyng life
To Peter and Paull he graunted infinitife
The Rome pence then of Englande
As flores saith, as I can vnderstande.

He was the buried, at winchester in royal wise
As to suche a prince, of reason should assere
And with his wife, as did full well suffice
Foure sonnes he had, worthy without pere
Sir Athelwold, Ethelbert, Elfride the dere
And Alrued the youngest of echeone
Afore them all, one bast had Athelston.

Athelbold was kyng after hym and heire
And protectoz, with all the prerogatiue
His stepdame wed, menne saied it was not faire
The churche hym gan punishe and chastieue
For cause he wed her so vnto his wife
Again the lawe and chysten concience
Unaccozdant, with his magnificence.

That reigned whole, twoo yere and no more
In greate likenesse and pain immoderate

Ethelbert.

Greately bered, and punished was right soze
Whenne saied he was, for sinne inordinate
With his stepdame, that was so consociate
But then he had, as God would repentaunce
For his trespas and misgouernaunce.

¶ Afoze he died, he did full soze repent
And for his synne, stode to correccion
Of holy churche, for his amendement
Submitted whole, without obieccion
And for to liue, in clene perfeccion
Departed were by lawe and deuoced
Afoze his soule was passed and vncorced.

[The. C. vi. Chapter.

**Ethelbert kyng of Westsax protectour of
Englande that reigned siue yere.**



¶ In Ethelbert his brother gan succede
In whose daies, þe Danes destroyed soze
The east parties of Englād the in deed
And home again, thei went harmelesse
Destroyed þe people, & the lāde right soze (therfoze
But sone there after, kyng Ethelbert them met
And sleugh them doune, in battaill soze and bet.

¶ In other hoste, then newe spoyled all Kent
And by treaty, wyntred within the Isle
Of Tenet, then by Kentishe mennes assent
But at the last, thei with a subtle wyle
Dispoyled all Kent, and falsely did beguyle
And to their shippes went without delaye
Into Denmarke, with muche riche araye

This

20 This Ethelbert reigned hole five yere
 And dyed the yere of herey Chyikes date
 Eyght hundreth hole and therto sixty clere
 As flores saith, and hath it approbate
 But with sickness he was so alterate
 He died then, and at Sphyrhome buried
 With great worthyp and honour lauded

The. C. vii. chapter.

Elfrid kyng of Wester protector of England reigned
 sixe yere, & died in the yere of Chyik eyght hundred. lxxvi.

Elfrid was kyng, after his brother then
 That reigned so, with all the dignitee
 In Wester hole, and mightely began
 Protector was as was necessites
 For Danes then of great iniquitee
 His land soule brent, wasted and destroyed
 That al England, was combed and annoyed

Elfrid
 kyng.

In the East cost of England specially
 In Eastangle, where Edmond then was kyng
 There did great hurt ful cruelly
 In Northumberland ful felly warring
 The people destroyng, and the land breimng
 Where Danes then sleugh the kyng of that land
 Besyde Forke, so as flores doeth vnderstand

Also they sleugh, in Northfolke all about
 The people doune, and in Suffolke also
 The kyng Edmond they sleugh without doubt
 Of Eastangland, with arrowes sharpe tho
 Was shot to death, with muche other wo

O. iii.

That

That is a saint honored this day in blyss
At Edmondes bury canonized I wisse

Thungar and Abba slewe him full cruelly
And bzent abbeis throughout al England & tyme
By North and South, and priestes full curledly
All holy folke fled out of that realme
They slewe al people that had take baptisme
At Colyngham saint Ebbe, that was abbesse
They nonnes put from them in soze distresse

For dreadd of the tyrauntes.ii. ful cruel
And their people curled and ful of malice
That rauished Nunnes, euer where they hard tel
In her chapter, ordeined againe their enemies
Shulde not defoule, they clene virginitees
She cut her nose of, and her ouer lippe
To make her lothe that she might from him slippe,

And counseiled al her systers to do the same
To make their fooes to houghe so with the sight
And so they did, afore thenemies came
Echeon their nose and ouer lippe ful right
Cut of anonc which was an hougly sight
For whiche tho fooes, thabbey and Nunnes bzent
For they them selfe disfigured had hent,

From Tweede to Thames, abbaies then they bzent
And ehurches hole and people slewe right doun
Wyues, maydens, widdowes, and Nunnes hent
Through all the land the east region
People slepyng in every borough and toun
The women euer they diuiciate

In every place and foully deflozate.

And in the yere. viii. hundredth fyftie and sixe
He died so, and from this worlde expired
Whom all his tyme, the Danes full soze did bere
Againe him ener, ful soze they had conspired
They heartes in malice, alway soze afterd
Somtyme the worse they had, somtyme the better
As flores sayeth, and witten hath in letter.

The. C. viii. Chapter.

Aluredē kyng of Wester protector of England reigned
xvi. yere and died the. viii. C. xlv.

Aluredē
kyng.

Aluredē, kyng was of this region
That brother was to this noble Elfrýde
A perfit clerke, proued in opinion
As clerkes could discerne, and proued
In knyghthode also approued and notified
So plenerly, that no man knewe his peer
So good a knight, he was and synguler.

In battailes many, in his fathers daies
And also in his brethren tyme al thre
He fought ful oft, and bare him wel alwaies
That for his deedes and singularitee
He was commended among thenemytee
Within the lande and out, as wel was knowe
His fame among the people hys was blowe

Whyles he was kyng, he had aduersitee
With Danes oft, that on him dyd rue,
Destroied his land, with great iniquitee

Alured.

The whiche ful oft with might he did our vyne
And slewe thousandes, that lost theyr lyue
Though the warres, begon of theyr outrage
That inctuel was to fene, of one lynage.

And in the yere. viii. hund. eth. sixty and eyght
The Danes came to Po. le, and toke the toun
Hunget and Abba, with many a wyle sight
Wasted the land about, both by and doun
And so came furth to Mars, with hostes boun
And to Westsex, whom then the kynge Alured
Discomfited there, with the host that he did lede.

The Danyshe host, to Redyng came againe
Another host at London, was with pryde
Of Danes also, that wrought him meyn payne
But whyles these hostes were parted and deuised
With his power, Alured gan to ryde
And at Anglesfeld he fought, in Barkeshyre right
Where victorie he had, in slaugter of theyr might.

At Redyng in Barkeshyre, then he mette
An host ful great, where he had then againe
The victorie, and his foes doun berre
At Basing also, he slew them doun certayne
At Ashenden, he drave them out all payne
And gotte the feld with all the victories
As Flores saith right in his memories

And in the yere. viii. hund. eth. lxxv. & fourtene
The Danyshe host rode Lynsey & Mars countree
And home againe, as then was wel fene
In Northumbertand with great prosperitee

The

The Danes rode, doing great amercises
where the bishop then of holy Island
And all his monkes were, ful fast fleand.

¶ With i. Guthberts bones, bare about. vii. pere ^{Supra:}
Some here, now there, in diuers places about ^{Rural.}
For dread of Danes, and encoures that there were
In Northūberland dwelling, that tyme ful stout
But then the wyng, the sea sayled throughout
And shippes gatte, with mucht great ryches
For to defend his land, fro great distresse.

¶ In Westsax then, with foes agayne he mette
Where they led him, to Ebor that night
Fled ful fast, where Alured then ones sette
And slewe them doune, in battail and in fight
And then in Wars, anon he fought forth right
With Danes tho, and also with Norwages
That walled had al Wars, in many wapes.

¶ Then fought he also, at Chipna in Wylshyre
And Humber and Uba and Duke Haldent
Tyrautes cruel, hote as any fyre
The Chyften folke dyd brenne, wast and slene
With cruel tourmentes, dyd them care and ten
Where Alured had the victorie
And slewe that day, al the Danishyre.

The. C. ix. chapter.

¶ Howe kyng Alured fled, to the lymgay in Herts; for
dread of Danes, and serued an opherde of the countre.

Gutron

Guttron the kyng of Denmarke & was the
In Westfer married full sore & bent & lond
With whiche & kyng so married was he
He wylt not wel whether to ryde or stond

But to Ethelyngan anon he took on hand
To ride, where then he byd him in a place
For drede of Danes, such he was his hap & grace

In Denwolfes house, the herd of the toun
So was he then, in poore and synple aray
Where Denwolf, clad him in his owne gowne
And tender was to him there alway

But his wyfe made him to labour ay
With bakynge and with buyng wonder sore
In water bearyng, she made him worke evermore

Where then his lordes & knyghtes in good aray
Came to him then, with host and great powre
Where than the kyng vpon Guttron that day
In battaile strong, with courage freshe and clere
Fought sore, and took Guttron prisonere
And thyrtye dukes with him in company
Unchrysten were, they al of Danymyr.

And had the feld with al the victory
And of Danes many thousandes slewe
He baptised than, as made is memozy
This kyng Guttron, that after was ful true
And named was Achylstan al newe
To whom the kyng, gaue than al Estengland
As Edmond had, to holde of him that land

And al his dukes were also there baptised

And

And chriſten men, became for goddes loue
 The pere of Chriſt. viii. C. then compenled
 Seuentee and eyght as flozes doth approue
 The kyng was then, againe at his aboue
 Remembred him of Denwolf, that him had
 And ſent for him to Ethelyngay, he dyd.

His wyfe was dede, & ſomwhat was he leſtred
 At his deſyre, the kyng ſet him to lerne
 To tyme that he was wyſe, and mekel bettred
 In holy wyrt that he could wel diſcerne
 And then the kyng made him byſhop as yerne
 Of Wynchestre, when Dunbert there ſo died
 That biſhop was afore him ſacrificed.

In the pere. viii. C. and foure ſcore
 The Danes in Thaines & wyntered at Foulham
 The kyng came in ſomer after thoze
 And ſlewe them all, that they went neuer hame
 The deade, the quicke, the maymed, and the lame
 All buried were, where the battaile was lnyten
 As Flozes ſaieth, and clerely hath it witten.

At Rocheſter the Danes were eft on lond
 With whom the kyng, there faught, & many ſlew
 Many drouned, and lying on the ſond
 As they vnto their ſhippes, againward flewe
 He droue them there, vnto a warinely ſtewe
 After their labour, to haue recreation
 Upon the ſoudes, to make theyr habitation

The. C. r. Chapter.

Howe Marine B. of Rome, graſted to kyng Aluredes to
 founde

Alured.

found an hundred and fifty for clerkes, whiche he made
at Oxford, whete the clerkes dwelme, they shal not reche
for their souerayn at Biamfode.

Ad in the yere. viii. C. lxx. and thye ne
Martin bishop of Rome, graunted to king
To found & make a study the againe Alured
And an vniuersitee for clerkes in to reche
The whiche he made, at Oxford in dede
To that entent, that clerkes by sapience
Againe heretikes, shulde make resistance.

And christen faith mayntain, by their doctrine
The kyng also, to comforte and counsaile
By their teachyng, and wyttys disciplyne
As philosophes of olde, dyd great auayle
To kynges, princes, and cities, gouernayle
Sauc all their wytt, in study and diligence
Agayne mischeues, to fynde and make defence.

And in the yere. viii. C. lxx. and eyght
All his riches, in fyue partes he gaue deuide
One part to men of warre, to kepe his right
Another part, to land tyllers in that tyde
The husbandry to mayntayne and to guide
The thyrde part, all churches waiked to restore
The fourth vnto the study of their lore

And to the Judges, and men of lawe wel lerned
The fyfte part, ful myself he dispende.
To holde the lawe in peace truely gouerned
Disposed thus, he was the realme tamen
This was a kyng, ful greatly to comende

That

That thus could kepe his lande from all befacio
And not to hurte, his commons by traxacion.

For truste it well, as God is now in heuen
Who hurte the pooze people, and the commontee
By taxes soze, and their goodes fro theim reuen
For any cause, but necessitie
The dismes to paye, compell of royaltee
Though thei speake fast & muble with the mouth
Thei praiſe full euil with hert, bothe north & south

The yere of Chriſt. viii. C. lxxx. and thirtene
The duke Haſtyn of Danes, euer vntrewe
Deſtroyed the lande, with hoſtes proude and kene
By Eaſte and Weſt, that all the lande did rewe
Whom the kyng in battaill, felly ſlewe
After diuerſe battailles, among theim ſmitten
In ſundry places, there as it was well weten.

In euery ſhire, the kyng made capitaines
To kepe the lande, with folke of their countree
And ſhippes many, & galayes lōg with chieftains
And Balyngers, with barges in the ſee
With whiche he gate riches, greate quantitee
And at the ſtud, was called Uthermaue
He ſlewe an hoſte of Danes, with battaill ſare.

The. C. xi. Chapter.

How duke Rollo a panyne, gate Normandy, of whos
all the dukes of Normandy, bee lineally diſcended.



And in the yere. viii. C. lxxx. and ſeuentene
The duke Rollo, of Denmarke nacion
A Danis ſtout, with mighty hoſte & kene

In

In Englande bent without any delacion
Whom Alured by good supportacion
Droue then again: vnto his nauy right
And of his menne, a thousande he slewe in fight

Whiche Rollo then, landed in Normandy
Of whom all dukes, of that prouince discent
And wan that lande, with swerde full manfully
And duke there was made, of whole entent
By proccesse after, and by the kynges assent
Of fraunce, whose daughter he wed vnto his wife
And chrysten manne became so all his life.

Superst:
cioulnesse
with dam
nable ido-
latrie.

At Charters firste, he sieged so the towne
Where thei within, our ladies smocke the shewed
For their banner, and their saluacion
For feare of whiche, full soze in hert he rewed
All sodainly, and vnto Roan remoued
Where the his wife, Daine Gille was ded & buried
Without childe betwene them notified.

But then he wedded Depam, the sister faire
Of duke Robert, of Normandy and Roane
On whom he gate William his sonne and heire
That after hym was duke thereof anone
When yeres many were passed and ouergone
But now at this to ceasse, I will encline
Till after ward, I shall tell forth their line.

Kyng Alured, the lawes of Trope and Bute
Lawes Woluntynes, and Marciens congregate
With Danishe lawes, that were well constitute
And Brekishe also, well made and approbate

In

In Englishe tongue, he thein all translate
 Whiche yet bee called, the lawes of Alured
 At Westminster, remembred in dede.

And in the yere. viii. C. lxx. and eightene
 Then Alured, this noble kyng so died
 When he had reigned. xxix. yere clene
 And with the Danes, in battailes multiplied
 He fought often, as Colman notified
 In his chronicle, and in his cathologe
 Entitled well, as in his dialogue.

That fiftie battailes, and sixe he smote
 Somtyme the worse, and somtyme had the better
 Somtyme the felde, he had at his note
 Somtyme he fled awaie, as saith the letter
 Like as fortune, his cause left vnfeter
 But neuerthelesse, as oft when so thei came
 He countred them, and kept the lande fro shame

The. C. xii. Chapter.

Edward the first kyng of Englande reigned. xlii. yere, and died the yere of Christe. ix. C. and. xix.

Edward his sone, so crowned was anon
 Of Westsax, then by all the parliament
 Protector was made, again the sone
 Which warred sore, in Englad by assent
 The yere. viii. C. lxx. and fiftene spent
 Erle Athilwold he exiled, into fraunce
 For he a Runne had rauished, to his blaunce.

But after that, this same erle Athilwolde

With

With Danishe hoste, Mars and Englande
 Destroyed soze bothe, kyng Edward full bolde
 Slawe Ethelwode, and his hoste I vnderstande
 Discomfet whole, and droue theim out of lande
 And made all kynges of Englande, his subiectes
 For so he thought, it was his very dettes.

He sommoned then at London, his parliamet
 Where he deposed, the kynges euericheone
 Of all Englande, and made theim by assent
 Dukes and erles, thence forwarde so anone
 In euery kyngdome, then he ordained one
 And in some thre, he made by ordinaunce
 And all kyngdomes, forynge by gouernaunce.

And he to bee the kyng, of all Englande
 Proclaimed whole, to boyde all variaunce
 Disorde and warre, that many yeres had stande
 Whyles seuen kynges, had the gouernaunce
 There might no lawe, ne peace haue perseueraunce
 Wherefore he toke, of euery Duke homage
 Of Erles also, and of the Baronage

Homage
 of þ Scot-
 tes.

Scotlande and Wales, he warred soze in dede
 Till thei became his menne, and made homage
 For soueraigne lord of Britain, as I rede
 The kynges then did, for their heritage
 For all their menne, and for their basselage
 To ride with hym, where that euer he go
 In warre and peace, again frende and fo.

Duke Ethelred of Mars, and also his wife
 Elised that hight, Westchester then repaired

That

That wasted was, by Danes warre and strife
 Whiche Romaines first builded, had and feired
 In tyme when, thei to this lande repaired
 Of Romain werke, whiles thei here occupied
 That citee first, full freshely edefied.

¶ The faught þ kyng, with Danes at Wodfeld
 In Mars & also at Herford with great pain (soze
 Where victorie he had, of theim euermore.
 Again he faught with Danes soth to sain
 At Towcester, and laied them on the plain
 In Yorkeshire also he slewe the Danes downe
 And boyded them all out of his region.

¶ The. C. xiii. Chapiter.

¶ This kyng made an vnion of all the realmes, & called
 it Englande, and after it failed neuer of that name.

His noble kyng thus made an vnion
 Of seuē realmes, that stode thre. C. yere
 Sixe and thirtie also in greate diuision
 And warres many, as Colina saith full
 Fro Gurmond had byiuen out Carreis here (clere
 Whiche was the yere siue. C. iiii. scoze and. xiii.
 Unto the yere of Chryste nine hundred & nynetene

¶ These erles all, and dukes then helde the lawe
 As shytues now in shires dooen and maintain
 That the commons ouerlaid, full soze with awe
 And soze oppressed, their states to sustain
 Wherefore he boyded them out of offic clene
 And shytues made throug all his region
 Whiche yet haue not forgotten extortion

Athelstane.

¶ This noble kyng, Edward thelder hight
When he had reigned full twenty and foure yere
Buried he was at Winchester full right
As in flores, full clerely doeth apere
Who in his tyme surely had no peere
Of wisdom nor manhode as was seen
The lawe and peace, that could so well sustene.

The .C. xiiii. Chapter.

¶ Athelstane kyng of Englande reigned fiftene yere
died in the yere of Christ. ix. C. xxxv. How Constantine
kyng of Scottes warred again Athelstane but
he recovered his homage by miracle of saint Iohn
of Beverley as sheweth here afterwarde.



¶ In Athelstane his eldest sonne of age
In wisdom ever full sadly & wel auised
At kyngston was crowned and tooke
homage

Of all the lordes right as he had deuised
Against whom all wales as thei sufficed
Then he warred, but he made theim obey
And made homage, his meene to bee for ay.

¶ In whose tyme so, the yere of Christ. ix. hndred
And thirty moze and fiue full accompted
Robert Rollo his solle and corps asondred
His corps to the yearth, his solle amounted
Whiche in knighthode, his Danes surmounted
That reigned had then duke of Normandy
By thirty yere accompted full clerely

¶ To whom succedid his sonne Willia longspee
That after hym was duke of Normandy

But

But then the kyng of Scottes by crueltee
 Hight Constantyne, hym warred cruelly
 For whiche, kyng Athelstane mightely
 Stroyed all Scotlande, till his people died
 By cold and hunger and so were mortified.

Rebellion
 of þ Scot-
 tes.

But he was so comforted euen by miracle
 That he saught a none, with this kyng Cōstātine
 And had the feld and his habitacle
 Thē droue througħ all the lande with muche pain
 To tyme he was, full fain to encline
 To Athelstane, for to make his homage
 For all Scotlaude that was his heritage.

Homage
 of þ Scot-
 tes.

Anlaaf the kyng of Denmarke, full of pryde
 Cousyn to kyng Constantyne of Scotlande
 With shippes many arriued on Humber side
 At Burnesburgh and claimed of Englande
 For to haue of the kyng as I vnderstande
 The truage whiche his elders had afore
 And with hym brought Colbꝛōd to fight therfore

And Athelstane at the date assigned
 Made hym redy to battaill to haue smitten
 Again Colbꝛōd, armed with hert benygned
 But then sir Guy of Warwike as was weten
 In palmer wyse as Colman hath it witten
 The battaill toke on hym for Englandes right
 With Colbꝛōd in armes for to fight.

Guy of
 Warwike

Where then he felle, this Danishe champion
 By whiche battaill, the truage was relefed
 By couenaunt made and composition

Athelstane

Betwene the kynges afore and warres cessed
Thus kyng Aulaf, whome to Denmarke pressed
Without more warre or conturbacion
And sir Guy went to his contemplacion.

Superstition.

¶ Kyng Athelston then, fraunchesid Beuerley
In the worship of God and saint Ihon
Where in his life is written for ever and aye
The miracle of his stroke so in the stone
That neuer manne might dooe but Athelston
Through grace of God and his direccion
Through praier of saint Ihon and affeccion

¶ This noble kyng was euer more iuste & trewe
To God his faith, to churches deuocion
To poore menne grace, on subiectes euer did rewe
To prestes and age, reuerence in feld and towne
In doine sadnes, trouth and discrecion
And in the yere nyne hundred thirty and fiue
When he had reigned sixtene yere with life

Kyng Edmond reigned. vi. yere.

Homage of y Scottes.

¶ His brother Edmōd for kyng thē was crowned
Of Englande whole by concent of all estate
To whom Dothowe kyng of Scotland & stounde
And Howell of Wales the kyng then create
As was afore bled and determinat
Feaute to hym made and liege homage
For Wales and Scotlād that was their heritage

¶ He sette saint Dunstan then at Glasterbury
Under thabbot of Monkes and religion
That abbot was with hym at Canturbury
This kyng Edmond was slain by a felone
Whiche

Whiche of malice, and his false treason
That forset had, and dampned was to dye
For his forset, and for his felony.

At Caüterbury, as the kyng him saw on a day
For pre on him, he raune and soze him wound
For whiche he stroke, the kyng for ay
So they bothe two, there in that stound
Eche of them, of his mortal wounde
Whiche to a prince, accorded in no wise
To put him selfe in dyede, where law may chastice

He reigned but. vi. yere then all out
And died the yere. ix. hundzeth fortie and one
At Blastenbury buried without doubte
For whom the people, made then ful great mone
For lawe and peace, he kept to euerycheone
And his commons, neuer his tyme suppressed
And oppressours of him alway were chastised

His brother Edrede, after him had the crowne
At London then, and toke royal scauttee
Of all estates, within his region
Excepte Scotlande, that through their vnlewtee
Crowned Gilryke, a Dane of great beautee
Of royal blode borne and generate
And for they kyng, him fully had create.

Edred
kyng of
England.

x. Million
of the
Scottes.

Kyng Edrede went to Scotland with his power
And all the land, wasted soze and bzent
Wherfore the Scottes, by whole consent for fear
Put doune Gilryke, from all the regiment
And dzoaue him to Denmarke or they stent

Homage
of the
Scottes.

Edred.

And to Edred came all the Baronage
And to him made feautee and homage.

And in the yere. ix. hundreth fortye and nyne
He died, buried at Wyntchester his citee
When that he had, his folle made to enclyne
Out of his corps, to passe away and flee
Where God of heauen. would that it shulde bee
But. viii. yere ful, he reigned and nomore
When death him toke, with sickenes great & soze.

Edwyn
kyng.

Edwyn his brother, receyued then the crowne
Folyshe and proude, and of his wyl maligne
And in his wytte, was ful lytle reason
Whom his Barons, for cause he was vndigne
Made him his crowne, for to resigne
Deposed him then, out from his regiment
At the Parliament, by theyr common assent.

Whom saint Dunstane, for aduoutry blamed
But it amende; he woulde in no kyn wyle
Of whiche he was ful openly defamed
Through al the realme, he was the more vnwyle
For whiche the lordes and comons al did ryle
And droue him out, away where no man knewe
Thus synnes olde, make shames come full newe.

He reigned had, but. iiii. yere and nomore
When he was depriued of his estate
Without thanke of God or man therfore
And wel worse, was of al men most behate
Of his reigne haupng no lenger date
Who died the. ix. hundreth fyfty and thre

Foringed

foringed hole from al his maiestee.

The. C. xv. chapter.

Edgare kyng of england, reigned. xlviii. yere and died þ
yere of Christ. ix. hundredeth thre score and eleuen.

His brother Edgare by a common assent Edgare.
was chosen kyng, as chronicles recorde
with diademe crowned, at his parliamēt
And homage toke royal of euery lord
So mercifull and ful of misericorde
was he, that saynt Dunstane reconciled
Whom kyng Edwyn, wrongfully had exiled.

Whō the archebishop of Cañtorbury he made
with al estate and p̄mates dignitee
Of Monkes & Nunnes, mynsters sayre & glad
forye founded of religiositee
Within his realme, of his owne royaltee
Endewed them al in land and tenement
Sufficiently with al establisshement.

He wedded Elflede þ dukes doughter Dymere
Of whom he got on sonne, bothe good and sayre
That after was saint Edward the martyre
Who was his eldest sonne and his heyre
A likely prince toward, bothe comely and sayre
Elflede died, he wedded Elfrith to wyfe
That doughter was to duke Dygare helyfe.

On whom he gatte Ethelbert so anone
The kynges of Wales, he made in subiection

Edgare.

Homage
of the
Scottes

The Scottes kyng kynowth without mone
Made him homage, without obiectiō
Thus all were vnder his protection
And rode with him, alway in warre and peace
In al his tyme, withouten leas.

So true he was, and in his dome wyse
That for no mede, nor fauoure wolde he false
The true lyuers, his lawe did not despyse
He succoured euer, and felons hanged by the halfe
Conspiratours, murtherers and traytours als
The comon weale, aboue al thyng preferred
Whiche euery prince, shulde se were wel obserued

He tared not his commons, ne suppressed
Ne holy churche, nor yet the clergie
But liued on his owne, as it was assised
Upon his rentes and landes morally
His officers him ruled ful notably
In euery shyre he went in priuete
To spyre and knowe, who hurtes the commonte.

The office
of a kyng.

He was a kyng ful worthy and condigne
That let not, for his ease nor his labour
To searche and see defautes, that were maligne
And them correcte, he was a gouernoure
God set neuer kyng, to be a cyotour
To trippe on tappettes, and liue in ydlenesse
But for to rule, with al kyndes of busynesse.

He died the yere .lx. hundreth sixty and eleuen
When he had reigned ful eyghtene yere
Buried he was, at Glastenbury to neuē

His

His corpe to the pearth, his soule to heauen clere
When he had bene dead, foure and twentye yere
Byshop Oswalde, of that same diocese
By counsel of thabbot, that was wise

Abbot Edwarde of that place that high
Who layde him in a tombe, made of newe
For it was shorte, he brake his legges wight
Of whiche the blod, as red and freshe of hewe
As euer it was spent out all hote and newe
Into his eyes, by whiche he lost his sight
Then sayd it was, for he had him so dight

Edward his sonne, that eldest was and heyre
Saint Dunstan then, as made is mencion
Tharchebishop of Caunterbury sayre
So crowned him kyng of this region
Whom dame Elfrid of false presumption
His stepmother, to crowne sp? Ethelrede
At Cornisgate, so cut his throte in dede

Edwarde
marrye
kyng of
England.

As he with her did drynke, of good intent
And buried was, at Warham then anone
But afterward the B. of Rome, to England sent
To take him bp, and lay him hye anone
In a tombe made of siluer, gold, and stone
As a martir, then him canonised.
At Shaftesbury, where he is autozised

And died in the yere of Christ. ix. C. clere
Sixty also accompted and fyftene
That reigned had in England, but. iiii. yere
His soule to blyse, went then as is wel sene

where

Ethelrede.

Where now he must, cuer dwel and been.
In ioye eternc, emonges the saintes of heauen
And there with Christ Gods sonne beleuen.

The. Cxvi. chapter.

Kyng Ethelrede, kyng of England reigned. xxxviii. yere
and died in the yere of Cyria, a thousand and thyrtyene.

Ethelrede
kyng.

When Ethelrede, withouten taryng
At kyngstonc tho, by al the baronage
Crowned was, sayre, & royally as a kyng
His vbrother was, and heyre of heritage
But saint Dunstan then, by his true language
Prophecied and sayd, withouten leas
In al his tyme, he shulde not reigne in peace.

Fo: to his realme he sayd he had no right
But by murther and cruel homprede
Of your vbrother, that fo: you was dight
Whiche inurther euer asketh vengeaunce on euery
Wherfoze he sayd, serue God, what so betyde (syde
And then it is the fayrest chastisement
To be put out, fro that same regiment.

A wonder
ful token.

Saint Dunstan died, and went to heauen
The kyng rode fourth, to London his cytce
And as he rode, he sawe a cloude ful euen
As red as blod, as al the people did see
Whiche England hole ouerspyed in quantitec
Fo: whiche the blod, rayned vpon the ground
That men trowed to haue bene perished & stound

The

The next yere after, the Danes at Southhāpton
 Arryued, and bzent the countre there aboute
 Also they spoyled, and soze bzent the towne
 And so they dyd all Cornewayle throughout
 And Deueshire also, and somerset no doubt
 With Dorsetshire, and Wylshire & Barkeshyre
 And to London came, oꝛ euer that they stent

The suburbs there, they spoyled soze and bzent
 Two dukes then, of denmarke and Noꝛwaye
 Noꝛthfolke, Southfolke, & Essex oꝛ they stent
 Bzent and spoyled, and so forth helde the waye
 To London then, where they felowes laye
 So assembled they, and passed into Kent
 Where that countree, they spoyled soze and bzent.

The land of Kent to them graunted truage
 To lyue in peace, and home againe they went
 But in Noꝛthfolke another host they passage
 Made then, and so to Lyncolne oꝛ they stent
 All Lyncolneshyre throughout, then they bzent
 And pꝛekeshyre also, and home they went againe
 With pilage great, of whiche they were ful faine.

The kyng might get no helpe w them to fight
 Foꝛ which he treated, with kig Aulaa of Noꝛwai
 And with kig Swaan, of Denmarke foꝛ his right
 That destroyed had the land, in fel aray
 And truage hight, them furthwarde to pay
 Foꝛ they had no power, amongst them to pꝛease
 And was ful fayne, the warres to cease.

But yet kyng Swayne, wolde nothig rest foꝛ this

He

Ethelred.

He came againe, and crownded was for kyng
Great tallage, of al this land amysse
He toke alway, and specially al other thyng
Saint Edmudes lades, he hurt by great taskyng
And tallage, whiche of it that he rayled
Unegally he pondered then and peyled.

For whiche warres, quene Emme to Normandy
To her brother, duke Richard the thyrde
With her sonnes, Alured and Edward her by
And Edmunde Ironesynde, then so betyde
Al these she toke, and in a shyp she dyd
And with kyng Ethelrede by the sea led pryncely
For helpe to haue gotte his land therby

Ignorance: **I**n whiche tyme, whyles he in Normandy
Was sojournyng, kyng Swayn full loude theti
And sayd vnto his men, a fast gan crye (cried
I am but dead, saint Edmunde hath me spied
And with a speare, hath me here mortified
Woo worth the day, I noyed I. Edmudes grounde
For with his speare, my heart he hath soze woude.

He died right soze without confession
And whither he went, I ne wote ne whare
But wel I wote, in good and true confession
Saint Edmond kyng died, and made his fare
To blyssc etern., without any care
But the Barons and lordes of England
Sent worde to Ethylrede, with him for to stand.

And wrote to him, how þ kyng Swayn was dead
And bade him come, to his land againe

And

And so he did, by counsaill and their rede
 He cyled all the Danes, with greate disdain
 And slewe them downe in battail, with great pain
 For whiche, therle Edrik sent to kyng knowte
 To Englande to come, with hoste great and stout

¶ This ylike kyng knowte, þ sonne was to kyng
 To Englad cam with host & great power (Swain
 Whom Ethilrede then met, and faught again
 In battail strong, & droue hym whome full clere
 With whom Edrik, then fled as did apere
 Into Denmarke, as a false traytoure vntrewe
 Purposyng so to come again all newe,

¶ But kyng Ethelred in þ meane tyme the died
 The pere of Chyste, a thousande and thyrtyene
 And reigned had, as Colman notified
 Thirty and eight, in warre and in tene
 Euer newe and newe wered as was sene
 His owne lande fled, for dzed of enmittee
 Without socoure, fro it he was fain to flee.

¶ Thus was he chastised, for his mothers gilt
 Accordyng well, to holy trewe scripture
 For cause that she, his brother had slain and spilt
 And like the woordes of saint Dunstane, ful sure
 That saied it was a punishyng full pure
 Out of the realme, to bee dztuen and expelled
 In whiche by synne, he had so hie excelled.

¶ The. C. xvii. Chapter.

Edmond

Edmonde
Ironside
reyned
kyng of
Englande
thre yere.

Edmond Ironside gotten & generat / glad
Of his first wife, a dukes daughter of En
After Ethelred his father was prorogate
Unto the crowne, of all his royall lande
Whenne called hym so, as I can vnderstande
Where euer he rode, armed was he ay
Oppressours all, to chastice in his way,

Knowt of Denmarke, assailed oft this lande
So in this tyme, that euer he armed went
To vse the feactes of armes, I vnderstande
As to knighthode, full well it did appent
Thus Colman saith, and flores that he ment
But sixe battailles, again kyng Knowt he smote
With victorie, as flores hath it note.

But then to boyde, the greate effusion
Of chriſten blud, thei twoo together accorde
To fight theim self, for full conclusion
Within an yle of Seuerne, by concoorde
Withouten warre, or any moze disorde
And who so then, might gette the victorie
Reioyse the realme, and all the monarchy.

And at their daie, and place so assigned
Thei armed, mette with strokes knightly set
With speare and sword, either other so repugned
With axe and dagger, either on other bette
Eithen of theim truste, the ouerhande to gette
But at the laste kyng Knowt, to hym alaied
These woozdes there, and thus to hym he saied.

Would God Edmond, thou wer so couetouse

As

As I am now, and as myne hert now would
And in this case, as glad and desirous
We should not long, this battaill thus hold
And to our menne, greate gladnesse manifold
If thou the half, of Denmarke had with me
And I the half of Englande, had with the.

With whiche thei bothe the wepōs fro thē cast
And ether other, in armes gan theim embrace
That bothe their hostes, amareued wer full faste
What it did meane to cease, in so litle space
But when thei knewe, betwene theim the case
Thei kneled all, and Chryste thei laudified
With hert deuoute, that eche of theim so victoried

Their realmes bothe, thei parted then in twoo
By whole accorde, betwene theim so concozded
And loued euer, as bʒethʒen after so
As chʒonicles, haue well whole recorded
Fro that tyme furth, no moze then thei discozded
This isle where thei faught, hight Cliues
Of common language, as thē he did theim please

But Edrik of Lyncolne, euer vntrewe
Reconsiled home, by Edmond was again
By subtle meane, this good kyng Edinond steepe
In priuy wise without wounde oʒ main
But in what foume, I can not wʒite noʒ sain
When he had reigned, that tyme fully thʒee yere
Buried he was, but where no manne durste spere.

But in the yere of Chryste, a thousande so
He died a wase accompte, and sixtene

Unknown

Knowt.

Unknowen to his people, and loz Des tho
Fo: whom thei made greate dole, as the was seen
But neuerthelesse, it might no better becn
This false Edrik, so fallcely it couered
That openly it was not then discouered.

¶ The. C. xviij. Chapter.

Knowte
Krug of
Englande
and of D
marke.

Yng Knowt reigned in Englande the anone
K And wedded had quene Eme of Englande
Ethelred wife, whiche gate hym loue anone
In Englande, of all the estates of the londe
Of commons also, that were bothe fre and bonde
On her he gate a sonne, that harde Knowt hight
On his first wife, had Swayne and Herold right.

¶ He sent Edmond and Edward, the sonnes two
Of Edmōd Ironeside, to Swithē to kyng Knowt
To sle o: lowse, to kepe in pouerte so
That thei should neuer haue power in no: out
To claime Englande, neither with hoste ne route
Whom he sent furth, then into Hungry
To the emperoure, with letters wo:thely.

¶ Besechyng hym, to nō:ishe theim and saue
Declarpyng hym, whose sonnes that thei were
The whiche he did, full wo:thely and gaue
Unto Edmond, his owne daughter dere
Whiche Edmond then died, and she in fere
Without childe, whcrefoze Agas his cosyn
Daughter to Henry, he gaue to Edward fine

¶ Of whiche Edward, called Edward the ryle
Came Edgare, then called Edgar Athelyng.

But

But knowt it let, hym self then cōwning
That to London to hold his Christmas
With his houshold, went then with greate solas.

¶ Wher erle Edrik, to kyng knowt hym cōfessed
That he had slain, kyng Edmond Ironside
His owne liege lorde with cruell death impressed
To gette his loue, and with hym dwell and bide
For unlikely it was to go or ride
Twoo kynges together in Englande
He saied was not accorpyng in the lande.

¶ The kyng his woordes well heard & conceiued
And how he asked a reward for his mede
There made hym tell, how he his lorde disceiued
Afore the lordes, as he had doen in deede
The whiche boldely he did without dreede
Hauyng no shame, to aske a greate reward
For whiche the kyng & lordes gaue whole a ward.

¶ To hang hym on the toure durpyng his liue
To he were dedde, that all folke might hym se
And his treson there, openly to shewe
And after that, to hang there till he die
For whom then was among the commons truly
A greate biworde, as many on þ woundre & rōne
As did on the erle Edrike of Strettoun.

¶ The kyng wente to Norway and it conquered
And droue the kyng Olaf out of that lande
And held it so by conquest of his swerd
Full worthely he gouerned euey lande
To peace and lawe, he kept theim as he fande

Knowte.

And in his domes, was rightwise and stable
And to the pooze alwaie merciable.

Homage
of þ Scot-
tes.

¶ Kyng Malcolme of Scotlande, the did homage
To hym and furthe became, for euer his manne
So did the kynges of Wales of hie parage
And all the North Weste Ocean
For their kyngdomes, and for their landes than
And in his tyme moste he was redoubted
Of all princes and in all landes loued.

¶ To Rome he rode, in royall goodly wise
And there was with the bishop greatly commend
As Christen prince, by papall whole aduise
The cardinalles foure, whiche the bishop had sed
At Malburgate, foure mile fro Rome extende
With greaue merite hym mette, and great honour
As if he had been of Rome theinperour.

¶ At his commyng again into Englande
He gaue Norwaie vnto his sonne sir Swain
And to Harold his sonne as I vnderstande
Englande he gaue, of whiche he was full fain
And to Harknowt, Denmarke he gaue certain
And so died in Christen whole creaunce
At Shaftisbory buried by his ordinaunce.

¶ The yere of Christe a thousande so was than
And thirty foure also truely wrytten
When he had reigned, fro the tyme that he began
Eightene yere whole, as well it was wrytten
With the darte of death, when that he was smitte
In whose daies the lande was inquiet

full

Full of riches and of welfare whole replete.

The. C. xvi. Chapter.

Harold kyng of Englande the sonne of kyng Knout
reigned. v. yere, and died in the yere. M. ccc.

Harolde his sonne, was crowned then in Harold.
deede

By Leofrike the duke of Leicestre
By Londoners, in fiores as I reede
By Danishir also, as saith the letter
That strong were then, and of power greater
Then other lordes of Englishe nacion
At London made was this coronacion

Malured the sonne of kyng Ethelrede
With fiftie sailles, landed at Southamton
Where kyng Harold with hoste hym met in deede
Redy to fight with hym for the crowne
But certain lordes of Englandes region
Betwene theim treated, that Malured went again
To Normandy, to duke Robert full plain.

But afterward, as Malured so rode
Fro his mother vnto the kyng Harold
The duke Goodwyn on Gylfismoze hym bode
With people greate, of numbze manifold
And slewe his menne downe there as he would
And led hym furthe to Ely and hym slewe
As traytour false, that cuer had bec vntrewe.

Some chronicle saith, he put out bothe his yen
For whiche he died sone for pain and wo
Some other sayn, he litte his wombe full keen

Harolde

The lengest gutte to a stake he nayled tho
Led hym aboute the stake there with muche wo
Till all came out that was his wombe within
Thus slewe thei hym, with sobtelte and gyn.

His mother quene Eme, Edward then sent
To Normandy to duke Willjam anone
That hir coosyn was, to kepe he were not shent
By kyng Herold, of his cruelty alone
Warnyng hym of þe treason that Herold had doen
For whiche cause Herold her exilde
Out of Englande, and Edward also her childe,

To Flaundres she fled, then full soze amoued
To erle Badwyn her coosyn nye of blode
Declaryng to hym, how Herold had destroyed
Her sonne Alured that heire of Englande stode
And exiled her, without socour or good
And Edward also her sonne, heire of Englande
His brother children also, awaie in vncouth lande

Wherefore therle, to kyng Hardknott the wrote
All her complaint and of his socour praied
And he should help, with all his might God wote
It were amendid of that she was affraied
He came anone in warre full well araid
Into Flaundres, his mother for to please
Her for to socour, and sette her hert in ease.

In whiche meane while, the kyng Harold died
At Westmister, and buried was full feire
After he had reigned, as it is notified
Fyue yere reigned without any heire

Of his body gotten, after him to repeire
 England to gouerne, wherfoze the lordes by assēt
 To kyng Hardknowt then into Flaunders sent

22 To be their kyng, sith Herold was a gone
 To please him with, and his mother to comfort
 Who came to England furthwith anone
 And crouned was with al the whole disport
 That lordes conde, as flores doth report
 Thus king Hardknowt was kig of Englād than
 Who worthely that tyme to reigne tho began

23 This king began his brothers death to venge Kyng
Hard-
knowt.
 On erle Gowyn, that erle was than of Kent
 That peased was, for he shulde not reuenge
 With riche giftes, whiche that he on him ipent
 With mekenesse lowe, & swoze that he was sent
 To do that thyng, on payne of high treason
 By kyng Herold, charged without reason.

Through good & giftes, & mightie high riches
 And of his kyn, that mekely him obeyed
 And by acquaintaūce, that thei made then expresse
 Upon the holy euangelis swozne vndelayed
 The king graūted him his grace & was wel paid
 To make him of his couēsel, and of gouernaunce
 Without moze wrathe or any disordāunce.

24 He married then his sister Gynylde to Henry
 Theemperour, that falsly was accused
 Of synne and cryme vled in auoutry
 With a pong man the whiche her excused
 After the lawe of the land that was there vled

By battail of his hand that then there newe
His accusour approchyng him vntreue.

For the whiche she would, nomore come to his
But liued sole euer after, so her life (bed
For good ne golde for aught that she her bed
For loue ne threte, for betyng ne for strife
With him dwellyng, furthwardes as his wife
In all thinges els, euer at his gouernaunce
Bothe day and night in womanly pleasaunce

Kying Hardknowt then, his doughter married
Unto a duke of the Danishye
At Lambirgh died at his feast magnified
Among his lordes and al his prelacie
And put him whole in God his high mercy
And charged them, his brother Edward to croune
To reioyce the land of Englandes region.

This was the yere of Christ then inscriued
A thousand whole fortie also and one
When that he had reigned, as was subscribed
The two yere whole, when he was thus wise gone
For whom was made that tyme ful muche mone
At Wynchester, beside his father buried
With lordes al, thither ful wel accompaigned.

The. C. xix. Chapter.

Kying Edward the confessor kying of England reigned
twentye and foure yeres, that began the yere of Christ a
thousand fortye and one, and dyed the yere a thousande
sixty and five.

Edward

Edward his brother, sone of big Ethelrede
 was crowned then, kyng of England
 The yere of Christ a **M** then in dede
 fortye and one, as flozcs could vnderstand
 To whom the kyng Swayn, of Denmarke lande
 The tribute whiche he had ful relefed
 And warres al bewene them ceased.

Kyng Ed
 ward the
 colicour.

To sende him then, the whole Englishe nauy
 Againe Magnus that kyng was of Nozway
 That helde it so, by wrong and tyzanny
 Whiche Edward sent anone in great aray
 With lordes, knightes and squiers freshe & gay
 With archers many, by whiche he gatte his land
 Of Nozway hole, and seized it in his hand.

Earle Eustace of Boleyn, that had wed
 Edwardes sylster, on his mothers syde
 To Edward came, at Douer soze bested
 Where then his men, a burges slewe that tyde
 Wherfore therle Goodwyn, set ful of pride
 Asked the kyng, to haue deliueraunce.
 Of theris men, to byde his ordinaunce.

Therle
 Goodwin

Notwithstādyng, the Burges slew his knight
 For that same cause, wherfore he it denied
 But made peace then, as therle had hight
 Of Boleyne, so his brother in lawe alied
 For whiche therle Goodwyn soze replied
 And warred soze, vpon the kyng eche day
 With his sonnes fūe, in ful great aray.

Not consideryng, the kyng his doughter had wed
 q. iiii. And


Edward.

And his treason pardon had and byd
Of his brothers death, when þ he murthered had
Whom then the kyng, somond comaunde & byd
Upon his legcaunce, whatsoeuer betyd
For to answere in his court, and amende
Defautes al, betwene them might be kende

At whose summons, he would not then appere
But warred soze, both he and his sonnes fyue
For whiche the kyng, them exiled out al clere
But after they landed and byd arriue
At Sandwiche, so the kyng them met belyue
Where lordes then, them treated and accorde
And afterwarde nomore they discozded.

The. C. xx. Chapter.

Howe Syward duke of Northumberland, slewe in bat-
tyle Malclom kyng of Scotland, and crowned Malclome
kyng at Scome, accordyng to saint Edward the confes-
sours comaundement, whiche Malclome byd homage to
saint Edward, as appeareth by his letters patentes.

uke Siward then, was of Northüberlād
In battaile slew king Malclom so in dede
Of Scotland then þ false was to his bād
Whiche to the kyng he made, who taketh hede
Wherefore the kyng, in Marian as I reade
By his letters charged, duke Siward toke in hād
To crowne Malcolin that was of Comberland.

At the whiche he byd ful mightely anone
At Skone abbey, where kynges were all crowned
Upon his head he set the crowne anone

And

And toke homage of him, vpon the ground
In Edwardes name, as he of right was bounde
For that ylike realme, and as his elders dyd
Suche fortune then to England was betid.

Homage
of the
Scottes.

The kyng Gryffyn of Wales, then was slaine
That Herfordshyre spoyled had and bent
His head set vp, at Gloucester ful plaine.
For his vntueth, and falsed that he ment
And sone thereafter, his brothers head was sent
Vnto the kyng for his rebellion
So were they bothe forynged for treason.

And as kyng Edward, in his palayce of pryde
Duke Goodwyne, then sitting at his table
Sawe the butler on his one fote slide
And like to fal, that other fote ful stable
As he was scrupng the kyng at his table
Then held him vp, that he fel not to ground
Kyng Edward sayd, to Goodwyn in that stound.

As his one fote, ye see helpe that other
ful wel and true, I fynde it dayly now
Had ye ne benc, thus had helpe me my brother
Therle then to the kyng on side gan bowe
And sayd, yf I were cause, I pray God now
This bread passe not my throte, but dead I bee
And straungled here anone, that ye may see.

At his praier anone with that he died
For with that bread, straungled was he that stound
It might not passe his throte, as men espied
Wherfore the kyng then, bad draw out the hound
Under

Edwarde.

Under the boorde, as he that false was found
On whom God shewed an hastye iudgement
Approued wel, by good experiment.

Where Herolde had, therle Algar eyled
Fro Leicester, where erle he was so then
The kyng Edward, agayne him reconsiled
And pardoned him, and toke him for his man
Of Couentre, as fiores tel it can
The lord he was, and there thabbey found
And buried there is, with his wisc that stound

This Algar was, the sonne of erle Leofrike
Whiche Leofrike was, the duke Lofwynes sonne
That erles had bene there, none afore them like
But duke Siward, as he did wonne
Sickenes him toke, and soze vpon him ronne
In whiche he did him arme in al degree
And had his axe in hand, ful like to dye,

He sayd vnto the lordes, then him aboute
Thus semeth wel, in armes a knight to dye
And not in bed to lye, loure and loute
Tyl death him kyl, with paines cruelly
As would God, heare were my most enemy
That I might dye vpon him, nowe in right
In armes thus arayd like a knight

With that he died, for paines that he felt
Upon his feete standyng in that aray
And shoke his axe, while that his heart gan swelt
And to the ground he fel in that afray
Who buried was, at saint Mary abbey

At yorke citee, with worshyp and honoure
As likely was, for suche a gouernoure

The king Edward, the duke of Northumberland
To Costy gaue the sonne of duke Goodwyne
Under the name of erle, as flosres doth vnderstand
After whiche tyme, all haue bene erles synce
With landes and rentes both fayre and fyne
Whiche estate suffice, for princes bene bothe two
In euery lande accompted, where they go

Whe disherited erle Waldyne, his owne sonne
Who erle was then, create of Hunteyngdon
Of Northampton also, as cronicles tel can
A worthy prince, of al this region
That rule a realme coulde, wel then by reason
Another prince, was Loafrike that day
Erle of Leycester and Couentry no nay.

Whiche Loafrike had a wyfe, þe Godiue hight
That naked throughout all Couentre
The tolles soze, and seruage againe right
To redeme hole of her sempnitee
She in her here, hangyng beneth her knee
Upon a day, rode so through al the towne
To bye it free, by her redemption.

Nota.

For otherwyse, therle woulde not it free
But yf that she, rode naked through all the towne
Upon the day, that al men might her see
Trustyng she would not for no warison
Haue done it so, by suche redemption
But thus by wytte, she kept her selfe vnshamed

And

Edwarde.

And freed the toun, worthy was he blamed:

¶ Kyng Edward sent then into Hungary
For his cousyn, the sonne Emond Ironeslyde
Theemperour sent him, Edwarde gladly
His brother sonne, and folke with him to ryde
His sonne Edward Atihelyng by his syde
Margarete and eke Christine his doughter dere
Whiche kyng Edwarde receiued with good chere

He married Margarete, mighty with great riches
To kyng Malcolyne, of Scotland was that day
That on her gatte, fiue sonnes of great noblenes
Edwarde, Dunkan, Edgare, Alexander the gay
And Dauid also that kynges were al no nay
Eche after other, of Scotland throughout
Whose mother is now S. Margarete without
(Dout

¶ At Dumfermlyn shyned and canonized
On whom Malcolyne a doughter gatte also
Kyng Henries wyfe the fyft ful wel auised
Quene Maude that hight, that wel loued Englad
These crosses fayre and royal as men go (tho
Through al England, she made at her expense
And diuerse good orders through his prouidence

¶ Another syster this saint Margarete had
That Christine hight, kyng Edward then pfessed
In religion to liue, she was ful glad
To holy life, disposed and adressed
An holy woman of life, and of God blessed
Who at her death her solle then vncouered
And to our lozde, ful mekely so it offered,

In

In his forest, as he pursued a deere
 In Essex, a palmer with hym mette
 Askyng hym good, whom gladly he did here
 He claue his ryng, and a sondre it bette
 The half of whiche, he gaue without lette
 To the Palmer, that went a waie anone
 That other good to geue hym, there had he none.

But after that, full long and many a daie
 Twoo pilgrymes came, vnto that noble kyng
 And saied, saint Jhon thapostell in pooze araie
 Us praied, and bad streightly aboue all thyng
 To you present, and take this half gold ryng
 Whiche he gaue hym of almes and charitee
 And bad vs saie, that right sone ye should hym see

Ignorance & superstition.

Whiche ryng he sette together there anone
 And that ilke place he called, ay after haueryng
 And that same place, where thei it braste alone
 He called ay after that tyme, Claueryng
 In Essex bee bothe faire standyng
 Where that he made twoo churches of saint Jho
 Theuangelist, and halowed were anon.

Sone after that, he died and went to blisse
 But firste he made duke Harold protectoure
 Of his coosyn, to gouerne and to wille
 Edgar Athelyng, full young a gouernoure
 Whom he ordeined to bee his successoure
 As verie heyre to Edmond Ironside
 But thus Harold, then sette all that aside

When he had bee kyng fourc and twenty yere
 He

Harolde

Harolde
Kynge of
Englande
Duke
Goodwis
Counne.

He died the yere, a thousande sixty and fve
At Westminster canonized is full clere
All newe he made, the churche there in his lue
All were he not right heire, as menne in strue
A confessor he is, full hie in heauen
With God to dwell, evermore and beleuen.

Harold by strength, then crowned was for kynge
Forsworne that was, vpon the euangelistes
For to crowne Edgar Athelnyng
And hym protecte, and defende in all wise
Unto his age, that none the realme supprise
This was his othe, of whiche he was forswore
All if he made Edgar and erle therefoze.

The erle Tosty, then of Northumberlande
That brother was, vnto the kynge Harold
By the kynge exiled, out of the lande
To Englande came, with kynge Harold full bold
Of Norwaie then, in Chronicle as is told
But kynge Harold of Englande, with theim mette
At Staunford brige, to death thei bothe war bette

Beside Forke, was this battaill full soze smitte
Where kynge Harold of Englande, had the feld
And slewe Harold Hargrey, as was written
Kynge of Norwaie, and erle Tosty vnder sheld
That neuer after, might armes weld
And thousandes fell, of Danes and Norwaies
He killed there that daie, as flores saies.

A yere he reigned, whom Willpayn conquerour
That duke was then, of all faire Normandy

Hym

hym slewe in battaill, for his ymagined errour
Again hym, that he did so cruelly
And not would mende, ne yet satisfie
The duke William, so the feld then conquered
With strokes soze, for whiche the lande was fered

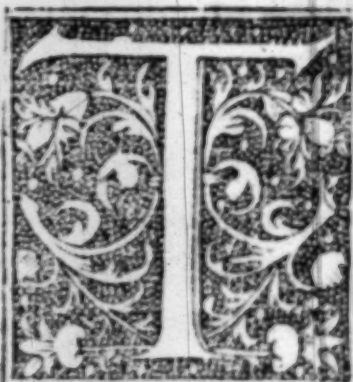
g This kyng Harold at Waltham, whiche he fonde
Of foure score chanons, full faire was buried
At the hie aulter, and as a kyng was crownde
All if he were intruso, notified
And in battaill slain, and victozied
Of gentlenesse, the Conquerour had so
All if he were afoze his moztall fo.

William conque-

rou, Kyng of Englande and Duke of
Normandy, began to reigne, the yere of Christ, a
thoulande sixty and sixe, and reigned foure & twentie yere
and died the yere, a thoulande foure score and ten, and
the saied Conquerour founded the Abbaye of Bas-
taile, for the solles of the people slain there,
the fourtene daie of October, in the
yere of Christ a thoulande, thye
score and sixe.

The. C. xxi. Chapter.

Duke Will-
iam of Nor-
manoy.



HE fourtene daie of October
accompted

The duke William that was
of Normandie

At London was crowned, and
annoynted

In trone royall, too haue the
Monarchie

By his conquest, and his victorie
Without title of right to hym discente
But onely of his triumphall entente.

20 The yere of Christ, was whē Alured him crow-
Tharchebishop of Yorke, and hie primate (ned
A thoulande whole threc score and sixe well found
Ducne Mawde his wife, to hym associate
He crowned also, that tyme in her estate
The abbay of battaill, that then he bounded
And for the solles there slain, he founded.

20 He called it so then for a memozy
Of his battaill, by whiche Englande he gate

In

In token of his mightie victorie
That Englande there he had, so well ouersee
To prae for the folles slain, as was his det
Whiche abbaye is in Suffex, in that stede
Where the battaill was, and the people dede.

20 The South parte of Englande then he rode
And dalte it largely vnto his menne
The North again hym rebelled then abode
With help of Danes, in that countree were then
And Scottes also, that false were, when and when
But kyng William, that worthy conquerour
Discomfite them, with long and sore labour

20 To Normandy he went, then right anone
And with hym had Edgar called Athelyng
Edwyn and Morcar afore that were his sone
For cause thei should not, then make more risynge
In his absence, while he were there abidynge
But at his home comynge with hym again
He brought them all, of whiche the folke wet faine

20 Gospatrik that then was erle of Cumberlond
That not again stode kyng Malcolin in his war
When he destroyed therledome and his land
But hym withdrew out of waie full far
Wherefore the kyng, as saith the chronicle
Hym disherited, and gaue to Rauf Mesithyne
His erledome, to whom menne did enclayne.

The. C. xxi. Chapter.

Edmunde of Scotland doon to kyng William conquerour
at Birmyngham in Scotland, & also how the kyng of Fraunce
scorned the kyng William and he quite it hym after.

l. i.

Then

Kyng William conquerour



Then rode the kyng into Scotlad anone
And bzent the lande vnto Abirnyth
Where kyng Malcolme subynitted him
With greate mone

Homage of and homage liege hym did full humbly
þ Scottes. And amended there all his injury

Then went he furth, to Euxam where he offred
And to the churche, he gaue great good vncoffred

¶ He then his lawe and peace alwaie proclaimed
Officers made in euery shire aboute
And so held on to London vnreclaimed
Where his iustice he set the lande throughout
The kyng of fraunce, thus scorned hym out of
That kyng Willia in Geline had lien long (doubt
And tyme hym wer been kyked, with good song.

¶ When he this hard, to fraunce he went anone
There to bee kirked, he offred his candell bright
A thousande townes he bzent, as he did gone
At theim he prayed, the kyng of fraunce to lig'ht
His candle then, if that he goodly might
Whiche at his kirke hale and purification
To Mars he thought, þ tyme to make his oblaciō

¶ Edwyn therle proclaimed o' Lecester
After decease of Algary his father dere
And erle Morcare his brother that after
Died bothe twoo, Lucy their sister clere
Of Lecestre then, and Lyncolne bothe in fere
The countesse was, whom kyng William married
To Hue Tailboys erle of Angeow magnified.

To

20 To kyng Willypain then came full glad again
At Wynchester he held his parliament
Where he then stode, for wrath and great disdain
The duke Waldine, that no harme to hym meut
But onely he counsailed and consent
To erle Edgar, to gette his heritage
Of Englande whole, and made to hym homage.

20 Who duke was then of Northumberlande
And erle create was, also of Huncyngton
By chronicles old as nyenne can vnderstande
Entitled whole, as of all Northampton
Behedded was at Wynchester towne
Whose hedde together, grewe to the necke again
Buried at Crowlande, for saint the south to sain

20 The kyng then made, as I vnderstande
The bishop then, of Duresme that Walter hight
Erle proclaimed of Northumberlande
Who at Cateshede, the countre stode downe right
The kyng then made, a lord that Abbyke hight
Erle of þe countre, þe durst not Scottes withstande
Wherefore he gaue Robert Howbray that lande

20 And made hym erle of Northumberlande
The kyng then sent vnto euery shire
Justices to sitte, throughout all the lande
Of all lordeshippis, and knightes fees enquire
What temporals he had, to knowe he had desire
And what pertained vnto his royall crowne
And what the churche had of deuocion.

20 Vnto his sonne, eldest then generate

Kyng William conquerour

All Normandy he gaue in heritage
And Englands whole, to William nominate
His second sonne gaue with all thauantage
And to Henry his thirde sonne young and sage
The lordome gaue then of Gloucester se
With the honour of Aede, for euer in certente.

And he died the yere a thousande four score and ten
And of his reigne twenty yere and four the
At Canche buried, in the abbey that hight then
Saint Stephens abbey, by Canche that standeth so
His daughter Ade, afore had married the
Unto the lord Stephē of Blois, a prince of might
Of warres wise, and a full manly knight.

The. C. xliii. Chapiter.

William Rufus kyng of Englands reigned. xliii. yere,
and began to reigne in the yere of our lord. M. lxxx. and
ten, and died in the yere a thousande one hundred & thre

Kyng wil
l. a Rufus

His sonne Willia Rufus as he deuised
Was crowned then with greate solem-
pnitee
But after sone duke Robert was auised
To claime Englands by his priouitee
And Normandy also, as for his propretee
As he that was his eldest sonne and heire
With hoste full greate, in Englands gan repaire.

And made greate warre vpon his brother so
Thre yere all out, betwene them so continued
Till at the laste thei bothe, betwene them twoo
Did condiscende, as well to them pertained
With whole herte and will, nothyng feined

The

The iudgement of kyng Philip of Fraunce
To vndergo and byde his ordynaunce.

¶ In whiche meane while, his brother erle Hery
The castels al belongyng to the croune
As high constable of Englande properly
Then seazed had in his possession
As his office by good derectiō
Asked of right and of good consuetude
To kepe them sure to the crounes excellitūde.

¶ The kyng Philip, by his auised parliament
Gave iudgement, betwene the brythren two
As kyng Wyllyam their father ful ment
All Normandy, Robert should haue euer mo
And Wyllyam England, & frendes should be so
And liue in peace, without any clayme
And either other releace, and whole disclayme.

¶ Therle Henry of England then constable
Delivered al the castels and citees right
To kyng Wyllyam his brother inheritable
As he was bound, and fully so had hight
Duke Robert then, his brother a worthy knight
To England came, to sport him with his brother
At whiche tyme, either was glad of other.

The. C. xliii. Chapter.

¶ Howe kyng Malcolyne of Scotland warred in Englan
for his wifes right, pretendyng that he was right heire of
England, and afterwarde he did homage to kyng Wyllyam
Rufus for the realme of Scotland.

Kyng William

His Malcolin of Scotlād greatly claimed
To haue England then by his wifes right
Margarete yster to Edgar, hette pclaimed
Of England whole, that expelled was by night
Of kyng William conquerour by vnight
So for his right, the Northland he destroyed
And home he went againe, nothyng annoyed

Homage
of the
Scottes.

But then the kyng and his brethren two
To Scotland rode and wasted sore the land
Tyl Malcolyne came, and dyd his homage tho
By letter wyrtten and sealed I vnderstand
Whiche Hardyng gaue, into kyng Henries hand
Without reward or any recompence
Of mayne labour, his costages and expence.

The duke Robert went home to Normandye
And kyng Malcolyne & his sonne, then Edward
Warred againe Northumberland in hys
But erle Robert that keepyng had and warde
Of Northumberland, with him the faught ful hard
Byside Alutike at Malcolyne wel were slaine
There Malcoline and Edward his sonne certaine

When quene Margret, so of þe tidynges knewe
She ate neuer meate, for sorowe died anone
At Dunfermelyn, buried as then was dewe
But now she is there shryned in fleshe and bone
Workyng miracles as sayeth many one
Entombed fayre, and in the fyretree translate
Of whiche abbey now she is the aduocate.

The Scottes then made, Dunwald so their kyng
Malco-

Malcolynes brother, that to it had no right
But Dunkan, sone of Malcolyne that knowyng
With helpe of kyng Willjam, and royal might
Of Scotland, so droue him away to flight
And crowned was, as chronicles vnderstand
And homage made to Willjam for his land

Homage
of the
Scottes.

2d Sone after, kyng Dunkan of Scotland slain
By treason was, and Dunwal restitute
Unto the croune of Scotland then againe
Whom Edgare then by succour and refute
Of kyng Willjam droue out al destitute
Of any helpe, and crowned was in Scotland
To kyng William did homage for his land

Homage
of the
Scottes.

2d Of whose homage, John Hardyng gaue the
ful clerely made, wrytten wel and sealed (letter
The whiche also, with other letters better
That by reason may not be reueled
The whiche, yf he would haue enbeseled
The kyng James vnto his warison
A M. marke, him hight of his discrecion

¶ And in his tyme, Roes that Richard hight
The kyng of Wales, in battaile strong was slain
Besyde the castel of Brekenham, then ful right
fro whiche tyme forth, they kynges seazed full
And princes called they were, soth to sayn (plain
The kyng with host, on Robert Monbray rode
Who with the kyng faught, for his traytourhod.

2d And discomfite, helde Bamburgh castel then
And the kyng endurynge, ful. vii. yere

c. iiii.

Consen=

Kyng William

Consentyng with the lordes, that so began
For to depose the kyng, of his crowne clere
And duke Robert his brother, with great power
To crowne and make, the kyng of al England
With Normandy to ioyn I vnderstand.

And the kyng exiled Anselme of Caunterbury
Tharchebishop, that withstode his wronges
Done to the churche, and to the prelacie
To the comons also, that theni belongs
Seuerene townes, with also many churches amō
And abbeyes foure, he wasted and confound (ges
The newe forest in Hamshyre for to found

And he builded the Newcastle vpon Tyne
The Scottes to gainstand, and to defende
And dwel therein, the people to enclyne
The toun to builde, and walle as did append
He gaue them ground, & gold ful great to spend
To builde it wel, and walle it al aboute
And fraunchised them, to pay a fre rent out

The retes & frutes, to tharchebishop perteynyng
And to the bishoppes of Wynchester & Sarum
And also .ix. abbeyes liuelod conteynyng
In his handes seized, and helde al and some
But for his workes & buildinges held eche crome
With whiche he made then, Westminster hal
And the castel of Newcastle with al.

Westminster
hal.

And that standeth on Tyne, therein to dwel in warre
Against the Scottes, the countre to defende
Whiche as men sayd, was to him mekil deere

And

And moze pleasynge, then otherwise dispend
 And muche people for it, dyd him comende
 For cause he dyd the comon wealth sustene
 Of marchers vnnumerable to maintene.

The. C. xxb. Chapter.

This kyng Wyllyam Rufus tared so sore the commons
 that they might not mainteine tilthe, for þe whiche fel great
 death and great mischiese and mozen of catrel for defaut of
 food, for whiche the comons were glad of his death.

Great tallage of England, then was raised
 In so ferforth, that tilthe of land was layd
 Of whiche sued mischies, nothyng praisyd
 For faute of food, mozayn of bestial fraied
 And death of people, for hunger sore araised
 A kyng woteth not what harmeth husbandry
 Housband to pil, and tare outragiously.

To Gods dome haue consideracion
 Howe that this kyng, on huntynge as he stode
 Under a tree, and as wrytynge maketh mencion
 Walter Tyrel at his game in that woode
 Shotynge at a bere, of whiche he drew no bloode
 But stroke the kyng, vnto the deathes wound
 That there anone he died, vpon the ground.

At Wynchester then, buried anone
 The date was then of his reigne. xiii. yere
 For whom the folke, no sorowe made no mone
 He hurt them so, with tare and tallage here
 Of Christ a thousand an hundred & thye yere clere
 Whose death the folke, in no wise did complain
 Were they al therof bothe glad and fain

The

The. Cxxvi. Chapter.

Henry the first. kyng of England and duke of Normans
dy. reigned. cxxvi. yere, and died in the yere of Christ a M.
C. and xxxix.

Kyng Henry
the first

Henry his brother, that first was of name
was crowned then, with all the honoure
might be

He reconciled saint Anselme that came hame
Who crowned Maude his wyfe ful fayre and free
That doughter was, ful of benygntee
To kyng Malcolme, & S. Margarete the quene
Of Scotland, whiche afore that tyme had bene.

On whom he gat Willyam, Richard & Hold
Whose goodnesse, is yet spoken of ful wyde
If she were fayre, her vertues manyfolde
Exceede farre and vices she set asyde
Debates all that engendred were of pryde
She staunched hole, with all beneuolence
And visited sicke and pooze with diligence.

The prisoners also & women eke with childe
And in gesele luyng ay where aboute
Clothes and meate, and beddyng newe vnfiled
Wyne also and ale, she gaue without doubt
Where she sawe nede, in countrees al throughtout
These crosses al, that yet be most royal
In the high waies, with gold she made them al.

Hommage
of the
Scottes.

Kyng Edgare then, her brother was of Scotland
That to kyng Henry then made homage
The bishop of Duresme, then toke on hand

The

The duke Robert, to gone in message
To make him clayme England as his heritage
The whiche he dyd, anon without delay
As they accorded vpon a certayne day.

But Anselme, bishop of Caunterbury
And also quene Maude, then made the wel accord
The kyng to pay, thre thousand marke perely
To duke Robert without moze discorde
And counseled then the kyng, as was recorde
To loue the lordes, that made the discencion
Betwyxt his brother and him by conuencion

Then kyng Henry, warred Robert Estenuple
The eldest sonne of Roger Mountgomery
And his brother, that was so called that whyle
And create erle of Shrewsbury
Who his castel of Arundel helde for thy
And Shrewsbury also, and the cytee
With other mo castels, in his countree.

Whiche to the kyng, he helde by conuencion
He and his brother to passe to Normandy
With all theyr men, without discencion
To theyr father, Roger Mountgomery
That erle was there, of Bolesmo manly
The kyng went then, to Caue and to Barhous
Helde them with force, and heart ful Couctous.

Whiche tomes, Robert the Duke of Normandy
Asked of him, to haue deliucraunce
And his mony, of thre thousand marke perely
Whiche he bought him, by the hole concordance
Whiche

Kyng Henry

Whiche he againeslayd, and stode at variaunce
Wherfore they fel on warre, and toke the felde
With hostes great ful soze faught vnder shelde

At Tenarthbray, that is in Normandye
Where Rygel then, of Albany that hight
Toke Duke Robert, in battaile manfully
And brought him bound, vnto þe king with might
For which the king anone ther made him a knight
And gaue him landes, that were forfet afore
By Robert Stutuple, in England for euermore.

He gate also a castel, besyged long
Whiche he scaled, with noble policie
And to the kyng it gaue, though it were wrong
For which, the kyng gaue him anone in hys
The landes, al that forfet were onely
By Robert Monbray, earle of Northumberland
In his brothers tyme, as I vnderstand.

The same Rygel, that hight Albany
A sonne had then, whom the kyng Henry
Roger Monbray, dyd cal euer after ay
Thus Albany was chaunged morally
Vnto Monbray, for the liuelod onely
Whiche Monbray had afore of heritage
These Monbrays now, rose fyrst of high corage.

This kyng Henry then sealed Normandye
And made his sonne William duke of that land
And home came to England then in hys
And in the yere of Christ, to vnderstand
A thousand hole, an C. and ten on hand

His daughter Mathe, he married to Henry
The Emperour was then of Romany.

He put his brother duke Robert in straight ward
And many other, that were of his cognisaunce
Where he released couenauntes and forwarde
Afoze witten of his enheritaunce
That betwene thein, might make any distaunce
And founde hym euer, in all royall estate
By good aulse, and counsaill, ordinate.

¶ Whiche duke ordered was so, for he forsoke
The realme, of all the lande of Hierusalem
When he was chose therto, and nought it toke
For rouetouse, to haue this Englishe realme
For he forsoke that fortune, as menne did deme
Again goddes will, and his high ordinaunce
For chosen he was, by all chyssen creaunce.

¶ For at the wyppnyng of Hierusalem
Where princes many, kynges and dukes were
He was the worthiest of any realme
And bare hym beste, in knightely deede of warre
At all assaultes, mozte knightely he did hym bere
The honour all, and fame he had euer moze
And chosen was there, to bee kyng therefoze

¶ When saled, þ God gaue hym suche punishmet
His brother, to put hym in greate misery
Unto his death, again his owne entent
For he forsoke Chystes owne monarchy
In whiche he was bozne, and for man liste to dye
The chyssen faith, to maintain and encrease

for

Kyng Henry the firste.

For couctouse his brother to discreace.

¶ The yere of Chyſte, a thousand was full clere
And an hundreth alſo, and therewith all eightene
Whē good quene Maude was ded, & laied on bere
At Weſtmiſter buried, as well was ſene
For heuineſſe of whiche, the kyng I wene
To Normandy, then went vnto his ſonne
The duke William, & there with hym did wonne.

¶ The thirde yere after, to Englande came again
The duke his ſonne, Wyllyam of Normandy
His brother Richard alſo, the ſothe to ſain
And erle Richard, of Cheſter in compaignie
With many othor lordes, in ſhippes them by
Upon the ſea wer dremt in greate diſtreſſe
Of the whiche the kyng, had the greate heuineſſe.

¶ Whiche duke Willia had wed þ daughter the
Of ſowke Tailboys, erle of Angeow had bene
With whom a. C. knyghtes with many menne
And ladies many, were drownded as was ſeen
And then the kyng wed Hadelſe the quene
The duke Godfrey daughter, þ was of Loreyne
Of his mournyng, to comforte hym again.

¶ And in the yere, a thouſande fully accompte
And an hundred and twenty and alſo fiue
Themperour Henry, the deathe ſurmounte
And paſſed to God fro Maude that was his wife
Who to her father, kyng Henry came belife
Abode with hym in Englande, then twoo yere
Maude Emprice, was called then full clere.

And

And in the yere of Chyſte his incarnacion
A thouſande was, an hundred twenty and ſeven
When kyng Henry, in greate proſperacion
His daughter Hawde, thempriſe to neuen
The erle Geſtrep Plantagenet euen
Erle of Angeow, the ſonne of Fowke Tailboys
So married had of ſame, that had the boyce.

On whom he gate a ſonne, that Henry hight
By ſurname called Henry fitz Empriſe
Then died his eme Alexander furthe right
The kyng of Scottes, a prince of great enterpriſe
That homage did for Scotlande, as ſuffice
So died, then to whom David ſuccede
His brother was, ſainct Margaret ſonne in dede.

Homage of
ſ Scottes.

That to kyng Henry, made his homage
And then to Hawde, the foreſaid Empriſe
By whole aſſent, of all his Baronage
By letter wrytten and ſealed, as maie ſuffice
Whiche Iho Hardyng, in Scotlande brought of
With many mo, for. lxx. C marke and fifty (price
At bidding & comaundement of the kyng Henry.

Homage of
ſ Scottes.

Cadwalan, prince of Wales at Wadeiet
In battaill faught, where kyng Henry hym ſlewe
And greate people of Wales, that there forſet
Were ſlain that daie, to hym that were vntrewe
Of whiche battaill, Wales maie alwaie rewe
The yere a thouſande, an hundred and thirty
And there till twoo, as made is memoꝝ.

Then went the kyng to Normandy again

And

Kyng Stephen.

And there abode, and kept all Normandy
To tyme he died, of whom that lande was fain
But Englande then of it, was full heuy
When he had reigned so full worthely
He died in the sire and thirty yere
At Boys Lyon, of his reigne then full clere.

¶ Of Chyistes date, was then a thousande yere
An hundred also, and nyne and thirty mo
Buried at Redyng, as well it dooeth appere
In the abbaye, whiche there he founded so
Of monkes blake, where euer thei ride o; go
That praie for hym, & for quene Maude his wife
Who either other loued withouten strife.

The. C. xxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Stephen of Boys kyng of Englande reigned. xix. yere
and began the yere of Chyiste, a thousande. C. xxxix. and
died in the yere a thousande one hundred fifty & eight.

Kyng Ste
phan.



Stephan of Boys, his sister sonne was
crounde
A manly man, was the of great power
And kyng was made of Englande that
Without strief, o; any maner warre (frounde
To Normandy he went, and seized all there
And gaue it to his soonne, sir Eustace
And made hym duke thereof, with greate solace.

¶ Thus Eustace, then duke of Normandy
To Paris wente, to kyng Lewes of fraunce
His homage made for his lande so in hie
And put out then, with greate contrariaunce
The officers that did to Maude pleasaunce

And

And wed the suster of kyng Lewes to wyfe
for suppowail of it without strife

The kyng Stephā to Englād then home came
And tidinges had, how king David had destroyed
The North parties, and done ful muche harme
Wherfore he bent Edinburgh then and noyed
And the countree aboute he soze accloyed
for whiche David his sonne to Henry then sent
To be his man, thens furth at his entent.

To whom kyng Stephan therldome of Hun-
Then gaue, & erle therof him so create (tyngdon
Who then for it by very due reason
His homage dyd as it was ordinate
Whiche Henry died, and neuer had kynges estate
for whiche the Scottes, seyn they owe no scruisse
To Englishe kynges, but onely of this wyse.

Homage
of the
Scottes.

Kyng Stephan then bet the castel doune
In England, so that stode him to defence
His men they gaue to their inheritesoune
And al sone, for cause of their offence
He disherite with mighty violence
Diuers erles and lordes he disherite
And many other of his frendes enherite.

The pere of Christ a thousand was then gone
An hundredth thyrtye and eight also
Kyng Stephan brake al his othes anone
That he had made vnto the barons tho
for whiche they rose ful soze again him so
And warred him felly on euery syde

L. i.

And

Kyng Stephyn.

And he on them also with myghty pride.

The yere a thousand, an C. thyrtye and nyne
Maude empyce, in England claymed her right
With earle Robert of Gloucestre her brother kyne
And erle Randolf of Chester, with al his might
Syn Bygot erle of Northfolke then hight
Abbeys then erle of Drenford
And Wyllyam Balme, that the was erle of Hereford

William Legroos, erle of Almarle tho
Robert Houel, and Wyllyam lord Berce
Kyng Dauid her eme, and many other mo
Of erles and barons, that were ful hardye
The castel then Lyncolne gatte on hye
The cytee helde of Lyncolne with also
With host ful great, liggynge with them so.

Where then the kyng, the castel seiged long
Tyl he it had, by treaty and conuencion
And bode therein, with power great and strong
Tyl Maude and he, as made is mencion
With strong battailes, and great discencion
Besyde Lyncolne, where then she had the felde
And Stephyn taken, a hurt loze through his sheld

To Bystowe then, erle Robert Clare him led
And in the towre, there kept in strong prison
The Empyce Maude, with power that she had
To Wynchester then, she rode segyng the toun
Where the quene Maude, as made is mencion
Kyng Stephā his wife it rescowed w battail soze
And toke the erle Clare his eme thore

The

The C. xxviii. Chapter

The enterchaunge of kyng Stephyn & the duke Robert
Clare duke of Gloucester.

In whiche cause then, to haue her eme again
The emperesse and quene Maude accorded
To enterchaunge, the kyng so then ful fain
For erle Robert without more, concorded
This enterchaunge, thus made and recorded
The kyng her lued into Orenford
fro whens she went, by night to Walpyngford

Upon the frost, in the wynter season
In her smocke alone, with her vnele dere
That none her knewe, of them without the toune
So lyke her smocke and the snowe was in feer
The kyng knewe not in what place that she wer
fo: Orenford he gat, and Ambraz flewe
Of Orenforde that was an erle ful true.

The kyng Stephyn, a castel then began
At Wylton, where kyng Dauid with power
And erle Robert, of Gloucester that was then
Him droue away, out of that place ful clere
And bet it doune, to the ground ful nere
To Walpyngforde, the kyng with power went
The emperesse to seche was his intent.

Wher pattle then, droue him then away
With great slaughter of men and occision
And euery lorde on other, made great affraye
And peoples other through al this region.

Kyng Stephyn.

By great impzeſſion and cruel ſore raunſon
The kyng treated with erle Randolf ful true
But falſe then was his treatye, as men knewe.

¶ For when he came vnto his preſence
Inone he put him in ſore preſone
To tyme he had by his magnificence
The caſtel of Lyncolne vnto his croune
And put him then to ſyne and great raunſome
So variaunt he was alway of hight
Fro euen to morowe, that no man truſt him might

¶ The fiſtene yere of the ſame kyng Stephen
Therle Geffrey of Angeou deſceſſed
A noble prince as al men dyd beleuen
Henry his ſonne, of perſon wel encreſſed
Of childiſhe wyſt alſo ful reſeſed
And of age he was then fiſtene yere
To Scotland came, kyng Dauid to requyre

¶ Of his ſuccoure, and of his ſupportation
England to get, that was his heritage
Who made him then, ful great conſolacion
And with him came without fee or wage
With ful aſſent of all his baronage
Under baners, kyng Dauid made him knight
Upon the felde, again kyng Stephyn to fight

¶ But ſuche treaty was made and good accorde
That kyng Stephyn, to Henry ſhoulde retourne
As very hepye, without more diſcorde
At his deſceſſe, to Henry whole retourne
The croune of England, without more ſoitourne.

Who

Who died then, after in his. xix. yere
At feuerham buried, he was ful clere.

Of Christes date, was then a thousand yere
And an hundredth fiftye and eight also
His wyfe and he, there buried both in feer
The whiche he found, whyles he was liuyng so
And reigned here, in muche trouble and wo
And had this realme, without any right
For thempyrie Maude, that fayre lady byght.

The. C. xxix. Chapter.

Henry fitz Empryce kyng of Englad and erle of Angeou,
duke of Normandy and Guyen, by. cccvi. yere, and began
to reigne the yere of our lord a thousand a hundredth. lviij.
and died the yere a thousand an hundredth and. xciiij.

Henry the erle of Angeou was tho
In this mean time, had bene in Normady
And set his rule therin, for frend or fo
And crowned was at London wothelp
With all the lordes of his hye monarchie
And made him then, their feaute and homage
The pryncce of Wales also for his heritage.

kyng Be
ry p. lccv

He wedded then a lady, fayre and bright
Dame Elianor, the dukes doughter of Guyen
And heyre therof, and lady by al right
Possession had, with al the profites then
And welbeloued was she with her men
Deuorced fro the kyng Lewes of Fraunce
That her had wed to wyfe, of his pupsaunce
l. iij.

And

Kyng Henry

And on her gat. ii. Doughters, fayre & gent
But for sibzede and consanguinitee
They were departed, by papal iudgement
On whom kyng Henry, by Chyestes decree
Gat sonnes foure of great humanitee
Henry, Richard, Gysfray, and John also
Eliauo and Ihoane, his doughters two.

The. Cxxi. Chapter.

Howe Malcolyne the second kyng of Scottes made ho-
mage for Scotland and for the erldome of Huntynghdome.

In this meane whyle, kyng Dauid then so
died
To whom Malcolyne, Henries sonne was
heire

Whiche Henry was erle notified
Of Huntynghdon, without any dispayre
Of that erldome, bothe good and fayre
And sonne was, to this noble kyng Dauid
That wedded had, erle Waldens doughter onely

To entoy the erldome, by her enheritaunce
That gat on her, this Malcolyne that was kyng
Of Scotland now, of mighty hye puyssaunce
That homage made for his enherityng
Unto Henry, that then was of England kyng
For al Scotland, and also for Huntynghdon
Whiche seruices both, were due vnto the crowne.

Hommage
of the
Scottes.

The. Cxxi. Chapter.

This

This kyng Henry exiled Thomas Becket bishop of
Caunterbury.

He married then his sonne the yong Henry.
To the doughter of the kyng of Fraunce
He exiled then, Thomas of Caunterbury
Out of England, and many of his aliaunce
for cause of his rebellious gouernaunce
And as he came fro Rome, by Fraunce away
With language fel, he praised the kyng that day

The pointes to mende, and so to England went
for whiche the kyng, was with him sore displeased
That then he sayd, had I had men that ment
Myne honcstee, I were not thus diseased
With suche a clerke, thus greued and bneased
Therfore thre knightes, Raynolde le Fitz Urly
Hugh Moruyle him slewe with Robert Tracy.

Raynolde
Fitz Urly
Hugh
Moruyle
Robert
Tracy.

But kyng Malcolyne died, that was ful true
Of his homage, at Westchester cusealed
To kyng Henry done, so as it was due
For it should not be gainsayd ne concealed
Nor afterward of Scottes be repeled
To whiche Malcolyne, Willpam his sone & heyr
Was crowned kyng of Scotland then full fayr.

Homage
of the
Scottes.

The. C. xxxii. chapter.

Howe kyng Willpam of Scotland went into Norman-
dy, with kyng Henry of England the second, as his liege-
man.

Subiecti-
on of the
Scottes.

Kyng Henry.



His kyng Willjam then rode with host
ful strong

The Northren lande he byent and soze
destroyed

By east and west, of Bothe marches of England
The lorde Vesty, with it was anoyed

The lorde Unfreuile with sickenelle so accloyed
With power great at Aluwyke with him faught
Where he was taken, in battaile soze and caught.

¶ Whō to the kyng, to Lōdon then they brought
bnto kyng Henry, with great honoure

Then had the kyng, tidynges he liked nought

His sonne Henry, by kyng Lewes succour

Besieged Roan, with host great and rigoure

For when the kyng, to Normandy then went

The kyng Willjam, with him his labour spent

¶ And David also, his brother with al his might

That erle was then, created of Huntynghdon

And Robert ferrers erle of Leicester so hight

And Roger Clare, with them of great renounie

Of Gloucester, that erle was in possession

With other lordes, and siege lone remeued

And his cytee of Roan, fulwel rescued.

¶ The siege and saute, pardoned and forgeuen

At the praier of kyng Lewes of fraunce

With in fewe yeres, in peace and rest to liuen

He crowned his sonne without distaunce

Kyng of England, and gaue him gouernaunce

And at the feast of his coronation

He sewed afoze him, for his consolacion.

The

The. C. xxxiii. chapter.

This yonger Henry reigned but. iiii. yeres, and died before his father, wherfore he is not accepted as king because his father outliued him and reigned after his death.

Ad to him sayd, sonne thinke I do you ho-
 A kyng to serue you thus, nowe at (nowe
 your meate

He answered him ful vnthankefully that houre
 And sayd, it was no reproue ne forfete
 In erls sonne to serue the kynges sonne at meate
 For whiche the father Henry, to Ireland went
 Tyl yong Henry the kyng was dead and spent.

Then came Henry, and had the gouernement
 The father and kyng, was then admytte againe
 And reigned then, and had the regiment
 And but. iiii. yere his sonne reigned soth to sayen
 Wherfore he is among kynges certayne
 Not accompted, by no chronicler
 For his father was kyng afore and after clere.

The. C. xxxiiii. Chapter

Howe kyng Willjam of Scotland made his homage to
 kyng Henry the second.

The kyng Willjam, at his day assigned
 To Yorke came, to do there his homage
 That made it then, & nothyng it repugned
 But for his due dette, then for his heritage
 Of Scotland whole, by very due knowledge
 Of his barons, and by his euidence
 Againe it found he then, no true defence

Homage
 of the
 Scottes.

The

Kyng Henry.

22 The kyng Henry then, cōquered al Ireland
By papal dome, there of his royaltee
The profites and reuenues of the land
The dominacion, and the soueraignete
For errour whiche againe the spiritualtee
They helde ful long, and would not bene correct
Of heresies, with whiche they were infect

¶ He founded then, the priory of Newstede
Within Shyrwyd, and Walham founded newe
Afoze were secular without hede
Whiche regular he made in ordre due
And other two houses of order true
He founded there, for his soule to pray
Where was holy seruike kept every day.

1 Geoffrey his sonne, the third gotten and boze
That duke of Britayne was hole create
By his wiues right, to enioy for eucrinoze
Whiche was a prince, of royal great estate
At Parys died, that Arthure create
To sonne and heyre, and Isabel the sayre
His doughter was without any dispayre

22 In the yere of Christ, a thousand clere
An hundreth and sixty also and one
Baudwyn the third, died taken prisoner
By the Sarpsens, that were his mortal fone
Of his body, that ysue then had none
To whom his brother Almarike did succede
To Jerusalem, and there was kyng in dede

22 By treason of therle Triples then

The

The Christen host, that had foule betrayed
 When Baudwyn was so take, through that false
 That great people of christen had then reiled man
 And on the felde, nothyng to be praised
 To the Sarysens went, with al his power
 And discomfyte there chysten host ful clere.

The. C. xxxv. Chapiter.

Howe Gessrey Plantagenet, othertwyle called Planta-
 genet earle of Angeou, elder brother of Baudwyn and Al-
 marik, should haue bene kyng of Ierusalem afore, and so by
 consequens this kyng Henry should haue be kyng of it.

But yf right, had lynally procede
 Gessrey Plantagenet, erle of Angeou
 The elder brother of Baudwyn so in dede
 And of Almarik, with mykel blyste and ioy
 Whiche Gessrey, so erle of Angeou
 Should haue be kyng afore of al that realme
 Bothe of Surry, and also Ierusalem

When duke Robert, Ierusalem forsoke
 For Couetyse to haue, and ioyse England
 Godfrey Boleine, the realme of Surry toke
 And of Ierusalem eke, I vnderstand
 And crowned was, to be kyng of that land
 That duke had bene afore, of al Loueyne
 A noble pryncce, and a worthy Chieftaine.

A thousand was, an hundreth sixty & sixtene
 Without yssue, of his body comyng
 Died, to whom his brother as was sene
 Baudwyn succeeded, and of that realme was kyng
 That

Kyng Henry

That ruled the land, as was ful wel semyng
ful worthy accompted, among all estates
That chrysten faith susteined, without debates

To whom his sonne, kyng Baudewyn did succede
The second was, that had so borne that name
A noble pryncce, of all marcyal dede
And in that land, great honour had and fame
Whiche on his wyfe, gat without blame
A doughter then had vnto his heyre
That land to haue enherite, and repayre.

Whom then erle Fouke of Angeou, wed to wyfe
And kyng was of that land then by her right
On whom he gat thre sonnes in his lyfe
Worthy knightes, and men of great might
The eldest Geffray Plantagenet hight
That gat this same Henry fitz Empryse
Kyng of England, of noble and hys enterpryse.

The.ii. sonne of Fouke, was Baudewyn the thirde
Died prisioner, as it is expressed afore
Without yssue of his body betyd
The thirde sonne then, of Fouke and last was bore
Nicht Almarik, whiche two were kynges thore
Where erle Geffray their elder brother had right
That suffered them, to loy that land by might

Whiche Almarik dyed kyng so of that realme
After whom then reigned, his sonne Baudewyn
That fourth was of that name of Perlam
That impotent was without medecyn
To maintayne warre, he might nomore enclayne

Who called was Baudewyn Paraliticus
 For with the palsy, stricken was ful hydeous

The. C. xxxvii. Chapter.

Howe that kyng Henry the second was very deye of Je-
 rusalem, and by consequens, Richard of Yorke shoulde be
 the same.

Wherfoze he set to kyng Henry his croune
 His banner also, of his armes ful faire
 Of Jerusale, & were of great renowne
 As to him that was the the very heyre
 Of erle Gestrup eldest sonne ful sayre
 Was to kyng fowke, and to his wife the quene
 Doughter and heyre, to Baudewyn the secod clene

This fourth Baudewyn called Paraliticus
 This message sent, the yere of Chyist a thousand
 An hundredeth ful, foure scoze and thye, right thus
 When Henry was requyred, to haue the land
 Whiche he prouged, and sent agayne his sound
 He shoulde be there, if that the kyng of fraunce
 And he might wel accorde of gouernaunce.

He went so furth anone to Normandys
 With host ful great, with kyng Philip to treate
 Of that voyage and warre, accorded on hye
 But then the death, him felly ganne reherte
 Wherfoze anone, he satte vp in his seate
 And to his sonne Richard, great somme he gaue
 Thether to go, that holy land to saue.

And then he died, at Mount Cuerrarde buried
 The

The sorow of heart, and great contricion
A prince chylde, ful notified
Without pere in all comparison
Of worthy knighted, and many knowne
A thousand yere, an C. lxx. and fourtene
And of his reigne, was sixe & thirty clene

The. C. xxxvii. chapter.

Thomas Richard King of England, Duke of Normandy, &
Earle of Angouleme reigned .x. yere, and began the yere of his
reign an C. lxxviii. and died the yere a cc. and viii.

King Ric-
hard the
first, cal-
led Cur-
de Lion.

Richard his sone, to king the was crowned
By Baudouyn archebishop and primate
Of Cantorbury, and of England that stonde
That ruled the church, then by lawe ordinate
His brother Gessay, of baste so pcreate
Archebishop was of York, then newe electe
The Northen church, under him to be protecte.

The lord Lucye, that Godfray Lucye hight
Afore him bare a royal pplyon
And John Marshal, his spores of gold ful bright
William Maundeulle, his mighty hye crowne
That erle was then of Almarle by and doun
Of his wyues right, & William Marshal holde
Erle of Strigyl, the scepter bare of golde

William Patrike, that was then Longspee
That erle was, then create of Salisburp
A staffe of golde, for constable then was he
Of England, hole, to haue the regeny
By right of his office of constabyl

for the land mete boide, & none heye knowe
To kepe the realme, by his office him alse

¶ This ylike William, was erle also create
Of Gloucester, by whiche that offyce grewe
To him of right, for he was generate
Of Robert Clare erle of Gloucester true
foure Barons bare by their seruice full due
Aboide his head, then in procession
A clothe of gold, by good direction.

¶ Earle Dauid then, that tyme of Huntingdon
Brother of the kyng William of Scotland
And John the erle of Morten of renounce
Kyng Richardes brother, as I vnderstand
Right worthy lordes, that tyme of this land
And Robert ferrers, erle of Lecester the
Thre swordes bare, afore the kyng there so

Syre erles then, and Barons of estate
A cheker bare, with Juels ful royal
And clothes riche, that were wel ordinate
for that ylike feast, and stait imperpal
fro South, vnto the Septentrional
Where then, none suche accompted of richesse
As there were then, as written is expresse.

The Cxxxviii. Chapter.

¶ Both kyng William of Scotland made homage for Scotland, and then after his coronacion at Westminster, he wote to Fraunce, and so to Jerusalem, by the assent of the kyng Philip.

The

Kyng Richard

Homage
of the
Scottes.

The bishop of Duresme on his right hand
The bishop also of Bath on his left syde
The kyng of Scottes Willm for Scotland
Hade his homage and feaute leege that tyme
Kyng Rycharde then, to Fraunce with muche pryde
Anone so podye tharchebishop Baudwyne
With him then went, worthy clerkes and fyne

20 Sye Rauf fulgence erle of Berche then also
Robert ferrers erle of Lecester then
With erles fel and barons many moo
Of all this land, went many a worthy then
Of England and Scotland many a man
Of Ireland, Wales, Guyan and Normandye
Then with him went, in that voyage on hys

20 Then kyng Philip, shipped his hoost at Jene
And kyng Richard toke the sea at Harfyle
With all his hoost, without other meane
Within short tyme, arrived by in Cisile
Where he ful fayre, receiued was that while
By king Tancred sonne of William
Whiche Willm wed his syster, John by name

20 The kyng Rycharde, two Isles there cōquered
By side Cisile, to his syster then gaue
To her luyng, and bad her not be feared
For he should be her dowre, she should haue
Longyng to the right that she should craue
And at Meschyne, kyng Richard then did make
A Bastel strong, the Saracyns for to wake.

20 And sailed furth to Ciprys then by sea

Where

Where his mother him mete with dame Barnage
 The kyng his doughter of Hauerne fayre and fre
 Whom there he wed, in laweful mariage
 At Lymosyn in his pilgrymage
 A cytee great ful of all abundaunce
 Whiche by assaut, he gate by his puyssaunce.

The kyng Richard rode then to Richosie
 And gate the cytee, with force and might
 The cytee also of Cheryn mightely
 Where his doughter and heyre, he toke full right
 To Buffenet and Basse that were ful wight
 To Dendamour and Candoz his citees
 He went anone with great felicitees

He gat them al, and al the realme thzoughout
 And toke the kyng Isaak and him slewe
 And wed his doughter, vnto the kyng ful stout
 Of Jerusalem, whose wyfe was dead then newe
 That Sibel hight, that doughter was men knew
 Of Almarike, kyng of Jerusalem
 The brother of Gessrey, of Angeou her cme

This kyng Richard, the realme of Cipzis wan
 To whom the lordes, echeone dyd their homage
 And anone by sea, with many a man
 To Acres where in that like voyage
 He toke a shyp of high and great auauntage
 Of abilymentes for warre, and ordinaunce
 The whiche he had, with him gouernaunce.

But fiftene Sarisyns there he dreincte
 And two hundzeth he kept, that ship to gnie

Kyng Richard

To Acres then, where kyng Philip ful feynt
Had sieged long without remedye
But kyng Richard, of Acres toke in hys
The stronger lyde, and gaue it great assaies
Late and erly bothe by nightes and dayes.

And he gatte it sone, with his great ordinaunce
And on the walles his baners ful hys set
The kynges armes, he set vp also of fraunce
And kyng Guyes armes of Jerusalem wel bet
The dukes of Distriche Lyncold without let
Set vp his armes after aboue them al
Which kyng Richard, did cast doune ouer the wal

And With wages great, riches manyfold
He ryched his men, & rode throughtout al Surry
The cyties al and castles that he would
He gatte with force, and came agayn in hys
To castel Bilgrym, whiche kyng Philip plainly
Besieged had ful long, and went his way
Whiche Richard besieged in great aray.

And To the whiche there was, no way but one full
On a causey with dykes depe and wyde (strayte
Strongly walled, with towres on to wayte
With many drawe bridges, where none might go
Strongly cheined, w barres on eche syde (ne ryde
Whiche castle then he gat in dayes ten
With battail soze, where he sleugh many men

The cheynes of prone, he strocke vp with his arc
Bothe at Acres and at castel Bilgrym
And bzent them al, as they had bene of ware
Cheynes

Cheynes and barres, with muche might that tyme
 The Sarasyns also, he slewe with muche gryne
 The kyng Philp fell sicke and home would gone
 To fraunce anone, and toke his men echeone.

¶ Unto the duke of Burgoyne them to lede
 To byde for him, vpon the warres there
 And home so went to fraunce without dycde
 Where then he made great warre and muche dere
 In Normandy and Guyan, foully him bere
 Against his othe, and his great assuraunce
 At their passage, by couenaunt and concoꝝdaunce

The. C. xxxix. chapter.

¶ Howe kyng Richard solde the realme of Cipres to Statyn-
 once, and another tyme to the kyng Guye Lizinaunt to
 resorte to him and to his heyres, in defaute of issue of them.

HE sold Cipresse to kyng Statyn of might
 Another tyme to Guy Lizenaunt ful bold
 For great riches, the resort again of right
 And for great sommes of innumerable of Gold
 His prisoners he raunsomed, soze and sold
 But with his host, ful wel he distribute
 All that he gat, vnto their great refute

¶ Toppen he gat and it repayzed newe
 He and the duke of Burgoyne ful soze sought
 On the Soudan and felly dyd pursue
 To castel Assure, fro whence he fled vnfought
 But kyng Rycharde, that of no peril rought
 Was hurt right there, with dartes venemous

Kyng Richard

fyue woundes soze, mortal and perillous.

¶ They droue him then, into Ierusalem
And layde a siege, aboute the cytee rounde
And kyng Richard heard, howe fro Egypt realme
Came strong vitaille, riches in that stound
With ful great hoost, the chrissten to confound
By night he came, and there them discomfite
With worship great, and farre passyng profite

¶ Gase he buylded ful fayre, and Ascaloyne
To the templers, to whom afore they longed
He deliuered, and made him redy boun
For to assaile the cyttee, and haue fongid
With might of men, and ladders ful well honged
Engynes and gonnes, great stones for to cast
Whiche to haue wonne, they were ful like at last.

¶ The Soudan out by night, then stole away
And chrissten men, the cytee gatte anone
And kyng Richard with al his host that day
Toke to the flum of Cedar on his soon
He folowed fast, with hoost as he might goon
With the Soudan faught, & put him fro the feld
And mightely fro him he rest his sheld

The. C. xl. Chapter.

¶ Howe the Soudan toke a truce with kyng Rycharde, after he had put him to flight and wonne his citee and castles in Surry. Kyng Rycharde gaue Ierusalem and the realme of Surry, to his sisters soune Hemye earle of Campanya, with the heyre Sibyl to his wyfe, and homewarde was taken prisoner in Distriche, but in his gift of Surry and Ierusalem, he reserued the resort to him and to his heires.

The



He Soudan toke a truce with king Ri-
chard

For thre yere whole to bye all marcha-
dise

And sel and passe safely thitherwarde
To the sepulchre, in all maner wyse
With entercomen, as then it dyd suffice
And home he went, for cause of his brother John
Then purposed had, for to be crowned anon

He sent his mother, and wyfe to Cilile
And of Acres he made then captain
The baron bolde sir Rycharde Umfreuile,
Jerusalem to Henry erle of Champain
With all Surry to haue and to demain
And made him kyng therof without delay
For his systers sone he was without nay.

For the Marques Wyllyam Mountferrate
That kyng therof was, by his wyfe enherite
Was slaine in Tyre, his cytee by debate
All sodeynly for cause of great dispite
Vitulo de Mount, his brothers death to quite
His brethren two to Tyre, with power hath sent
That slewe him there, by Vitulo his assent.

Whose wyfe he gaue, to Henry his cosyn
For she was heyre of Jerusalem
He made keepers, in euery place ful fyne
And homeward came, then by the sea streame
Costyng by diuerse countres and realme
To Romany Tuskan and Lumbardye
In to Distriche, and there was take in hys

Kyng Richard

The mperour led home, then to Welske he brought
In strong ward brought, to tyme that his finauce
Was fully payed, among his comons and sought
Of holy church, vnto ful great greuaunce
The marchautes also, then made great chevisaunce
Of al the shynes, was take ful great riches
Throug al England, to raunsome with his high-

And home he came, and John his brother cha-
And his fautors, enprisoned al ful soze (nes
To Normandy then went, and there surprised
The kyng Philip, and werred him cuer thore
That stroyed his land of Normandy afoze
Against his othe, and his hys assurance
Whylest he laboured vpon misereauunce

He then appealed the kyng Philip to fight
They two alone, hand for hand in feld
That he was false of his promise and hight
Whiche kyng Philip graunted, but not it held
But cowardly, with royal host him beld
Upon him came, al sodeynly to fight
Within thre daies then, for their brothers right

Beside Gylours they faught with hostes soze
Where kyng Richard had the victorie
Kyng Philip fled fro his baner thore
With muche shame, reprofe and vilanie
Kyng Richard sieged a castel then in hys
That Caluce hight, not ferre fro Lyncolne
Where hurt he was, ful soze and died fyne

An arblast with a quarel him smot

As he aboute the castle went to spye
But then he made therto a saute ful hote
On eucry syde, about ful cruelly
And gat the place so then ful mightely
And slewe them all, without any grace
Againe him so that holden had, that strong place;

¶ He shoue him then, vnto abbots thre
With great sobbyng, and hys contricion
And wepyng teares, that pitee was to see
Wekely askyng penaunce and absolucion
That it might please God, at his petition
To forgeue his offences tyl doonidday
So afterwarde in blysse, he might bene ay

¶ He quethed his corps, then to be buried
At fount Euerard, there at his fathers scete
To whom he graunted, and made it notified
Traytour he was, and false to his behete
His heart inuyncible, to Roan he sent ful mete
For their great trueth & stedfast great constauce
His bowelles lose to, for deceyuaunce

¶ Whose soule, from the body dyd departe
And into heauen went, where as is eternal ioy
Because from synne, he dyd conuerte
Longyng for that blessed day
To see Christ, that for his synne dyd pay
That crucified was vpon the roode
Redemyng his synne, by the shedyng his bloode;

And of his reigne, he died the .x. yere
And in the yere of Christes incarnation

Kyng John.

A thousand hole, two hundreth and .iiii. clere
As wrytten is, by clere computation
Who in his life had hole dominacion
In Normandy, Guyen, Cypers and Surry
Whose honoure shone, aboue al other clerely

The. C.xli. Chapter.

John kyng of England, duke of Normandy and Guyen
and erle of Angeou, began to reigne the yere M.CC. & .iiii.
and reigned .xvii. yere and died the yere. M.CC. xxi.

John kyng
of Englad

His brother John, was kyng then of En
gland
And crowned was, at Westmynster full
sayre

By all estates and lordes of his land
And sone thereafter deuorced, ful vnsayre
From his wife wedded, that there afoze was heyre
Unto therle of Gloucester ful wyle
That sonnes had, that tyme of great enterpryse.

For cause of whiche, and of consanguinitie
Deuorce was made, and toke another wyfe
Dame Isabel, therles doughter sayre and free
Of England, and his heyre knowen ryfe
Whiche after made him ful great warre & stryfe
For she was wyfe, of Hugh Bryne of Coreyn
The Viscount then, toke fro him a virgyne.

Wherefore Hugh Bryne, nomore of him wolde
But warred him, on euery syde about (holde
Tyl he him toke, with other manyfolde
And slewe them all, were they neuer so stout

In

In his fyrst yere, a tare he toke ful out
Of eche plough land thre shyllinges full payed
For whiche the people bitterly for him prayed.

The. C. xlii. chapiter.

Howe kyng Willpam of Scotland dyd homage hege to
kyng John at Lyncolne, the duke Arthure of Britayne and
all the lordes of Irelande dyd the same.

In his fyrst yere, kyng Willpā of Scotlād
Made his homage, in Lyncolne his citee
And Arthure duke of Britayne, I vnder-
Stode after, made his homage and feautee (stand
At London then, with great humilitee
The prince of Wales, there made his homage
For Wales then, that was his heritage

Homage
of the
Scottes.

The great Ouele, and Makmurre also
And al the lordes, and kynges of Ireland
Charles also of Ulster, dyd right so
Of Oymond and Desmond, for their lande
And all estates there, as I vnderstande
Were sworne to him, and to him did homage
For their lyuelodes, and their heritage

Homage
of the Ir-
ishmen.

The kyng Philip confedered with Arthure
To rebel soze, againe his eme kyng John
And graunt him men, and power strong and sure
To get Guyon Poytou and Angcou anone
Wherfore kyng John to Normandy gan gone
And there he toke Arthure duke of Britayn
In castle Mirable dyed, in mykel payne.

Dame Isabel the syster also of Arthure

In

Kyng John.

In the castel of Bristowe, was then holde
And died there in prison, then ful sure
As kyng John her vnkle, so it would
A lady of great beautie, she was hold
Beset in prison, in paines strong
So endeth her life, for sorowc liued not long

Thus slewe he bothe, Arthure and Isabel
The children of his brother, duke Gessrey
To toy the croune of England, as men tel
Wherfore most part, of al his landes that day
Beyond the sea, forsoke him then for ay
Returnyng to the kyng of Fraunce in hys
To holde of him and his perpetually.

Byshop hubert of Cantorbury tho died
Wherfore kyng John, vnto the couent sent
To chole his clerke, whiche they refused & denyed
Wherfore the kyng, was wroth in his content
For they disobeyed the letter, whiche he sent
For they had chosen master Stephyn Langton
An worthy clerke of al disposicion

The pite-
ous & la-
mentable
storye of
king John
who by
Romishe
bishop &
his adhe-
rentes was
most sham-
fully & vi-
lanously
abused, as
by this hi-
story doth
appare.

Whom kyng John would not admytte
For Romayn bul, ne for the prelates praiser
But prisoned some, and some to death comytte
Some he exiled and their eyen clere
And al parsons and prelates in fere
He then put out and seized their benefice
Throug al the land, as his mortal enemies

The Romishe bishop cursed him openly
And al the realme fully dyd enterdyte

That

That sacramentes none in them should occuppe
And to the kyng of Fraunce, without respite
He wrote his letters so ful fayre endite
To take England hole in gouernaunce
For kyng John his great misgouernaunce.

Many erles also and many great barons
Unto the kyng of Fraunce, wrote openly
To sende his sonne Lewes, the rebellions
To helpe, to whom they promised likerly
To croune him kyng of England worthely
If that kyng John, would not his trespasse amed
Unto the churche, in whiche he had offende.

Wherfore the kyng of Fraunce, to Englād sent
His sonne Lewes, with host and power strong
With whom many lordes susteyned his entent
And other some, mainteyned king John in wrong
Thus stode this land England and Wales long
Hole enterdite, from al holy sacramentes
That none was done without priuelegementes

Lewes the sonne, of kyng Philip of Fraunce
Had castelles, fecs, and cytees many one
At his good rule, and ful wylse gouernaunce
In England then, wel mo, than had kyng John
Tyl on a day, to lordes he made his mone
By whose couisel, vnto þe Romishe bishop he wrote
His letters meke, as best he could them note

Besekyng him of mercy, and of grace
Of forgeuenes and absolucion
His fautes al to amend, and his trespasse

And

Kyng John.

And vnderguage al his puniſſon
For to releaſe thenterdiction
For whiche the Romiſhe biſhop as he þ letters ſee
Wept ſore, hauyng ful great pitee

And Thenterdiction fully he releaſed
And to the kyng of Fraunce, anone ſent
To ceaſe the warre, the peace to be increaſed
Betwene him, and kyng John by aſſent
To whiche he would, put ſo al his entent
To Lewes then, he ſent the ſame meſſage
And of England, to haue his hole coſtage

And for Lewes, with lordes of England
Obeyed not the biſhoppes cōmaundement
He ſent Gwalo his legate I vnderſtand
To curſſe Lewes, and al of his aſſent
Then dyed kyng John, in chriſten hole entent
At Croxton abbey, and buried was ful fayre
At Worceſter, with lordes and great repayre.

Some bokes ſayen, he poiſoned was to dead
Of plummes ſo ſittyng at his meate
In thabbey of Cisteus at Swynſhead
With whiche a monke, there him dyd rehet
Wenying of God great thanke to get
At Newerke dyed, at Worceſter ſepultured
In chronicles, as it is plainly ſcriptured

He gat a ſōne, that Hery of Wyncheſter hight
Another after, and Rycharde was his name
That erle was of Cornewaple, of great might
A worthy knight, and of right noble fame

This

These sonnes on his wyfe, that noble dame
And gat Isabel, the wyfe of Frederike
Emperoure of Rome, a loyde ful politik

In his tymes were these earles of England
Geffrey Maundeuille, erle of Essex than
Sy? Quincy, as I can vnderstand
Erle of Winchester, that was a manly man
And the erle of Cornewayle that was than
Roger of Clare, then erle of Gloucester
That in England was, none his better.

Roger Bygot, erle of Northfolke then
That Marshall was, that tyme of England
Henry Bowne, then erle of Herforde, as I can
Conceyue was then, Constable of the land
A right worthy knight, of his hand
And David, then was of Hunteyngdon
Willyam Marshal, erle of Penbroke ful boon

Randolf of Chester, the erle of good estate
Robert Ueer of Orenforde ful wyse
Willyam Groos, of Almarik generate
Willyam Longspee, erle then of great enterpryse
In actes marcial, a man knightly and wyse
Of Salysbury, a mighty lord that day
Throug al England, knowen of great aray.

Willyam, the erle of Arundel that hight
Awbeny by his surname, ful wel then knowe
At Wimondham, in Northfolke buried right
father was of Philip, ful yong vnknewe
That ful curteous was, both to hye and lowe
That

Kyng Henry

That after him was erle of Arundel
As chronicles wryten, can clerely tel

And This kyng John dyed in whole cresaunce
The yere of Christ, a .M. was then knowe
Two hundredeth. xxi. by remembraunce
In chronicles, as I haue red and sawe
And ful cumberous, bothe to hye and lawe
At Worcester, buried in good aray
As a prince royal, of reason ought that day.

The. C. xliii. Chapiter.

Henry the thirde, kyng of England, duke of Normandy
and Guyen, and erle of Angeou, that beganne to reigne the
yere of Christ, a .M. CC. xxi. and died in the yere, a .M. CC.
lxxiii. and of his reigne the. lvi. yere.

In his tyme was a battail at Lyncolne, where erle Ran-
dolf of Chester discomfited Lewes the sonne of kyng Philip
of Fraunce.

King Hen-
ry the third.



Henry his sonne, then was of. ix. yere age
At Gloucester, crowned with þe diademe
By the Legate Gualo, & the Baronage
Stephyn of Langton, helppng as did
wel seme

Archbishop then, as the bishop could deme
The same yere then, the kyng with Lewes faught
Besyde Lyncolne, where Lewes was nere caught

Four C. knightes, of Lewes there was slaine
The erle of Berche, was slaine on Lewes syde
And many fled, with Lewes soth againe
The erle Randolf, of Chester knownen wyde
The felde there gat, that day with mikel pryde

And

And Lewes then, al his right relefed
And home he went, with mony wel appefed.

In the second yere, he wedded Eliano?
Therles doughter of Brouynce, good and fayre
Whose elder sister, kyng Lewes wed afore
This erle was then, famed among repayre
The noblest pryncce, without any dispayre
That tyme aliue, throug al chrestente
Of all honoure, and great nobilite

And John, the sonne of Dauyd of Hūtyngdon
That of Hūtyngdon, and Chester erle had bene
Without childe died, his erldome to the croune
Then seased were, to tyme that it was scne
Howe his systers might them depart betwene
The parliament graūted the wardes to the kyng
That helde of him, by knyghtes seruice doyng.

To make statutes at Orenforde & ordinaunce
By whiche, there shoulde none aliencie enherite
And put the kyng vnder in gouernaunce
Of certayne lordes, wysest and most perfyte
Whiche after made among them great dyspyte
And battailes strong, and great contrariaunce
Throug all the land, by long continuaunce

The. C. xliiii. Chapter.

Of the byrth of Edward his eldest sonne and heyre, was
in the. xxix. yere of his father, and in the yere of Christ M.
CC. xxix. Howe Symonde Mountforte erle of Lecestre
was create.

His

Hys eldest sone, a heyre that Edward hight
At Westmynster, of Chyestes incarnation
The yere a M. CC. ix. and. xxx. right.
Whom the legate Otho by information
Baptized in font, saint Edmondes confirmation
To him then made, as the churche deuised
In his baptisme holy, then auctorysed.

Symond the sonne, of erle Symond Mountfort
Came out of fraunce, for ferdenesse of the quene
To kyng Henry, whom he gaue great comferte
He gaue him then his name for ay to bene
Of Leycester, the erledome fayre and clene
With the Stewardes of England in heritage
Whiche is an office, of great priuilege.

And wed his doughter, dame Elianore
To Willjam Marshal, erle of Penbroke
After whose death, she auowed chastitee for euer
But he her married, and her betoke (more
For al her bowe, as saith the boke
To erle Symond Mountfort to be his wyfe
Notwithstādyng, that she bowed chastitee her life

Tho died Lewlyn, the prince of Wales then
Betwene his sonnes Gysfith, and Dauid grewe
Great discencion and stryfe ay, when and when
And dame Beatryce, the kynges doughter true
To erle Symond, of Britayne wedded newe
The yere of Chyist, a thousand was accompted
Two hundreth moo, forty and one amounted.

The birth of Edmond erle of Lancaster and of Lecester, lxx after in the yere of his father one and thirty and in the yere of Chyriste. M. CC. xii.



He same yere then, Edmonde his sonne was boze

At Lacaſtre the yere of Chyſt then writē A thousand whole, twoo. C. & fourty mo

And one thereto, in Flores as is wrytten

And in the yere nexte after then ouerſetten

The kynges daughter, Margaret then married

To Alexaunder kyng of Scotlande notified

At York citee, where he then did homage foꝝ Scotlande whole, and ſhes apperteignyng

Homage of
ſ Scottes.

Then died the emperoure full ſage

Wherefoꝝ the lordes of Almaigne varyng

Some choſe Richard, kyng Heries brother beyng

And ſome the kyng of Caſtile would haue algate

But erle Richard of Genſke had all the ſtate.

Then roſe diſcoꝝde, betwene the kyng Henry And certain lordes of mighty greate power

Battaill of
Lewes.

Simonde Mountfoꝝde, vpon hym tooke boldely

To bee chieftain, to holde the felde full clere

At Lewes faught of Chyſte was the yere

A thousande twoo hundred and ſixty accompted

And foure alſo, ſo muche moꝝe amounted.

This erle Simonde, had then the kyng Henry

And his brother, Richard the emperoure

In his keepyng and warde, wer hold ſtrongly

But pꝛince Edward, was ſette in Herfoꝝd toure

And erle Henry of Herfoꝝd that was floure

b. i.

The emperours

King Henry

Emperours sonne, at Herford with hym late
A mile aboute, dispozted theim euery daie.

The battaill of
Evesham.

And fro whence at last, with horse thei brake awaie
And to Wigmour castle thei came in hie
To sir Roger Mortimer where he laie
That theim receiued, then full gladly
And so thei assembled with greate hoste manfully
And held the feld, the lordes fast to theim drew
And at Evesham, thei stroke a battaill newe.

And In the yere of Christ, a thousand was the
Two hundred mo, sixty also and fivie
When prince Edward faught with his fo
Simond Mountfort, and raught him fro his liue
The feld discomfited, there anone as bliue
With helpe of erle Gilbert, then called clare
And other lordes with hym that wer thare.

And he slewe many, and some awaie exiled
And some he held in prisone and distres
He tooke out then his father, as is compiled
His sone Richard, holden in greate dures
And all his frendes, of his high worthines
He socoured euer, and with his gold supported
And where it want, with his worde the comforted.

The C. lvi. Chapiter.

How Robert Ferrers erle of Darby was disherite
and many other of their compaignie.

Robert

Robert ferrers, that erle was of Darby
Disherite then, for his insurreccion
With many other at Chester feld in hys
Fought with Edward, of their presumption
And fled awaie, with greate confusion
Unto the Isle of Arholme, and fro thens
Unto Lyncolne, and spoyled the citezens.

From thence to Ely thei went anone
Where prince Edward, thise proudly assailed
Thei fled fro it sone, to Yorkeshire gan gone
In friers clothes, that wer full long tailed
Robbyng their foes, when thei of good failed
And other some to Kilyngworthe then fled
To Henry Hastings, who then the castle had.

Where then the kyng, greate siege laied all a-
But naught auailed, so strongly thei defend (bout
And for there was, in eucry shire throughout
So greate robbery, and nothyng amende
The kyng was fain, for lordes then to sende
By whose aduise, he ordeigned for that case
That all disherite and exiled, should haue grace

All disherite, should by their landes again
To paye for them gold, as thei might accorde
With the owners, so that no manne should payen
More then the lande wer worth, by greate recorde
In seven yere whole, and if thei might conorde
For lesse money, so it excede a yere
The value of the yerely rent full clere.

Robert ferrers erle of Darby then

b. ii.

The

Kyng Henry

The sonnes also, of erle Symond exclude
That perpetuall iudgement fully then
Neuer to redeme their landes, but been exclude
So that the owners, bee not with them dclude
Unto a daie, that fifty thousande pounce
Bee paired of nobles whole and rounde.

Edmond the sonne, of the same kyng Henry
Was wedded firste vnto Dame Aueline
Erle Wyllyam his daughter, of Almarle womaly
None issue had, neither male ne femenine
Then was he wed to Blaunche the quene full fine
Of Hauerne, and so of Lancastre create
With Leicestre also therle denominate.

The. C. xlvii. Chapiter.

How Edward the eldest sonne and heire of king Henry
the thiede, and his brother erle Edmonde of Lanca-
ster and of Leicester went to Hierusalem with greute
power, whiche twoo princes were compted the seme-
liest of all the hoste of Christendome.



Edward, & he associate
To Hierusalem, their boyage then
auowed

Twoo semely princes, together ad-
ioynate

In al þ world, was none the like alo
So large & faire thei wer, eche man he bowed (wed
Edward aboue his menne, was largely sene
By his shoulers moze hie and made full clene.

Edmond nexte hym, the comeliest prince alieue
Not croke backed, ne in no wise disfigured
As some menne wote, the right line to deprive

Throug

Throug greate falshed, made it to bee scriptured
For cause it should alwaie bee refigured
And mencioned well, his issue to preuaill
Unto the crowne, by suche a gouernaill.

20 But prince Edward & he held furth their waie
To Hierusalem, so did the Emperour
Richard his eme, and Henry his sonne full gaie
To Cicile came by sea, throug many a shoure
Edward with hym, then had his wife that houre
Elianour daughter of the kyng of Aragon
A princeesse faire at his election.

20 The kyng Lewes also then thether went
And in his waie died and expired
Saint Lewes now is named by all assent
Of holy church, as it is well enquired
Approued trewe as reason well required
But Edward prince, & Edmond abode twoo yere
With warres greate, and mighty strong power.

20 For nacions all, vnto prince Edward drewe
And to Edmond his brother, for their semelines
And great mahod, whiche in them that thei knewe
Sir Charles, þ brother of kyng Lewes doubtles
Kyng of Cilile of noble worthines
By the Soudan was chased without beld
Whom prince Edward socoured, and had the feld

20 And with the Soudan faught in battaill soze
Discomfit hym, and put hym to the flight
Where Edward then was hurte & wounded thore
Of woundes fiue, that mortall wer to sight

King Henry

His brother Edmond also wounded in that fight
But as Edward in his bed, sicke then laie
A Sarasine came, to hym vpon a daie.

To leche his hurtes, with salues many one
But false he was, for with a knife full soze
He strake hym foule, as thei wer then alone
But yet that prince, the knife fro hym gatte thore
And slewe hym then, with it for euermore
At Acres laie he then, with woundes fele
With medicines, to leche and to hele.

The leche so false, was by the Soudan sent
Hym to haue slain, in any maner wise
For cause he had, discomfite hym and shent
And when he was all whole, that he might rise
His age he had, fro all the lordes wise
Of Englande then, of his fath: ded
That praied hym home to come, & been their hedi.

King Henry had then made, the minster faire
Of Westminster, as it is now at this daie
The remnaunt he left vnto his heire
To edifie and make in like araie
Or els a some of money for to paie
The whiche he graunted to the edificacion
At his death, then bequeth and assignacion.

Edward then, toke a trewe for ten pere
With the Soudan, and to Cilile sailed
And landed at Rome, where the he had good chere
Bothe of the bishop and cardinales not failed
That soze had mourned, and greatly bewailed
That

That cursed soze, sir Guy Mountfotte eche daie
For the slaughter of Henry his coosyn gale.

The sonne that was of Richard the imperour
Erle of Cornewaile, whom at Meterbe he slewe
Right in the church, for old wꝛath and rankour
In Englande dooen, his fathers death to renewe
At masse knelyng horribly hym all to hewe
fro Acres as he came, as goddes knight
Without cause of reason oꝝ of right.

But prince Edward & Edmōd his brother dere
To Sauoy cam, wher iustes wer made & turnamēt
And there desired thei, and their knightes in fete
With the duke of Sauoy, and his there present
To iuste, and proue eche other in good entent
There knightes young, to learne as did suffice
In marciall fete, knighthod to exercise.

Where he for iust, the duke full manly
His brother also, the dukes nephewe
And bare hym doune, bothe hoꝛse and man egerly
And euery knight, with other euer iusted newe
Daie by daie, whiles echeone other knewe
By fourtene daies enduryng and conteigned
With feast solempne, by the duke susteigned.

An hundred ladies, of worthy good estate
Wer set on high, aboue within a tent
By the duke of Sauoy, well ordinate
To geue the gree, and thanke by iudgement
Whiche then awarde, plainly by whole assent
To prince Edward, and erle Edmond his brother

v. iiii.

That

Kyng Henry the thirde.

That had forust the duke and many other.

And the duke hym gaue, giftes of greate honoure
And to his brother, giftes of high pleasaunce
And to his knightes, giftes of greate valoure
And conueighed hym, into the lande of Fraunce
Whereof the kyng with worthy gouernaunce
Receiued he was, as prince full excellent
And homage made to hym, in good intent.

And for his landes, lyng beyond the sea
The whiche was true, as chronicles witnesse
And home he came, with greate felicitie
Of whose comyng, the people had great gladnesse
Hym to receiue, in all kynde of worthinesse
And of his brother Edmond also in fere
Thei wer full glad, at all their whole power

But kyng Henry was gone to God afore
The yere of Christ, a thousand whole accompted
Two hundred whole, sixty and thirtene more
On saint Edmondes daie, when he amounted
This worlde leuyng, full of trouble accompted
Unto the blisse of Heauen, for euer to rest
Among good solles, where Christ so liked best.

The. C. xlviii. Chapter.

How kyng Edward of Englande, the first after the
conquest, called Edward with the long shankes, be-
gan to reigne the morowe after saint Edmondes day
the kyng, in the yere. M. CC. lxxiii. & died in the yere
M. CCC. and. vii. the eight daie of July, & the. xxiii.
yere of his reigne.

Edward



Edward his sonne & heire, first generate
With all honour by all the Baronage
Crouned was, in all royall estate
And of the states, receiued hole homage

Kyng Edward the firste after the conquest.

Kyng Alexander for his heritage
Of Scotlande whole, and isles apperteinyng
His homage did, right then vnto the kyng.

The homage of the king of Scotland to kyng Edward.

The duke also of Britain made homage
For Britain whole, and there became his man
Whiche princes twoo, had wed in mariage
His sisters twoo, Margaret and Beatrice than
Margaret to Scotlande, & Beatrice to Britain
Bothe twoo married, and wed in high estate
By their father full wisely ordinate.

A marchaunt toke the wife of prince Lewlyn
Erle Simonds daughter, of Leicester he had been
And to the kyng her brought full feinenyn
Wherefore the prince, by heste as then was seen
To bee his manne, and homage did full clere
And led his wife to Wales in good entent
By the kynges grace, and by whole assent.

The kyng then, did grete right and iustice
Upon clippers and peirers of the coyne
And newe money made, that then might suffice
Of siluer plate, made out of Boloyn
The grote, half grote, all in newe coyne
He coyned fast, peny, half peny, and ferthyng
For poraill to buye with their leuyng.

That same tyme he made a newe statute

That

Restraint
of lades to
be geuen to
the clergy.

That no manne should graunt lande ne tenement
To the churche, ne geue noz constitute
No maner grounde, noz no maner rent
Without licence, of the lord and his assent
Of whom it is holden, aboue in chief
And els þ churche, this realme had put in mischiefe

20 The prince Lewlin, and of David his brother
Made warre vpon the kyng in greate arae
The Marche bent and many harmes other
In Englande did, wherefore the kyng his waie
To Wales held, in all the haste he maie
The lord Mortimer toke then the prince Lewlyn
And to the kyng hym brought, for to enclyn.

20 The kyng hym hedded, and to the tower it sent
The Walshemen made, David his brother then
Prince of Wales, by their comen assent
Wherefore the kyng, to warre on theim began
And of the Walshemen, slewe full many a man
And had David vnto his presence brought
Hanged and drawen, as then he had it sought.

20 Then seized he Wales, for euer into his hand,
And ordeined, that no pynce therein should bee
But he or els his heire I vnderstande
And that no manne, of Wales whole countree
One night should lye, in castle noz in citee
But vynde out fro sunne to sunne, the euery night
Thus kept he Wales, his tyme by royall might

¶ The. C. xlii. Chapter.

How

How Gladowys Dewi, þ daughter of David, prince
of Wales, was wedded to sir Raufe Mortimer, of
whom came the erles of Marche.



Menlian, the daughter was of Lewlyne
Without childe died, a virgyne aye
In a Nonry, of the ordre of Gylbertine
And Gladowys Dewi, Davids daughter
Young, freshe and lusty, as the rose in Maie (gaie
To Raufe was wed, that was lord Mortimer
Of whom the erles of Marche, become full clere.

Then went the kyng, and quene to Gascoyne
And Gwyan, to set that lande in peace
And so furthe then, he went to Aragon
To spozte them with their father there no leace
To Gwyan then, again for his encrease
He came anone, and set in peace that lande
And so came again to Englande.

The. C. l. Chapter.

How the kyng did atteint his Justices, and sette en-
quiry of peace breakers, rioters, oppressours, extor-
cioners, and of the usury of Jewes.



As iustices all, by lawe he did attainte
For wrong domes, & false iudgement
For coueteous, that false were then
and faint
To help þ poore cōmōs, to their entet
He set Justices in heire by all assent
That called was, that tyme Troilebaston
For to enquire, of all extorcion.

Kyng Edwarde

Of riouters, fighters, and baratours
Of market beters, that raised greate debates
Of peace breakers, and all the lusteynours
That were with theim of priuy associates
Of oppressours, of all the pooze estates
And all that were then founde culpable
Empysoned wer, or by their purse excusable.

Of Jewes within this lande, þ was abidyng
Greate plaintes wer made, of Okoure and vsury
How thei did waste, the folke by suche winnyng
And prey bondes, made without measure
In pain of double, or els forseture
The kyng the voided, for whiche þ church a disme
Hym graunted, so did the commons a quindeceime

His Ap Madoke, a warre in Wales gan take
Again the kyng, that greate warres had susteined
And prince hym called, of Wales without make
Who then at Poike, by lawe full well maintained
On galous hie, as to hym well appartained
Was drawen and hanged, his hed vpo the towre
Was set anone, as rebell and traitoure.

The. C. li. Chapter.

How Edmond erle of Lancastre, and Lecestre, kept Guyā
and wed quene Blaunche of Naverne the kynges sister
of Fraunce, and therefore he bare the labell in his armes
for difference fro the kynges of Englande ever after.



Kyng Edwarde sente, his brother then
full dere
To kepe Guyan, and with hym strong
chivalry

Who

Who gouerned there, that lande without pere
 To high honoure, as made is memoꝝ
 In fraunce soꝛe dyed, among the aduersary
 And other landes, lyng there aboute
 Aboue all menne, he was there moſte bedoute.

20 For cuer he putte theim, to the woꝛſe in felde
 In armes ay, he had the victoꝝ
 And in Paris, at Juſtes vnder ſhelde
 Far paſſyng was, and did ay notably
 That foꝛ his manhod, and famous chivalꝝ
 In ſo ſerfurthe, that all landes hym commende
 Foꝛ his manhod, whiche ſo in hym thei kende

He wed dame Blaunche, of Flaunerne ꝑ was quene
 Kyng Philp ſiſter, that was full good and faire
 Of whom he gatte, Thomas of Lancaſter I wene
 And Henry his brother, that afterward was heire
 And erles bothe, thei were without diſpaire
 Of Lancaſter, and alſo of Leiceſtre
 As Floꝛes hath expreſſed well, by letter.

20 For whiche weddyng, and noble aliance
 He and his heires, bare foꝛ a difference
 Englande armes, with labell whole of fraunce
 By whiche all menne, maie haue intelligence
 That Edmond was younger in exiſtence
 Then kyng Edward, though ſome ſaie ꝑ contrary
 And from the truthe, ꝑet haue thei will to vary.

¶ The. C. lii. Chapiter.

¶ How the ſiue portes, tooke the nauy of fraunce on
 the ſea in battail.

The

Kyng Edward

The kyng of fraunce, a nauy greate
then sente
Upon Englade, to war in greate araie
Whiche the fine Portes tooke on the
sea and shente

And people great, there slewe and dzeint that daie
Their shippes all, by battaill and affraie
Wer take, and brought then into Englande
With capitaines many, and lordes of that lande.

And kyng Philip then, at Paris in parliament
Somond Edward, afoze hym to appere
Submittynge hym, of robbery felonoiement
Upon his flete, so dooen by tymes sere
foz faute of answere, foriudged hym there
Destroyed his lande, in eche place where he might
But kyng Edward, then went to fraunce right.

And gatte again, his landes euerychone
And sought ay where, vpon the kyng of fraunce
But he fled euer, and battaill would geue none
Sone after, so Philip by ordinaunce
A treuce tooke, by good ordinaunce
foz all his landes beyonde the see
To sette in peace, with all tranquillitee.

The. C. liii. Chapter.

How Morgan and Madoke his brother, wer sett in
the tower for rebellion in Wales made by comfort of
kyng Philip of fraunce.

In Wales Morgan made warre & greate
distaunce
And Madoke also, his brother ful vntrew
foz

for whiche the kyng, with all his ordinaunce
To Wales went, and faught with theim all new
At straighes greate, whiche tho traytours knew
Yet wer thei take, and putte in soze prison
Within the tower, for thei rebellion.

¶ The kyng Philip had sent theim gold to war
On England then, with sir Thomas Turbiruile
Who was espied, by subtell meane affar
And heded was anone, for all his guyle
His witte not holpe hym then, ne yet his wyle
He died with shame, reprief and vilany
Engendred all of mede and surquedry.

The. C. liii. Chapiter.

How erle Edmond was leuetenaunt of Guyan, and
warred vpon the kyng of Fraunce, and defied hym
by letter, for he brake the promise made to Edward
his brother kyng of Englande.

In Edmond erle of Lancaster then ful trew
Leuctenaunt the of Guyā, all throughtout
On who the kyng Philip, the rode all new
And brake the treuce, with hostes great and stoute
Wherefore he went to hym without doubt
To se how that, it might bee well defende
He bade hym thus, sette to his knec and amende.

¶ Wherefore in ire, he gaue hym vp homage
The whiche he ought for his lande that he held
And answered hym again, of greate corage
fro thense forwarde, I shall you hold the feld
And at my power, eche daie vnder sheld
Proue how ye dooe vnto my lordc greate wrong
The whiche I shall amend, or it bee long,

And

King Edward

And so departed, without more language
And into Guyan came, with all his might
And to his brother wrote, & made hym knowledge
And bade hym come with power for to fight
With spere and bowe, for other wyte of right
Haie not bee gotte, within the courte of Fraunce
For to recouer, his high enheritaunce,

Each daie thence furthe, with baners whole di.
He held the feld, and king Philip warred (spleyed)
And letters sente hym defialles and vnbayed
Of his suraunce, and othe that he had erred
And castles gatte, full many and not differred
King Edward sente, his brother then suppowail
The frenche party, to warre and assaill.

The. C. lb. Chapter.

How sir Roger Mortimer was made erle of March
at Kilyngworthe, and set the rounde table of a thous-
saunde knyghtes, and as many ladies.



And in the yere a thousand was full then
Two hundred also sixty and nyntene
When sir Roger Mortimer so began
At Kelyngworth, the round table as was
Of a thousande knyghtes, for discipline (sene
Of young menne after he could deuise
Of turnementes, and iustes to exercise.

A thousande ladies, excellyng in beautee
He had there also, in tentes high aboue
The iustes, that thei might well and clerely see
Who iusted best, there for their lady loue

for

For whose beautie, it should the knightes moue
In armes so echeone other to reue
To get a fame in play of chivalry.

¶ This Mortimer, was then lord Mortimer
But in these iustes, he held great feastes eche day
By fortie daies contained whole and clere
At whiche one part of ladies sayre and gay
Gave him the price of fame, of al that play
Wherefore the kyng, to encrease his estate
Proclaymed him erle of Marche there create

The. C. lvi. Chapter.

¶ Botre Edmond erle of Lancaster and of Leicester faught
at Bayon with the power of Fraunce and was slaine there
and sic Willyam Valence erle of Penbroke was dead there
and many other lordes, in the yere M. CC. lxxvi.

But erle Edmonde the kynges brother dere
With twentie & sixe baners, proud & stout
The fifth day of June, was accōpted clere
Of Christ his date a thousand yere all out
foure score and sixtene without doubt
At Bayon faught, with the Frenchemen certaine
Where he in the feld that day, like a knight was
(slaine

¶ Sir Willyā Valence, erle of Penbroke was the
Sir John Richemond and many other baron
Sir John saint John, right a full manly manne
Thenglishe host felly, there was boze doune
By a busshement, layde by collucion
That brake on them, soze fyghtyng in the felde
Out of a wood, in whiche that day were beld.

¶ I. l.

¶ When

Kyng Edward
The. C. lvi. Chapter.

How a chronicle was fained to make Edmond & elder brother



hen John of Gaunt, the sonne of king
Edward
for cause his brother the duke was of
Clarence

None yssue male had then, that men of heard
But female by all intelligence
When kyng Richard in his great excellence
None yssue had, he would haue bene his heyre
Appar aunt then, by act in parliament feyre

The whiche Thomas Wodstocke, duke of Glouc-
And al nobles, of England there present (ceter
Proclaymed then, by writyng and by letter
Howe that thele of Marche, then in parliament
Unto the kyng, was then heyre apparaent
Where duke John in diuers places made
Feined chronicles, that shewed were ful broade

Howe this Edmond thelder sonne of kyng Henry
Broke backed and bowbacked boze
Was vnable to haue the monarche
And Edward so the yonger kyng therfore
Suche chronicles then, he feined ful soze
And put in place, of diuers religion
To make his sonne, right heyre of this region.

But when kyng Henry, this chronicle shewed
It was defect, and clerely set at nought
And vnderfoote cast doune and eke stroied
The contrary by chronicles truely wrought
Was proued true, and then his title he sought

By resignement and renunciacion
By depollale and plaine cozonacion

20 It is not true, that croke backed he hight
For valtaunt he was, in al his doynges
And personable withal, to cuery mans sight
Although false chronicles, haue other saynges
Kynge Alexander of Scotland, then died
That wedded had the kynges syster Margarete
And Alexander his sonne, beyng in the same stede
Who with Margarete his wyfe, on þe sea perished

The C. lxxiii. Chapiter.

C Dowe Floiſce erle of Holand & his pursuers bound him
to byde the iudgemēt of kyng Edward, if he should be king
of Scotland.

If Lorence therle of Holand and his compeers
That claymed then, the croune of Scotland
After the death of Margaret as pursuers
Came to kyng Edward, then of England
Requyring him in God his name al weldand
As he that was, of Scoland souereigne lord
To try the right, and set them in accorde.

For whiche he set at Nozham a parliament
After Easter then next folowynge
In the kirke of Nozham, to that entent
That al Scottes, and other that were pursuyng
Might there appeare, their titles claimyng
At whiche parliament, the pursuantes them bond
At his decree and iudgement to stond

By one letter, with al their seales ensealed

I. ii.

Whiche

Kyng Edward

This was
to kyng
Henry the
fifth.

Whiche doubled was, they gaue vnto the kyng
The other part, for it should not be repeled
They kept with them selves, alway abydyng
Whiche letter, John Harding maker of this boke
To kyng Henry deliuered, & gaue him in recompence
The manoure of Gedyngton, wth al & appurtenance

And for whiche manoure, then the cardinal
Of Wynchester vnto the quene disposed
In her dower and fro him toke it all
When that the kyng, by death was deposed
Him recompence, he promised and composed
But nought he had, but might & price haue lpyed
He durst tol euil, his excellence haue greued.

And Another letter, double in likewyse
The sayd heyres deliuered to the kyng
That other part as should of right suffice
Sembably with them, was remaynyng
By whiche they bound, them selfe by their sealyng
Him to deliuer, the kyng his castles al
To kepe, to time his iudgement were byfal

Of whiche iudgement without possession
Of castles strong throughtout there al the lande
He might not wel done execucion
Wherfore the heyres to him, so ther them bond
Whiche letter also, John Hardyng toke on hand
And dyd deliuer, so then at Boys Vincent
For the sayd rewarde, together by one entent

The. C. lix. chapter.

Howe kyng Edward made sir John Balpoll
kyng of Scotland.

And

AD in the yere of Christes incarnation
 A thousand whole two hundred & four score
 And therto thre by very computacion
 At the feast of saint Michael set afoze
 The kyng Edward to Scotland came therfoze
 Where twenty then, chosen were of England
 And other twenty persons, also of Scotland

By whose advise, al other rightes exclude
 The kyng iudged, to John Bailpol the crowne
 That was discent, as clerely was conclude
 Of the eldest doughter, of Dauid of Huntynghdon
 As chronicles make, therof good mencion
 Margarete wedded to Alewe of Galaway
 whose doughter was kyng Johns mother y day.

That Dernegull hight, & was J. Bailpols wyfe
 whose sone & heyre, kyng John was the crowned
 That Bailpol hight, that knowen was ful ryfe
 In the mynster of Skone, within Scotlād ground
 Sittynge vpon the regal stone ful sound
 As al the kynges, there bled had a afoze
 On saint Andzrewes day, with al ioye therfoze

At Christmas next after, the same kyng John
 To Newcastle, to kyng Edward came
 His homage made, and feautee leege anone
 Of his frewyl, without any blame
 And with great ioy againe retourned hame
 But then the Scottes, chose the. xii. lordes by assēt
 To rule the kyng John, by their entent

Homage
 of the
 Scottes.

The C. lxx. Chapiter.

f. lxx.

Howe

Kyng Edward

Howe kyng John of Scotland, made confederacy with
Fraunce agayn England.

Whiche made him then, to make confederacy
With kyng Philip of Fraunce and aliaunce
Perpetually to be contributorye
Ether with other, by strong and great assuraunce
England to warre, with all their whole puyssaunce
The kyng Edward, seying this hye falshe
To Barwike came, with host and great manhede

At the Nonnes of Barwyke, then he lay
And layde a siege, aboute on euery syde
At after Easter, but flemynge then that day
The Leden hal, there helde ful strong that tyde
Whiche with wild fyre, was bȝet & might not bide
That same night, the sir Willyam Douglas yaloe
Barwike castel, to kyng Edward and salde

The. C. lxi. chapter.

Howe kyng John of Scotland surrendred his homage
to kyng Edward, and disclaymed to holde of him.

In this same tyme. vii. erles of Scotland
Sieged Carleile, and so to Berhain bȝent.
And home again, harmeles out of Englad
They went anone, and none harmes hent
Woꝛke to haue done, was their entent
But then kyng John, surrendred vp his homage
To kyng Edward, for him and his linage.

By letters whiche kyng Edward then sent
To abbeyes great, in England of recoꝛde
To be remembred, of his false entent

Renouncyng

Renoucyng kyng Edward, for his souereigne lord
 The ieuene erles, at Dunbarre by concoꝝde
 Then sieged it, fro whiche erle Patrike went
 And graunted to holde of him at his entent

The. C. lxxii. Chapiter.

Of the battaile of Dunbarre, where that kyng Edward
 preuayled.



Whiche castel so, then the kyng rescowed
 And dꝛoꝛaue the earles, there out of the
 felde

And mucche people vnto the death ther
 howed

Without helpe, there slaine vnder shelde
 To Ronkesburgh, the kyng Edward so helde
 That sone was yelde, to him without stryfe
 Theyꝝ good safe also, and their life

So he forth to Edenburgh went anone
 That yelden was, on the same condicion
 Then was Striuelyn boyde and left alone
 Without defence, oꝝ any garyson
 That Edward toke, into his possession
 Whiche kyng Edward, toke in his power
 And saued the people, bothe farre and nere.

Then came the erle of Ulster with great power
 Of Irishemen, and so to saint Johns towne
 The king then went, w host through syfe ful chet
 And bꝛent þe shire, throughout both vpon & doun
 When then kyng John, by good direction
 To Edward sent, and praied him then of peace
 And to his grace submytte him oꝝ he would cease.

Submyt-
 tion of the
 Scottyshe
 kyng & all
 his lordes
 vnto kyng
 Edward,
 the first.

Kyng Edward

20 Then kyng Edward toke his submissyon
At Bryghyn then, vpon the water of Tay
And gaue him there, his realme without condicion
Of Scotland so, to him and his fo: ay
The lordes al, made him homage that day
The .x. day was of July, and in the yere
Of kyng John then the .iiii. was compted clere

21 And therupon, he sent him to the Towre
Of London then, with certayne rebelles mo
Kyng John he kept, in wo:shyp and honoure
Lyke his estate, where he could ryde o: go
Ten myle aboute, fo: his disport there so
Then kyng Edward, on the mountaynes went
That monthes there be called in their entent.

22 And as he came homeward, by Skone away
The regal there of Scotland then he brought
And sent it forth, to Westmynster fo: ay
To be there in a cheire clenely wrought
Fo: a masse priest to syt in, when he ought
Whiche there was standyng, besyde the shypne
In a cheire, of olde tyme made ful fyne.

Then made the kyng, John Wareyne his regent
That erle was then, of Suffer and Surrey
And treasorer he made, at his entent
Hugh Cressyngham, and Willham Dymesby
The chiefe Justyce, throug Scotland generally
His chaunceler at Skone, and treasorer
Abdyng were, to rule that land ful clere.

Then went kyng John, to Flaunders fo: secoure
Of

Of the dukes of Geldre and Brabant
 And also of the noble Emperoure
 That him had hight, great healpe & succour then
 But none he had, and home againe he went
 For in the meane tyme, while he in Flaunders abode
 Willyam Valoys, all Scotland ouer rode

¶ He slewe the iudge, and the chaunceler
 The officers also, and the chamberleyn
 The capitaynes and the tresorer
 And gat the land, fro Englishemen agayne
 And slewe them al, with cruel death and payne
 Wherefore the kyng, vpon the Maudeleyn day
 At Fowkirke fought, with Scottes in great aray

¶ Where Scottes fled, and fortie M. slaine
 And into fiffes he went, and brent it clene
 And Andrewstoune, he wasted then ful plaine
 And Blakmanshyre and Wenteth as men mene
 And on the ford of Trippour, with host I wene
 To Bothbyle, Glascowe, and to the towne of Ayr
 And so to Lanarke, Loughmaban & Anand thare

¶ Whiche all he had, euer where he came
 And then he wed kyng Philippes syster Marga-
 A fayre lady, and ful of noble fame (rete
 Her sonne and heire, Edward Carnaruan hete
 A mayden wed, kyng Philippes doughter swete
 Whom his father, then prince of Wales create
 Duke of Cornewayle, & erle of Chester nominate,

¶ Then went the kyng to Scotland againe
 And wanne the land, and there in al obeysaunce
 Daupng

Kyng Edwarde

Sauyng Wales, that would not to him obeyn
But fled him euer, for dycaide of mischaunce
He ordeyned then by statute ordinaunce
That none should be, the prince of Wales moze
Except of the kyng, his eldest sonne fyrst boze.

The. C. lxiij. Chapiter.

Howe the bishop of Rome, at the suggestion of the Scot
tes, wrote to kyng Edwarde vnder this fourme.

AD in the yere, a thousand CCC. and one
Byshop Boniface, at þe Scottes suggestiō
To kyng Edwarde, by letter wrote anone
Chargyng him, then vpon his beneson
For to deliuer the Scottes out of prizon
Whiche in England, he had holden by wrong
And his officers call home that there had be long

Alledged al, howe Scotland whole was holde
Of Peter churche of Rome, and nought of him
But by great wrong, and oppression bolde
He them ouer led, with warres sore and byrm
And them compelled, in payne of life and lymme
To become his men, & the realme of him to holde
By homage leege, whether they would or nolde

And bad him also, afore him then appere
At the court of Rome, his right there for to shewe
And if it might beknowe, his right were clere
Without delay, by iudgement iust and true
He should it haue by execucion due
By sensours of their churche and whole sentence
For to obey his high magnificence.

The

The C. lxxiii. Chapter.

Howe kyng Edward wrote againe an answer of his letter

Then kyng Edward, wrote vnto him againe
An answer, by his letters meke and due
All his titles and duties ful playne
Nought in fourme, neuer in effect to sue
No: in his courte, no iudgement to pursue
Remembryng wel, his fatherhede
Howe Brutus had Albion, and did it possede

In hely tyme, whiche to his sonnes deuide
Vnto his sonne Locryne, fyrst propogate
He gaue Logres, that hath this tyde
To Albanacte, the second procreate
He gaue Albany, Scotland nowe denominate
And to Cambre, his yongest sonne he gaue
Cambre, that nowe is Wales, to ioy and haue.

To kyng Locrine, of Logres and to his heires
The souereignte, and homage ay reserued
Of Albanacte and Cambre, and all theirs
Perpetually Troyan lawe obserued
By whiche lawes, Bryton hath bene conserued
With hitherward, without interrupcion
Afore the tyme, that Rome had prescripcion.

Afore the tyme also, that Christ was boze
By many yeres, the kyng of Logres had
Scotland by eschete, for faute of heires thore
And remeued kynges, that were ther known bad
And other kynges there made, with heartes glad
Whiche the lād couth, there gouerne inikel better
And seruice dyd to Logres, ofte by letter.

Also

Kyng Edwarde

Also, the same John Bailpol I made
Kyng of Scotland as lawe and reason wolde
Who made homage, to me with heart ful glad
And afterwarde, was false manyfolde
He stroyed my land with host stoute and bolde
Wherfore I made him warre, tyl he were fayne
To my p[re]sence to come, and him obeyne

Where then fo[r] trespassse, and rebellyon
He surrendred to me, and to my heyres

Howe the
Scottishe
kyng & all
the lordes
of Scot-
land made
homage
vnto kyng
Edward.

The realme of Scotland, and also the crowne
The lordes of al Scotland fo[r] them and theirs
Made me homage fo[r] their proper landes
By their letter wrytten, and their bandes

Wherfore then, haupng therof possession
The pride of my subiectes, and insolence
Where I dyd fynde, their false rebellyon
As right and lawe, would be my regence
I chastised ay, at myne intellygence
Wherfore, please it to your fatherhede
Myne auncient rightes, to haue cōmend in dede.

The. C. lxx. Chapter.

Howe the lordes wrote to the byshoppe of Rome fo[r] the
same cause.

The date was of this letter, M. yere
Thre hundredeth also and one, the. viii. daye of
And of his reigne. xxix. clere (Maye
With that the lordes, in England were that day
By their letter, and the bishop dyd pray
The kynges right, not to put in question
Of eldest tyme, longyng to his crowne

And for in their letter, the bishop they did remeber
 They would not suffer his disherison
 His crowne so foule to hurt, and dismembze
 His royaltie to put in question
 For desire of his rebels false suggestion
 The whiche rightes, for death or life mainteyne
 They were so bound, they could none other meane

So scared the bishop, and the matter let
 And kyng Edward then, into Scotland went
 Through al Catnesse, destroyed it in great hete
 The mountes hie, and out yfles straight he hent
 Tyl they obeyed all, whole his regiment
 And wyntred then, at Dunfermlin abbey
 Where saint Margaret, is worshipped euer & ay.

The. C. lxxvi. Chapiter.

Of the battaile of Argyle, where Umfreuile toke Wyl-
 lyam Waleys, and John Waleys.

AN then therle of Angos Robert Umfre-
 That regēt was, of Scotlād cōstitute (uile
 Toke Wyllyam Waleys, then at Argyle
 His brother John also without resute
 With rebelles mo, that were al destitute
 By battaile soze, there smytten ful cruelly
 Where Umfreuile then had the victoꝛye.

And to London them brought to iudgement
 Where they were drawen & hāged on galowe tree
 And quartred, then their quarters home were sent
 At certayne townes, hanged bp there to be
 Their traitourhede, and falshede for to se

Their

Kyng Edwarde

Their heades also, ful hye vpon the towre
At London brydge, were set in great terrour

The C.lxxvii. Chapiter.

Dowe Piers of Gaucstone, erle of Cornewaile was exiled.

AD in the yere a thousand.iii.C. and fyue
he exiled out Piers Gaucston of Corne-
waile

That erle was then, for treason knowen true
And in the yere after, without any fayle
Earle Robert Bruys, of Carrike ganne assaile
Earle John Comen of Bongham, at Duntrise
And slew him there, in feuer yere when it did frise

Bycause he would not, to him there assent
To be crowned then, kyng of Scotland
And furth he fled, to se who would content
And many one drew to him in that land
Became his men, and made liker band
To whom Walter Wareyne, the yonger soune
Of the erle of Surrey, that then dyd wonne

With the lord Westy, that had his syster wed
That fro her went, vnto this Robert Bruys
Eythir of other were fayne, for they were fled
Out of England, their liuyng had suche curis
For their riotous liuyng, and male auentures
Thus went they aboute, harkenynge euery where
Who were foes, and who their frendes were.

All Scotlād throughe, this Robert went about
On fote to spyre, who would with him holde

And

And who would not, he warred them al out
 And killed them doune, in places manyfolde
 And muche harme dyd, in chronicles as is tolde
 And with him was alway Walter Wareyne
 That with him went, through mountaynes, wood
 (and playne
 On nightes they lay, in woodes and in mountayne
 At moꝛowe, on their foes came doune and kyl
 On day they were thousādes, at euen but twayne
 There knewe no mo at euen, where they drewe tyl
 So were they euer at night of lodgyng wyl
 For dreade of guyle and of great traytoꝝ
 They lodged them on nightes ful priuely

But on the feast of the Annunciacion
 Of our lady, saint Mary the virgyne
 Robert Bruys, with great supportacion
 Was crowned at Skone, as he could imagyne
 To whom great folke, with good wyl dyd enclyne
 Ful glad of his welfare, and his coronacion
 With great hoste came, to Berche with prospera-
 (cion

The C.lxxviii. Chapiter

Howe fyr Robert Umfreuile, erle of Angeou, & fyr Aymer Valence erle of Deubroke discomfired kyng Robert Bruys, belyde S. Johus towne, and put him vnto flight

On the moꝛowe, sir Robert erle Umfreuile
 Of Angeou then, the regent was by north
 The Scottes sea, and Aymer Valence the
 Erle of Deubroke, by south & water of Forth (while
 Wardeyn was of Scotland forsoth)
 That day faught, with kyng Robert Bruys
 Belyde

Kyng Edward

Beside Johnstoune, where he fled without rescow
(wes

Unto the Kenter, & many Scottes there claine
Where then they toke, the wyfe of kyng Robert
And his brother Rygel, the sothe to sayne
And therle of Athels, might not a sterre
And sent them to the kyng, with ful glad heart
Whom the kyng kept, after their estate
At London, wel together consociate.

Henry Percy, toke the brethren two
Of kyng Robert Alexander, & Thomas þe hight
To the iustyce them sent, that hanged were tho
His other brother, at London hanged right
Kyng Robert then, sieged the Percy ful wight
But Umfreuile, him anone rescowed
And the siege, from him anone remoued.

Kyng Robert Bruys, faught with Aimer Valence
Earle of Penbrok, and put him to the flight
At Methen so, and slewe him with violence
All Englyshemen, in battail there doune right
Therle of Gloucester, Gylbert Clare that hight
Thre daies after, he sieged him in Are
But kyng Edward therle, then rescowed thare

The kyng Edward with host him sought ful soze
But ay he fled, into wodes and straight forest
And slewe his men at straighes & daungers thore
And at marreys and mires was ay ful prest
Englyshemen to kyl without any rest
In the mountaines & craggess, he slewe ay where
And in the night, his foes he fraied ful sere

The

The kyng Edward with hornes and houndes him
fought

With men on fote, through marris mosse & myze
Through woodes also, and mousteines where they
fought

And euer the kyng Edward, hight men great hyze
Him for to take, and by might conquere

But they might him not get, by force ne by trayne
He sat by the fyre, when they in the rayne

The kyng Edward for anger, fel in accesse
And homewarde came ful sicke and soze annoyed
And bad his sonne, he should for no distresse
No truce take with Scottes, that soze him noyed
But werre them ay, to tyme they were destroyed
For he sayd thus, thou shalt neuer fynde the true
But whiles they be in thy subiection due.

At Burgh vpon the sand he dyed anone
And to London, caried then day by day
At Westmynster buried, with muche mone
With quene Margarete, he had then sonnes tway
Thomas Brotherton erle of Northfolke gay
And Marshal of England, the other of Kent
Edmond Woodstoke, was erle in al entent

20 This noble kyng died in July the thirde day
And towarde heauen he then toke his way
The yere of Christ a thousand soth to say
Thre hundred whole, and seuen by calculacion
And of his reigne and coronacion
Fyue and thirty, not fully whole complete
When he so went, vnto the blisse so swete

Kyng Edward

The. C. lxx. Chapter.

Edward the second kyng of England began to reigne the yere a thousande thre hundred and. vii. the eight day of July and was deposed the yere a thousand thre hundred lxxvi. and of his reigne. xix.

Kyng Edward the second.

Edward his sonne, prince of Wales & lord At Carnaruan, of his mother boze Was crowned kyng, by good & whole cō- Of all the lordes that were assembled thore (corde At Westmynster, as was his father af ore And at the feast of Chassumption Of our lady, he sent for Peers Gaucriston.

Whom then he made therle of Cornwaile Againe the wyll, of al the baronage Whom his father exiled, for misgouvernaile The third yere after, for his misued outrage The lordes rose, of ire and great courage And headed him as for an high traytour That wasted had, and spent the kyng his treasure

The bat-
tyle of
Bannokel-
burne.

And in the meane while, kyng Robert Bruys had All Scotlād nere, wherfore the kyng Edward (get To Scotland went, at Bannokelourne they met And faught ful sore, tyl slaine was the barward And discomfited was the mydle ward And to the rerewarde kyng Edward him drewe For great succour, where he had battaile newe

Which killed was doune, safe few that led the To Dunbarre then fleand with him away (kyng There was therle of Gloucester slaine fleyng The lord Clifford, and al the lordes that day

Therle

Therle of Herford to Bothuile fled his way
 Therle Edmond of Arundel, and erle of Valence
 Therles of Warwyke & Orenford take at defence

This battaile was the yere of Chyrist smitten
 A thousand whole thre hundred and fiftene
 On midsummer day, and of his reigne then wrytten
 The seuenth yere, by chronicle as is seen
 Then was Humfrey erle of Herford strethed clene
 And enterchaunged for kyng Robertes wyfe
 That holden was in England then ful ryfe

The. C. lxx. chapter.

Of the releffe that kyng Edward made to Robert Bruis
 at Dunbarre, whiche releffe John Hardynge deliuered into
 the treasury, in the daies of kyng Henry the fifth at Boys
 Vincent in Fraunce with other, for whiche he gaue him Go-
 dyngton that the quene hath now.

Atrike Dunbarre erle of Marche that day
P To kyng Edward was liege man long afore
 To his father, and true had been alway
 Sent kyng Edward to Barwike, but therfore
 He toke of him a releffe for evermore
 Of his seruice, that due was to the crowne
 Anentes kyng Bruys to execute his treason

Whiche releffe the maker of this boke
 John Hardynge brought with other euidence
 And to the kyng Henry the fifth it toke
 With other mo, afore at Boys Vincent
 Perteignynge to England royal regiment
 And nought he hath vnto his sustnaunce

Kyng Edward
As oft afore here, in his remembraunce

The C.lxxi. Chapter.

Howe kyng Robert Bruis toke al the lordes of Englad,
and sleugh many at Streuelyn bridge and destroyed the
marches and bete doune castels therin.

KYng Robert Bruis, toke Robert Umfre:
Erle of Angcos Hery the lord Percy (uile
Therle of Marche & also the lord Peuille
Acton and Scropen and also the lord Lucy
At Streuelyn bridge, fightyng mightely
In the bawarde of the foresayd battaile
Taken prisoners and raunsomed for auaille

Then kyng Robert, the Marches whole destroyed
The castels wanne and bet them to the ground
And all Scotland afore that he had noyed
Obeyed to him and were his lieges bound
And mainfeined wel, then furth al Scotlād grouid
The bishoprike of Duresme al throughout
Northumberland, he bent with host ful stout

Two Cardinales the B. of Rome to Scotlād sent
To treate a truce, a twene the kynges two
And for to stal Lewes Beamount present
Byshop of Duresme, that then was sacred so
Whose brother was Henry, lord Beamount tho
Licensed and graunted, by the kyng of fraunce
To be liege men, to Edwardes whole pleasaunce

But sir Gilbert Midelton them mette
And sir Walter Selby, misruled knightes

A lytle

A lytle fro Duresme their way forset
 And robbed them openly, on the lightes
 And to Milford castel, led them fourth rightes
 And held them there, in mighty and strong hold
 To tyme they had, their iewels and their gold

Gylbert
 Middleton
 robbed
 the Cardis
 nalles.

¶ Whiche knyghtes two, robbed the lade about
 That castel helde, by force and rebellyon
 A quarter of a yere, with rebelles stout
 But they were take within that garison
 And the kyng sent, by that enchesone
 That hanged were, as traytours al should bene
 On galowes hye, that al might them sene

¶ Then after sone, sir Gosselyn Deynuile
 His brother Roberte, with two hundreth in habite
 As they were friers, went about in exile
 Robbyng the land, in ful great dispise
 The bishoppes places, of Duresme in circuite
 They spoyled clene, leuyng nothyng in them
 But walles bare, whiche they would not clayme.

The C. lxxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lordes of Englande with powre royall durste
 not ryde into Scotland passyng. ciiii. myle, England was
 so at vnder that tyme.



Rerle Edmond then of Arundel
 Warden of þe Marches, then cōstitute
 Therle Robert of Angeos Unfreuile
 Of his landes haupng no refute
 Therle David of Athel destitute
 Of his erldome, the lorde Percy ful heardy
 The lorde Neucl, the lord Beaumont manly

y.iii.

With

Kyng Edwarde

TWith al the power of the North countrees
Destructed then Scotland and brent
Upon the Marche unto Lynel Lee
Whom sir Walter Wareyn, by whole assent
Of James Douglas, pursued as they went
With great powre, alway at their syde
That they were fayne, agayn to England ryde

But sir Walter Wareyn and Douglas
With their power, brent al Northumberland
Tyndale became Scottes, and false then was
And rode with them, & brent through al the land
To Alerton, and so rode home to Scotland
Through the west Marche, & brent it al through
And home they went, without any doubt. (out

The castel then of Barwyke and the toun
Kyng Robert gatte, after strong & great defence
By treaty with peace, Spaldyng and treason
The wendesday before Easters reuerence
Where that traytour, without any suspence
Betrayed the toun, and into Scotland went
By Scottes claine, as to a traytour appent

The C.lxxiij. Chapter.

Home kyng Edwarde layde siege to Barwyke and fore
Toke the siege and went South, for Robert Bruys had de-
stroyed withel of Yorkespyre, and discomfited the archbys-
hop of Yorke and his clergy, at Eglinton on Swale.

The kyng Edwarde began to siege Barwyke
And wonne it had, but false tales it let (like
And tidynge newe, & nought the kyng dyd
for

For Robert Bruys, the kyng of Scotland mette
 With the bishop of Yorke, and him ouerset
 Wherefore he lost the siege, and went away
 But Bruys had stroyed England in fel aray.

To Borough bridge, by east and west bent
 And home againe, with many a prisoner
 Without harme or let of his entent
 With mykel good, but in Hyton medowe nere
 To Swale water, lay then with great power
 Walter Wareyn among the hay kockes bushed
 Upon the bishop sodenly with Scottes yssued.

And .xv. hundred Englishe there he slewe
 And home he went, with kyng Edward ful glad
 With prisoners many, mo then men knewe
 The bishop fled fro the felde ful wo bestad
 With his clerkes, that then were ful mad
 For whiche therle Thomas, of Lancaster there
 And kyng Edward, departed halfe in were

The. C.lxxiii. Chapter.

Howe at the next parliament after, Thomas of Lancaster and Leicester earle and certayne lordes, exiled the two Spencers out of the land, but then the Spencers made great persecution with the kyng again the lordes, and slewe the earle of Lancaster and the other lordes.

At the parliamēt then at Westminster next
 Erle Thomas, that then was called (hold
 ful trewe
 Therle Umfrey of Herford, that was bold
 Therle of Marche, ful manly as men knewe
 The Monbray also Percy and Clyfford drewe

Kyng Edward

All armed came, and two Spencers exiled
Out fro England, neuer to be reconciled.

But sone, the Spencers came to the kyng againe
Sy? Hugh the lorde, and sir Hugh his sonne
And put therle of Marche, in great disdayn
Roger his sonne, that with him dyd wonne
Appched him then of high treason
Against the kyng, wherfore the kyng him sent
Into the Towre, tabyde the parliament

Then went the kyng, and Spencers both two
With hostes ful great, to Burton vpon Trent
Where the lordes lay, and sparled them then so
That North they went, then wates by one assent
To rayse mo men, they trust in their intent
The Spencers two, fully for to destroy
Who al the realme, ful cruelly dyd noy.

At Bozinsbrig, sir Andzewe Herlawe met
With erle Umfrey of Herford, and him slewe
And toke therle Thomas, without let
And to the kyng, that then to Bountfret dze we
Where then were set, vpon him iudges newe
Therle Edmond of Arundel for iustice
And sir Robert Hapilthorpe, his enemies.

There he was headed, anone vpon the hyl
And buried was there in a chapel fayre,
Henry his brother, stode at the kynges wyl
Whom the kyng graunted to be his heyre
That wedded then Alyce, without dispayre
The doughter and heyre, of therle Henry Lacy

Of Lyncolne, so graunted by the kynges mercy.

William fitz Warrein, & many another knight
In diuers shires, some hanged and some head
That hold with him, or with his compeers right
Sy? Bartholomewe Badelismore, without rede
Drawen and hanged, and put to foule dead
Roger Clyfford and John Monbray barons
Headed then were, for their rebellions.

¶ Therle of Marche, sy? Roger Mortimer
His sonne Roger, foriudged were for treason
And by the kyng, of death pardoned were
And put were then, in perpetual prison
Into the towre, for that same encheson
Fro that tyne fourth, the Spencers other excede
The queene was, but an handmayden in dede

¶ To tyne the kyng, to her brother her sent
And also his sonne Edward done homage
For Guyan, so to haue at his entent
And for they dwelled, so long in that biage
The kyng them had suspecte, of their message
By counsaile of the Spencers, them exiled
As in chronicles plainly is compiled.

¶ The kyng then made, and plainly dyd create
Andewe Hertlawe, erle then of Carlele
Whiche tyne, the kyng Robert ful fortunate
Rode al the east Marche, ful proudly and wel
The bishopricke and Porkeshire euery dele
Andewe Hertlawe, erle of Carlele absent
To Lancastre him dreme in false entent

The

Kyng Edwarde

¶ The kyng Robert, was passed home againe
With praiers great, and many prisoners
Fro Humber north, the people doune were slaine
Of whiche the kyng, and al his councelers
Blamed therle Andewe, and his compeers
For he had men ynough, with him arayed
The Scottes al, that might haue slaine & afrayed

¶ He hight the king, haue brought to him great
Into Yorkshyre & held nothing his hight (powers
Therfore the kyng, by counsel of the Spencers
Gauc charge to take him, either by daye or night
Or kil him doune, wher they met with him might
To al shryues, was sent this commaundement
Fro Trent northward by writtes & maundement.

The. C. lxxv. chapter.

¶ Howe syr Roger Mortymer the yonger went out of the
Towre of London & went into Fraunce to the quene of En-
gland and to the prince Edward her sonne, and also howe
the lorde Lucye toke sir Andewe Berclawe erle of Carlele
and headed him at Carlele for treason.



Hen sir Roger, the yongest Mortymer
Made his keepers dronke, & went away
Out of the Towre by nighte and other
in feer

And into Fraunce, anone he toke his way
Unto the quene Isabel, in pooze aray
And bode with her, at her gouernaunce
Al tyme that she was soiournyng in Fraunce

¶ And then Antony Lucye lorde Cokermouth
Sy?

By Robert Lowther, with many in seere
 At Carlele toun, as knowen was ful couth
 Toke sir Andewe Hertlawe, with mekil steer
 They put on him, he toke royal power
 In truce takyng with therle of Murrey
 Withouten power, in trayterous aray.

In wrongyng of the kynges high estate
 And of his right, ful great derogacion
 And howe he toke great golde immoderate
 Of kyng Edward, through cauelacion
 To byng him power for his supportacion
 Againe the kyng Robert, that then destroyed
 His land ful foule, and had his selfe anoyed

And howe he had the people whole withdraue
 With him westwarde, by false confederacye
 Betwene him and therle Marrowe
 Couened fully befoze cast traytoze
 Wherfoze they drewe him first al openly
 And hanged after, and to London sent
 Unto the kyng his head, for great present

The. C. lxxvi. Chapiter.

Howe the quene Isabell treated mariage, of one of the
 daughters of therle of Benaulde for her sonne Edward to
 haue to wyfe, by chadvice of her brother kyng Charles and
 came to England with great power, and toke the kyng and
 slewe his counceil for treason.

There by aduise, and good consideracion
 Of the kyng of Fraunce, her brother dere
 Quene Isabel accorded for supportacion
 Her

Kyng Edwarde

Her sonne should wed, one of the daughters clere
Of thele of Henauld, that fyue then were
Throug whose succour, she & her sonne Edward
Toke then the sea, to England warde

C Earle Edmond of Kent, then with her came
Kyng Edwardes brother, and sir Aymer Valence
Erle of Penbroke, whiche came with her fro hame
And Mortimer the yonger, in her p̄sence
Henauldes and Frenche, with great sufficiencye
Of people strong, at Oʒwel with her land
Where lordes many, her mette I vnderstand

2d To London then, she & her sonne tho wrote
The councellours and traitours foʒ to take
That rule had, in mykel mistryste
The kyng Edward, her lord and also make
And in prison, to kepe then foʒ her sake
Wherfoʒe they boyded, out of the cytie then
The quenes enemies, echeone ay when and when

2d The kyng then, fled into the west countre
She and the prince, ful soʒe him pursued
And at Bristowe, she headed, as men might see
Syʒ Hugh Spencer the father that was renewed
And sir Hugh his sonne, that was transumed
In high estate, and erle had be create
Of Wynchester, where he stode al mate

2d Syʒ Hugh Spenser, his sone at Herford take
Was headed then, and vnto London sent
So was Edmond, there headed foʒ her sake
That was erle of Arundel there p̄sient

His

His head smote of, for treason so was shent
Their heades set vp, in diuers sere place
In recompence, of al their great trespasse

And at London, they headed the Chaunceler
With diuers other, whiche they found vntreue
So dyd they also, the kynges treasozer
And there set they a Parliament all newe
But fyrst they put the kyng, as al men knewe
In killyngworth, there to be holde in warde
To tyme they se, howe lordes would awarde.

At whiche parliament. iiii. bishops & erles thre
Thre barons also, & thre Banerettes electe
To killyngworth, to ryde with the cominalte
All homage leege, by parliament whole directe
To surrendre vp, without any reiecte
The whiche they dyd, for his misgouernaunce
With heuy chere and mournyng countenaunce.

The kyng ful sad, with wordes wel auised
Thanked them all, knowyng his high trespasse:
And that he was, of rule not wel prouised
To the pleasure of God, whyles he had space
He comon weale to kepe in euery case
He to his wyfe, had bene a true husband
But falsely had her exiled out of land.

Wekely he prayed, the lordes at parliament
His sonne to admytte vnto the region
Sith he vnable was to the regiment
And foule had ruled, the land without reason
He them besought, for gylte of his carpon

Kyng Edward

His sonne were not refused, ne chastised
But set in rule, by councei wel aduised.

These lordes twelue, with heuy countenance
Reported vnto the quene, and lordes al
The sorowful chere, & wordes with repentaunce
Of kyng Edward, as then it was befall
His praiser meke, and his desire final
Of whiche the lordes, in that same parliament
Reioysed were, of his noble agreement.

The. C. lxxvii. Chapter.

Edward the thyrde, kyng of Englande and of Fraunce,
begaune to reigne, the yere a thousand thre hundred. cxi.
and died the yere, a thousande thre hundred. lxxvii. and of
his reigne. li. yere.

Kyng Ed-
ward the
thyrde.



Edward his sonne, the prince of Wales
was than

In tender age, that tyme of. xiii. yere
Was crowned on s. Bryces day & began
The yere of Christ was then accompted clere
A thousand whole, CCC. xxi. were
Whose father then had reigned, xx. yere out
And in his twenty yere, withouten doubt

From the thirde day of July by computacion
Of the yere, vnto saint Bryces day
So muche in his twenty, by relacion
He reigned had, and then put doune for ay.
From Killyngworth, to the castel of Berkeley
By night he was caried, and translate
From wyfe and children, forsake and repudiate
Where

Where he was slaine, with an hote brennyng spyte
Through his towayle, vp to his heart within
In September, his bowelles bzent for hete
That dead he was, without noyse or dyn
On saint Mathewes day, so they dyd him bzen
The fyrst yere was it then accompted, and wonne
Of kyng Edward the third, that was his sonne.

At Gloucester entombed fayre, and buried
Where some say, God shewed for him great grace
Sith that tyme, with miracles lauded
Oite tymes, in diuerse many case
As is wrytten there, in that same place
For whiche kyng Rycharde, called the second
To translate him was purposed whole and sound

Sir James Douglas, in England with an hoost
Destroyed the land, wherfore kyng Edward
With frenche, henauides, & Englishe for þe moost
In mighty hoost and great then came Northward
The second yere of his reigne, to regarde
Whom in Stanhope parke, he besieged then
That compted were of Scottes, x. M. men

By .xv. daies, that sieg there endured
He helde them in, they might not passe out
But through a mosse, þe all men trowed was sured
So depe of myre, and brode it was about
No siege was layde, for there they had no doubt
By whiche the Scottes, cast them what so betyde
To escape away, in the nightes tyde.

But James Douglas, their flekes fell did make
Whiche

Kyng Edward

Whiche ouer the mosse, echeone at others ende
He layde anone, with fagottes fel ouer the lake
There gatte away, and passage to pzetende
On whiche by night, they led their horse bndend
And home they went to Scotland harmelesse
Wherof the kyng was heuy there doubtlesse

When they were ouer the qua kyng mosse & myze
They drew the flekes ay after as they went
That Englishe should not them sue ne conquere
This was a point of warre, ful sapient
But on our syde, there was by consequent
But lytle wytte, that left the myze bndwatched
And by good watche, the Scottes might haue be
(caught)

And in the yere, a thousand compted clere
Quene Isabel, her doughter married
Dame Jane of the towre, to David bzuis her pere
Kyng Robertes sonne, and heyze whole notified
At Barwyke toun, the second day signified
Of Juli, and of kyng Edward then was thze
Bycause of whiche, the kyng in priuitee.

The C.lxxviii. Chapiter.

Of the releffe that kyng Edward made in his teudze age
to kyng Robert of his seruice of Scotlande, whiche John
Hardyng deliuered to kyng Edward the.iiii. at Leyecester
with a patent, by which the erle of Dunbar bound him and
his heyres, to holde his landes of the kynges of England.

By councel of his mother, & the Mortymer
Relesed there the whole souerainte (were
And seruice due, that to the crowne then

At Berwike then without autozitee
Of any parliament in especialtee
In tendre age, and youthe's intelligence
In his thirde pere, so of his high regence.

He sent furth then, to Henauld for a wise
A bishop and other lordes tempoꝝall
Where in chambꝛe priuey and secretife
At discouerit dischenely also in hall
As semying was to estate virginall
Among thein selues, our lordes for high prudẽce
Of the bishop asked counsaill and sentence.

Whiche daughter of fine, should be the quene
Who counsailed thus, with sad auisement
We will haue her with good hippes I mene
For she will beare good sonnes, at myne entent
To whiche thei all accorded by one assent
And chace Philip, that was full feminine
As the bishop moſte wise did deterimine.

But then emōg them selves, thei laugh't fast ay
The lordes then saied, the bishop couthe
Full mekill skill, of a woman alwaie
That so couthe chese, a lady that was vncouthe
And for þe mery wooꝝdes, that came of his mouthe
Thei trowed he had, right greate experience
Of womanes rule, and her conuenience

Kyng Robert Bruis, smitten in lepy died
To whom his sonne Dauid, then did succede
And crownded was, for kyng and notified
His wife also, was crownded quene in deede

Kyng Edward

Kyng Edwardes sister, she was then as I rede
Sir Roger then that was lord Mortimer
With Isabel the quene was holden dere.

Through hardinesse of whiche he wasted clene
The kyng his tresoure as was notified;
For whiche Henry erle of Lancastre for tene
Rose with greate hoste, as then was notified
To haue withstande, and clerely haue replied
The wantonnesse of Roger Mortimer
That was that tyme the quenes playfeet.

But treced he was to sitte in rest and peace
Notwithstandyng, at the coronacion
Of kyng Edward, chose he was without leas.
His custode then for good informacion
Of the kyng hys perlon, and preservation
But quene Isabel, and Mortimer
Would not suffre, no while that so it were.

Edmond Mordstok, that then was erle of Kent
By kyng Edward, of Carnaruan create
Whose brother he was, bi quene Isabelles entent
And Mortimer his mighty and greate estate
Trested was and stode repudiate
At Winchester foriudged in parliament
And he did there, again the common assent.

A brother he had, hight Thomas of Brotherto
Erle of Northfolk, and marshall of England
That of his death made none execution
For lordes all, the greatest of the land
Ful sorow were, but nought they tooke on hand

fro

fro none till even without the castle gate
he stode condemned as a repudiate.

Whom then at even, a bove of the Marshalls
Stroke of his hed, for whom the lordes than
And commons all, displeased wer inwardly
At Notyngham sone after thei began
Where Mortimer, therle of Marche than
Arested wer, and his sonne sir Roger
And to the toure of London sent thei wer

On saint Andzews, daie thei wer draw & hog
At London, by dome of the parliament
At Westminster holden by processe long
Sir Simond Bedford, was of their assent
Drawe and hanged, therfore thei went
And fro the quene his mother he resumed
His landes all, for she had so consumed,

His treasoure foule, and all his grcate richesse
He put her to her dower, and nomore
To live upon, at the frier minoures doubtelles
Where she had not been brought befoze
And there she died, and buried is therfore
At London now, full faire and reuerently
Where she had dwelt long, full honourably

Edward Ballioll, to claim Scotland the went
And with hym went, sir Gilbert Umfreuile
Claimyng to be erle, by his whole entent
Of Angeous then, as chroniclers compile
Sir Henry Beaumont also went that while
His heritage to get and to conquere

King Edward

Therledome of Boughan, should bee his clere.

¶ Henry Percy, with Edward Bailioll went
Galoway to claime, as for his heritage
By shippe thei went, all whole by one assent
At Rauenspozne and landed with greate corage
At Kincozne well in fiffe by all knowledge
Dauid Starbolgy erle of Athellis by right
With them then went, for his landes ther to fight

¶ Thei wer accompted twoo. M. fightyng men
And fivie hundzed beside the mariniers
At their lādyng, their shippes thei bzēt right then
And bozed some, and sanke at good leisers
Thei thought theim self, of good & strong powers
Thei tooke none hede, of shippes home again
But landeway ride, for all the Scottes dain.

¶ Thei tooke none hede, nor yet consideration
Of thousandes many, ne of greate multitude
As lordes dooe now of commons congregacion
But putte their cause to God his high excellitude
And in their owne handes sollicitude
At Kincozne, then faught with therle of fiffe
Discomfite hym and fled awaie with life

¶ His menne wer slain; bpon the feld echeone
Then Robert Bruce, the bastard sonne their gyde
The lord Seton, with power came anone
And newe battaill them gaue, with mekill pride
That numbze wer, ten thousande on their side
Whiche slain wer all, for thei would take none
Saufe the chieftaynes, that fled awaie alone.

The

¶ The kyng Edward Baylioll with his power
To Dunfermelyne abbey, then furth so wente
Where in Glasmoze, the Scottes the scimblew were
fourty thousande, full proude in their intent
And all wer slain, without suppowelment
Therle of Harre and therle of Murraie
Therle of Carrik, and Menth died that daie.

¶ And after sone, at Deplyng Moze mette
Sir Neel Bruys, with ten thousande in fere
That slain wer there, and to therth doune bette
The Englishe had the feld that daie full clere
Their ordinaunce was, to take no prisoner
Wherfore thei slewe the Scottes without mercie
Lest newe battaill came on thein in hie.

¶ At these battaillies, afoze that been witten
Sixty thousande Scottes, slain and mortified
Wer moze with pzece, as afterward was weten
The with manes hande, thei wer so fell multiplied
Eche one on other, of pride so reued
Without rule of marciall gouernaunce
Thei smored wer, by their contrariaunce.

¶ And but twoo knightes, & thirty & thye squiers
Whiche there wer dedde of the Englishe power
In foure battaillies faught, with are swerd & speris
At Dilyng Moze, fro tyme the sunne rose clere
To thye after noone, as saith the chzonicle
Within seuē daies thei sinote these foure battaillies
As chzonicles make full clere rehersailes.

¶ Then wente thei furthe, vnto .s. Jhons toune
z.iii. That

Kyng Edward

That was replete, and full of all bitaill
And kept the toun with manly direccion
Archibald Douglas and erle Patrik no fail
Of Dunbarre then the toun began tassaill
With thirty thousande, but there thei wer well bet
With cast of stoues, and greate defence ouerset.

¶ The citees then, and tounes to the sea side
At their costage, to Scotlande sente a flete
To help our lordes, and get theim good that tide
And with the shippes, of Scotlande for to mete
And so thei did, and soze theim all to bete
And brought the home, & some with wildfire byet
In Tay water, and some thei sanke and shent

¶ Wherefore the Scottes, the siege then forsooke
The englissh lordes, at Skone the kyng did croune
Edward Baliol the sonne was, who will loke
To Ihon Baliol kyng of that region
Whom then afore, Henry Beaumont brought
From Baliol, where he was loyde in fraunce
As his aunteters had been of remembraunce.

¶ This kyng Edward Baliol his foes sought
And at Rokilburgh, faught with therle of Mur-
Discōfited theim, in battaill soze there fought (rep
And to Duresme sent hym fro thence awaie
There to bee kept in liker strong araie
Then sir Archibald Douglas and erle Patrike
Then of Dunbar, their kyng thought to be swike

¶ Thei toke with hym a treuce to Candilmasse
From October, in trust of whiche he sent

Thenglishe

Thenglishe lordes, to Englande home expresse
 Truſſyng he had been ſure in his entent
 All was falſhed, that the twoo erles ment
 For thei vphelde Dauid, in tendre age
 Kyng Robertes ſonne, to whom thei did homage

Sir James Douglas & erle Patrike Dūbare
 With all their help, at the Candlemaſſe
 On Edward roſe the Bailliol, or he wer ware
 And ſlew all that thei founde doubtleſſe
 That ſain he was, to Englande to flee helpeleſſe
 At Marche after, he entred then Scotlande
 With theſame lordes, then of the Northlande.

On bothe ſides thei rode, and faſt destroyed
 And to Berwike Edward Bailliol came
 And ſieged it, and felly was annoyed
 To whiche Edward of Eugland, with great ſame
 Came with his hoſte, and late there at the ſame
 The Douglas then, and Dunbare with power
 Northumberlande all througħ bent full clere.

The. C. lxxix. Chapter.

Of the battaill of Halidon hil, & how Edward Bailliol
 did homage liege, to kyng Edward of Englande.



D Halidō hil, thei came with their prais
 Barwike caſtle and tounne ſo to reſcuc
 Where too our hoſte, full oft thei made
 frais

Bothe daie and euen, and moꝝowes or daie dewe
 But then the kyng of Englande to hym dꝛewe
 The kyng alſo of Scotlande with his might
 For ſore that daie in battaill did thei fight.

Kyng Edward

Homage of
the Scottes

Where Edwardes twoo, had all the victoꝝ
The royaltes of all Scotlande, there wer slain
Thirty thousande, with theim liggand by
Of menne of armes, and archers ded certain
Then in the yere, next after luth to sain
At newcastle, Edward kyng of Scotlande
His homage did, to the kyng of Englande.

For whiche, þe cōmons of Scotlād on hym rose
And slewe his menne, that he into Englande came
And gatte an hoste, and rode vpon his foes
Throug Anand, throug Kilay and Conyngham,
Carrike & Glascowe, slewe all þe found at hame
The kyng Edward of Englande with power
Throug Lothian, so did to Striuelyn clere.

And bothe mette there, with greate gladnesse
And home thei came, destroyng all the waie
Another yere in Jule, for to redresse
Scotlande again, with hostes thei gan a fraic
At saint Jhons towne thei mette in greate araie
And there thei made, therle of Athelis regent
Whom the commons felly slewe and hent.

Kyng Edward sente after in another yere
In Maie Henry Lancastre, a noble knight
To Scotlande, with an hoste of good power
And afterwarde he came with mikell might
To saint Jhons toun, and on the monthes right
Throug Hurrey to Elgyne, Siluernes & Rolfe
Throug mountaignes woddes mire and mosse.

Kyng Edward, then came hoine into England
And

And proclaimed his sonne, Edward nominate
The prince of Wales, thence furth I vnderstande
Henry Lancastre, the younger he create
Erle of Derby, to beare the whole estate
William Mountague, erle of Salisbury
Of Northampton, William Bowne full manly.

Of Gloucester he made, Hugh of Audely
Of Suffolke then, he made Robert Huforth
Of Huntynghdon, Willm Clinton gay
Whiche erles, the kyng tooke with hym forth
With many a worthy knight, bothe of southe and
And with the quene, so vnto Andwarpe (Nothe
And there abode, by all the winter sharpe.

With greate people, and worthe chivalrie
Again the kyng of Fraunce, to claime his right
And wrote his title, vnto þ Romishe bishop on hie
The duke of Barre, and other lordes of might
The quenes frendes, then socoure had hym hight
Where then the quene, of her sonne Lionell
Delivered was, as chronicles dooe tell.

He cherished then flaunders, that thei forsoke
Their naturall lord, and swoze feautee
To hym and his, their power thei betoke
To bide and dwell, vnder his soueraintee
Because thei sawe in hym suche humanitee
He chaunged his armes, in banners and penons
And in his seale, quartred of bothe regions.

And in the yere, then of his reigne thirtene
His armes chaunged, and called kyng of Fraunce
He

Kyng Edward

He rode in Fraunce on warre, as then was seen
A thousande tounes he bent, by his puisaunce
The kyng of Fraunce, without variaunce
Sent hym woorde, that he would with hym fight
But at the point, he did not as he hight.

For at that tyme, in sonder thei wer a mile
He fled a waie, kyng Edward held the felde
Two daies after he sued and Umfreuile
Ot hym had sight, and then he founde his shelde
By whiche he knewe, his couenaunt he not helde
Wherfore the kyng, to Babant went again
The dukes thre of Barre erle and Babain.

The parliamēt then, at Westminster was hold
Where thei graūted hym, the .ix. lābe flees & shaue
Of the commons, but the churche nomore wold
Hym graunt, but one disine of theim to haue
For whiche he graunted generall pardone & gaue
The .ix. lambe flees & shaue, graunt was two yere
To help the kyng, his right to conquere.

The .C.lxxx. Chapter.

How kyng Edward smote the battaill on the sea at
Sluse beside Bridges, and how the kyng first rode in
to Fraunce and quartered his armes with the armes
of Fraunce, and sente to kyng Philippe, too sepe the
right betwene theim two.



And in his yere next after, then fourtene
At Sluse the kyng saughte, with the
Frenche nauy
fro noone to eue & to y morowe, as was
Where all wer drouned and slain mightely (seen
And

And kyng Edward, to Fraunce went hastely
With hoste ful greate, destroyed the lande & bent
The citee of Turnais, belleged and shent.

Then wrote he to kyng Philip of Fraunce
Not namyng hym kyng of that lande
But to Philip of Valois, for greuaunce
Willyng alone, thei twoo to take on hande
To fight for the cause, and for to stande
Who hath the better, for euer to hold Fraunce
Without warre, or any more distaunce.

Or els, thei two either with an. C. knightes
And if these wales, please hym not to except
Come with his hoste, & all his strongest wightes
To the citee of Turnay, none except
At a certain daie, iustely to bee kept
And who the feld maie get, brooke well Fraunce
Without more strief, or any variaunce.

The kyng the wrote vnto kyng Edward againe
That he would not for the letters fight
Whiche touche not kyng Philip in certain
But Philip Valois, as sheweth well to sight
To whiche he would set, neither daie ne hight
But when he thought it wer for his honoure
He should hym chace awaie without secoure.

Out of his land, whiche wrongfully he shewed
Again his faithe, feautie made and homage
To his auncesters by letter, as it sheweth
Under his seall, of whole and good knowlage
For Guyan, and his other heritage

And

Byng Edward

And fro Turnace into Brabane again
The kyng Edward, in winter did remain.

To bide the bishoppes rule and disposicion
Of good accorde, for then twoo cardinalles
To take a truce, by good prouision
Duryng twoo yere, betwene theim generalles
And all their frendes, that wer principalles
Then came the kyng to Edward into Englande
His officers newe made, I vnderstande.

To the treuce then taken at Maltrete
The dukes twoo, of Burgoyne and Burbone
In the kynges soule of fraunce, sworne and hete
Truly to kepe, for frendes and for sone
And duke Henry of Lancastre, sed as stoue
Wylliam Bowne erle of Northampton
And Wylliam Mountague, full hie of renouthe

Erle of Salisbury, in kyng Edwardes soule
In like maner, wer sworne and behest (there
The nyntene daie, then of Janiuere
The yere of Christ a thousande then was sest
Thre hundred and twoo, and fourty at lest
When these trues wer taken so, and sealed
For afterwarde, thei should not bee repeled.

The. C. lxxxi. Chapiter.

How Henry duke of Lancaster went to Gascon, in the
yere of Christ, a thousande three hundred. xlv. And of
the battail of Cressy, in the yere of Christ, a thousand
three hundred fourty and sixe.

And



And the Henry duke of Lancaster create
Went to Guyan, with many bolde baron
Where then he gatte, the citers of estate
And castles fele, & many a walled toun
And made the land Englishe, bothe vp and doune
And to the kyng Edward obeyed, as thei ought
And greate worship and riches there he caught.

And in the yere a thousande and .ccc. gone
Sire and fourty, kyng Edward at Cressy
Met with Philip, of Valoyes there anone
That kyng of Fraunce was by intrusery
At whiche battaill, Edward had the victory
And with honour and might, there gate the felde
And Philip fled, and caste there doune his shelde.

And his eldest sonne, with hym went awaie
With an hundred banners, in their compaigny
The kynges of Beine, wer slain that daie
And of Mallogres, there full manfully
The dukes of Alaunson, also theim by
And of Lorein slain wer, in battaill
And erles fiue, without any fail.

Of Flaunders, Bloys, Harcourt and Melain
Of gentiles and other, without any Eschain
And of Guntpe, wer there in battaill slain
Fiue skore thousande, the twenty daie certain.
And sixe also of Auguste, accompted plain
The kyng Edward had all the victory
The kyng Philip, had all the vilany.

The kyng David then, of Scotland with power

Cor

To Duresme bzent, where on saint Lukes daie
The archebishop, with his clergy clere
And sir Gilbert Winfreulle, in good araise
The lord Percy the lord Aeuille, then laie
With all the North, a litle from Duresme
Wher the thei faught, & on the kyng David came

And take he was, the yere of Chryste was than
A thousande, full thre hundred forty and sixe
Full soze wounded, full like he was a man
And also of his lordes, more then fivie or sixe
Brought to London priuely, through Eller
For lordes should not hym take with great power
From Ihon of Coplande, he was his taker clere.

And in the toure of London, then kept in ward
To tyme the kyng wer come out of fraunce
That then in fraunce, mo castles to regarde
And townes walled, gotten by his pupsaunce
Then had the kyng Philip in gouernaunce
And like was then, all fraunce to haue conquered
With his alies, he made that lande afferde.

The. C.lxxxii. Chapiter.

Of the greate pestilence, in the yere of Chryste a thousande thre hundred fourtye and nyne, and the yere next after, the kyng went into Fraunce, and the prince of Wales vnto Guyan.



And in the yere of Chryst clerly accompted
A thousande whole, ccc. forty and nyne
The pestilence was in Englade amouted
That kyng Edward newe warre ganns
ymagyne

The

The nexte yere after, again fraunce fine
Thether he went, and pynce Edward then went
With greate power to Guyan, as Regent

¶ The kyng then put his sonnes young of age
In fraunce then furthe, in myghty gouernaunce
Sir Lionell, erle of Ulster in wago
Regent of fraunce, hym made by ordinaunce
Sir Ihon of Gaunt, to haue whole attendaunce
Of all the hoste; as high and grea:e constable
To whiche he was accompt, that tyme full able

¶ Sir Edmond Langley, full of gentlenesse
Sir Thomas Woodstok full of corage
To their banners, then put for worthynesse
To haue rule in that worthy voyage
Whiche princes fīue, approued in young age
Ther was no kyng christen, had suche sonnes fīue
Of likeliness, and persones that tyme on liue.

¶ So high and large, thei wer of all stature
The least of them, was of person able
To haue foughten with any creature
Singular battaill, in actes marciabie
The bishops wit, me thynketh was commendable
So well could chose the pryncesse that them bare
For by practise he knewe it, or by lare.

The. C. lxxiii. Chapter.

¶ How the kyng of fraunce was taken prisoner at the
battaill of Boyters, the yere of Christe, a thousande,
thre hundred fifty and sixe.

In the yere of Chyriste, a. M. accōpted right
Thre hundred and sixe, and fifty mo
The prince Edward, at Doyters soze did
The nynetene date of September, was tho (sight
Wher kyng, Jhon of Fraunce, his sonne also
He tooke and had the feld, with victoꝝ
His eldest sonne then, fled fro hym cowardly.

20 The kyng Dauid died, and let his hostage
foꝝ his rauntome lygge ay furthe in Englande
The yere a thousande thre hundred by knowlage
Eight and fifty, as I can vnderstande
And paied not yet, ne quit not out his bande
Ne his hostage, he would not so displease
To deliuer, ne put them fro their ease.

20 The quene Isabell, & the quene of Scotlande
Her daughter was, and kyng Dauids wife
Sone after died, and buried I vnderstande
At the grey Friers, in London knowen full rife
The whiche the quene Isabel founded in their life
Full faire entombed, and wrought full richely
Wher the twoo quenes rest full honourably.

The. C. lxxiiii. Chapiter.

Of the seconde pestilence and the greete wynde and
earthquake, the yere a thousande. CCC. lxi.

And in þ yere of Chyrist, a thousand written
Thre hundred also sixty and one
The. ii. pestilence, reigned as was weten
Duke Henry died, foꝝ whom was mekill mone
Dame Blaunche his daughter, full faire of fleshe
and bone

His

His heyre was then, whom John of Gaunt did wed
The duchy by her had, men layd he had wel sped

20 In that same yere was, on saint Maury's day
The great wynde and yearth quake marueilous
That greatly gan the people al affray
So dyedful was it then and perilous
Specially the wynd was so boystous
The stone walles, steples houses and trees
Were blow doun in diuerse ferre countrees

20 And in the yere a thousande thre hundred also
Sixty and four, kyng John of Fraunce died
In London then, in Dauoy had bene sicke
The dukes palice of Lancaster edified
Ful royally as it is notified
His bowels buried, at Poules with royaltee
His corpes in Fraunce, with al solempnitee.

Kyng
John of
Fraunce

20 In that same yere, sir John Mountfort of newe
Duke of Britayn was by heritage
As heyre male, his tytyle was act trewe
At Oxyers faught, again the frenche linage
By Charles de Bloys, that claymed by mariage
The duchy whole, of Britayn by the might
Of his wyfe, where he was slaine by might

20 Duke John of Gaunt, was at that battail
By Edmond also of Langley his brother dere
By John Chaundos treated without fail
All day, and faught at cue through his answere
Whiche treaty is yet, oft remembred here
For Chaundos truce, that treated al day to night

A. i.

And

Kyng Edwarde

And made parties at eue together fight

At what battail, duke John of Gaunt in dede
And his brother Edmond, then faught ful soze
Were neuer. ii. better knightes, then they in dede
That better faught vpon a felde afoze
It was but grace, that they escaped thore
They put thein selves so farfurth ay in prees
That wounded were they bothe, ful soze no lees.

The. C. lxxv. Chapter.

Howe prince Edward of Wales wedded dame Johan
daughter of Edmond of Woodstocke erle of Kent, he of the
thirde degre and she of the second.



Hese brethren two with their englishe
power

Set John Mountforte in his whole
ducherie

With great honour and manhode all
in fere

Erle John of Kent deade was afoze sothely
Erle Edmondes sonne, to whō dame Johan truely
His sister was helye, whom the erle Mountague
Of Salisbury had wed of mayden newe.

And her forsoke, after repudiate
Whom his stewarde sir Thomas Holand wed
And gatte on her, Thomas erle of Kent late
And John Holand her other sonne she hed
Thomas their father, died of sickenes bested
The prince her wowed vnto a knight of his
She sayd she would none, but him selfe I wis.

For

for her beaute, al onely he her toke
 And wed her so, and to Guyan went
 The yere was then a thousand who so loke
 The hundreth also, sixty and fyue extent
 Rycharde his lone, whiles he was there regent
 In Burdeaur bozne was the with great gladnes
 Suppoysng then, of him great worthynes.

20 The kyng Peter of Castel and Lyon
 To Burdeaur came, & ther prince Edward beheld
 To get againe his worthy region
 Fro whiche his brother bastarde with full strong
 Had put him out, & thought it for to weeld (beeld
 For whiche the prince with al his whole power
 Rode into Spain to helpe him to conquer

Wher then he faught, against the bastard strong
 The third day of April accompted then
 In battail soze ferfoughten there ful long
 In whiche were slaine ful many a Spanishe man
 The bastard fled, the prince the felde there wan
 And set the kyng Peter in his region
 In peace and rest without rebellion

The. C.lxxvi. Chapter.

How þ lordes of Italy sent ambassade to kyng Edward
 for sir Leonel of Andwarpe, to make him kyng of Italye,
 who was create earle of Ulster by his wyfe, daughter and
 heire to Rycharde earle of Ulster of whom he gatte dame
 Philip, wedded to Edmonde Mortymere earle of Marche,
 whiche erle of Marche gatte Roger earle of Marche and
 my lady Percy.

The

Kyng Edwarde



He duke of Milayn that hight sir Ber
nabo

The lord Mantowc and the marques
ferrat

The lord of Mountpollesterne the also

The lordes of Jene, of Dyle that then were

The lordes of Venis, and florence there

To kyng Edward, sent ambassiate

By cominen assent, of papal senate

20 For Lionel his sonne, with them to send

The duke his doughter of Melayn, for to wed

Promisynge him then, him so to recommend

That of Italpe the rule should all be led

By him and his frendes, of Italpe bred

And in short tyme, to ioy and bere the croune

Of al Italpe the royal region

20 His wyfe was deade, and at Clare was buried

And none heyre he had, but his doughter fayre

Philip that hight, as chronicles specified

Whom quene Philip christened for his heyre

Tharchebishop of Porke, for his compeire

Her godmother also, of Warwyke the countesse

A lady was of al great worthynes.

20 The kyng his sonne, sir Leonel create

Duke of Clarence, and to Melayn him sent

With chivalrie of fame, wel ordinate

And squyres freshe, galaunt and sufficient

With officers and yomey, as appent

And with him went that great ambassiate

At his costage, to Melayn consociate

The

The C.lxxxviii. Chapiter.

Howe fyr Leonel when his wyfe Elianor was dead was created duke of Clarence, and wedded the dukes doughter of Melayn in Lumbardy, and dyed there and had no chylde with her, and some saye he is buried there, and some saye, his bones were brought home and buried at Clare in Essex but in trouthe of Clare he had his name and honour of duke of Clarence, for Clare is called Clarentia in Latyne, and also Clarence in Frenche.



His duke royal, of Clarence excellent
At Melayn, wedded was then in royall
With that lady fayre & beniuolēt (wyse
ful royally, as to suche a prince should
And also the rule he had, by counsel wyse (suffice
fro mount Godard, vnto the cytie of Florence
And welbeloued was, for his sapience.

In cytees al, he helde wel vnitees
Great iustes ay, and ioyous tourneimentes
Of lordes & knightes, he made great assemblies
Throughe al the land, by his wyse regiment
They purposed whole, by their common assentes
To crowne him kyng, of al great Italy
Within halfe a yere, for his good gouernaly

In al the world, was then no prince him lyke
Of high estature, and of al semelynes
Aboue al men, within his whole kyngrike
By the shulders, he might be sene doutles
As a mayde in halle of gentilnes
And in al other places, sonne to rethorike
And in the felde, a Lyon Marinerike

In whiche meane tyme, his iustes & his excesse

Kyng Edward

His great ryot, and wynges deliscacie
His ghost exiled out of his corps doubtlesse
Afore the day set of his regence
For whom was made great mone, through Italy
Some sayen he is buried at Melayn
And other some say, at Clare certayn

¶ But children had he none, but Philip heyze
By Elizabeth his fyrst wyfe, whiche the kyng
Edward married to Edmond Mortimer
Therle of Marche, that was his warde full yong
Who gate on her, Roger their derelyng
And Elizabeth wed to Henry Percy
Sonne and heyze, vnto therle Henry.

¶ Of Northumberland, which two both father &
Were knightly men, in warres ay occupied (sone
Beyond the sea, great worshyp had they wonne
In many a realme, ful greatly magnified
For marcial actes by them multiplied
The whiche were long here to reporte
For in their tyme, they were of noble porte

¶ But of the prince Edward, yet would I say
Howe he fro Spayne departed then in dede
The kyng Peter toke him, his doughters twayn
The elder hight dame Constance as I rede
The duke John wedded, his life with her to lede
The yonger hight dame Isabel by name
The duke Edmond of York wedded of great fame

¶ And in the yere, a thousand fully written
Thre hundredeth eke sixty, and also fouretene

The

The prince Edwardc dyed, as wel was weten
At Kenyngton, whiche was his palpe clene
And buryed was, at Cauntorbury as I wene
Betoke him whole to Gods disposicion
After his mercy to suffre his punyction.

And in the yere of Chrystes incarnation
A thousand whole, thre hundredeth signified
The prince pereles, by al informacion
Sixty and seuentene clerely notified
Great sickenesse, so had him victoried
And droue him out, from al his region
That neuer prince might haue done by persecuciō

In June the. xxii. daye expresse
Was, when he died, and from this worlde expired
That was the floure of yearthly worthynes
That to the height of knighthode had aspired
His owne hand pereles, as was enquired
At Westmynster buried in royal wyse
As to suche a prince, of reason ought suffice.

Who was the fyrst of Englishe nacion
That cuer had right, vnto the croune of Fraunce
By succession of blod and generacion
Of his mother without variaunce (staunce
The whiche me thynketh, should be of moost sub-
For Chryst was kyng by his mother of Judee
Whiche likerer syde is ay, as thinketh me.

And of his pedegre vnto the creune of Fraunce
With his blod, wherof he is discent
Within this boke, without any variaunce

Kyng Richard

Mencion is made, onely to this entent
That readers by al good aduiselement
The tytyle of his right and heritage
May wel conceyue, and haue therof knowledge

The. C. lxxxviii. chapter.

Richard the seconde kyng of England and of Fraunce,
began to reigne the yere a. M. CCC. lxxvii, and was depo-
sed by parliament, in the yere a thousand thre hundredth xxi.
and the. cxii. yere of his reigne.

Kyng Ri-
chard the
second.



Richard his heyre, the sone of prince Ed-
warde

Crowned was then, with al solempnitee
By all the lordes and barons whole a:
Obeiyng whole vnto his maiestie (warde
Who that tyme, was in tendre iuuensee
Of cleuen yere, fully accompted of age
When he had so his crowne and heritage

And kyng was called, of England, & of Fraunce
In June the. xxi. day ful clene
Of Chyestes death, without variaunce
A thousand was, thre hundredth sixty to neuene
And xvii. yere therwith to beleuen
When the two realmes, fel to him by Discent
As next heyre, to kyng Edward the excellent

And in the yere, a thousand thre hundredth mo-
Sixty adioynt, and therwith al nyntene
The thirde pestilence reigned in England so
So soze, that most part of the people clene
Dyed away, as through the realme was sene
And of his reigne of England and of Fraunce

The

The thyrde yere was, by very remembrance

And of his reigne, in June then the fyfth yere
 And of our lord, a thousand then accounted
 Thre hundred, eke lxxx. and one full clere
 The commons rose, an hundred M. amounted
 Of Kent and Essex, whiche that tyme surmounted
 The kynges power, and al the high estates
 For whiche the lordes fled then as exultes.

Insurrec-
 tion.

And left the kyng alone then in the toure
 With tharchebishop of Cauntorbury
 And the priour, to bene his gouernoure
 Of Clerkenwel, whiche the commons headed tho
 And brought the kyng furth, with them to go
 They asked him, al bondmen to be fre
 And take none; euer after payed to be.

They asked eke, Jacke Strawe, & Wat Tyler
 To be made dukes, of Essex and Kent
 To rule the kyng thens furth, in peace and warre
 For they be wyle, of roial regiment
 Thus tolde they the kyng al they entent
 The whiche he graunt, in al thyng by and by
 For he durst no poynt, then them deny.

Afore Jacke Strawe, the king then stode hodellesse
 Of whiche Walworth, the Mayre of Lodon trew
 Reasoned him then, of his great leudenesse
 With a dagger, in Smythfelde then him slewe.
 The citezens, with him then strongly drewe
 And slewe them doune, and put them to flight
 And brought the kyng, into the citee right

The

¶ The commons bzent the Sauye, a place sayre
foz euil wyl they had vnto duke John
Wherfore he fled Northward in great dyspayre
Into Scotland, for succoure had he none
In England then, to whom he durst make moone
And there abode, tyl commons al were ceased
In England whole, and al the land wel peased.

¶ The .xx. day of Maye next folowynge
And one therewith, as Calculers it knowe
The date of Christ a thousand then beyng
Thre hundredeth also fourescore and two on rowe
The yearth quake was, whiche that tyme I sawe
That casteles, walles, towres and steeles fel
Houses and trees and craggess fro the hyl.

¶ And in the yere afoze, kyng Richard wed
Quene Anne, vpon saint Agnes day that floure
That doughter was, as I haue seene and red
Unto the kyng of Beeme and Emperoure
And syster also, vnto his successoure
The emperour of Rome, that Segemond hight
Who to kyng Henry in England came ful right

The. C. lxxix. Chapter.

¶ Howe kyng Richard went into Scotland, in the yere a
thousand. CCC. lxxvi. and in his reigne the .x. yere, & howe
he create two dukes of Yorke and Gloucestre.

¶ **A**N in the yere of Christ, a thousand so
Thre hundredeth also, fourescore & .vi. ther tyl
And of his reigne, the .x. yere and mo
The kyng Richard, with host went at his wyl
Into

Into Scotland, his corage to fulfyl
To Edynburgh, and byent the land also
Without lettynge there of any fo.

At London so then at his parliament
He made therle of Cambridge his vnclere
The duke of Yorke, to be incontinent
And so he was proclaymed there ful clere
That Edmond hight, of Langley of good chere
Glad and mery, of his owne ay liued
Without wrong, as chronicles haue byeued.

When al the lordes, to counceyl and parliament
Went, he would to hunt and also to haukyng
Al gentle dispoite, as to a lord appent
He vsed ay, and to the poore supportyng
Where euer he was, in any place bidyng
Without supprise, or any extorcion
Of the poore, or any oppressyon.

He made also the erle of Buckyngham
Thomas Woodstocke, that same day and create
His other vnclere duke of Gloucester by name
Proclaymed whole, and so denominate
With his brother to be consociate
The fore tayle he bare ay on his spere
Where he so rode in peace, or els in warre.

The kyng then made the duke of Yorke by name
Mayster of the new house, and his haukes fayre
Of his venery, and mayster of his game
In what countre he dyd reseye
Whiche was to him, without any dysseye
Wel more comfourt and great gladnesse

Then bene a lord, of worldly great rycheffe.

His vnkle Thomas, the duke then of Gloucester
And wed the doughter, then of the erle of Derby
By whiche he had, by wrytyng and by letter
The Constabulary of England, then ay forth
Bothe by South, East, West, and North
By heritage, of his wyues land and right
Of auncient tyme, by kynges graunt and hight

And in the yere of kyng Rychard eleuen
The duke Thomas that was of Gloucester
Henry the erle of Derby dyd beleuen
With him in worde, and also by his letter
The erle Marshal dyd, so then for the better
The erle Beanchampe, of Warwyke by his name
Of Arundel the erle, dyd the same.

These lordes spue together, boldly sworne
Agayne Robert Ueer, then duke of Ireland
The kynges pleasure, & one of age both like borne
Whom he loued most, as they could vnderstand
With battaile strong, at Rotcot bydge toke on
To fight with him, where then he fled away (hand
Duer Chamis, without retourne for ay.

The C.xc. Chapter.

Of the great Parliament, where the spue lordes forswore
The duke of Ireland, and his compeers.

At Lenton next accompted in the yere
At Lodon then, the kyng set his parliamēt
At Westminster to hold it there most clere
Where

Wh ere these fyue lordes came armed, by one assēt
Appealed the Duke of Ireland, of great entent
The archebishop of Yorke, that hight Neuple
And Michel poole, earle of Suffolke that whyle

Sy; Nichol Brenby; of Lodon that was Mayre
Creslyan also, and sy; Symonde Bourley
Whiche they exiled, & some they honge vnseyre
Some they headed that tyme, that was ful gape
Holt and Belknap, exiled were awaye
Into Ireland, for hye contriued treasone
Againe the kyng, and his royal croune

The erle Douglas, & the erle of Marche also
Northumberland, by west the newe castle
Unto Morpeth norwarde, did mekyl wo
At Otturborne, as chronicles dyd tel
Henry Percy, with smal host on him fel
And slewe Douglas, and many put to the flight
And gate the felde vpon his enemies right

The bat-
tail of Ot-
turborne.

He sent the lorde, sir Thomas Umfreuile
His brother Robert, and also sir Thomas Gray
And sir Hawe Redmayn, beyond þ Scottes that
To hold them in, that they fled not away (whyle
Wherfore the Scottes releued againe alway
Throug whiche, Henry was taken there anone
To Dunbar led, for whom was made great mone

The felde was his, al if that he were take
The Umfreuile Grey, Ogle and Redmayn
Helde the feld whole, that might so for his sake
And knewe nothyng whetherward he was gayn
The

Kyng Richard

The erle of Marche, with prey men alane
Ful pryncly to Dunbarre, with him rode
And kept him there, for he was greatly ferde.

¶ The Douglas al that many were that day
Laboured ful sore, with wyles and great wyt
Him to haue slayne, for euer and ay
For Douglas death, so sore they rewed it
This battail was on saint Oswaldes day comyt
The. xii. yere of the kyng, and of Chyestes date
Thyrtene C. fourescore, and eyght sociate.

The. C. xci. Chapter.

¶ How the quene Anne dyed, and howe kyng Richard
went fyrst to Ierusalem with his host.

AND in the yere, a thousand. iii. C. and mo
fourescore and. xiiii. quene Anne dyed
The. xviii. yere, was of the kyng then so
And buried was, as wel is notified
Of al vertue, she was wel lauded
To womanhede, that might in ought appende
At Westminster, she is ful wel comende.

¶ At Michelmasse next after folowyng
In that same yere, the kyng to Ireland went,
With great power, & host therin warryng
Upon Makmurre, with al his whole entent
And on the great Ouele, by one assent
Of his lordes, where Makmurre & great Ouele
To him obeyed. and made him homage leel.

¶ The erle of Marche, sir Roger Mortymer
The

The kyng made then Leuetenaunt of Ireland
That yong was then, and home he came that yere
And great housholde helde, as I can vnderstand
far passyng kynges, of any other land
for whiche, the voyce on him rose and name
Throughe chystendome, he bare then furth y fame

And in the yere a thousand, as was then
Thre hundred eke fourescore, and also sixtene
Of his reigne, the .xviii. yere was then
At Alhalowmass kyng Rycharde as was sene
At Calyce wed, dame Isabel the quene
Kyng Charles doughter, that then was kyng of
At Chyristmas crowned by gouernaunce (Fraunce

And in Smithfeld great, iustes and toymen
Of al realmes and diuers nacion
Of Englyshe, Fryshe and Walshe present
Of Scottes also, were at the coronacion
And iusted there with great comendacion
By .xliii. dayes iusted who so wolde
Henry of Derby, bare him then ful bolde

Henry Percy, and Raufe his brother gay
Robert Morley; and sir John Greene Cornwel
Here Nichol Hauberke, and eke for Hawburney
Walter Bitterley, sir Thomas Blankeuile
Sy; Hugh Spencer, and Jamco saunz fayle
Heer Hans, heer John, & the lord Fitz Walter
Blaket Dynmoke, and also the lord Spencer

Umfreuile, and his brother Robert
Umfrey Stafforde, and sir Rycharde Arundel

These

Kyng Edwarde

These .xx. helde the felde within ful snert
Agayne al other, that would with Justes mel
Of what nacion he were, that man can tel
Of in any land, the knyghtes iusted thare
And squyres also without, that wel them bare

The C.xciii. Chapiter.

Howe the kyng arest the duke of Gloucester, the erles of
Warwyke, and Arundel, and foriudged them for treason, &
made .v. Dukes, a Marques, and .iiii. earles, and watched
day and night with Chechyre men, for drede of insurreccion



He yere of Christ, a .M. was so then
The C.cke.lxxx and also seuentene
At midsommer, the king w many a man
At Blash toke Thomas, of Woodstok
Of Gloucester, the duke þ was ful clene (ful kene
That smyten was, in fel and great sickenesse
And in the Towre him put in great distresse.

Whom sone he sent, to Calyce secreately
And murdered him, in the princes ynn
By whole aduice, of his councel priuely
And in eche shyre, of whiche he dyd great synne
His confession of treason, more and mynne
Of nyne poyntes fayned, he then proclaymed
To staunche the folke, þ toz him cryed & claymed.

He then arest Thomas, erle of Warwyke
And erle Rycharde, of Arundel no lees
The lord Cobham ful true, and also manlyke
Foriudged them, by strength of men and prees
The erle of Warwyke, his name for to destresse
Unto

Unto thisle of Man in soze pꝛyson
Of Arundel therle headed for treason

¶ The lord Cobham into pꝛyson perpetual
In the towꝛe to abyde for evermoze
At Wyghelmaste next so then dyd befall
The kyng then helde his great parliament thore
At Westmynster, where the kyng mustred soze
At the Blackeheth, an hundꝛeth thousand men
To make the comons, for to dreadd him then

At whiche parliament, he made therle of Derby
Duke of Hereford, therle of Rutland also
Of Almarle duke, tꝛerle of Kent duke of Surry
Therle of Huntynghdon duke of Excester tho
Therle Marshal he made and no mo
Duke of Northfolke, thus were there dukes fiue
Of newe create, and none was substantiue

¶ He made therle of Somerset marques
Of Dorset then, sir John Beaufort that hight
Of pooꝛe liuelode that was that tyme doubtles
Foure erles next he made, in mantiles ful right
With swerdes girt, the lord Spencer one hight
That create was then erle of Gloucester
Thomas Percy also erle of Worcester.

¶ The lord Beuel then erle of Westmerland
William Scrope erle of Wilshyre create
That Chamberleyn was then, I vnderstand
And treasourer of England ordinate
These foure erles were thus consociate
Then al these dukes, and erles with many mo

Of lordes pong he had ay with him.

Byshops thirtene, he held then furth eche day
Barons many, and many a worthy knight
To great nombze, and squiers freshe and gay
And officers, wel ino then neded right
In eche office, by tenfolde ino to sight
Then were afoze, for then he had eche day
Two hundzeth men, of Cheshyre where he laye.

To watche him ay, where soeuer he lay
He dyed him ay, so of insurreccion
Of the commons and of the people ay
He trusted none of al his region
But Cheshyremen for his protection
Wher euer he rode, with arowes and bowes bent
They were with him, ay redy at his entent.

The. C. xciii. Chapter.

How in the tyme of king Rychard reigned ouer passyng
pyde, aduouty, and lechery as wel in men of the spiritual-
tee as in other of his house.

Truely I heard Robert Treleffe say
Clerke of the grene cloth, that to y^e household
Came euery day, for most part alway
Ten thousand folke, by his messies told
That folowed the house, ay as they would
And in the kech in thye hundzeth seruitours
And in eche office many occupiers.

And ladies faire with their gentillwomen
Chamberers also and launderers
Thye hundzeth of them were occupied then

There

There was great pride among the officers
 And of al men farpassyng their compeers
 Of riche aray, and muche moze costious
 Then was befoze, oꝛ sith, and moze precious

20 Pomen and gromes, in cloth of silke arayed
 Sattyn and damaike, in doublettes and gounes
 In cloth of grene, and scarlet toꝛ bnpayed
 Cut werke was great, bothe in court and tounes
 Bothe in mens hoddies, and also in their gounes
 Broudur and furrer, & goldsmith werke ay newe
 In many a wyse, eche day they dyd renewe

20 In his chapel, were bishoppes then of Beame
 Some of Ireland, and some also of Fraunce
 Some of England, and clerkes of many a realme
 That lytle connyng had oꝛ consaunce
 In musike honorably, God his seruice to auauce
 In the chapel, oꝛ in holy scripture
 On matter of God his to refigure

20 Lewed men they were in clerkes clothynge
 Disguysed fayre, in fourme of clerkes wyse,
 Their parishys ful lytle enfourmyng
 In lawe deuine, oꝛ els in God his seruice
 But right practyse they were in couetise
 Eche yere to make ful great collection
 At home, in stede of soules correction.

¶ Great lechery and fornicacion
 Was in that house, and also great aduoutre
 Of Barainoures was great consolacion
 Of eche degre, wel moze of prelacye

B.ii.

Then

Then of the tempoꝛal, oꝝ of the chivalrie
Great tace aȝ the kyng toke thꝛough al the land
Foꝝ whiche the cōmons him hated both fre & bond

The. C. xciiii. Chapter.

¶ Botw the duke of Berford, and the duke of Northfolke
were exiled out of England.

AN in the yere M. and thye hūdzeth clere
foure score and therwith al eightene
And of his reigne the twenty & two yere
The duke Henry of Berford as was sene
At Couentree, in barres armed clene
Agayne the duke of Northfolke, foꝝ treason
Whiche bothe, the kyng exiled fro his region

¶ The duke Henry, exiled was also foꝝ ten yere
The other was also foꝝ teryne of life
That dyed duke, at Wenys leyde on bere
But duke Henry exiled was belue
Lyke as the chꝛonicle can openly discriue
Foꝝ ten yere whole, foꝝ to abyde in fraunce
And to auoyde the realme with variaunce

¶ Upon the payne of decollacion
And hyng sone befoꝝe saint Edwardes day
In October called the translatiō
Upon whiche day, he shꝛydded fourth his way
At Calice landed, and so rode on alwaye
Unto Paris, where he was fayre recepte
With lordes many, and woꝝshꝛyfully was mette

¶ In Lenton next, duke John his father dyed
Of

Of Lancaster, of weakenes, and of age
Entombed fayre, at saint Poules buried
His heyre in Fraunce should haue his heritage
In Maye then next, the kyng with baronage
To Ireland went, with hoost and great power
The wylde Irishe to wyne, and to conquere

For then Roger the erle of Marche was slaine
With wylde Irishe, in bushment for him laye
His sonnes then, ful yong were bothe twayn
In warde were take, vnto the kyng that daye
And then the kyng made ful fell araye
In euery shyre, blanke charters to be sealed
For cause his actes should not be repelled

Blanke
chartres.

In the yere of Chyist a thousand was then clere
Thre hundred also fourescore and eke ninetene
And of his reigne the two and twenty yere
Beginnyng at Widsomer, then as I meane
Whiche afterwarde turned him to mikel tene
He was then landed, in Ireland with his hoost
Of chiuailrie and power with the moost

Kyng Ric-
hard his
voyage in-
to Ireland.

The C. xcv. Chapter.

Howe duke Henry of Berforde and Leicester landed in
Holdernesse in the same yere, and Thomas Arundel arch-
bishop of Cauntorburie that before was exiled, and howe
duke Henry swore to the erle of Northumberland and to sir
Henry Percy wardens of the Marches and to the erle of
Westmerland and to other lordes of the North.

At whiche tyme so the duke Henry toke lād
At Rauenspoin in Yorkshyre as was knowe
The archbishop Thomas I. vnderstande

B. iii.

Of

Kyng Richarde

Of Cauntorbury Arundel that was lowe
Bothe of Ryches and gold as men sawe
For the kyng had him out of the land exiled
fro Cauntorbury neuermore to be reconciled

¶ In Holderneshe he landed with fourty men
Where the lordes of Lyncolnshyre him met
Bothe Wyloughby Roos, and Percy then
And Beaumont also, with Benouns proudly bet
By ordinaunce of Henry Percy set
Erle of Northumberland, and sir Henry
His sonne, wardens of the Marche severally

¶ To Dancaster he rode ful manfully
Where bothe the wardeyns of the Marche mette
Then with the duke with hostes great & chivalrie
Therle also of Westmerland was sette
With his power, as then it was his deue
For he had wed the dukes syster dere
A ful good lady without any were

¶ There swoze the duke vpon the sacrament
To clayme nomore, but his mothers heritage
His fathers landes, and his wyfes in good entent
And to lay doune, bothe tare and tallage
Whiles he might lyue, but of the baronage
And all the states somouned in parliament
Thought it nedeful and therto whole assent

¶ He swoze also, the kyng in gouernaunce
To be put by good and whole prouision
And Cheshyre men, for their misgouernaunce
To boyde out of his house of euil condicion

And

And officers of good disposicion
To rule his house, like his estate royall
Thus was his othe there made in especial.

Then rode they furth to Bristowe, where then lay
Scrope and Bushe, and also sir Henry Greene
And headed them, but Baget fled away
And then the kyng, at flynt as was sene
Great monstres made, of people that was kene
Whiche toke his wage, and came to Duke Henry
And rode ay furth with him ful redely.

In this meane whyle, therle of Northumberland
Created with the kyng, that tyme in Conway
To mete the duke Henry, then in England
And brought him then, to his in weke aray
With lytle speche to Chester then the way
They rode anone and put him there in warde
And so to London, from thence came southwarde.

The C. cxi. Chapter.

Howe duke Henry of Lancaster was made kyng, by resignacion, renunciacion and depofaile and election of the parliament and crowned at Westmynstre on saint Edwardes day in October.



And set him in the Towre, wher he resigned
His right, his realme, and his royall
croune

To duke Henry, whiche no man then repugned
And there made a plaine renunciacion
Of al his right, for whiche by prouision
The parliament then, for his misgouernaunce

B. liti,

Deposed

Kyng Richearde

Deposed him so then, by great ordinaunce.

Then went they to a free election
Seyng the youth then of the Mortimer
That erle of the Marche, by true direction
Was then, and heyr of England then most nere
To kyng Rycharde, as wel then did appere
Consyded also the might of duke Henry
They chose him kyng, there durst none it deny.

Therle of Northumberland, then had sent
His power home, by councel of duke Henry
So dyd his sone Henry, that truely ment
Supposyng wel the duke would not vary
From his othe, ne in no wyse contrary
And he and his, kept al their power
Tyl he was crowned kyng, as it dyd appere.

Therles two, then of Northumberland
Of Worcester, and sir Henry Percy
And therle also of Westmerland
Councelled him then fro his othe not to vary
And thowh at eue he dyd to them applie
On the morowe, by a preby counsaile
He would be crowned kyng without fayle.

The C. xcvi. Chapter.

Henry the fourth kyng of England and of Fraunce, was
electe by the whole parliament, the morowe after Michels
masse day, the yere of our Lord M. CCC. lxxxix. and reig-
ned fouretene yere, and dyed at Westmynster the. xix. daye
of Marche, in the yere of Christ a thousand four hundred
and xii. and of his owne reigne. the xiiii. yere.

Thys



His duke Hentye, by great loue of the
land

Kyng Be
ry the. iiii.

Of many lordes and of the comonte
The archbishop of Brundell toke on
hand

To croune him then, in royal maiestie
On saint Edwardes day, with great solempnitee
But kyng he was the morowe after Michelmasse
His reigne beginnyng that day without distresse.

¶ Therle of Warwyke, and therle of Brundel
That cryed were, and the Lozde Cobham eke
With al their frendes, that kyng Richard did expel
The dukes of Gloucester, nought to seke
Whiche then began for to encrease and eke
Throughe al the realme, with kyng Henry to stād
To croune him kyng, that tyme of al England.

¶ An hundreth thousand cryed al at ones
At Westmynster, to croune him for kyng
So hated they kyng Rycharde for the nones
for his misrule, and wrong gouernynge
for taxes and for blanke charters sealyng
for murder of duke Thomas of Woodstocke
That loued was wel, more then al the flocke.

¶ The great parliament, then he made reherfed
The dukes of Almarle, Excester and Surry
He depriued and the iudgement reuerfed
That then was made, and gaue ful wylfully
Agayne Woodstocke and Warwyke for eny
Brundel and the lord Cobham ful true
Whiche was reuerfed and reuoked newe

The

King Henry

¶ The duke of Almarle, was then erle Rutland
The duke of Surry, erle of Kent was againe
And eke the duke of Excester I vnderstand
Of Huntynghdon therle was to be sayne
The Marques eke of Dorset was ful bayne
Of Somerset erle againe to bene
He chastised them, no feller as was sene

¶ Therle of Gloucester, was lord Spencer
Then set againe to his fyrst estate
The kyng then made his eldest sonne ful clere
The prync of Wales, in parliament whole create
Duke of Cornewayle and erle denominate
Of Chester also that then was yong of age
But yet he was that tyme of hye courage.

The. C. xciii. Chapter.

¶ Howe the kyng gaue the Constablerye and Marshallee
to therles of Northumberland and Westmerland with cer-
tayne landes, and howe sir Robert Umfreuile was made
knight of the Barter and capitayne of Rokelburgh, and
fought on fore on Fulhoplewe and wan the feld with victo-
ry and was made lord Umfreuile.

¶ This tyme the kyng graunted by parlia-
MA The Costablerye certain of England (ment
In heritage so at his coronement
To therle then of Northumberland
Also of man thise I vnderstand
To holde of him and of his heyres alway
By seruike royal, as wyten was that day.

¶ And to therle of Westmerland also

The

The Marshallsee of England then he gaue
 All Richemond fee, that was in England tho
 By patent also, for terme of life to haue
 The lordes al he pleased, so God me saue
 With office ay, or els with land or rent
 With libera l heart, as to a prince appent.

And whyles that parliament so did endure
 The Scottes rode by North, and soze had stroyed
 In Cokedale then, where Umfreuile had cure
 That with them faught, & had them soze anoyed
 At fulhaplowe, on fote he them acloyed
 For there he toke sir Richard Rotherford
 His sonnes fyue, ful fel of dede and woꝛde.

¶ Sy? Wyllyam Stitwarde, also he toke
 The lord of Goꝛdoune, he put to flight
 And Wyllybard, the felde there then forsoke
 And prisoners brought home, wel mo at night
 Then he had men with him the felde to fight
 For whiche the kyng, hun had ay after in cherte
 Consideryng wel his knightly aperte.

The C. xcix. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng Henry remeued kyng Richard fro place
 to place, by night in pꝛeuy wyle, in whiche tyme therles of
 Kent, Salisbury and Hantynghdon, the lord Spencer and
 sir Raulfe Lomley were beheaded.

¶ He kyng then sent, kyng Richard to Ledis
 There to be kept surely in pꝛeuittee
 Fro thens after, to Wykeryng wethenedes.
 And to Knaucsburgh, after led was he

But

King Henry

But to Bountfrete last, where he dyd dye
Bothe therles, of Kent and Salisbury
Therle of Huntynghdon, and Spencers sothely.

And sir Raulfe Lomley with mo company
After Christmas, thought to haue slayn the kyng
They were distured, and fled away in hie
But they were slaine at Circester fleyng
By the comons, with them there fighttyng
Therles of Kent and Salisbury
And sir Raulfe Lomley in theyr company.

And the lord Spencer, take was vpon the sea
At Bristowe was headed and decollate
Therle also of Huntynghdon dyd flee
And brought vnto the countesse of estate
Of Herforde then, who had him furth algate
To Blashe, where she made men him hede
Without counsaile of any lord or rede.

Sir Thomas Shelly, set ful hie in pride
And Hawbleyn with fereby drawe and hong
Sir Barnard Brookes, was headed them beside
The bishop also of Carleile them among
In Westmynster, his life there to prolong
Perpetually by iudgement was comynpte
Among his brethren in order for to sytte.

The. CC. Chapter.

Howe king Richard was brought deade from Bountfret to Poules, and after buried at Langley, for men should haue no remembraunce of him. And howe sir Robert Umfreuile faught with the Scottes at Redeswre and had the felde and the victory.

In



L Marche nexte after, kyng Rycharde
then was dede
fro Doumfrete brought with great so-
lempnitee

Men sayd forhungered he was & lapped in lede
At Poules his masse was done and dirige
In hers royal, semely to royalte
The kyng & lordes, clothes of golde there offerde
Some. vii. some. ix. vpon his hers were proferde

At Westmynster then did they so the same
When trust he should there haue burped bene
In at that mynster lyke a pryncce of name
In his owne tombe, together with the quene
Anne, that afore his fyrst wyfe had bene
But then the kyng, him fast to Langley sent
There in the freers to be burped secretement

On Mychelmasse Day, next after his coronacion
Syr Robert then my maister Umfreuile
At Redeswyres, without excusacion
With Rycharde Rotherford fought that whyle
And toke the Stewarde, as I can compyle
And James Douglas, with the lord Seton
And prisoners many, for to geue raunsome

Two hundreth men, by the felde were slayne
Thre hundreth fled, some whole, some maymed sore
That dreed at home, with sorowe and with payne
Some dyed homeward, & home they came nomore
Where so he fought vnto his men right thore
A mery worde he would say o: they met
To glad their heartes, enemies to ouerset.

The

The kyn-
ges voy-
age into
Scotland

The second yere of his reigne, then he went
In haruest tyme, so into Scotland
And Edenburgh, with the countree bzent
In whiche tyme the Scottes bzent our land
All Damburgh shyre in Northumberland
For bothe wardeynes, with the kyng were gone
No wardeyne there, but husbantes by their owne

The. CC. i. Chapter.

Owne Owen of Glendoure rose in Wales agayne the
kyng and made warre on the lord Gray Ruthin, and toke
the lord Gray and sir Edmond Mortimer.

The kyng came home, and to London went
At Michelmass, where then he had message
That Owen Glendoure, then felly bzent
In England soze, and dyd ful great damage
For cause the lord Gray helde his heritage
And to the kyng of it, ful soze had plained
No remedye gate, so was he then demeaned

The lord Gray Ruthin dyd him great wrong
Destroyed his land, and he dyd him the lame
So bothe Marches, destroyed were ful long
But Owen wanne him selfe, eche day great name
Of vasselry, of gentyls and of fame
That he them dyd, for whiche to him they drewe
And became his men, and to him were ful trewe.

So on a day, the lord Gray, and he set
With great power vpon either syde
Where then they faught in battaile soze bet
And toke him then his prisoner that tyde

And

And there the felde he had with mikyl pryde
Great people toke and slewe, & home he went
The lord Gray he raunsoined at his entent

Chy? Edmond then Mortymer warred soze
Upon Owen, and did him mekyl tene
But at last, Owen lay him befoze
Where in battel they faught, as was sene
Where Owen toke him prisoner, as then ful kene
With mekyl folke, on either syde slaine
And set Edmond in prison, and great payne

The wrote vnto the kyng, for great succoure
For he had made with Owen his synaunce
To whō the kyng would graunt then no fauoure
Nought he would then make him cheuesaunce
For to comfort his foes disobeysaunce
Wherefoze he lay, in fetters and soze prison
For none payment of his great raunson.

The. CC. iii. Chapiter.

The erle of Northumberland, and his sone Henry Percy
Strooke the battail of Hamildon with the Scottes, & toke
sire erles, and discomfite. xl. thousand Scottes

In the thirde yere the earle of fyffe and
Murry
Of Athell and Angus, & Douglas also
And of Wenteth, with barons tell that
The nombze was. xl. thousand and mo (day
Had byent the land, by south Northward tho
To Hamildon, where on holy rode day

The

King Henry

The erle them met in good and strong araye

His sonne also, Henry Percy was there
George of Dunbarre, was in their company
And with the Scottes that day fought ful fere
Discomfited them, and the victoꝛye
Sire erles taken and .xl. thousand playnly
Some fled, some died, some maymed ther for euer
That to Scotland, agayne came they neuer

The kyn-
ges voya-
ges into
Wales.

The kyng Henry, thysse to Wales went,
In the hawe tynic, and haruest dyuers yere
In euery tyme were mystes and tempest sent
Of wether foule, that he had neuer power
Glendour to noy, but euer his cariage clere
Owen had at certayne straighthes and passage
And to our hoost dyd ful great damage

The kyng had neuer, but tempest foule and raine
As long as he was ay in Walc grounde
Rockes & mystes, wyndes & stormes euer certayne
Al men trowed, that witches it made that stounde
The comons al, then of al England grounde
Warred his gate, to Wales euery yere
For hay and coꝛne were lost bothe two in fere

Whiche made great derth, & of cattel moꝛayne
And euen ay in hylles and in mountaynes
Kept him ful strong, the kyng ay wrought in vaine
The kyng might not, but euermore held þ̄ pleines
And wast his owne lordshippes, & his demaynes
And ful great part Owen had occupied
By procelle in Wales, and victoꝛyed.

The

¶ Therle Henry, then of Northumberland
 Brought to the kyng, his owne prisoner
 Therle of fyffe, was then I vnderstand
 Herye vnto the Duke of Albany clere
 Regent that was of Scotland without pere
 But sir Henry his sonne, then would not bryng
 His prisoners in no wyse to the kyng

¶ But the kyng he prayed for Mortymer
 That raunsomed might he bene with his frendes
 He sayd him nay, for he was taken prisoner (so
 By his consent and treason to his fo
 Whom he would not comforte for to ouergo
 The prince his landes, ne his owne to destroy
 For ay he had great trust, that he should him noy.

¶ The kyng him blamed, for he toke not Owen
 When he came to him on his assuraunce
 And he answered then to the kyng againe
 He might not so kepe his assiaunce
 To shame him selfe with suche a variaunce
 The kyng blamed him for his prisoner
 Therle Douglas, for cause he was not there

¶ And sayd he should him fette, but he him send
 Sir Henry sawe no grace for Mortymer
 His wyfes brother, he went away vnkend
 To Barwyke so, and after came no nere
 Afore they mette, at Shrewesbury in tere
 Where then they faught, for cause of his entent
 He purposed had, Mortymer his coronement.

¶ The lordes al of England had him hight

C. l.

And

Kyng Henry

And Owayn also on seuerne him to mete
Except therle of Stafford yong to fight
By their letters, vnder their scales mete
But in the point, they byake al their behete
And he was slaine, and al the cause conceled
Why he the feld toke and the kyng appeled

The. CC.iii. Chapter.

Howe for therle of Marche his right, sit Henry Percy
and sit Thomas Percy his vncle erle of Worcester, fought
with the kyng and were slaine at the battaille of Shrewes-
bury where al the lordes deceyued them, the yere of Christ
M. CCC.iii. and of his reigne the fourth yere, that were
bounde to them by their scales except therle of Stafford,
whiche letters I sawe in the castel of Warkeworth when
I was constable of it vnder my lord sir Robert Umfraville
who had that castel of kyng Henry his gift by forfeiture of
therle of Northumberland.



A Maudleyn euen was on the Sa-
terday
After long treate, the prince begane
to fight.
The yere of Christ a M. was no nay
foure hundreth also and thre, therto ful right
When the battaille was stryken of mekyl might
And of the kyng then was the fourth yere
Of his reigne, accompted wel and clere.

His vncle dere, was with him there deade
His father came not out of Northumberland
But failed him foule, without witte oz rede
But to the kyng he came I vnderstand
Wholy submittyng him vnto his royal hand

Whom

Whom then he put to hold in soze prison
With two men of his owne bagynnton.

His castelles, all his men held then ful strong
To tyme the kyng had, graunt him plener grace
But the lordes, in counsaill then among
Hight him to helpe, the sixt yere at his Pasche
But none durst come that tyme, so fel the case
But bishop Shrop and therle Marshal
The lord Bardolfe then of our lordes all.

The CC.iii. Chapiter.

Howe in the yere of his reigne and in the yere of Christ,
a thousand CCC. and syue, mayster Rycharde Scrope arch-
bisshope of Yorke, Thomas Mombay earle Marshal,
sir John Lamplewe and sir Wiliyam Blompton were hea-
ded beside Yorke.

H A Lenton after came home to his land
By Parliament, whole deliuered & acquit
And two yere after, in peace I vnderstand
With kyng Henry, ful peaceably dyd sytte
Then in the yere as men remeinbze it
Of his reigne the sixt, the bishop Scrope went
Therle marshal with him of one entent

To Yorkes Moze, and there assembled power
Of their owne, and their frendes also
Of therles men of Northumberland that were
To the nombze of twenty thousand tho
Afore the day assigned, that was so
By therle then of Northumberland
That ther Chieften with them should haue stand

Kyng Henry

With other lordes that we to them assent
But the bishop and therle marshal
Where slaine afore the day of assignement
Betwene them made afore in special
Headed were then, nere Yorke as then dyd fal
Syr John Lamplewe and sir Willam Blomton
With the bishop were headed there for treason.

The. CC. v. Chapter.

Howe the lorde Hastynge, the lorde Fauconbrige and
sir John Coluile of the Dale and his make, and sir John
Ruthin were headed at Duresme by the kyng for the earles
of Northumberland and then he gate therles castelles and
stroke of seven heades at Barwyke.

He lorde Hastynge at Duresme was
then take
The lorde Fauconbrige together in
company
Syr John Coluile of the Dale and his make
Syr John Ruthin that knightes were ful manly
To therle of Northumberland openly
Were headed there al foure vpon a day
And to werkworth remeued in great aray

Where the castel within a weke was yelde
Unto the kyng, after assautes fel and fore
The casteleyns to passe free where they would
With horse and harnes, without chaleng moze
Then to Aluwyke, the kyng remoued thore
Where the capitaynes vnto the kyng then sent
Wyrne Barwyke ones, he should haue his entent

So went he then to Barwyke without delay
with

With assaut & shotte, of gonnes strong that were
He had it then, and there headed on a day
The barons sonne of Graistoke taken there
By Henry Bouton and Blenkenlop therfore
And Wendirgest ranne on the sea also
And Tywyle with other squiers two.

To Aluwyke then, the kyng layde siege again
Without assaut, by whole conuencion
Henry Percy of Athel, with heart fain
And Willjam Clifford, without discencion
The castel yeld at the kynges entencion
With horse and harnes, without enpechement
Of forfeiture or els impediment

Whodhow Langler and also Cokirmouth
Aluhain Newsted, deliuered were anone
They remoued then furth into the south
Therle of Northumberland was then gone
Afore Northward, to Scotland with great mone
The lord Bardolfe with him thither went
And there abode, with their suppowelment

The sommer next by sea to Wales went
Unto Glendour, and after then Butayn
And so by sea, to Flaunders or they stent
The other sommer, to Scotland came againe
By thest sea, and there they dyd remayne
To the wynter then, of snowe ful depe
That they were slaine, for who the folke soze wepe

The nynthe yere was then of the kyng Henry
In february afore the fastyngang

Kyng Henry

Of Christ his date a thousand certaynly
Foure hundredeth and eight, counted among
At Biamham moze with speres sharpe and long
In Porkeshyre, so the Rokeby with them mette
Shrief of the shyre, with power that he gette

The CC.vi. Chapter.

Howe the kyng his sone of Scotland and herye James
was taken on the sea and brought vnto the kyng, and then
dyled Dwayn and the kyng of Scotland.

The same yere also, the prince then of Scot-
Upō the sea sailyng, then into Fraunce (land
Was taken & brought to the kyng of Eng-
Eleuen yere olde was he then, by remembraunce (lād
Whom the kyng then put in gouiernaunce
For like a prince, as to a kyng appent
In al honoure as was conuenient.

AThe tenth yere then of the kyng his date
The kyng of Scotland, and Dwayn of Glendore
His sonne also, the worlde forsoke then algate
And dyed away, of them then was nomoze
The prince of Scotland then was kyng therfore
And Wales al became the kyng his men
In rest and peace without rebellion then

In that same yere Gilbert Unfreuile
Lorde was then of Riddisdale in Keyne
That passed not seuentene yere that whyle
And ward was to the kyng that tyme
But seuentene yere of age was that tyme
At Arrapes then faught ful worthely

With George Turnuile, in yestes singulerly

With are and swoorde, and dagger vpon foote
Twenty strokes with euery weapen smyten
Undeparted without any mote
And on the morowe, there they syten
Twenty coursses, with speres together hitten
A quarter bare vnarmed and vnarayed
Sawe there serkes slewe with speres vnasayed.

The. CC. vii. Chapter.

How Robert Unfreulle went into Scotland and lay in
the Scottishe sea. xiii. dayes, and euery daye faught with
the Scottes, someday on the northsyde, and somday on the
southsyde, and gatte. xiiii. great shippes, and brent there
Galior with ordinaunce and sore battraile in the Scottishe
sea afore Edinburgh at the Blakenesse.

He perc cleuenth, of this same kyng Henry
By Robert Unfreulle toke the see
With ten sayles, to kepe it notably
When truce was taken in specialtee
Betwene Scotland and vs in certentee
To the Scottishe sea, bothe by sea and land
And to Monshole on our syde I vnderstand

In the Scottishe sea, with his shippes he lay
Where. xiiii. shippes he toke with his manhede
And faught ful sore, at ful sea euery day
Sometyme vpon the northsyde so in dede
And sometyme on the southsyde out of dzedde
With the duke of Albany and of fyffe
And his proude Scottes, y faught then ful ryffe.

C. llll.

With

Kyng Henry

With therle Douglas, and them of Lothian
And brought his fiers, brennyng vpon the sea
In botes and cogges ordeyned by them than
With other botes, with men of armes in properte
And archers good, wel pauished in specialte
That brent their shyppes and their galiot
A shyppe of auantage was then God wote

When he had bene, there. xliii. dayes to thende
With his prises, he came to England
ful of cloth, wollyn & lynnyn, that land to amend
Pytche and tarre, bothe for fre and bond
For to amende the shyppes of our land
Floure and meale of whete and rye of solde
The market he so amended manyfolde.

And wood he had, and other marchaundise
Woll and hyde, and yron great quantitee
Woll skynnes, clothe of gold and spyceries
Jewelless in chestes and stones of preciouste
And other marchauntes in spectiouste
And prisoners also, and mykel flaxe
Wynnes swete, and mykel poleyn ware.

The. CC. viii. Chapter.

Howe sir Robert Umfreuile brent pebles on their mar-
ket day, and made his men to mete theyr clothe with speres
and bowes, and after the Scottes called him Robyn Mend
market, and his neuwe brente Jedworth and Teudale
sone after.



Pebles long, afore that tyme. liii. yere
He brent the toune, vpon their market day
And met their cloth, w speres & bowes sere

By his bidding without any nay
 wherfore the Scottes from thence furthward ay
 Called him, Robyn mendmarket in certayn
 for his measures were so large and plain.

His neuewe Gilbert, and he the eleuen yere
 Of kyng Henry, vpon the water of Calme than
 And also on Koule and Jedworth forest clere
 Forayed ful soze, with many a manly man
 His banner first, there was displayed then
 When he was clerely but. xiiij. yere nomore
 When his vnkle had battled him soze.

The. CC. ix. Chapter.

Howe the prince Hery of Wales sent power to the duke
 of Burgoyn to healepe him, the two Umfreuilles, sir John
 Gray with other, where Umfreuile with the Englyshe men
 helde the felde for he woulde not kyll the prisoners, as the
 duke of Burgoyne had ordeined.

The prince Henry, to duke Philip then sent
 That of Burgoyn was so both sir and lord
 Syr Gilbert Umfreuile, & his vnkle vera-
 His cousyn also sir John Gray, as me record (met
 With many other worthy, with speare and sworde
 Willjam Porter again the duke of Oyleaunce
 And his armynges with men of great defence

At Seyncle then, againe the duke of Oyleaunce
 And the duke of Burbon by al a day
 Chenglyshe faught with great sufficiency
 And wanne the bridge, with battaile bet away
 Charmynges, with many soze affaye

Where

Where Umfreulle proclaymed was erle of Ryme
Chieften was as of al Englyshe that tyme

At Durdan also, and at Etham againe
They faught al newe, where then they had the feld
And prisoners many they dyd opteyne
The whiche Duke of Burgoyne would haue weld
Because to him they were so vnbelde
Them to haue slaine he comaunded then, eche ca-
His prisoners to kyl then in certayne. (pitaine

To whiche Gilbert Umfreulle erle of Ryme
Answered for all his felowes and there men
They should all dye together at a tyme
Of their prisoners, so should be slaine then
And with that toke the felde as folke dyd ke.
With al their men, and al their prisoners
To dye with them, as worshyp it requyers

He sayd they were not come thither as bochers
To kyl the folke in market or in feyre
Ne them to sel, but as armes requyers
Them to gouerne without any dispeyre
As prisoners owe home again repeyre
For fyne payng, as lawe of armes wyll
And not on stockes nor in market them to sel

With who sir John Gray, as his cousyn dere
And al Englyshe with many other of Fraunce
With their prisoners ful familier
Battaile in felde, with ful strong ordinaunce
Dore like to fight, then to make obersaunce
And helde therle of Ryme for their chieftayn

To liue and dye vnder his baner certayne

¶ The duke Philip, ful of sapience sure
Sawe his manhode, and his knightly courage
Lothe was to lese his noble aduventure
By treaty, and by other tender message
Of prisoners, graunt them to do auantage
And him withhelde with al his felowshyp
As erle of Kyne, proclaymed of great worthyp.

¶ Then after sone, our Englishemen anone
Came home agayne, with great and hye rewarde
Whom then the duke, by letter comende alone
In writyng specified, with heart inwarde
Unto the pynce, that sent them to him warde
And thanked them greatly of his seruice
In his warres shewed againe his enemies.

¶ The kyng discharged the pynce fro his coun-
And set my lord sir Thomas in his stede (saile
Chiefe of counsaile, for the kynges moze auaille
For whiche the pynce of wrath and wilful hede.
Againe him made debate and frowardhede
With whom the kyng toke part, & helde the felde
To tyne the pynce, vnto the kyng him yelde.

¶ The kyng then made his sone duke of Clarenc
My lord Thomas, and sent him into Fraunce
To helpe the duke Lewes of Orlaunce
Againe the duke of Burgoyne at instaunce
Of my lord Thomas, againe the pynce suraunce
Whiche was the cause also of theyr heynesse
So to refuse duke Philippes loue causeles

But

Kyng Henry

But then the duke of Clarence with power
Came to the duke Lowes of Olyvaunce
Kyng Charles brother, who made him noble chere
And him receyued, with ful hys reuerence
They two warried, with mighty sufficiency
Upon the duke of Burgoyn, and him outrayed
That he went into Burgoyn, al formayed.

Then rode the duke of Clarence into Guyen
Through fraunce, with host then ful royal
And kept that lād, with helpe of duke Lewes then
In whiche meane whyle, kyng Henry gan fal
In great sickenesse, that his strength dyd pal
With contrite heart, and humble yelden chere
He sayd, O lord, thy mercy I requyre.

The. CC. x. Chapter.

The wordes that the kyng sayd at his death of high complaint, but nought of repentaunce of vsurpement of þe realme ne of the restorment of right heyyes to the crowne.



Orde he sayd, o God omnipotent
Nowe se I wel, thy Godhede loueth me
That suffered neuer my foes to haue
their entent
Of myne persone in myne aduersitee
Ne in myne sickenesse, ne in myne infirmytee
But ay hast kept it fro their maleuolence
And chastised me, by thy benciuolence.

Orde I thanke the, with al my heart
With al my solle, and spirites clere
This woynes meate, this carion ful vnquerte
That

That sometyne thought in worlde it had no pere
 This face so foule, that leprous dothe apere
 That here afore I haue had suche a pryde
 To puttraye ofte, in many place ful wyde.

¶ Of whiche right now, the poorest of this land
 Except onely, of their benignite
 Would loth to loke vpon, I vnderstand
 Of whiche good lord, that thou so visyte me
 A thousand tymes the lord in trinyte
 With all my heart, I thanke the and comende
 Into thyn handes, my soule withouten ende.

¶ And died so in faith, and whole creaunce
 At Cauntobury buried, with great reuerence
 As a kyng should be, with al kynd of circūstaunce
 Acco:dyng vnto his hye magnificence
 Besyde the pryncce Edward, with great expence
 Of Christ was then, a M. yere ful out
 foure hundreth eke, and thirtene out of doubt.

¶ O very God, what torment had this kyng
 To remembre in brieke, and short entent
 Some in his sherte, put oft tyme benemyng
 And some in meate and drinke great poysonement
 Some in his hose, by great ymageneiment
 Some in bedstraw, yrons sharp ground wel & whet
 Enuenemed soze, to slee him, if he had on them set.

The con-
 cept of the
 maker.

¶ Some made for him, diuers enchauntmentes
 To wast him out, and vtterly destroy
 And some gaue him battaile, ful felonoment
 In felde within his realme, him for to noy

And

Kyng Henry

And on them selves, the hurt and al the annoy
By fel at ende that hanged were and headed
As traytours ought to bene in euery stede

¶ This kyng died, of his reigne in the yere
fourtene accompted, of Marche the. xix. day
The sonday was then by kalendre
Of whom the realme, great ioy at fyrst had ay
But after ward they loued not his aray
At his begynnyng, ful hye he was comende
With comons then, and also lytle at the ende.

The CC. ix. Chapter.

¶ Henry the fyfth, kyng of Englande and of Fraunce, began his reigne, the twenty day of Marche that was saint Cuthbertes day, and was crowned the nyth day of Apryl, the yere of Christ, a thousand four hundred twentye and two, after he had reigned. ix. yere and an halfe. And in the houte that he was crowned and anoynted he was chaunged from al vices vnto vertuous life, and lycensed the folke to offer vnto Rycharde Scrope, and buried kyng Rycharde at Westmynstre, and graunted to Henry Percy his landes.



Henry his sonne, that pryncce of Wales
was than
On saint Cuthbertes daye in Marche
folowynge
Kyng was so, as I remembre came
On passyon sonday, after was this kyng
Anoynted and crowned, without taryng
The ninth day, it was of Apryl so
With stormes fel, and haylestones great also

¶ In his fyrst yere, the lord Cobham heretike
Confedered

Confedered with lollers insapient
 Againe the churche arose, and was ful like
 It to haue destroyed by their entendment
 Had not the kyng then made suppowelment
 And put him fro the felde, by good direction
 That sembled were, by great insurrection.

Lord Cob-
 ham.

C Then fled the lord Cobham herrozious
 To wales, so with the lollers many one
 Busyng in his opinion venemous
 Howe that might destroy the churche anone
 But God that sit in heauen aboue alone
 Knowyng his heart, naked of al good entent
 Let him betake, to haue his iudgement

A And put he was to prision in the toure
 Of whiche he dyd escape away by night
 And take was againe within an houre
 And after sone dampned, by lawe right
 For hereipe, by the clergy in sight
 And bzent he was to ashes dead and pale
 Throughe curied life, thus came he in great bale

The houre he was crowned and anoynt
 He chaunged was, of al his olde condicion
 ful vertuouse he was, fro point to point
 Grounded al newe, in good opinion
 For passyngly without comparyson
 Then set vpon al right and conscience
 A newe man made, by al good regimence.

He gaue leue then of good deuotion
 All men to offer to bishop Scrop expresse

Without

Kyng Henry

Withont lettynge, or any question
He graunted also, of his hye worthynesse
To lay the kyng Richard, and Anne doutlesse
His wyfe that was, at Westmynster buried
As kyng Richard him selfe had signified.

And fro the freers of Langley where he lay
He caried him to Westmynster anone
And buried him of foyal great araye
With the quene Anne, in tombe of marbel stone
Ful royally arayed, as royals by them sone
And to Henry Percy, he graunted his lades clere
That to the duke of Bedforde, then geuen were

My lord of Clarence, fro Guyan home againe
Came to the kyng, with ioy and great pleasaunce
The second yere, of whom the kyng was fayne
At Leicester then, as made is remembraunce
In his parliament without variaunce
His brother John, duke of Bedforde create
His brother Amfrey, duke of Gloucester of estate

Thomas Beauford, that was erle of Dorcet
He made duke then, of Excester that whyle
He gaue in charge, that tyme withouten let
Unto sir Robert there Amfreule
By his wysedome, and manhode that whyle
To treate with the Scottes, to get Henry Percy
Layde in hostage, by his grauntisrez folp.

The. CC. xii. Chapter.

Howe

Howe sir Robert Umfreuile saught at Geterpynge the
thirde yere with the Scottes, that had but seuen score speres
and thre hundred bowes, on Maudelyn day and discomfy-
red of them foure C. men and made chase twelue myle on
them in to their owne lād, and went with the kyng to Bar-
slite to the sieg with whom I went thither.

THUS was it warre betwene vs and
Scotland
That sir Robert Umfreuile might it
spede
But at Geterpynge with Scottes hand
for hand

He saugh on fote, on Maudelyn day in dede
Where. xviij. score Scottes were take I rede
Thre score slaine, a thousand put to flight
With. iiii. C. men, discomfited them furth right

Twelue myle then, he made on the great chase
Into their land, and home he came againe
To his castel of Rokelburgh in that case
Whiche he had then in keepynge soth to laine
Of his great laboure, in heart beyng ful fayne
With prisoners many one hurt ful sore
Him selfe and his, that then had wounded thore.

At Lammasse next, the kyng then as he lay
At Southampton, therle of Cambridge toke
The lord Scorpe also, and eke sir Thomas Gray
And headed them, the cause was who so loke
Among them selves, for they thus counsaill toke
And purposed therle of Marche to croune
Kyng of England, by their prouision.

kyng Henry

Howe the kyng went into Normandy and sieged Harefleete and gate it with great payne and losse of men. But who may cast of rennyng houndes and manye raches, but he must lese some of them.



He kyng helde furth by sea to Normandy
With all his hoost, at Kydcans landed
then
And layd a siege to Harefleete mightely
On euery syde, by land and water wanne
With bulwerkes stoute, and bastel he began
In whiche he put therle of Huntynghdon
Therle of Kent also of great renoune.

Whiche erles.ii. with other to them assigned
Cornwayle with Gray, Steward also a Porter.
Ful great assautes, made eche day and repugned
Whiles at last, they bette the tounne toures their
And what the kyng, with fagettes that there were
And his commyng werchyng vnder the wal
With his gunnes castyng, they made the towne to
(fal

And their bulwerke bzant with shot of wildfyr
At whiche place then, therles two vp set
They baners bothe, without any hyre
The kyng ther, with his gunnes the walles bet
The duke dyd so, of Clarence without let
On the ferresyde, where as he then lay
Therle Mountague, dyd wel there alway.

The lorde Galloway that then was their capitayn
Of Harefleete tho with other of the tounne
Offered then the tounne to the kyng full fayn
And he with other, to stand at the kynges directio
Then

Then made he there, his vncle of great renoune
Capitayne of it Duke of Excester than
And homeward went, through Fraunce like a mā

The. CC. xiiii. Chapter.

Howe the kyng came homewarde through Normandye
and Pycardy, and smote the battaile of Agyncourt where
was with my maister.

A hundred myle to Calais had he then
At Agyncourt, so homewarde in his way
The nobles ther, of Fraunce afore him wen
Proudly battailed, with an hundred M. in aray
He sawe he must nedes witht hem make a fraye
He set on them, and with them faught ful soze
With nyne thousand, no moze with him thoz

The felde he had, and helde it al that night
But then came worde, of host and enemies
For whiche they slewe al prisoners doune right
Saue dukes and erles, in fel and cruel wyle
And the prsse of enemies dyd supprise
Their owne people, & mo were dede through prsse
Then our men might haue slain, that time no lesse

On our syde, was the duke of York the slain
Therle also of Suffolke worshypfully
And knightes two, with other then sothe to sain
And at that siege, therle of Suffolke sothely
The father dyed of the fire continually
But mykel folke, at that siege yet dyed
Of frute and flix, and colde were mortified

Of the frêche partie, the dukes Barre & Lozein
D. ii. And

Kyng Henry

And of Alaunson, in battaile there were deade
And take were of Christians in certain
The duke Lewis of Orpauce their heade
The duke of Burbone in that stede
Thele of Wendom and Arthure also of Britayn
And sir Bursigalde Marshal of Fraunce certain

And therle of Ewe was taken there also
Fyue barons also that were at their baner
And fiftene hundzeth knightes and squiers mo
Were slaine that day in ful knightly maner
With woundes, so as then dyd appere
As werres would bpon Chrisspn day
And Chrisspnian that saintes in blesse bene ay

The. CC. xv. Chapter.

Howe thempereour and the duke of Holand came to the
kyng, the Counte palatyn, the duke of Melayn, the Mar-
ques Ferrat, the lord Mountowe and the marques Mount
Ferrete the lord Mount Salestrine came with thempereour
the same tyme, and the duke Bauers, and Embeit, and the
prince of Orenge also.



AD in the yere of Christ a thousande
clere
foure hundzeth also & therewithal fiftene
When this battail was smiten as doth
In the thirde yere of his reigne as was sene (apere
To Calcice so he came, and home he dene
With thempereour of Rome sir Sigemond
Unto him came then, into England ground

With a thousand men that were full clene arrayed
The

The duke of Melayn, the counte Balantyne
 The marques ferrer, the lord Manto we wel a-
 The counte Carmeler, the counte Balastine (payed
 With many lordes of the water of the Ryne
 And of the Garter was made the secondary
 And in it staled, for he would not bary

The duke of Holand, then by sea came
 With .lx. shippes, in Thames that dyd aryue
 And to the kyng, he went vnto lambe
 To the imperour after he went belyue
 As chronicles then dyd discryue
 Then was he made knight of the Garter
 At his desyre, as saith the chronicle.

The CC. vi. Chapiter.

Of the battaile of Sayne, & of the carikes there taken
 in the sea afoze the mouth of Sayne.

The kyng sent then, the duke vnto the
 see
 Of Bedford, that with .CCCC. sailles
 To bitail Hareflete, with the earle of
 Marche no lee

Therle Marshal, without any fayles
 With therles armed in plate and mayles
 Of Orenforde, Warwyke and Huntynghdon
 Of Salisoury, Deuonshyre, & many a baron.

Of Arundel also, these erles all
 Were in that flete, vnto the nombze of men
 Twenty thousand herouldes dyd them cal

Byng Henry

On our lady day Chassumpcion then
Al these lordes with many worthy men
The fyfth yere of the kyng was then expresse
When their enemies the met at Sayn doubtlesse.

¶ They faught ful soze, afoze the water of Sain
With carikes many, wel stuffed and arayed
And many other shippes great of Hespain
Barges balyngers and galeys vnfrayed
Whiche proudly came bpō our shippes vnprayed
And by theuen their sayles aualed were set
They? enemies slaine in battaile, and soze bet

¶ And many dyent, were that day in the sea
That as our flete rode there then alway
Unto the feast, next of his natiuitce
The bodyes flete among our shippes echeday
Ful piteous was, and to see them ay
That thousandes were .xx. as they then tolde
That taken were, in that same battaile bolde.

¶ In whiche meane while, whiles out ships ther
It was so calme, without any wynde (lay
We might not sayle, ne fro thens passe away
Wherfoze their galeys, echeday ther gan vs fynd
With ores many, about vs dyd they wynd
With wyldfyr oft assayled vs day and night
To hene our shippes in that they could o? might

¶ The flete came home, than at our Lady day
From Sayn, whiche tyme the kyng then had con-
The myperour then to Caleys on his way (uayed
And home againe was come right wel apayed

Of

Of the welfare of that worthy flete assayed
 So wel in armes, vnto his hye pleasaunce
 Upon his foes, & kept them selfe by gouernaunce.

The. CC. xlii. Chapter.

Howe the kyng went into Fraunce, in the fyfte yere of
 his reigne the second tyme and landed at Towke in Consta-
 tunc in Normandy.

The kyng then in his fyfte yere went in-
 to Fraunce
 And landed at Towke and gatte the
 castel than
 And so came with al his ordinaunce
 And layde his siege about, with many a man
 Whiche by processe, at the last he wan
 Whiche to Umfreuile, that then was erle of Kyne
 He gaue to kepe, for great manhode that tyme.

Bayons, Falace, Cees, and Argenton
 Doumfront, Moztyn and Juory also
 Musterdeuilers, Cuerons and Alaunson
 Caldebeke and Depe, Arkes, Unicozt tho
 With other townes and castelles many mo
 Gurnay, Newcastel, Gysours, Estoutuile
 Roan, Louers and also Umfreuile.

Bountlarge, Bountoys and also Bount Dorsen,
 Maunte, Vire Balom and also Aueraunce
 Castel Galiard, with many other toun
 Bolham in Perche, saint Joslian in Maunee
 Merceyn in Perche, Chirbroke & eke Constaunce
 Uernel in Perche, Seintlowe and Alauayle
 Vernon on Sayn, without any battayle.

Kyng Henry

20 All Normandy he gate, within two yere
And after then, he trauallyed in Fraunce
For mariage and conuencion clere
Betwene kyng Charles and him at instaunce
Of duke Philip of Burgoyne, of aliaunce
In whiche tyme, so they were by appoyntment
Accorded wel, and clerely condiscant

That then he wed, his doughter Katheryne
And proclaymed was, then of fraunce regent
And heritour of fraunce, by right lyne
Of his owne right, fro kyng Edwardes discent
And Normandy and Guyan as appent
Remayne should to him, and to his heyres
Kynges of England euermore, and to theirs

Then layde he siege to Melon anone right
Aboue Paris. xv. legges vpon Sayne
Whiche by processe and labour of his might
And ful sore siege, ful long with passyng payne
He had at last, of whiche he was ful fayne
And toke it, to Umfreuile erle of Lympe
To haue for euer, ay forwarde fro that tyme.

Sauncer in Burgoyne then gat he mightely
And Mотреux also, where the duke was buried
Of Burgoyne then, whom he toke vp in hys
And at Dungon, as it is notified
Him buried so, in Burgoyne vnderdented
With hys honoure and great solempnitee
As to suche a prince, of reason ought to be

And Mотреux toke he then to sir John Bray
That

That then was made erle of Tanoustruile
 A manly knight in armes proued ay
 And lord Powes was, by his wyfe that whyle
 And eimes sonne, unto the erle Umfreuile
 Two better knightes I trowe, ther were not than
 Of their estate, sith tyme that they began

At siege of Melayn, and of all other citees
 After folowynge, the kyng of Scotland lay
 The prince of Orcege withouten lces
 The duke Embarre his sonne and heyre alway
 That syster sonne then was, ful freshe and gay
 To kyng Henry at Melayn, ful wel arrayed
 The kyng of Fraunce, with baner whole displayed

The siege helde, fro Midsummer to Christmasse
 When kyng Henry at his palayce royal
 Of Turnels fayre, besyde the bastel perces
 Of saint Antony helde his whole imperial
 Where then he feasted, these kynges & princes all
 Where then therles of Suffolke and of Ryne
 With ten men helde the iustes by al that tyme

But whyles the kyng Henry was so in Fraunce
 The duke Robert, that was of Albany
 Layde aboute Barwyke of great puissaunce
 Sixty thousand of Scottes cruelly
 Assayled the toune echeday by and by
 The capitayn was sir Robert Umfreuile
 A knight of the garter, had bene long whyle

The CC. xliii. Chapter.

Done

Kyng Henry

T Howe the duke of Albany besieged Barwyke, & therle Douglas Rokesburgh, in herust, in the seuenth yere of the kyng, and howe Henry Percy erle of Northumberland rescowed Barwyke and Rokesburgh, with seuen score thousand men, for trust it true, there is no lord in England, that may defend you again Scotland so wel as he, for they haue the heartes of the people by North and euer haue had, and doubt it not, the North part be your true legemen.

They shotte their gunnes, and with their ladders scaled

But nought auayled, they were so wel of bet
When they our host sawe, anone they vnscalded
That stale away by night without let
For feare our host, vpon them should set
At Baremore then, with seuen score thousand men
For whiche the Scottes, fled fro the duke home
(then

Upon the night, and let him there alone
With his owne men and no mo of weake power
Yet rode he to Northham nere them anone
And byent the towne, our host and he then were
But two myle of, and durst not come no nere
Wherfore he rode, home then into Scotland
Our host more sone returned to England.

Then sir Robert Umfreuile, with the garyson
Of Barwyke, with his countreimen
Followed after the Scottes. with his pennoun
On the hynder ryders, and many of them then
He toke homeward, and slewe squiers ten
Within Scotland, besyde Cherneslyde towne
And to Barwyke came with his garyson.

Therle Douglas, then hight sir Archebalde
Whiche

Whiche his one eye had lost at Hamylton
 That semed him wel, ay after many folde
 At Shrewesbury, for his correccion
 He lost one of his stones, for his raunson
 His siege then left at Rokesburgh where he lay
 And with the duke of Albany rode away

¶ The erles two, of Douglas and Dunbarre
 For truce sent, to Robert Umfreuile
 Wardeyn of the East marche, ful wyse and warre
 He would none take with them, then for no whyle
 Sith they the truce had broken, and dyd fyle
 He should them holde the warre, to they were faine
 To seke peace then, at the kyng again.

¶ The kyng was then, in Fraunce whole regent
 And Paris had, and al the land aboute
 Troyes in Champain, & Mewes in Bry had hent
 With all cytees, townes and castelles stoute
 In al that land and countree there throughout
 Of Mewes he made sir John Gray capitayne
 That was lord Powes, by his wyse certayne.

That tyme sir Raufe Cromwell was gouernoure
 Of kyng Charles, and Isabel the quene
 By kyng Henry ordeyned their protectoure
 Who kept them at Bops Vincent, as was sene
 In royal wyse, as to them dyd parteigne
 The kyng busy, that tyme in his conquest
 For to set rule in Fraunce, coulde haue no rest.

¶ In this meane while, sir Robert Umfreuile
 Wardeyn of the Marche, thought then ful great
 (Name

The kyng in fraunce, doyng so wel that whyle
He made the warre on Scottes to haue a name
Two yere complet he wrought them mekyl shame
Theſt marche whole of Scotland then he bzent
And market tounes eche one, oꝝ that he ſtente.

Howpke Selkirke Jedwoꝝth, & al Dunbarre
Laudre alſo, with the Laudre dale
The foreſtes alſo, fro Sarwyke that were ſatre
Of Eteryke Jedwoꝝth, and eke al Teuidale
And al the villages in them, bothe great & ſmal
And none helpe had, but of his countre men
Of the biſhopꝝke, & of Noꝝthumberland then.

In this meane tyme, the Scottes had great
Wherefoꝛe therles of Douglas & Dunbar (payne
To London came, and toke a truce ful ſayne
As Umfreuile them hight afore the warre
That to the kyng they ſhould it ſeke of ſarre
Of whiche he kept his hoſt then ful two yere
Foꝝ with his warre, he waſt the marche ful clere.

The. CC. xix. Chapiter.

How the kyng and the quene came into England, in the
eight yere of his reigne.

The eight yere of his reigne, at Candelmaſſe
The kyng came home, & brought with him
the quene

That he had wed at Troyſ, in Chāpeyn doutleſſe
Afoꝛe theloꝝdes of fraunce, as then was wel ſeno
The duke of Clarence, as men wel it mene
He made regent of fraunce in hys abſence
To occuppe right, as his owne pꝛeſence.

The

Cherle of Salisburie, the Mountague
 He made gouernoure then of Normandy
 Cherle of Kyne, a knight of his ful true
 Marshal of Fraunce, he made ful openly
 The lordes al, ordeyned there to lye
 Him to comforte, and to bene attendaunt
 To him, in al that might him be pleasaunt.

This prince of princes, in England then abode
 To somner after, eche day in busynesse
 To ordeyne for his passage, and his rode
 To Fraunce again, in whiche tyme then Doubtlesse:
 I sawe two knightes afoze him then expresse
 That none might them accorde, or treate to peace
 As iustice none, of sightyng might them cease.

The lordes then greatly counsailed the kyng
 To make them synde suretye to kepe the peace
 The kyng answered anone without taryng
 I shal be your borowe now or I cease
 For of this thyng, I may not long you please
 But what case sal that slaine is one of you
 That other shal dye, to God I make a bowe

They heyrng this, anone they were accorde
 By frendes that treated, that tyme betwene the two
 And after that, they were no moze at disorde
 This was a iustice of peace, that could do so
 His offyce kept, without borowes ino
 For when he died, Iustice of peace bode none
 But baratours, their offyce kept anone.

And at the Easter, then in his. xv. yere

The

Kyng Henry

The duke of Clarence, thenemies had espyed
At Baugy then for which his men in fere
He sembled, and thither fast he hyed
On Easter euen,, he would not bene replied
With whom were therle of Huntynghdon
And Somersset therle, his wyues sonne.

The. CC. xx. Chapter.

Howe on Easter euen, the duke of Clarence smote the
battaile of Baugy, in the yere of Christ, M. CCC. xx. and
in the nyntieth yere of kyng Henry, for that yere the feast of the
Annunciation of our lady fel on Easter tuesday, & the date
chaunged after that battaile in the Easter weke.



And nere at Baugy came Gilbert Um-
freulle
Marshal of Fraunce, with fyue hoyses
no mo

And of good wytte, counsailed him that whyle
To kepe the churche and Gods seruyce tho
And after the feast to seke vpon his fo
And he answered him, if thou be aserd
Go home thy way, and kepe the churche yerde.

20 For thou hast bene with the kyng to long
To make me lese my worshyp and my name
Thou hast ay gote the worshyp euer among
And I haue none, thus would thou lose my fame
With suche wordes chiding he dyd him blame
To whom he sayd, yf that thou be asrayde
Then kepe the churche, as thou me now hast sayd

20 With that he sayd, my lord ye haue no men
With the enemies, thus hastely to fight
Your men wote not of this, ne howe ne when

To

To semble to you of power, ne of might
For truely nowe my coulyn Gray nowe right
And I haue here but ten men and no mo.
But yet ye shal neuer say we leaue you so

So rode they furth, ay chidyng by the way
Tyl they to Baugy, ouer the brydge were gone
Where the enemies were battailed in aray
Where then they light, & faught with the anone
The Duke was slaine, that day there with his sone
With him were slaine, then ther Umfreuile
And sir John Gray therle of Tankeruile.

The lordes Roos, and sir John Lumley
With many other were with him slaine that day
Whose names I can not wyte nor say
Therles two, of Huntynghdon no nay
Of Somerset also, were taken there I say
For prisoners, and put to great raunson
And lay ful long in fraunce then in prison

Thenglyshe power came, when al was done
And rescowed then, the dead men where they lay
And brought the lordes home, fro thes the ful sone
That were there vpon the felde that day
And buried then in England, in good aray
Echeone in his owne abbey or collage
Afore founded within his heritage.

At Cauntorbury, the duke was of Clarence
Besyde his father kyng Henry buried
With suche honoure, costage and expence
As the duchess his wyfe could haue signified
Which

Kyng Henry

Whiche neded not to bene modified
She was so wel, within her selfe auyded
Of great sadnesse, and womanhede pzeuised

The CC. xxi. Chapiter.

Howe the kyng went againe to Fraunce, & left the quene
in England with childe, and wanne dyuerse cyties tounes
and castelles in somer, in the ninth yere of his reigne.



He kyng then let the quene in England
byde

In somer then the .ix. yere of his date
And into Fraunce, againe he went that
With heuy heart, to Paris went algate (tyde
The castel of Berfount, sone he gate
A royal place of al that men haue sene
The great cytee of Compyne also I wene

The cytees also of Cassons Bzaye and Crayle
Of Owfare also, with many cytees mo
And to Paris againe without faile
In his castel of Lowze abidyng tho
Cydynges then came, to him ful glad and mo
That of a prince deliuered was the quene
Of whiche al men reioysed as was sene.

Sainct Dionis then, and castel Boys Vincence
Corbell Pount Malanke, and full great parte of
Burgoyne Artoys, & Pycardy to him sent (Fraunce
To bene his men, without contrariaunce
And eche cytee, to him swozne in substaunce
Walled tounes and castelles euerychone
As hys regent of Fraunce by him one

Then

Then rode he furth to Baugy and Orliaunce
 winnyng the tounes, and cytees in his way
 And castelles al, that were of great defence
 Crepp, Lawnesse, and Shilly with great affray
 Fongent le Roy, he gatte with great aray
 Pount Caranton, with many other obeyed
 To his highnes, and were his men conueighed.

The duke of Britayn, then was his man
 for fee belast, without rebellyon
 The counte saint Paule, his man was then
 The duke of Burgoyne, without suspicion
 With many other, his men without collusion
 Were sworne then whole, the countrees in the same
 Castelles & tounes, eke as he couth deuise. (wylse)

In August so of his reigne the tenth yere
 He toke sickenes, and lay at Boy Vincent
 In payne strong, as then it dyd appere
 ful like to passe, wherfore in his entent
 The duke of Bedford, he made hys regent
 Of fraunce, and of his other landes al
 Beyond the sea as chiefe in general.

And of his sonne Henry, he made custode
 Thomas Beauford, his vncle dere and true
 Duke of Excester, ful of al woorthyhode
 To tyne his sonne, to perfecte age grewe
 He to kepe him, chaungyng for no newe
 With helpe of his other eme, then ful wylse
 The bishop of Wynchester of good aduise.

Therle then of Salisbury manly

E. i.

That

Kyng Henry

That Mountague then hight by surname
He set to kepe, then al Normandy
Under the regent, as knight of ful great fame
With other lordes, ful sage and worthy of name
Cherle of Orenford, and of Suffolke also
Of his counsaile to bene with many mo

The. CC. xii. Chapter.

Howe the kyng dyed the last daye of August the yere of
Christ M. CCCC. xii. and of his reigne the. x. yere, for all
his right wysenes and iustice that he dyd, he had no conscie
cuce of blaspemyng of the crowne.



The last day of August then clere
O: Christ his date, a thousand signified
foure hund. eth and. xii. yere
When that this prince of princes so died
At Bors Vincent, with death then victoried
That neuer prince in yearth might the haue done
But he alone that ruled ionne and mone.

And With whose bones, the quene came to Englad
The kyng of Scotland James with her also
The duke of Excester, as I can vnderstand
Cherle of Marche, Edmond Mortimer tho
Richard Beauchampe, then erle of Warwyke so
Humfrey then erle of Stafforde, yong of age
And erle Edmond, of Morten wylc and sage

O good lord God, that art omnipotent
Why stretched not thy power and thy might
To kepe this prince, that set was and consent
With thempour, to conuert Surry right

And

And with Christen inhabite, it had hight
 Why fauoured so thyn high omnipotence
 Miscraunce more, then his beneuolence

Above al thyng, he kept the lawe and peace
 Through al England, that none insurrection
 Se no riotes were then withouten lese
 Nor neighbour werre, in faute of correccion
 But pealably vnder his protection
 Complaintes al, of wronges in general
 Refourmed were, wel vnder his yerd egal.

The CC. xliii. Chapiter.

Howe through the lawe and peace, conserued was the
 increace of his conquest, and els had he bene of no power to
 haue conquered in out landes.



When he in fraunce, was dayly cōuersaūc
 His shadow so obumbred al England
 That peace and lawe kept cōtinuaūt
 In his absēce throughout al thisland
 And els as I can seyn and vnderstand
 His power had bene lyte, to conquere fraunce
 Nor other realmes, that wel were lesse perchaūc.

The peace at home, and lawe so wel conserued
 Were croppe and rote of al his hye conquest
 Through whiche the loue, of God he wel deserued
 And of his people, by North South, Est & West
 Who might haue slain þe prince or doune him cast

King Henry

That stode so sure, in rightful gouernaunce
foz cominon weale, to God his hye pleasaunce

The. CC. xliiii. Chapter.

Henry the sixt kyng of England & of Fraunce that fled
into Scotland without cause, on Palmesonday the. xxix.
yere of his reigne, and of Christ a thousand foure hundredeth
lxi, beganne to reigne the yere of Christ M. CCC. xlii.

King Hen-
ry the. vi.



Henry his sonne, then not thre quarters
olde
That bozne was on s. Nicholas daye a-
foze

At Wyndesore, so as the realme then would
Unto the croune, succede as he was boze
All England whole, by might of lordes thore
The duke of Gloucestre then desyred
To haue the keepyng of the kyng enspired

The bishop of Wyndesore it withstode
With al the lordes there, whole of his assent
Then would he haue bene, as foze the next of blode
Leutenant then of England and regent
The bishop ay, withstode all his entent
That Chaunceler was, by the fyfth kyng Henry
And so furth stode, and in thospyce bade (made

The duke
of Glouc-
ester pro-
tector of
England.

foze cause he was so noyous with to dele
And ospyce would he haue and gouernaunce
Wherfore they made him, foze the cominon wele
Protector of the realme by ordinaunce
To kepe the land, fro mischiefe and variaunce
The kyng of Fraunce, foze sorowe then dyed

The

The quene his wyfe also as was notified.

The lord Cromwel, lost therof nothyng
foz he had bothe them in his gouernaunce
And home then came, when buried was the kyng
Charles of fraunce, with worthy ordinaunce
Quene Isabel alio with purueyaunce
Accordaunt wel to their royal estate
With costages great, as was pꝛeordinate.

The fyrst day of the moneth of Septembꝛe
He gan to reigne, then was a thousand yere
foure hundꝛeth as I can remember
Twenty and two accompted then ful clere
As I fynde wyte in the chronicler
But not crowned foꝛ tendernes of age
Noꝛ yet anoynted, foꝛ dreadd of pouthe outrage.

The duke of Bedfꝛd, stode so furth ay regent
The duke of Gloucestꝛ, here was so protectour
The bishop of Wynchester by parliament
Was Chauncelour and hiest gouernour
Of the kyng his persone and his great succour
His godfather and his fathers cme
And supportour was, most of al this realme

The regent then, of fraunce wed Anne his wyfe
The duke his systꝛ of Burgoyn, good and fayꝛe
The duke of Britayn, her systꝛ knownen rife
Had wed afoꝛe without any dispayꝛe
Whiche was lady of great repayꝛe
Whiche dukes two were sworne and alied
With the regent to stand strongly fortified.

C.iii.

The

Byng Henry

The. CC. xxb. Chapter.

Howe the regent w lordes of England smote the battall of
Uernople in Perche, in y third yere of kyng Henry the. vi.

Therle of Boughan and therle Douglas
Therle of Wigton with power of Scotland
And lordes of fraunce, together assembled
Where the regent with lordes of England (was
At Uernople in Perche, as I can vnderstand
Fought with the fore, & slewe the Scottes cruelly
And bad them thynke among on Baugy

The regent had the felde and victorie
With great honoure and laud ful comfortable
Therles were there, with him of Salisbury
Of Suffolke also, that were ful honorable
The lorde Wyloughby, ful fortunable
The lordes Scales of great and hye courage
With many other of the baronage.

Therle of Ewe, and his brother manly
Fought in that felde, and gatte a worthy name
And many mo, dyd tho ful doughtely
I dare wel say, was none therfore to blame
All other also, whiche that were worthy of fame
I would haue writen, if I had knowen their meede
But to heraldes, I wyll commytte their deede.

They sleugh therles, of Boughan & Douglas
And of Wigton, of Scotland that were there
The lorde of Enermeth, of Scotland then was
With great people, that dead then there were
Our Englishemen, ful manly them bere
The regent was there, that day a loun

And

And faught in armes, like any champion.

The. CC. xxi. Chapiter.

Howe Mountague erle of Salisburie layd siege to M^oleauunce and was slaine there.

Therle of Salisburie, then Mountague
With great power, layd siege to M^oleauunce
Where slaine he was, for whom men soze gan rewe
So manly was his knightly diligence
He laboured euer in marcial excellence
Unto the tyme as would thende of fate
With a quarel was slaine infortunate

And buried was in England that yere
With great worshyp and hys solempnitee
Richard Neuell had wedd his doughter clere
And erle was made, that tyme by her in fee
The regent then, of great nobilitie
By counsel of the duke then of Burgoyne
Kept fraunce ful wel, without any esloyne

Then died his wyfe, and wedd then sone againe
The countess seynt Paules sister of fraunce
That legeman was to kyng Henry certayne
To the regent sworne, as by full great assuraunce
With true seruice, and al true aliaunce
He kept bothe fraunce and eke al Normandy
In peace and rest, ful wel and worthely


Therle Richard of Warwyke kept the kyng
By al this tyme, sith the duke was dead
Of Excester, that fyrst him had in keepyng
Therle Richard, in mykel worthyhead

Kyng Henry

Enfourmed him, but of his symplehead
He could lytle, within his brest conceyue
The good from euil, he could vncth perceyue

The. CC. xxvii. Chapter.

Howe the kyng was enoynted & crowned in England in
the yere of Christ M. CCC. xxix. and of his reigne the. viii.
yere. And afterward he was crowned in Fraunce, the yere
M. CCC. xxxi. and of his reigne the tenth yere, in whose
presence the regent ceased of his offyce, for whiche he was
wroth with the cardinal his vnckle for asmuche as the kyng
was there present, therfore there shoulde be no regent.

 He kyng the in his. viii. yere in Englad
At Westmynster bpō s. Leonardes day
The sonday then, as I can vnderstand
And of Christ was then, a M. ful I say
Foure hundred and. xxix. no nay
He crowned was, with al solempnitee
By whole assent of lordes and commontee.

Then of his reigne, accompte the tenth yere
To fraunce he went, where then at saint Denys
His fathers eme, the cardinal ful clere
Him crowned sayre, with bishoppes there ful wise
The regent was there, with suche seruice
As was due of reason, and to him appent
The duke of Burgoyne, and also obedient.

The duke also, was there of Britayne
The counte saint Daule, and the duke Cinbarre
The erle of Foyz, with other lordes of Gupan
The prouost of Paris, with other great repayre
Of lordes, knightes, and many ladies sayre

The

The gouernours of al the great cytees.
And prelates fele and Barons fo; theere fees

The. CC. xxviii. Chapter.

Howe the lorde Cromwel was Chamberleyn in Fraunce
at his coronacion, and discharged at his comyng home into
England, and the duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce died,
and then the duke of Burgoyne was made regent a yere and
then therle of Warwyke was made regent a yere and dyed
at Roan in the castel.

The lorde Cromwel was hys chamberlayn
Who was so wyse, he was of great recoꝝde
His homagers, as to him dyd pertain
In Fraunce that tyme, by good and true accoꝝde
fo; his fees, as they and he concoꝝde
Of Christes date, was then a thousand yere
foure hundꝝeth also and one and thirty clere.

The regent died, fo; whō was made great mone
Then bothe counceles of England and of Fraunce
Chose the duke of Burgoyne then anone
The regent of that land, fo; great assaunce
That kept it wel a yere in al assuraunce
But sone therafter, with the dolphynes accoꝝde
Was his man, as then was wel recoꝝde.

Therle Richard of Warwyke then conceyued
Of the sympleste and great innocence
Of kyng Henry, as he it wel perceyued
Desired to be discharged of his diligence
About the kyng, and by his sapience
Was sent to Fraunce and so was regent
And kept it wel in al establisment.

Kyng Henry.

Tyl that he dyed, out of this worlde away
For whom great mone was made and lamentacion
For his wyldeome, and for his manhode ay
For his noxture and communicacion
He stode in grace of hys commendacion
Among al folke vnto the day he dyed
Regent of Fraunce, ful greatly laudified

The CC.xix. Chapter.

Howe the duke of Burgoyne besieged Calys and let by
his bastel there, & howe the duke of Gloucester rescowed it.

The duke of Burgoyne, then to Calys came
And set a bastel then afoze the toun
The whiche therle of Morteyn, by his name
Edmond Beaufort, as made is mencion
With souldiers it gatte and bet it doune
The duke went home, & left the siege with shame
When he our flete sawe, sailyng on the same

The protectour with his flete, at Calys then
Dyd land, and rode into Flaunders a lytle way
And lytle dyd, to counte a manly man
But that the siege, for him then flede away
The duke distracte, soze sicke was many a day
For sozowe and shame, he helde him out of sight
Many a yere, he went not out to fight.

The CC.xxx. Chapter.

Howe kyng James of Scotland besieged sir Raulfe Gray
in Kenelburgh, and howe Henry Percy erle of Northum-
berland rescowed it with seuenscore thousand men

In



At the same tyme also, of Scotland
kyng James

To Berneburgh came, and layd his
siege about

By Raulfe Gray, then kept it fro all
Againe his salutes, & then were ful stoute (James
Therle then of Northumberland throughout
Raped by the land, and when he came it nere
The kyng triumped by and went away ful clere

Who sawe euer afore, two hostes royal
So easely without stroke discomfyte
Of diuers landes, and neither had a fal
And on no parte, smote no stroke perfyte
But for the shadowes, that were imperfyte
Of our hostes so tled and sawe nothyng
But vmbres two, of our host then comyng

The conceyt
of the ma:
ker tou:
ching king
James.

But thus I demc, tho princes were forswore
The kyng of Scottes, the duke of Burgoyne eke
That they not durst on no ground abyde therfore
Their vntuthes, made their heartes feint & seeke
Trust neuer their manhode after worth a leeke
That vncompelled forsworne or wilfully
Shal neuer after haue honoure ne victory

Take hede ye lordes, of these great princes two
What came of them, in shorte tyme after this
The kyng murthered, at home in Scotland tho
The duke was wod, and frantike for his mylle
Thus vengeaunce fel vpon them bothe I wyll
Alas a prince should haue suche cowarddysse,
To be vntreue or false in any wyse.

By the

Byng Henry

Syth he nede nought, so stretcheth ay his power
To kepe his trouth, and make his fo the same
To kepe to him with strength of swoorde ful clere
Or els destroy his land, and al his fame
And put him so to foule and open shame
For periury occupied, and lawe vnpreserued
Caused many a man, for to be ouerterued.

The. CC. xxxi. Chapter.

Howe therle of Stafforde was two yere regent of Normandy, and howe therle of Huntingdon was other. ii. yere and howe Richard duke of Yorke was regent of Normandy seven yere withholden, and afterward was made Lieutenant of Ireland.

But after then therle of Stafforde went
With power strong, to kepe al Normandy
Two yere with hold, with al lordes auent
Whiche wel he keped, and ful honorably
With lytle losse, of places fewe sodenly
By enemies wone, that might not long bene hold
And home he came, when spende was his gold.

Then went therle thither of Huntingdon
That kept that land, with sad and true seruice
With great power, truely vnto the croune
For all the foes, and eke the kynges enemies
And fewe places lost, ne had no great supplice
And home he came againe, at two yeres ende
When his wages were gone and al whole spende

And after him the duke of Yorke ful yong
Thether was sent, with great power royal

And

And regent was, of all that longed to the kyng
 And kepte ful wel Normandy in especial
 But Fraunce was gone, afore ingeneral
 And home he came, at seven yere ende agayne
 With mykel loue of the land certayne

¶ The duke of York, sent was then to Ireland
 Leutenant then he was there many a day
 And great thanke there, and loue of al the land
 He had among the Irish alway
 And al the Irish, begaune him to obey
 He ruled that land ful wel and worthely
 As dyd afore, his noble auncetrey.

The. CC. xxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Edmonde duke of Somerset, was made keeper of
 Normandy.

The kyng then made the marques of Dorset
 Edmonde Beauford, at the cardinals request
 Without delay, then duke of Somerset
 And sent him furth anone without rest
 To Normandy, to kepe it for his best
 But in his tyme fastolfe and Kyriel
 Discomfyte were, in battaile soze and fel

¶ Where. vii. M. Englishe were ouerthrowe
 Wherfore the frenche, assembled newe eche day
 And gate the land ay, by and by on rowe
 For whiche the duke wrote his letters ay
 Unto the kyng and his counsell alway
 For more power, and els he might not byde
 To kepe the land, the frenche were of suche pryde
 He

Kyng Henry

¶ He could none get, this land was then so pyld
Throug war of Fraunce, they would not him re-
So was the lād w frenchmen won & weld (leue
With siege eche day, and sautes fel and bzene
The frenche nought rest that tyme a day to eue
We lost moze then, certayne within two yere
Then kyng Henry gatte in seuen clere.

¶ Then was the kyng come vnto mans age
Wherfoze the lordes, would no protecto?
Wherfoze the duke lost his great auauntage
And was no moze then after defensour
But then he fel in a great errour
Moued by his wyfe Eliano? Cobham
To trust her so, men thought he was to blame.

¶ He waxed then straunge, eche day vnto the kyng
Fo? cause she was fo?iudged fo? so?ssery
Fo? enchauntinentes, that she was in wo?kyng
Againe the church, and the kyng cursedly
By helpe of one maister Roger Donly
And in Wales he went of frowardnesse
And to the kyng had great heuynesse.

¶ Wherfoze the lordes then of the kynges counsaile
Made the kyng to set his high parliament
At Bury then, whethere he came without fayle
Where in parelescy he dyed incontinent
Fo? heuynesse, and losse of regiment
And oft afoze, he was in that sickenesse
In point of death, and stode in soze destresse.

¶ When of the kyng was. xxvii. yere

Then

Then he so dyed in full and whole creaunce
 As a chrysten prince of royal blood ful clere
 Contryte in heart with ful great repentaunce
 With mouth confessed, to Gods high pleasaunce
 Unto the yearth, that is al fleshe his nest
 His body went, his soule to heauens rest.

And of the kyng, the. xxix. yere
 In May, the duke of Suffolke toke the sea
 On pilgrimage to passe, as dyd appere
 With Bygantes then with compassed enemyte
 Him slewe and headed with ful great cruelte
 Againe assuraunce of the kynges protection
 That worthy were the death for insurrection.

That same yere then at the hye parliament
 Was made a playne, and a whole resumption
 Of all the landes by sad and whole aduiseiment
 Whiche the kyng had geuen of his affection
 To any wright by patent or concessyon
 Then taxe ceased, and diuers dymes eke also
 In al England then rayled were no mo.

The CC. xxiii. Chapiter.

The duke of Yorke, was made protector & chiefe of coun-
 sel, the chier yere of kyng Henrye the sixte, and the cite of
 Salisbury was chauncelour of England.

The duke of Yorke then made was protectour
 And gouerned wel but two yere not endured
 Discharged he was, with passing great mur-
 Of comons whole, among the then entured (mour
 To helpe him so, with power auentured

Byng Henry

For he was set, the common wele to auayle
By his laboure, and his whole counsaile

But ay the better, that he to God was set
The more were other, by worde and dede
The contrary to laboure, and to let
His good purpose, to pursue and to spede
So that he had no hape for to procede
For sofel men him let ay at the ende
The comon wele to maynteyne and amende.

¶ Therle Richard also of Salisbury
So was disposed, in al thynges to the same
Whiche was the cause of their death finally
For whiche of right, ne must folowe blame
They lyues wel kept, had bene without shaine
For tho princes two, dyed in their kynges right
For the publike wele, of eche Englishe wight.

¶ The. xxx. yere this was then of the kyng
When they the kyng, then had in gouernaunce
And ruled him wel, in al maner thyng
And made good rule, and noble ordynaunce
Auoidyng al misrule, and misusaunce
For worshop of the kyng, and of his realme
Without doubt, of any other probleme.

The. CC. xxxiii. Chapter.

¶ Howe the erle of Northumberland, the duke of Somers
set and the lord Clyfford were slaine at sainte Albones the
thirti and foute yere of his reigne, where the duke of York
the Earle of Salisbury, & the earle of Marwyke toke the

kyng

kyng, and kept hym in good rule, þ .xxii. daie of Maie
that was the the Thursdaye nexte after Pentecost the
yere of Christe a thousande foure hundred and .lv.



Hei wer put by frō al their good entēt
And straunge wer holde, after many
a daie

To the .xxxiij. yere by whole consent
At .s. Albones, then vpon þ Thursdaye
Accompted then next afoze Witsondaie
Thei slewe the duke Edmond, then of Somerset
for cause he had the realmes weale so let.

¶ Therle then of Northumberlande was there
Of sodain chaunce, drawen furth with the kyng
And slain vnknewen, by any manne there were
The lord Cliffozd ouer busy in werkynge
At the barres theim mette soze fightynge
Was slain that daie vpon his owne assaulte
As eche manne saied, it was his owne default.

¶ Therle of Wilshire with fīue hundred menne
fled fro the kyng full fast that tyme a waie
The duke of Buckyngham, was hurte there then
The kyng thei tooke, and saued in good araise
To Westminster with hym thei toke the waie
And ruled hym well, in all prerogative
As kyng of right, without any strife,

The. CC. xrb. Chapter.

¶ How the lord Audely fought with the erle of Salis-
bury at Blozebeth at Michelmass terme, in the thir-
ty and eight yere of his reigne.

Byng Henry

¶ Yet wer these lordes boyde fro the kyng again
The duke of Yorke, and therle of Salisbory
Therle also of Warwike, nought to lain
Without cause, I can not remembze why
But at Blozeheh, the lordc Audely on hie
With therle of Salisbory faught full soze
Therle preuailed, and Audely slain was thore.

¶ The thirty pere and eight of the kyng.
And so he wente to Ludlowe on his waie
The duke of Yorke, in Wales had shippynge
To Irelande then he went, full well awaie
Therles of Marche, and Salisbory that date
And of Warwike, as God it had purueighed
To Calais went, their waie nothyng denied.

The. CC. xxxvi. Chapiter.

¶ How the battaill of Northampton, where the erls
of Marche, and therle of Warwike preuailed and
led the kyng to Westminster and kepte hym there,
the pere of his reigne thirty and eight, and the pere
of Christ a thousande fourc hundred fifty and nine
and slew the duke of Buckyngha, therle of Shro-
wisbury refoize of Englande, the lordc Beaumont
the Thomas Percy, lordc Egremonde, and led the
kyng with them to London and gouerned hym full
well and mozt hely, the tenth date of July.



riors

¶ At Couentree, the kyng in his parliamēt
Disclained them all thre for rebellours
But after ward, all thre of one assent
At Northampton came, as mozt hy war-
riors
In somer after, to see the kyng his socours

wher

Where then the duke of Buckyngham, thein met
With power greate, and truste haue them ouerset.

Therle of Shrowesbury was with hym thare
The lord Beaumont, with hym was also
The lord Egremond, full stoute in seate of warre
Whiche foure wer slain, with mikell people mo
Beside Northampton, on the Thursdaye the
The thirde daie of the moneth of July
And in the reigne of the kyng, eight and thirty,

Ther saued the kyng, & kept hym saue & sounde
With greate honour, therle of Marche Edward
Therle also of Warwike, in that stound
And with hym rode, so furthe to London ward
Full worshipfully. ther kept hym thence for ward
In all state roiall as did append
And as his menne vnto hym did attend.

The. CC. xxvii. Chapter.

How the battail of Wakefelde wher the North
party preuailed, was the fifte daie of Christmas
and of the kynges reigne. xxxix.

When in the Winter, afore the Christmes
The duke of York, therle of Salisbury
Therle of Rutlande, with them I ges
With power greate, for their aduersarie
To saue them selves, as then was necessarie
At their owne weld at Pool, so then had been
The robberies there, to haue staunched clene.


Where the the lordes, of the North wer assbled
F. ii. And

kyng Henry

And faught with them at Wakefeld then ful soze
And slewe them doune, whiles thei wer dissembled
And gatte the feld that daie vpon them thore
And Southward came thei, then therfore
To saint Albones vpon the fastyngang eue
Where then thei slewe, the lord Bonville I leue.

The. CC. xxxviii. Chapter.

How therle of Northumberlande, the lord Percell and
the North party, faught at saint Albones p. xvii. date
of february, and slewe the lord Bonville and sir Tho-
mas Kiriell and many other, the. xxxix. yere of the kyng
and the yere of Christ. M. cccc. lx. & led the kyng to Yorke

 And sir Thomas Kiriell also of Kent
With inekell folke, that pitee was to see
And spoyled fast, ay homewarde as thei
Without rule, into their countree (went
Thei sette them nought, on rule and equitee
He to kepe lawe no? peace, in no kynde wise
How might thei dure long, in suche a guise.

But then the kyng, alone lefte on the feld
Came to the quene, and went to Yorke his waie
With the North party, that then so with hym held
The duke of Ercestre with hym went a waie
The duke of Somerset, it is no naie
Therle also then of Devonshire
And sir James Oymond erle of Wiltshire.

The lord Moleyngs, the lord Roos also
The chief Judge, and sir Richard Tunstall
The lord Riuers, the lord Scales his sonne also
The

The lord Welles, and Willoughby with all
 Sir William Catboys, so did befall
 And many other, went to the North party
 For to maintain then the sixte kyng Henry.

The. CC. xxix. Chapiter.

How Edward duke of Yorke and erle of Marche tooke
 on hym the royall charge for the weale of the realme the
 fourth daie of Marche, the yere of Christe a thousande
 foure hundred and sixty, folowed kyng Henry that re-
 fused the rule of the lande and gaue vp Berwike to
 the Scottes, and fled into Scotlande, and gaue battail
 to the North party at Fetibrig on Palmesondae, wher
 kyng Edward the fourth preuailed, the yere of Christ a
 thousande foure hundred sixtie and one whiche was the
 the twenty and nyne daie of marche, foure daies after
 our lady daie that tyme.



The duke Edward, of Marche then
 the fourth daie

Of Yorke full young, therle of Mar-
 che was then,

By counsaile of þe lordes, by south men
 Bothe spirituall & tempozal, as men saie then (saie
 Upon hym tooke, estate royall and began
 To reigne as kyng, and with hym raised the lande
 With lordes fele, by south I vnderstande.

At Towton feld, he faught on Palmesondae
 Where then therle Henry of Northumberlande
 The lord Neuell, the lord Clifford that daie
 The lord Dacres wer ded I vnderstande
 The kyng Henry, then out of the lande
 To Berwike toun, & stount in Scotland ground
 With certain lordes, & with the quene that stound

Kyng Edward

And gaue the toun and castle to the Scottes
By whole assent of his simple counsaill
Whiche might well bee accompted then for Scottes
As fooles that wer then, of no gouernaill
Into Scotlande, with foule misgouernaill
The quene Margarete, and the dukes bothe two
Of Excester, and Somerset fled also.

The lordc Roos, and eke the lordc Holcyns
And the chief Judge, that called was Forscue
And Tailboys also, with other euill capitains
That after shall, full soze repent and rewe
If thei also well as I, now Scotlande knewe
Thei would not so, haue hasted thetherward
From the p[re]sence and grace, of kyng Edward.

Kyng Edward thus had then the victorie
With his lordes and menne full trewe
That holpe hym so, and wer contributozie
To wyn his right, whiche then the people knewe
To Yorke he went, and founde it not bntrewe
To Duresme also, and to the Newcastle
That to hym wer, as trewe as any steele.

At Yorke was hedded, that tyme and decollate
Therle that then was of Deuonshire
And at the Newcastle, so destinate
Hedded then was therle of Wiltshire
The kyng then sette, the lande at his desire
Saue castles fewe, with force that then wer holde
By North and West, with rebell manifold.

And South he went, for his dispozte and placc
At

At Lecester helde he then his greate counsaill
In the moneth that then was called Maie
And ordained there for good gouernaill
Of his realme, that enemies nought it assaill
Then in Winter, Margarete that had been quene
fro Fraunce so came by shippe, as then was seen.

¶ Into Scotlande, with foure. M. Frenchemen
Of souldiours, for whiche the kyng anone
With hoste royall, to Duresme came he then
And sent therle of Warwike again his fooen
Therle of Kent also, with good menne many one
Thei laied a siege, to the castle of Baimburgh
And to the castle also of Dunstanburgh.

¶ Sir Raulfe Percy, and the duke of Somerset
Deliuered theim to the kyng by poyntment
By whiche the kyng, without any let
Gaue the keepng of theim incontinent
Unto sir Raulfe Percy of good entent
At Aluewike castle was kept many a daie
To rescoue came, and fet theim awaie.

¶ Whiche stode in stale, not farre from the castel
But eight thousande, to whom the castelleyng
Came anone out, as menne wer there to tell
With horse & harneis, & home rode through þe plai
Into Scotlande, as good & wise chieftains (nes
I can well thynke, it was a manly dede
To noye their foes, and helpe themselves at nede

¶ My lord Uimfreuile, whom that I did serue
Said to me, it was the best thyng might befall

Kyng Edward

Any chieftain to greue his so and ouerterue
And kepe hymself harmelesse therewith all
He that maie hurte his so without fall
And passe awaie, to his socoure harmelesse
He is a foolc to abide any distresse.

But when that thei, wer gone so home again
And their frendes with them, from thence awaie
Two hundred menne of commons, came ful fain
Out of Aluewike castle, in simple araie
Our menne bet them in again, there alwaie
Till thei wer glad, to yeld thciin and haue grace
The whiche thei had, without longer space.

The quenes power, y she so brought fro Fraunce
Was so litle, the Wardeins naught it drede
Thei hight the kyng, for all hir ordinaunce
To kepe the lande, for any help she had
How maie she ought of greate power be sped
Whē Charles daughter of fraunce boyd of dower
Despoyled was, of Fraunce failed all power.

Quene Isabell that was kyng Richardes wife
Deposed was, by kyng Henry of Derby
Of her iwels, as it is knowen full rife
And home was sent, without remedie
What auailed her kynne and progenie
Of naught els, but greate vcracton
That frenchemen made to their owne dāpnacion

The. CC. xl. Chapter.

The

The motion and conceipte of the maker of this booke touchyng kyng Henry the sirte, his wife and his sonne, to bee gotten home and putte in governance with all that fled with hym considering their trouthe that forsoke their liuelodes and welfare for his sake, and fro thei so gotte home, that after thei will bee as true to you and els to geue for iudgement vpon theim.



Gracious Lorde Kyng Edward
fourth accompte

Considre how kyng Henry was ad-
mitte

Unto the croune of Englande, that
did amounte

Not for desert, nor yet for any witte
Or might of hymself, in otherwise yet
But onely for the castigation
Of kyng Richardes wicked peruersacion.

Ad of whiche the realme then irked euerichone
And full glad were of his depolition
And glad to croune kyng Henry so anone
With all their hertes, and whole affeccion
For hatred more of kyng Richardes defeccion
Then for the loue of kyng Henry that date
So chaunged then the people on hym aye.

Ad yet kepte he aye therle of Marche full iung
In erles estate, as he that was his warde
And brought hym vp, in all maner thyng
As his estate asked and could awarde
And cherished hym, in nurture to regarde

Kyng Edwarde

As his owne sonnes, durpng all his life
To make hym loue hym, without any strife;

Thus by wysedome his sonne Henry right so
Hym cherished by good and wise counsaill
Whiche he assigned vnto hym tho
Of good rule, that would not let hym faill
For cause he should again hym not preuaill
And into fraunce, in his whole estate
Had hym with his brother associate.

All this he did, of full good policie
To wyne his loue, and kepe hym in direccion
From entisement of all euill and folie
To his pleasaunce, without all suspencion
This was greate witte and circumspeccion
To rule hym thus, his highnesse to obaie
Without strief, to sitte in peace his daie.

O gracious lord, now of your sapience
Considre well this sixty yere and thre
Your kynne and ye by all intelligence
Haue been deuorced of all the royaltee
To now that God of his specialtee
Hath graunte you grace, your rightes to recouer
And your enemies all to rule at ouer.

Considre well the benigne innocence
Of kyng Henry that now is in Scotlande
By Goddes dome of small intelligence
For your preuaill, as menne can vnderstande
Gette hym now home, again into Englande

With

With all the meanes, ye maie of sapience
His wife and sonne, with all your diligence.

Foꝛ truste it well, if thei maie passe to fraunce
Our power gette to thein in any wise
Eche yere thei will you trouble, and do greuanuce
By Scottes assent, and their exercise
To bragge and boiste, as thei would on you rise
To make your people and commons foꝛ to irke
Jackes and salades ay newe and newe to wirke.

Foꝛ truste it well, as God is now in heuen
The Scottes will ay do you the harme thei maie
And so thei haue full oft, with odde and euen
Afoꝛe that Chyste was boꝛne so of a maie
As yet thei dooe at their power euery daie
Wherfoꝛe good loꝛde, bryng home these persōs. iiii
With all their men, and geue them grace all free,

And loue thein better, foꝛ their greate lewte
That thei forsoke their landes and heritage
And fled with hyin, in aduersite
To hyde in pain soꝛowe and seruage
Good hert should rewe, wel moꝛe their true corage
Then them that would haue gone, & durst nought
Considꝛe how thei shewed, as thei thought.

If ye might gette thein all foꝛ any good
To bec your menne, and haue their heritage
And your enemies, that against you stooode
Ye should make trewe menne to your auantage
To passe with you, in warres and hostage
As trewe as thei haue been to kyng Henry

And

King Edwarde

And mekell truce for your right auncctry.

For if ye might theim get now every chone
Your warres wer dooe, then might you sit at rest
Without trouble of any lande alone
For all your land throughout, then might ye trest
If it wer whole that ye nede not mistrest
No prince chysten, might dooe you any dere
But in his lande, ye might make hym were.

Graunt Hery grace, with all his owne liuelde
The duchie whole of Lancaster, that is his right
Not as it is, but of worthie hede
First duke Henry, had the noble knight
At his last daie, that was of mikell might
His wife and sonne, get home by ordinaunce
And geue theim counsaill, for their gouernaunce.

Suche as you truste, will rule theim worthely
To your pleasaunce, in all tranquillitee
In peace and rest, with all good policy
For better wer, to haue theim in surety
Then let theim been, with your aduersitee
With Scottes or frech, I would se your destresse
And help to it with all their businesse.

And if ye maie by no meane nor treate
Get theim home, ordain then faste your flete
On the East sea, into Scotlande in hie
At Edenburgh, so maie it with you mete
With all vitail and ordinaunce full mete
And set vpon the castle, thei been in
Escape thei maie not, but ye ihall theim win.

For

For I haue seen their castles strong eche one
 That strongest been, and worst to get and wynn
 Emongest them all, for certain is there none
 That maie been hold out long, when ye begyn
 Saue Dunbretain, the sea aboute dooth ryne
 Eche daie and night, twise withouten doubte
 Whiche maie bee woone, by famishyng aboute

The castell
 of Dunbry-
 tayne.

With shippes by sea, and siege vpon the lande
 Ye maie not faile, to haue it at the last
 All other will been yelde into your hande
 So that ye haue by workemen well forecast
 Your ordinaunce and gunnes for to cast
 With abilementes of warre, suche as ye nede
 No castle els maie withstande in dede

Therefore in what castle that thei been in
 Go to thesame without impediment
 Not in Wynter, but in somer ye begyn
 When Iule moneth, or August is present
 That forage maie begot, as dooeth appent
 Of corne and grasse, for horses sustenaunce
 And faire wether to mennes high pleasaunce

The tyme
 to beginne
 warre in
 Scotlande.

O righteous prince, byng home þe scatred men
 To their pasture forsaken and forloze
 For of your breste, should greate foyson ren
 To nedye menne, of grace and help cuermore
 Considre how God hath you set therfore
 And ouer the flocke, to seke the scatered shepe
 And late thein in your fold surely to slepe.

Considre now, moste gracious souereigne lord
 Note

King Edward

How long now that your noble auncetrie
In welth and helth, hath reigned of hie recoꝝde
That kept lawe and peace continually
And thinke thei been of all your monarchie
The fairest floures and highest of enterprize
And sonest maie your foȝin fooes suppress.

☛ Considꝛe also in this simple tretise
How kynges kepte neither lawe ne peace
Went sone awaie, in many diuerse wise
Without thanke of God at their decese
And nought wer dꝛed within, ne without doutlesse
But in defaulte of peace, and lawe conserued
Destroyed wer, right as thei had deserued.

☛ Considꝛe also, moſte earthly ſoueraigne lorde
Of french noꝝ Scottes ye get neuer to your pale
Any treaty oꝝ trewe, oꝝ good concoꝝde
But if it bee vnder your banner aye
Whiche maie neuer bee, by reason any waie
But if your realme ſtande well in vnitee
Conserued well, in peace and equitee.

☛ Your Marches kepte, & also your ſea full clere
To fraunce oꝝ Spaine, ye maie ride foꝝ your right
To Portyngale and Scotland with your banner
Whils your rereward in Englaꝝd ſtandeth wight
Under your banner, your enemies will you hight
A better treaty, within a tittle date
Then in four yere, to your ambassate.

☛ Remembꝛed been, vnto your excellence
The titles all, that long to your regiment

Of

Of Scotlande whole, with all my diligence
That thirde parte, is of Brittain by extent
And owe to been, at your commaundement
And membze of your royall monarchie
As chronicles haue made therof memorie.

¶ Englane and Wales, as to their souereigne
To you obey, which should thinke shame of right
To se Scotlande thus proudly disobeyne
Again theim twoo, that been of greate might
It is a shame to euery mannes sight
Sith Ihon Bailioll, his right of it resigned
To kyng Edward, why is it thus repugned.

¶ Within thre yere, their greate rebellion
Ye might repressse, and vtterly restrain
And kepe theim euer in your possession
foz to obey your might, make theim full fain
As kyng Edward did with hunger and with pain
Theim conquered whole, to his subieccion
To hyde euermore vnder his proteccion.

¶ Wherfore good lord, now girde you with your
And sette vpon the frowarde heretikes (swerde
That erren fro the twoo partes of the herde
And straine out, as thei wer litargikes
Whiche haue forgotte their lord as chzonnatikes
Hauyng no shame of their peruer site.
Noz chauge hewe foz their fall site.

¶ And truste it well, as God is now in heuent
Ye shall neuer finde the Scottes vnto you trewe
Where thei maie with your enemies ay beleue

¶ The

The kynges title.

Ther will to you then, alwaie bee bnttwe
yet through your manhed, it maie theim rewe
foz lenger then ye haue theim in subieccion
Trust neuer truth, in theim ne perfeccion.

The. CC. xli. Chapter.

The kynges title to all his landes, bryfely reported,
with a monicion to vniou Scotlande and Englande.



England haue ye right, as ye maie se
By Brutus Chronicle Saxons & Nor-
mans
To Wales þ same, & Scotlāde also perde
Who that the gifte and right well vnderstandes
Of Ihon Bailoll, how he into the handes
Of kyng Edward, he gaue and resigned
Why should it now bee voyde and repigned.

To fraunce your title, is wrytten well & knowe
foz sainte Louis, to you by whole discent
And Normandy all whole, bothe high and lowe
fro Willyam Conqueroure, by whole entent
Guyan and Poytowe, withall to theim appent
foz Elianour the mother of kyng Ihon
Daughter and heire, to duke Willyam anon.

To Angeou also, by Gessrey Plantagenet
father of Henry le fitz Empryce
That of Angeou was erle withouten let
And of Haine also, a prince of Greate empryce
To Irelande also, by kyng Henry le fitz
Of Maude, daughter of first kyng Henry
That conquered it, foz their greate herisie

W To Castell and to Lion also ye been
 The enheritoure also and herie heire
 By right of bloud discended clere and clene
 Of Dortyngale, where Lushborne is full faire
 fro kyng Petro without any dispaire
 for tho twoo, bee the herie regions
 That named bee Castell and Legions.

W Your graundfathers mother duchesse Isabell
 full lady like faire and femenine
 To kyng Petro as I haue heard tell
 Was herie heire of thein, by rightfull line
 To whom ye been heire as menne determine
 By smal hackeneis, greate coursers men chastice
 As Arthure did by Scottes, wanne all franchise

W Though scripture saith, of North all euill is
 We thinketh I can auant it as properly (shewed
 That thei bee as manly learned and lewed
 As any folke and as muche pain maie drie
 Better menne of warre are not vnder the skie
 And of liuyng, Dauid saith in his booke
 Of Scotlande well, who so that will it looke

W If Scotland wer poures, to Wales & Englad
 Who hath power, to make you resistance
 In any wise, in any vncouth lande
 Your reeward then scant in all sufficiency
 To kepe Englande surely in your absence
 Make them Albion, and passe furthe where ye list
 To other landes ye nede none other trust

The excusacion of the maker, touchyng defaultes
of this booke, and of the simpleneste of it.

If all matters I haue saied myne entent
So as I couth espie, & in all wise inquire
Whiche if it maie, your highnesse well co-
mforte my herte reioyseth, to comfort your desire (tent
And of your grace, euermore I you require
For to confidre, my losse and my maine in fere
For Englandes right, as well as I couth spere.

20 Besechyng ay vnto your royaltee
It ought bee saied in this simple treatise
Displeasyng to your high nobilitie
For to resume it, in a better wise
Hauyng my witte excused, that neuer was wise
And thinke I would haue met vnto your plesaunce
To whiche I lake nothyng, but suffisaunce.

20 Please it also vnto your royaltee
The quene maie haue a verie intellect
Of your elders of greate antiquitee
And of Englande, of whiche she is elect
Soueraigne lady, full worthely protect
Under your rule and noble gouernaunce
Whiche God ay kepe without variaunce.

20 The whiche should please her good feminitie
To reade vpon, for her comforte and disporte
To see and knowe, the greate nobilitie
Of your elders regaly and porte
Whiche make her glad alwaie and recomforte
And if it maie please her soueraintie.

Of my labour I would reioysed bee.

For women haue feimelne condicion
To knowe al thynges longyng to their housband
His hie worship and his disposicion
His hertes counsaill also to vnderstande
As at weddyng, to her he made his bande
And moſte of all his hertes priuete
And theſtate of his good auncetrie.

O ſoueraigne lozde, the quene hath all ſuffici-
As touchyng you, but of your auncetrie (ence
In this treatiſe of all their excellence
The quene maie ſee the worthy regence
Of this your realme and noble monarchie
Whiche hath been kept in greate nobilitie
By your elders of greate antiquitee.

This booke I call after my name Hardyng
Sith God lent me that diſpoſicion
To enforme hym that laboured the wrytyng
By plain language of ſmall prouiſion
Through Godes grace and ſuppoſicion
All deſtitute of language and ſcience
And deſolate of rethorike eloquence.

Moſte cauſe was why I drewe this ilke treatiſe
To make your father haue had perfect knowlage
And you alſo of Scotlande in all wiſe
That percell was of your eldeſt heritage
And of all landes moſte nere your auantage
To haue it whole, no moze to bee diſmembred
Whiche might bee gotte, as it is afore remembred

20 I had it leuer then fraunce and Normandy
And all your rightes that are beyonde the see
For ye maye kepe it euermore full sikirly
Within your self and dzed none enmittee
And other landes, without gold, menne and fee
Ye maye not long reioyse, as hath been told
For lighter bee thei for to wyne, then hold.

21 Your auncestres haue had beyonde the see
Diuerse landes, and lost them all again
Sone gottē sone lost, what auaieth suche roialte
But labour and cost, greate losse of men and pain
For ay beforē, with treason or with train
And want of gold, was lost within a yere
That we had gotte in ten, as dooeth appere.

How the maker of

this booke reporteth the distaunce and miles
of the townes in Scotland and the waie
how to conueigh an armie as
well by lande as water into
the chiefe partes therof.



OWE to expresse, unto your noble
grace

The verie waie, bothe by sea & lande
With the distaunce of townes, and
every miles space

Throughe the chiefe part of all Scotlande
To conueigh an armie, that ye maye take in hande
Hereafter shall folowe, in as good ordre as I maye
The

The true Description, and distaunce of the waie

From Berwike to Donbarre. xx. miles it is
 And twenty miles forward vnto Haddingtoun
 And twelue miles fro thence to Edinburgh I wis
 To Lithko twelue. and so Northwest to Boune
 Twelue miles it is, vnto Sterlyngtoun
 Besouth Foozth, that riuer principall
 Of right faire waie, and plentifull at all.

From Berwike to Dō
 barre. xx.
 Haddingtoun. xii.
 Edinburgh
 xii. Lithko.
 xii. Sterlig
 xii.

Where that your nauy at Leith maie rest safely
 With all your vitailles, a mile from Edinburgh
 And after, at the blaknesse, whyles as ye ly
 At Sterlyngtoun, whiche is the kynges burgh
 And wyne that shire, all whole out throughe
 So shall your nauy at your necessitee
 Bee at your hande still, your armie to supplie.

From Edē
 burghe too
 Lieth. i. to
 Blaknesse
 ix. to Ster
 lyng. xlii.

From Sterlyng then, ouer the riuer of Foozth
 Passe alongest the brydge to Camskynelle
 And if it bee broken toward the North
 Vnto the foozde of Tirps vnder the fell
 Then speede you Westward, thre miles as men tell
 Where ye maie passe to the doune of Wenteth
 Whiche passeth fro the Foozth thre miles vnneth.

From Ster
 lyng to the
 doune of
 Wenteth

Then fro the doune, a waie ye haue right faire
 Throughe out Wenteth, & eke Clakmannam shire
 And so throughe fiffe, to falkelande to repaire
 Thirty long miles, without mosse or mire
 For so it is compted, with horse and carte to hire
 From Sterlyng Eastward, and the high oghilles
 Whiche some men call montaignes, & some felles

From Ster
 lig to Falk
 lande. xxx.

The miles

¶ Fro Falkland then to Disert toune, south east
Twelke miles it is, of faire ready waie
And from Falklande to saint Andzewes, east
But other twelke miles, without any naie
Wher the bishoppes see is, and castle as thei saie
And at Kyngorne, and Disert maie ye mete
You for to vitail, all your Englishe flete.

¶ Then ride Northwest, from .s. Andzewes toun
Alongest the Southe side, of the water of Tape
Up to the burgh of saint Jhons towne
Right North from Fife, a countree freshe and gaie
And from saint Andzewes .xliiii. miles thei saie
A pleasant ground and frutefull countree
Of corne and cattell, with prosperitee.

¶ Whiche countree of fife along the Scottishe see
And from saint Andzewes, to the oghles thei saie
Is .xliiii. miles long of good countree
And sometyme in bredth sixe miles of faire waie
But from Lough leuen eastward, without naie
Of right good waie, briesly to conclude
Twelke miles contain it dooeth in latitude.

At Ennerke then and saint Margarete I hope
Your nauy maie receiue vitail in that countree
Alongest the water of Forth, as I can grope
With hulke, and barge, of no small quantitee
You to suppozte, in your necessitee
So that ye maie not, in those countrees faill
To haue for your armie, ready vitail.

¶ Then to .s. Jhons toun, vpon þ water of Tape
Within

Within Strathzen, that standeth faire and strong
Ditched aboute, sixtene foote depe I saie
And twenty foote on bredth ouertharte to long
It is Northeast twenty miles full long
And nere to Scone abbay, within miles thre
Where alwaies thei croune their kynges maiestee

¶ Whiche water of Tay, is so nauigable
From the East, to saint Jhons toun
For all suche shippes, as bee able
Fourty tunne of wine, to cary vp and doun
For vitaillyng, and keepyng of the toun
Unto the whiche, so floweth the water of Tay
That all the ditches it filleth night and daie.

¶ At the whiche toun, passe ouer þe bridge ye shall
With all your armie, hostyng throug that land
Where in Angus, that countree principall
The kerke of Gowry dooth lie I vnderstande
A plentiful countree, I you warrande
Of come and catell, and all commoditees
You to suppozte, in your necessitees.

¶ Betwixt the mounthes and the water of Tay
Whiche some do call moñtaignes in our langage
Passe Eastward, with your armie daie by daie
From place to place with small cariage
For your nauy shall you mete in this voyage
At Doyntinragge, shorte waie from Dunde
With vitailles to refreshe your whole armie.

¶ Beside the stuffe and vitail of that lande
Whiche ye shall finde, in the countree as ye go
And market made alwaies to your hande

The miles

Of all their bitailes, although thei bee your fo
Now fro saint Jhons toun, the sothe to saie is so
Eightene miles it is, to the towne of Dundie!
The principall burgh, by Nothe the Scotishe see

Then ride Northeast all alongest the see
Right from Dumber to Arbzoith as I mene
Then to Monrolle, and to Baruie
And so throughe the Meernes to Colwy as I went
Then twelfe miles or more passe to Aberdyne
Betwene Dee and Done a goodly citee
A marchant toun and vniuersitee.

Of the whiche waie, thirty miles there is
Of good corne lande, and twenty large extente
Full of catell and other goodes I wille
As to Mooze lande, and heth dooth well appente
From Buchan citee to the orient
Where dooth stande vpon the see
A goodly porte and haue for your nauie.

Where that the same, maie easely you incte
To bitaile your armie, wheresoeuer ye go
Ouer all the mountaignes, drie mosses and wete
Where the wild Scottes do dwell then passe vnto
That is in Mare and Garioth also
In Athill, Rosse, Sutherlande and Chatnesse
Mureffe, Lenox, and out isles I gesse.

And when ye haue that lande whole conquered
Returne again vnto Striuelyne
And from thence to Glasco homeward
Twenty and foure miles to saint Mōgos shrine
Wherewith

Wherwith your offryng ye shall fro thence declpne
And passe on furthwarde to Dumbertayne
A castle strong and harde for to obtayne

In whiche castle saint Patrike was borne
That after ward in Irelande did winne
Aboute the whiche floweth euen and moene
The Westerne seas without noyse or dinne
When furthe of thesame the streames dooe rinne
Twise in .xxiii. houres, without any faile
That no manne maie that strong castle assaile,

Upon a rocke so hie, thesame dooth stande
That if the walles wer beaten to the roche
Yet wer it full heard to climbe with foote or hande
And so to wyne, if any to theim appoche
So strong it is to gette without reproche
That without hunger, and cruell famishment
It cannot bee taken to my iudgement.

Then from Glasgo to the toune of Ayr
Are twenty miles and foure well accompted
A good countree for your armie euery where
And plenteous also, by many one recounted
For there I was, and at thesame, I mounted
Toward Lemarketoune, .xxiii. miles
Homeward trudging, for fere of Scottis giles.

From the toune of Ayr in kilc, to Galloway
Through Carrick passe vnto Rithisdale
Where Dumfrise is a pretie toune alwaie
And plentifull also of all good vitail
For all your armie, without any faile

The miles

So that keepng this iourney, by my instrucciou
That realme ye shall byng in subieccion.

Then from Domfrise to Carlill, ye shall ride:
Twenty and foure miles of very redy waie
So maie ye wyne the lande on euery side
Within a yere, withouten moze delaie
For castles there is none, þ withstande you maie
Nor abide your siege, against your ordinaunce
So simple and weake, is their purciaunce.

And if ye like good lord, at home to abide
With litle cost, your Wardens ye maie sende
Chargyng them all, with hostes for to ride
In propre persone, through winter to the ende
With mozeow forraies, thei maie them soze offende
And burne Jedburgh, Hawike, Melrose, & Lader
Codyngham, Donglasse, & the toun of Dombarr

Then sende an hoste of footemen in
At Lamnesse next, through all Lawdendale
And Lammermoze woddes, and mossis ouer in
And eke therwith the Stowe of weddale
Melrose lande, Strike forrest, and Tiuidale
Liddisdale, Ewisdale, and the Kyngwodfeld
To the Crike Crosse, that riden is full seld.

The Wardens then of bothe the marches two
To bee their staile, and eke their castles strong
Then to reskewe from encimies where euer thei go
With slepyng stailes, to folowe them ay among
Lesse nor then fooes theim suppressse and song
And cuery night to releue to the hoste

And

And lodge together all vpon a coste.

And also then at the next Highelmesse
The West Warden to Dumfries ride he maie
foure and twenty miles from Carelil as I gesse
And then passe forthward, through Galowaie
To Carrike after, into good araie
And then from thence, to the towne of Aire
In kile that countree, plentifull and faire

Nexte then from Aire, vnto Glasgou go
A goodly citee and vniuersitee
Where plentifull is the countree also
Replenished well with all commoditee
There maie the Warden of the East Marche bee
And mete the other twaine as I wene
Within ten daies, or at the moste fiftene.

The thirde armie from Barwike passe it shall
Through Dumbarre, Edinburgh, and Lithko
And then to Sterlyng, with their power all
And nexte from that vnto Glasgo
Standyng vpon Clide, and where also
Of corne and cattell is aboundaunce
Your armie to vitail at all suffisaunce.

Thus these thre armies at Glasgo shall mete
Well araied in their armoure clene
Whiche homward fro thence, thei shall retorne co-
foure & twenty miles to Lannarke so shene (plete
To Pebles on Twede, is sixtene miles I wene
To Soltray as muche, then. xx. miles with spede
From thence retorne, thei shall to Mark on twede
With

The milles

Within a moneth, this lande maie bee destroyed
All a south furth if wardens will assente
So that our enemies shalbe soze annoied
And wasted bee, and eke for euer thente
If Wardens thus woozke, after myne intent
Thei maie well quenche, the cruell enmittee
This daie by southe all the Scotishe see.

Now of this matter, I haue saied myne intent
Like as I could espie and diligently inquire
Whiche if it maie your highnesse well contente
It is the thyng that I hertely desire
And of your grace no more I dooe require
But that your grace, will take in good part:
Not onely my paines, but also my true harte.

Continuation of the Chronicle of England

A continuation

of the Chronicle of England
beginnyng where Tho Mat-

dyng left, that is to saye, from the be-

gynnyng of Edward the fourth un-

to this present thyrre and foote

perre of our moste redoubt-

ed soueraigne to be

dynge Henry the

eight, gather-

ed our

of the

moste credible

and autentique

wryters.



To the reader.



Lik as muche moſte be-
lyng reader, as this former
autour Jhon Hardyng, wrote
no farther then to kynge Ed-
ward þ fourth: in whose daies
it ſhould apere that he depar-
ted out of this world: and alſo
conſidering the lengthe of the
tyme ſence, and the manifold goodly hiſto-
ries, bat-
tailles and dectes with the diſſent and lye
of the kynges of Englande ſince that tyme, I
thoughte it not onely my dewtie to labour the
knowledge of the ſame hiſto-
ries to the entente to
adiourne and annere theſame here vnto, but alſo it
ſhould bee a greuous offence in me to ſuffer you to
bee deprived of ſo many fruitfull and neceſſarie
thynges. Wherefore I haue here to the uttermoſt
of my pooore witte gathered and ſette furth vnto
you theſaid hiſto-
ries, not in metre, like as Jhon
Hardyng hath doone before, partly becauſe I
would thereby declare a difference betwene the for-
mer wrytyng of Jhon Hardyng and this my ad-
dition, but ſpecially, that theſe excellent ſto-
ries ſhould neither in ſence ner woordes bee de-
ſaced of
the eloquence and greate grace that the autours
of theſame haue all ready geuen them, and there-
fore haue I wrytten them vnto you in proſe and
at length, the whiche thynges how muche the
more that they ſhall delight and pleaſe
you, ſo muche the more glad ſhall
I bee of my paines taken.

¶

¶

Kyng Edward

fol. ii.

the fourth.



AFTER THAT
Edward duke of
York, had van-
quished and put
to flight Henry
the sixth being the
best ioyous and
elated (partely
throughe the vi-
ctorie that he had
gotten, and partly
for that the com-

mons began to cleave vnto hym and to take his
part, and likewise did the states of the realme) the
departed he with all conuenient speede to London,
and there assembling his counsaill together, was
shortely after proclaimed and crowned kyng at
Westminster the nyne & twenty daie of June, and
was called kyng Edward the fourth of that name
after Willlyam the conquerour, and this was in
the yere of Christs his incarnation a thousande
four: hundred thre score and one. And the selfe
same yere kyng Edward held his parliamente,
in the whiche, firste the realme was sette in good
ordre, and all thynges wholly redressed, whiche
was verie good and expediente for the common
weale, for that it had not been looked too all the
tyme that cyttle barrall did continue. And also

The firste
yere.

A. ii.

through

through his decree and will, all the statutes that
kyng Henry the first had made, was utterly abro-
gated and of no virtue or strength: finally at this
parliament his twoo brethren that were younger
then he, George was made duke of Clarence, and
Richard duke of Gloucester, and sir John de
brother to Richard duke of Warwick was made
first lord Mountague, and at the last he was
created Marques Mountague and Henry Bur-
chire the brother of Thomas bishop of Cantu-
bury duke of Essex and William Tancarville
erle of Norfolke, and this Henry Burchire being a no-
ble manne and moste puyssant in feactes of warre
had geuen hym to marriage the sister of Richard
duke of York, called Elizabeth. And for this cause
chiefly, that the said Richard mighte haue the
assistaunce and help of hym in al maner of aduen-
tures that should chaunce, ether by battail or other-
wise and that he did after that kyng Edward the
sonne of the same Richard had made hym erle of
Essex, to theend that bothe the father and the sonne
might at all tymes bee a sure fortresse and defence
for hym. And he had gotten of this Elizabeth in
lawfull marriage foure menne children that is to
saye, William, Thomas, John, and Henry, & one
daughter called Mabel, the which he liued but a
short space: the which sonnes were greately gylt
in byngng matters to passe and in knightlie af-
fares and busynesse were laborious, in aduen-
tures and ieperdies manly & bold, and in forseyng
thynges very circumspect, but specially William
the eldest had all these qualities. This William
died June a maiden descendyng of high parentage
and

of most pure virginittie, the daughter of Jaquet
 Duches of Bedford, by Rycharde earle Ryuers,
 daughter to James of Lulshenbrough earle of
 Gaule by whom he had Henry now earle of Essex,
 also Cicile and Isabel daughters, the whiche Isa-
 bel died before she was ripe to mariage, and the
 other was married to Walter lord Ferrysse. But
 to come to that I spake in the beginnyng.

When all thinges chaused thus luckely to Ed-
 ward, and that al was as he would haue it, Henry
 duke of Somerset fearyng that kyng Henry shuld
 go to wracke, and take the worse, fled to kyng Ed-
 ward, of whom he was after the most gentle sorte
 intertayned, but sone after it repented him of his
 dede, for in the meane season kyng Henry had got
 a great power of Scottishmen, and vnwitting to
 kyng Edward gat Buresine, the whiche thyng af-
 ter hearde, the duke of Somerset fled priuely to
 him, with a great compaignie of the kyng his fre-
 des folowynge after, and so, many for desire of lu-
 cre and bauntage dyd turne to him, that kyng
 Henry was thought to haue as great an armie
 as his enemy had. The whiche armie he made
 men thynke to be the greater for that he did spoile
 and destroy townes and feldes wheresoeuer he
 came, & so by long burnyng and wastynge he came
 to a village called Erham, where as he encounte-
 red with John lord Mountacute whom he mette
 there, and there fightyng very sharply, as often
 tymes it had chaused before, was put to flight,
 losyng the greatest nomibre of his host, and he him-
 selfe with a fewe mo, fled in all the hast to Scot-
 land, and the residue fled, some one way and some

Howe Hen-
 ry the duke
 of Somer-
 set left
 kyng Hen-
 ry the. vi.
 and fled
 to kyng
 Edward
 and after
 repented
 fled again
 to Henry
 the sixt.

The dis-
 comfiture
 of Henry
 the sixt.

Kyng Edwarde

The duke
of Somers-
et taken
& beheaded
at Exham

another to saue their liues. There was taken the-
prisoners, Henry duke of Somerset, Robert lord
Hungerford, and Thomas lord Rolle, & Thomas
Wentworth, & & Thomas Husle, the which
Duke of Somerset was put to death by and by for
that he had chaunged his mynde so sone & went to
the other partie, the other were had to Newecastel,
and there beyng for a season were put to death in
like maner, wherby other shoulde haue no trust
of any victorie, when they captaines were deade
and gone. Albeit kyng Edwarde nowe might
thynke all thynges to be wel, and him selfe strong
ynough against the power of his enemye for that
he had gotte suche a victorie, yet dyd he with all
diligence prouyde that Margarete kyng Henrys
the sixte his wyfe, shoulde at no hande be let into
Englande for feare of wynnynge mens heartes to
her. Wherefore, he made bulwarkes and sure for-
tresses on euerye parte and coastes of his realme
that there mighte be no landyng, and dyd wyte
to all them of the Southe partes, that they shoulde
in no wyse take in any woman, or heaelp any, for
yf any so dyd, he shoulde be taken as an enemye and
an highe traytoure to the croune, as they were a-
gainst whome he did fight.

The fa-
kyng of
Henry
the sixt.

And of that parte that is nigh to the Scottishe
bancke, he layde watches, that none shoulde goot
out of the realme to kyng Henry. But kyng Hen-
ry him selfe was neuer in any great feare whatso-
euer chaunced, in so muche that he came into Eng-
land in a disguysed apparel, and then beyng kno-
wen and taken of certayne spyres sone after he had
come in, was caried to London to kyng Edward,
and

and there layde in holde. After whose attaching & imprisonment the realme was let in more quietnes. Wherefore kyng Edward nowe beyng out of all feare and daunger of his enemies, dyd wholly set him selfe the. iiii. yeres after ensuyng to the reformation and redressyng of his publyke weale, & to the recōpensyng of his souldiers for theyr paynes: accordyng to the olde pꝛouerbe, the ploughman that labourerth ought fyrst to tast of the newe fruit, he dyd deuide and geue the landes of them that were with kyng Henry to his owne seruauntes, and so with geuyng large and ample rewarde, dyd get fauoure of all his people as wel the lay as the nobles, and vsyng suche bybanyte and familiaritie to al kynd of menne (more then his estate required) that he had thꝛoughly wonne the heartes of all menne: the whiche gentlenes and frendly familiaritee he dyd euer after vse. Also as for the lawes of the realme he did alter and mende some, and some he made newe, besides that he coyned money as wel gold as siluer, the which at this day is currante. The whiche golde was royals, and nobles, and the siluer was grotes, so that in his tyme this kynd of coyne came by.

The coynyng of royals & nobles.

And after that his realme was in this state, he made a pꝛoclamation, that yf any manne beyng a traytour or rebellyon heretofore to his grace, and wyllyng to submyt him selfe wholly to him, shulde haue his pardon, and other that wolde not, shulde dye, and suffer accordyng to the lawes. The whiche kyndnes and natieue loue dyd cause him to haue the good wyl and heart of his commons, so muche that it is euident, he was all the daies of his life

Kyng Edwarde

a conqueroure, through the helpe and ayde of the
in so muche, that his enemies were very shamefully
put to wꝛacke, as it shalbe shewed moze plainly
hereafter. And also not satisfied with the fredshyp
of his owne countrec men, dyd wyne and procure
the loue of fozen and straunge princes, and made
them to be of affinitie with him, whereby that they
might, (yf nede shoulde so requyre) ayde and suc-
cour him, oꝛ at the least, not be iniurious oꝛ noy-
some to him. So that he married his syster ladye
Margarete, to Charles the sonne of Whyllyp Duke
of Burgoyne, through whiche mariage he had
great helpe at the insurrection & chaused in this
his nativ countrec. And after that he sent Richard
the earle of Warwyke ambassadour into Fraunce,
the whiche shoulde desyre for him to wyfe, a mayde
called Bona, the syster of Carlot the frenche
quene, and the doughter of Lewes Duke of Sa-
uoye, a lady of excellent beautie, whiche after did
marry John Galeot Duke of Maylayne, the whiche
busyness did cause ciuile warre and great mischief
to ensue. For in the meane tyme that the erle went
into Fraunce, and had spoken with kyng Le-
wes, with whom the lady Bona was, and way-
ted vpon the quene her syster, Edwarde chaun-
ging his mynde, married lady Elizabeth the
doughter of Rycharde the earle of Ryuers, whiche
was married before to syꝛ John Gray knyght, by
whom she had two chyldeꝛen, Thomas and Ry-
charde, of the whiche mariage, for the humyltye
oꝛ basenes of stocke that the lady was of, he wolde
no prince oꝛ kyng to haue knowen of it, no not
so muche as her owne father Rycharde the earle,
foꝛ

for the whiche cause, when it was blased abroad, every man dyd marueile greatly, kynges & prynces were displeased and grudged at it, and sayd plainly, that it was not for his honoure so to dooe, and began to reprove the foresayd mariage shamefully, & for that he was led rather by blinde Cuppyde, than by any reason, they dyd incessantly reprove the same. And either this was the smoke that kyndeled the fyre, whiche afterward dyd ryle betwixt kyng Edward and the earle of Warwyke, or els the pryvie enuye and malice whiche was in bothe theyr heartes nowe brastyng out, wherby an occasion of quarel might be picked. For kyng Edward after that he had gotte his kyngdome (as it was openly knowen) by the earle of Warwykes meane and helpe, begonne to suspect him for that he was in suche authoritee, so that he would haue plucked somewhat from him and diminished his powre, wherby he might haue ruled all thynges at his owne pleasure bothe in his owne countree, and in other nations. So that a man may see, it oft chaunceth that frendes wyl geue very seldome condigne rewarde to a mans deservynges, yea, & chylones when a great benefite is bestowed or conferred vpon them, they wyl lyke ingrate persons nothyng consider it. Of this the erle of Warwyke was not unknowyng, & whiche although he loked for better thanks & a more ample benefite at his handes, yet neuertheles, he thought best to dissemble and cloke y^e matter, vntil suche oportunitie might be had, wherby he might, considering the wylfulness of the king exprobrate vnto him the pleasures that he had doone for him. And it is not vntreue
that

that the kyng dyd attempt to do an act in the erles house, whiche was bothe against the erles honour and honestee, whether he wolde haue violated the erles niece or another damosel in the erles house, all men knewe not, for the kyng was a man that loued bothe to see and feele a fayre woman. But whatsoeuer it was, either euil wyl, or desyre of the empire that theyr league shoulde be infringed or broke, after that the earle had sure knowledge by the letters of his frendes that the kyng had gottē him a wyfe priuely and that all that he had done with king Lewes in his ambassad for the ioyning of this newe affinitee was but frustrate & in vain, he was so earnestly moued with it, that he thought best that the kyng shoulde be deposed from the crowne, and as one not worthy to suche a kyngly offyce. But to oure purpose: The earle of Warwyke beyng then sore vexed and moued with the kyng, least that in this his furoure his intent beyng rashely gone aboute, shulde be brought to no good ende, he determined so long to suffer & beate suche iniuries, vntyll suche tyme that he might byyng his matters to passe as he wolde haue them whiche shortly after came into England, and saluting the kyng, dyd his message vnto him, making hym selfe to be ignoraunt of that marriage. And after that, the earle through the licence of the kyng went into his shyre of Warwyke, partly to take his pleasure, and partly for the preservation of his safete and health, whiche was the yere of our lordē God, a thousand. CCC. lxxii. and the. vi. yere of the reigne of kyng Edwarde. In the whiche yere, George Auel brother to the erle was made

The sixt
yere.

made archebyschoppe of yorke, after the discease of
 wylliam late archebyschop befoze him beyng the
 iii. byshop that had possessed that come, & Phylip
 duke of Burgoyne died the same yere, & Charles
 his sonne was made duke, a man bothe for man-
 hood and valiantnes in warre most excellent. This
 Rycharde as we sayde befoze, was in his shyre of
 Warwyke, and there calling to him George the
 archebyschoppe of yorke, & John late created Mar-
 ques Montacute his brethren bothe, & after long
 comunication had of many thynges, the space of.
 ii. or. iii. daies, at length gettyng mete occasion to
 speake of the kyng & his doynges, byd shewe his
 mynd to them, desirying them by al the waies that
 he coulde possible, to take kyng Henry his part &
 to helpe him to the croune, sayng after thys wyse
 and maner. Brethren, it is not of any lightenes of
 mynde, but of playne iudgement that I am mo-
 ued to speake of kyng Edward and kyng Henry.
 This Henry is a very godly mā, and loueth them
 that be his faithful subiectes, and dothe consider
 also who taketh paines for him which hath a sone
 called Edward borne by nature to bee of great
 worthynes, praise, and freelyberalitee, by whom
 euery man may perceyue muche towardnes, whi-
 che studieth thus to healpe his father now beyng
 in thraldome and captiuitie as muche as in him
 lyeth. And as for kyng Edward, he is a man full
 of contumely and ingratitude, geuen all to plea-
 sure, euyl wylling to take any paynes, and pro-
 motyng rather them that come of nought, than
 noble and auncient menne. Wherfoze I thyncke
 it wyll come to passe shortly, that either he wyll
 destruy

destroy al nobilitie, or els nobilitie must destroy
 him. But befoze al other, we shuld fyrst enterpryse
 to reuenge ourc owne cause whiche haue first ta-
 ken hurt at his handes. For he (as I am sure you
 knowe it bothe) after that he was kyng dyd fyrst
 priuely go aboute to desyle the fame and renowne
 of ourc house, and then after dyd openly intende
 our confusion and losse of honoure, as though he
 was not exalted to that dignitie by vs, but we pro-
 moted by him; and therfore euen now of late when
 I went ambassadour to Fraunce I was had litle or
 nothyng in regard, wherby the estimation whiche
 al kynges haue conceyued of ourc familie, partly
 gotten by our auncetours and partly by our owne
 trauailes & paines, shal now be extynguished bit-
 terly, & nothyng set by. And by these persuations
 he wonne his brother the archebishoppes heart, &
 brought him to be of his mynde, but he could not
 so soone nor easely persuade the Lorde Marques,
 for at the fyrst he wolde by no meanes be moued to
 worke treason at any hand against kyng Edward
 but at the last when the erle had promised him the
 helpe and powre of many noble princes he was co-
 tented to kepe warre. The whiche Marques as
 he was vnwilling to consent to this at the fyrst, so
 dyd he at the tyme of warre hold more of kyng Ed-
 warden syde then kyng Hentrie, as it shal appere
 more plainely hereafter, the whiche was bothe de-
 struction to him, & his two brethren. After this the
 earle of Warwike a man of great wyl perceiuyng
 George the duke of Clarence, brother to kyng Ed-
 ward, to beare no great good wyl toward his bro-
 ther the kyng, whatsoener the matter was, fyrst
 to

to prove him and to have his daye; and he
 complained of the king his deuyes, that
 that the Duke should the same sale with him
 again; and the Duke should have the same
 taken at his brother's house: the king should
 deliver to him, and he should have more at large
 to serve him as before his counsel; and that he
 should not have to be more of any higher
 will he should to be more for the king's
 the king's will; and he should have through his policy all
 his matter more compassed, and better by him, that
 he would have the same with him self he was doing
 such a weighty matter; so well for him and for
 the king to have good order and conclusion; to which
 after many great promises, he offered his daughter
 the same daye, to be married to him. The Duke
 through the counsel and great desire of the
 erle of Devonshire was contented to do all things
 as he would have him. After that the erle had
 his communication with the Duke, he purposed
 to go to Calais, of the which town he was then
 chief captain, and where his wife and daughters
 were then inhabiting; but to think that this sedi-
 tion might be the first beginning, where with all
 England was so troubled, and he should be
 appointed to stay there after he was gone to Calais
 his brother the bishop, and the lord of Aquitaine
 should have an instruction in the same, which
 by the battail might be beyond the sea, and so
 far from them; and when all these changes were prepared, and
 his counsel was done, he went straight
 with the Duke of Clarence to Calais, and there
 after

went backe backe again, loking when the erle of
 Montaigne should come, the whiche shortly after
 came from Calais with the Duke of Clarence his
 sonne in lawe to the hoste, and commending highly
 the capitaines, and restoyng gladly that they had
 the victorie, did speedily prepare another armie.
 Yet kyng Edward being nothing abashed that
 the erle of Pembroke had so euil sped, set hym forth a
 gain with a greater armie, whiche he had ready at
 all tymes whersoever he should chaunce, and he hym
 self did folowe with a small compaignie: so that he
 might bee readyer for all thynges in his countrie.
 he did cherishe his armie with many that came to
 hym of his secte, saying that his intent was to de
 stroye the route of infidels and flagitious perni
 cious. And the erle of Montaigne perceyving that
 his aduersaries came up to hym, sent in all the hast
 to the duke of Clarence whiche was right by hym
 with an hoste, that he would bring his armie in al
 the haste to hym, meaning that battail was at
 hande. The duke when he harde it, came straight
 to the erle. So they both coming together went
 to Banbury, where they perceined their enemies
 tentes were pitched, and there buckeling together
 toke the erle of Pembroke prisoner, and killed and
 discomfited all his men, and enlonges other of
 his nobles, there was killed richard erle of Glou
 cester the father of Elizabeth the queene, and his
 sonne John Mordaunt. And to morrow evening
 kyng Edward was the night, & hearing of the death
 and sodain bringing downe of his enemy, carried a
 a towne five mile from that place. The erle of
 Montaigne went to his chief towne with all his
 hoste.

Hoste, and there within twoo daies caused the erle
of Debzuch with certain other states take at that
tyme, to be beheaded. In the meane season ther be-
gonne a waie to bee founde for peace, for the whi-
che, letters were witten to and fro, and herauldes
sent from the kyng to the erle, and from the erle to
the kyng again, whereby the kyng trustyng verely
that all was pacified, was lesse ware of hym self,
and feared lesse his aduersaries, the whiche thyng
when it was knowen and shewed to therle by cer-
tain spies: he went furth in a night as priuely as
he could with a strong power to the kyng his ten-
tes, and there killyng theim that kepte watche,
tooke the kyng vnware at a place called Woolney,
and brought hym to Warwike, and to the entente
the kyng his frendes might not knowe where he
was, conueighed hym priuely from thence in the
night to a towne in Yorkeshire called Middelame
and there to bee kepte faste in hold vnder the ke-
pyng of the Archebishop of York which well en-
tertained hym and serued hym like a prince. But
yet the kyng could bee in no place nor prisone but
that shortly it was knowen, the whiche caused
many menne to bee sozpy and lament his chaunce.
But the kyng hym self spake faire to the archebi-
shop, & as the same wet corrupted ether the bishop
or his seruantes. So that one daie he had licence to
go a huntynge, & by the waie ther met with hym sir
Willia A parre sir Thomas Abowrogh the lord
Haward & diuerse other of his seruantes with su-
che a multitude that the archebishop nor all his
frendes durst not folowe the escape. The rumoure
was that therle was willyng to it, & whiche might
bee

bee of iskelehod, if therle had geuen ouer fightyng
but luche was the euill fortune of kyng Henry,
whereby a manne maie perceiue that he could ne-
uer haue his purpose, seyng mannes strength nor
policie was not able to ouercome, for the erle with
all his frendes did ventre their bodies, and spent
their substaunce to haue brought Henry to the roy-
all dignitee, for because he knewe surely, that as
long as kyng Edward reigned, neither could he
nor yet kyng Henry beare any rule. And yet neuer-
thelesse thei lette hym goo when he was in holde,
and when kyng Edward was deliuered, he went
streighte too York, and there beeyng honozably
receiued of his citezens, taried for the space of two
daies to gette hym an hoste of menne, but when he
could not haue a worthy compaignie, considryng
that he should goo to London emong the middell
of his hoste, went from York to Lancastre, & there
founde Wyllyam lord Hastings his lord chamberlain,
of whom he hauyng greatchelp came safe
to London. But therle of Warwike and the duke
after thei had perceiued kyng Edward to bee deli-
uered throughe meanes of false traitours as thei
called theim & that all thynges thei had apoynt-
ed was to none effect, wer greatly moued with
anger and sorow, and by and by callyng together
al their chief frendes, consulted how thei might be-
gynne battaill again, thewhiche when the kyng
was taken and in hold, was ended and doen. And
thus dooyng, there were certain that for verie an-
ger and for the loue that thei had to warre, offered
them selves to fight of freshe for nothyng, the whi-
che moued the chief capitaines to be the more earnest.

And

And kyng Edward was as willyng too fighte as
thei were, whereby he might either byrnyng them by
force of armes to quietnesse & peace, or els destroy
and kill them euey mother sonne, that the realme
might bee in a better state. For throughe their sedi-
cious rebellyng, the people were greatly impo-
uerished, seeyng that the churches and houses of
menne wer spoiled and robbed, and menne slain in
euey place, & corne and grasse also destroyed that
was of the grounde, and many other mischiefes
dooen the whiche dooe chaunce eftsones in battail.
The consideracion whereof, it pitied many menne
to se the cōmon weale in that case, the whiche went
daiely and hourelly aswell to therle as to the kyng
for attoneiment, desiering and counsaillyng theim
bothe, that thei would rather kepe peace and haue
the loue of all menne for their quiet liuyng, the to
liue in anger and enuy fighting one with an other
to the vndoyng of all the realme, where as it were
a wicked dedde to kill the father, but yet a greate
dele moze wicked to destroy the whole bodie of the
commen weale, whiche is the father of all menne,
and by the whiche euey māne is maintayned and
kepte. By this greate entreatyng of noble menne
therle and the kyng geuyng scith one too another
peace was had for a tyme, wherein the erle and
the Duke went bothe to London with a small com-
paignie of menne in comparison too the daunger
that thei wer in, and at Westminster was with the
kyng for the refozmacion and stablischyng of all
thynges and for peace to bee had, where the kyng
and thei beeyng at greate woozdes, nothyng was
determined or ended. Therefore the kyng for the

Kyng Edward

promisse that he had made to suffer thein safe to
goo and safe to retorne, departed and saied litle,
and the erle with the duke also went to Warwike,
and in Lyncolne shire gotte bp a newe hoste, and
made sir Robert Welles þ sonne of Richard lorde
Welles graunde capitaine, a noble manne of warre.
These tydynges comyng to London, moued the
kyng verie soze, whom he thought would rather
haue kepte peace then warre, but the moze that it
was shewed to hym vnlokyng for it that battaill
was at hande, with so muche the sooner and moze
spede he gathered an armie, and at the same tyme
sent diuerse messengers and haroldes for Richard
lorde Welles, and the same Richard beeyng often
so sent for, made his excuse that he was sicke and
diseased, but afterwarde when his excuse was not
admitted, he thinkyng to purge hymself sufficien-
tly befoze the kyng, came too London, bryngyng
with hym sir Thomas Demoke his brother in
lawe, and whē he was there, certtain of his frendes
certified hym that the kyng was soze moued with
hym, whiche for feare of the kyng did take sentua-
rie at Westminster and his brother also, myndyng
to tary there vnto suche tyme as the kyng his an-
ger were cooled and apcaced. But kyng Edward
trusyng to pacifie all this tumulte without blud
shed, promisyng those inenne his faith þ he would
not harne thein, caused thein bothe to come out
of sanctuary. The kyng callyng Richard to hym,
warned hym to bid his sone Robert that he should
leauē of warre, and goo from the erle, and in the
meane season the kyng wente forwarde with his
hoste against his enemies, bryngyng with hym
this

this foresayd Richard & Thomas, and beyng but
 fro Stamford where his enemies did lye the space
 of .ii. daies iourney, was informed that Roberte
 kept the armye styll, nothyng moued with the let-
 ters of his fathers writyng, for the whiche þe kyng
 beyng soze greued, caused bothe Rycharde & Tho-
 mas euen ther cōtrarie to his promise, most sham-
 fully to haue theyr headdes chopped of, & wrote
 flatteryng letters to syr Robert Welles willyng
 him to submyt him selfe and promysing pardon,
 but he scyng afore his eyes howe the kyng decey-
 ued his father, studied whether he shulde fight or
 no, for because it was icoperdeous to ventre vpon
 suche a great power before the erle came, yet at the
 last for the stoute courage and māly boldnes that
 was in him & for the reuengyng his fathers death
 they went together, & fought soze, long, and many
 men killed on bothe sides, and at the last when the
 forenamed Robert (encouraged his men that were
 redy to geue ouer) was cōpassed about of his ene-
 mies & taken, and sir Thomas Delalant with ma-
 ny mo, the whiche capitaines beyng taken all the
 hoost was put to flight & dyspuen away. This feld
 was called Losecote felde because the Lyncolne-
 shyre men cut their iackes and coates of defence &
 in their shyrtes ran away. The kyng beyng glad
 of this victorie, cōmaunded Robert Welles & syr
 Thomas Delalant with many other to be put to
 death at the same time & place. And in this battail
 there was kyllled as men reported tenne thousand
 men. The earle at this tyme beyng at his owne
 towne of Warwyke, and cōmyng shortly to his
 army at Stamford with his power, was informed

Losecote
 felde.

Kyng Edward

that the battaile was fought quicklier then he looked for, & that his men had þe worse part, although he might now be discouraged, yet he made as though he passed not and would not beleue, to the entent that he might the more enboulden certaine of his cōpaigny then despairyng & geuyng them selfe to flight, began to make a newe hoste, & with many fayre promises did wowe his brother in law Thomas lord Stanley, to take his part, but when the sayd Thomas would by no meanes fight or rebel against kyng Edward, then scyng it was time to go one waye, & he mistrustyng that he was not able to resist the power of his enemies, fled with the duke of Clarence (his sōne in lawe) to Exceetre. And when he had taried ther. ii. oz. iii. daies, seyng that he lacked al thinges necessary for warre, purposed to go to Lewes the frenche kyng, with whō at his ambassate into fraunce for the mariage of kyng Edward, he was very wel acquainted & beloued, trustyng either to haue some healpe of the frenche king, or els to incense him wholly to fight against kyng Edward, and so toke shyp at Dartmouth, bothe he & the duke with a great nombre of theyr familie, & sayled with the wynde to Normandy, where the gouernour of the country enterpayned him most royally, and in all the hast certified kyng Lewes of his cōmyng thither. And the kyng maruaillyng greatly at the noble actes that the erle had done, was mynded throughe to helpe him in all that he coulde, & knowyng that he was laded in fraunce, was glad of it, & sent to him certaine of his nobles, to shewe him that he did wishe to haue an occasion wherby he might helpe him, and

and at this tyme woulde gladly do foꝛ him, desir-
 yng him to come to Amboys where the king lay,
 whiche Amboys is a manoure place of the kinges
 set vpon the ryuer syde of Leyze, and the duke also
 his sonne in lawe and that it shoulde not be foꝛ his
 losse oꝛ harne.

This was the .ix. yere of kyng Edwardes reigne
 when the erle fled to fraunce, and of our Lorde a
 M. CCCC. and. lxxx. But this greued kyng Ed-
 warde that they were fled, foꝛ because many of the
 people and cōmunalte was desyrous to see him,
 and thought that the sonne had bene gone from
 them and out of the worlde, when he was absent.
 And in such estimation & honoꝛ was he had of the
 people, that they worshipped & honored none but
 him, oꝛ at the least none moze thē him. In so much
 that his only name was euery mans song & voice
 especially of the cōmen people when they made tri-
 umphes abrod in ystretes. Wherby, the most part
 helde of the erle his side, & bare him moze fauoure
 in theyꝛ hartes then kyng Edward. Wherfoze the
 kyng was in feare & daunger bothe of his owne
 countreimen that were in his realme, & of thē that
 were abrode in fraunce, but befoze all other he dyd
 prouide foꝛ the erle his cōpyng. And fyrst he sent
 to Charles duke of Burgoin his brother in lawe
 desir yng him that he would monysh king Lewis,
 with whō he made a league of peace, not to ayde y
 erle of Warwike oꝛ the duke his sōne in lawe, nei-
 ther with mony noꝛ with men. The whiche duke
 Charles wrote to the frēche kyng, & thretned him
 many thinges, if so that he mainteined oꝛ healped
 thē. And when y frēche king had red his letter he

E b. liii.

answered a-

gayne and sayd that he might lawfully & woulde
 lauyng his league and truce, healpe his frendes
 that were valiaunt and noble menne as the earle
 was, and setting nothyng by all his thretenyng
 and braggyng wordes, sayd it shoulde be neither
 great payne nor cost to him. When these tidynge
 came into Englande, the kyng was veray sorre,
 and for that cause searched priuely in his realme,
 who were frendes to his enemies. And for feare
 by the reason of the examination of them that wer
 prisoners and in his hand, some did take setuary,
 and some came to the kynges syde. And amonges
 them the lord Marques Montacute offered him
 selfe to the king again, to helpe him in his warres
 whō the kyng gladly receyued, for because that by
 him mo wold leane to his side. In this meane sea-
 son the erle of Warwyke & the duke went to Am-
 boys, where the frenche kyng was, & by the waye
 the people came veray thicke to see him, because
 they heard so muche speakyng of his noblenesse, &
 when he came there, the kyng receyued him moost
 gently, to whō shortly after the erle did breake his
 mynde, and shewed the cause of his comyng. To
 whom the kyng promised all that he coulde do for
 him to the vttermoost extente of his power. Sone
 after quene Margarete the wife of Henry the. vi.
 came to them, with her sonne prince Edward and
 the erle of Penbrycke, and also the erle of Oxforde
 the whiche a lytle afore sayled ouer to her. And af-
 ter they comyned together, as concernyng the safe-
 gard of theyr bodie, a league was made through
 the frenche kyng his counsell. And first lady Anne
 the doughter of the earle was married & desposed
 to

to prince Edward the quenes sonne. Also the erle
and the duke promised faithfully that they wolde
not geue ouer, vnto suche tyme that kyng Henry
the. vi. or Edward his sone were proclaymed king
of England, & after kyng Henry, that the earle &
the duke shoulde oucrise and gouerne the realme
by the wyl and appointment of the quene Marga-
rete & her sonne prince Edward, vnto suche tyme
that the fozenamed prince were of lawful age and
habilitie, the whiche they promised faithfully to
obserue and do as they were appointed. And besi-
des these, many other cōditions were made, as wel
for that reason did so require, as the busynes that
was at that tyme. When this league of trueth &
fidelitee was thus made, the kyng Lewes holpe
the erle with men, harnes & shippes that he might
the surer go into Englande. And Rene also the fa-
ther of quene Margarete, gaue him men & harnes
to his power. So that he hauyng no smal nombre
of men, did take shyp at Sayne mouth & there ta-
ryng, hearde worde fro England by letters, that
he shulde come ouer in all the hast, and that there
were so many that wolde take his parte, that he
shuld haue no nede to bring any with him, for they
were redy in harnes at the waters syde, willyng to
helpe him in al that they could, and not they onely
but many noble men and princes wolde helpe him
both with mony, men & harnes, and with all that
they could do. When he had receiued these letters
he purposed to go furth, and take the oportunitie
of the tyme. And because that the quene was not
redy to set furth, he & the erle of Orford & the erle
of Penbrych, went before with part of the hoost &

Kyng Edward

naue, to try what chaunce they shulde haue, so that if al thinges shulde chaunce wel, the quene and the prince shulde folowe & come into England. Therefore the erle & the duke thākyng the kyng as highly as they coude for that he had done so muche for them dyd take their leaue and sayled into England with al theyr armye. Then the duke of Burgoyne not cōtented that the earle shulde be holpen of the frenche kyng against kyng Edward, prepared a great nauye of shippes aboute the coastes of Normandy, that he might take him cōmyng towards England, whiche nauy was disperfed by tempest, so that the erle escaped all daungers, & lāded safe he and al his men at Dartmouth, frō the whiche place he sailed to fraunce half a yere before

After that the erle came to land, he made a proclamation in kyng Henry the sixt name, that all they that were of lawfull age shulde make battaile against Edward duke of York whiche against al right & lawe at that tyme had vsurped the croune. The whiche when it was done, it cannot be spoken howe soone it wente aboute all the realme that he was come and had made his proclamation, at the whiche also it is not to be expressed howe many thousandes of men came to him. The erle hauyng al this power & great army went straight to London, whō when Edward perceiued to drawe nigh, he fled for the tyme, trustyng to haue him at some baillage, but at the last he was driuen to that end, that he had no mynde to get any hoost to resist his enemies, but beyng in great daunger of his owne life passed the washes a daungercous passage & so fled with the duke of Gloucester his brother, vnto
a towne

a toun nigh the sea called Lynne, & there takyng
shipp, sayled into Flaunders, to Charles Duke of
Burgoyne with great daunger & perel of his life
by the reason of the boisterous & cruel winde. El-
zabeth his wyfe beyng then great with childe dyd
take sentuarpe at Westminster, where she was
brought in bed with a mā childe, whose name was
Edward. After that the erle knewe of the goyng a-
way of kyng Edward, he made hast to London &
hearyng of the tumulte and busynesse that was in
Kent, & that at the villages & suburges there were
spoyled piteously, a lytle before the goyng awaye
of the kyng, pacified the & set all thinges in good
ordre againe, by the doyng of the whiche benefite,
he was the more louyngly accepted of them all, &
that done, he came to the towre & there deliuered
kyng Henry the. vi. out of prison, & geuyng him
his robe of maiestie brought him to Boules, the
people reioysyng on euery side, & there thāked god
for that it had chaunced as they wolde, & desyred.
And this was the yere of our lord a. M. CCC.
lxxxi, that kyng Henry beganne to reigne. So that
kyng Henry so often vanquished began to reigne
newly nowe, likely shortly after to faule againe.
The which fortune chaūsed to him by many mens
opinions, because he was a very simple & innocēt
mā, & that he had rather in godlynes & vertue ex-
cel other, then in honour & rule, so that for the loue
that he had to Chyestes religion, he looked for no
dignitee or honour, whiche chaūseth to fewe þ̄ wyl
not seke for it or regard & kepe it when they haue
it. But his enemies sayd he was a cowarde, & had
not the heart or myndnesse to bee a kyng or meete
for

Kyng Edward

for that office. So that whosoeuer dispiseth that the comunc people alloweth & maruaileth at, is accepted for a mad mā, contrariwise, he that doeth agree to them & in theyr tale, he is a wise mā, wher in dedde suche wisdom (as it is comenly sayd) is folishenes befoze God. Also some sayd, it was the wyl of God that it shulde so be, for his graundfather Henry the fourth got it by violency and force of armes, so that it coulde not be long enioyed of him, but that faute of the graundesire dyd redoūd on the heyres. But now to the matter.

After this kyng Henry helde his parliament at Westminster, the. xvi. daye of Nouembze, in the whiche Edward is declared openly traytoure to his countree, because he had takē the croune to him and al his goodes geuen away, & in like maner al theirs that did take his part, & so iudgement was geuen on them to dye. Furthermoze, al the decrees statutes & actes of the forenamed Edward were broken & of none effect. And then the erle of Warwyke, a man y had deserued muche of his countree was made gouernour ouer all the realme, to whō he dyd take the duke of Clarence as felowe to him. So by that meanes the realme was brought to a new state, clene trāsformed & altered. To this parliament came the lorde Marques Montacute, the whiche excusyng his treason that he did take king Edwardes part, & sayng it was for fear of death, had his pardon. Cruely yf this manne had taken kyng Edwardes part, & had stand to his side māly, he had not been so soze an enemy, and hurted so muche his frēdes, as he was beyng a false fayned and coloured frende, for those thinges that we be-
ware

ware of, and knewe befoze to bee pernicious, dooe
 lesse hurte vs. But now quene Margarete beyng
 in Fraunce praied euery daie from that tyme the
 erle went into Englande, for the victorie, the whi-
 che when she knewe was obtained by the kyng her
 housbande his letters that came to her. Shortly af-
 ter did take shippe towarde Englande, but thro-
 rowe the sharpenesse of the wether and greate tem-
 pestes she was constrained to lande again, and to
 differ her iourney to another tyme. At the same
 tyme Gasper the erle of Penbroke went to Wales
 to his erledome, where he founde lozde Henry the
 erle of Richemond his brothers sonne, a childe of
 ten yere old, and there kepte prisoner, but like a no-
 ble manne of the erle Willian Harberts his wife,
 whom we spake of befoze, that kyng Edward had
 made erle of Penbroke in dispite of erle Jasper and
 the after take in battail was beheaded at Babery.

This is that Henry the whiche when Richard the Kyng R.
 the thirde brother to Edward was ouercome and ry the. vii.
 banquished, had the gouernaunce of the realme,
 of whom this is to bee beleued, that after that he
 came too his kyngdome sente as one by God too
 quenche and putte awate the greate sedicion and
 strife that was betwixt Henry and Edward, seyng
 that he mynded nothyng so muche as that, whom
 lady Margarete the onely daughter of Ihon the
 firste duke of Somerset did byng furthe beeyng
 but fourtene yeres of age, the whiche although
 she was married after to Henry Stafford the duke
 of Buckynghā his sonne, and after that to the erle
 of Derby, yet she neuer brought furth child after,
 as though she had dooen her parte when she had
 bozne

Kyng Edward

borne a manne childe, and the same a kyng of a realme. Gasper the erle of Denbroke tooke this childe Henry from the lorde Herberte erle of Denbroke his wife & brought hym soone after to London to kyng Henry the sixte, whom when the kyng had beholden long holdyng his peace, and marvelyng at the goodly witte of the childe, saied in this wise to the nobles that were at that tyme presente. Loo, this is he, this is he I saie, too whom bothe wee, and our aduersaries shall geue place too, in possession. And by this sayng declared that the self same Henry should in tyme to come, as it chaunced in deede, haue the kyngdome and rule of al the realme. And now kyng Edward although he was out of his countree, yet did he not dispaire but that he should haue matter and ready occasion to recouer his kyngdome: for the Duke of Burgoyne partely had promised hym bothe greate ayde and socoure, and partely the priuy frendes that he had in Englande did counsaill hym by letters sente from tyme to tyme, that he would hasten his iournay homeward, and incontinently after, verie many fled to hym out of Englande, either for feare of the lawes that thei had offended, or els for sorowe that the worlde was so turned, that thei could not haue their will, as thei had befoze, in accomplisshyng their coueteouse myndes and desires, and caused hym too make the more haste homewarde. And kyng Edward beeyng rauished with their golden promises, thought nothyng more painfull or wretched, then too tary one daie longer, and nothyng more pleasaunt then too go of his iourney: and so takyng no mo with them then twoo thousande

sande harnessed men, at the spyng of the yere sailed into Englande, lādyng in the costes of Yorkshire at a haven towne called Raucnspurre. And there setting furthe al his mynne, did reason with his capitaines and consulte, too what place they should strike goo. For it was leoperdiouse considering the small compaignie that he had, too take any waie furthe. But after long deliberacion, they were all agreed that some certain knyghtes and horsmen of that smal compaignie should bee sente vnto euery quarter too the townes that were nigh, too the entente that they mighte drawe the hertes and myndes of the people to kyng Edward his side. But it is not likely that kyng Edward beeyng a wise manne durste bee bolde, or would in any wise come into Englande with suche a small power, excepte he had knowen surely that he should haue had greate helpe at his comyng the whiche is a plain token, that the duke of Clarence, and the lord Marques, had secretely procured his fauour, promisyng hym al their help that they could make, for the triall of the whiche, there was manifest tokens, that disclosed and bewaied all their entent. They that kyng Edward had sente priuely wēt aboute the townes to knowe mennes myndes and to what parte they would decline and the nexte daie after came too kyng Edward, and shewed hym that the common people did stande styffe of kyng Henry his syde, and would defende his quarell as righte and iuste at all tymes, and that they had nomore nede now to make any tumulte, in so muche, that no manne would (although eftlong desired and prayed,) goo
to

to kyng Edward, yea, and that no manne would
for feare of the erle of Warwike, here any thyng
spoken of that matter, whose myndes after that
kyng Edward had thoroughly serched and knowe,
he chaūged his mynde and purpose, and where as
befoze he claimed the crowne, then he published a-
bzoode that he would haue but his right that was
his landes and heritage of the douchie of Yorke.
And at that wooꝝde, it can not bee well spokē how
redely menne were willyng to help hym, conside-
ryng that he claimed nothyng but his right, in so-
muche, that verie pitie did moue many, although
thei would not help hym, yet at no hande to resiste
hym. And kyng Edward reconsilyng hym self too
the common people by these meanes, toke his iour-
ney toward Yorke, and went to Beuerlay. Therle
then beyng at Warwike, after that he knewe that
kyng Edward was landed aboute Yorke, streight
sente a poste to his brother loꝝde Marques Mon-
tagewe then liyng that winter at Bomfreit with a
greate armie, to shewe hym what daunger mighte
ensue, if kyng Edward gotte the towne of Yorke,
and bid theim if his enemies dꝛewe nigh, either to
mete with theim in plain felde, oꝝ els to bete theim
frō the towne, vnto suche tyme, that he came with
a greater hoste whiche he pꝛepared then, in all the
haste he could. And because he knewe not surely
whiche waie his enemies would come, he first sent
to euery towne in Yorkeshire, and to Yorke it self
certain postes, to bid euery manne bee in harnesse
ready, and that the citezens should shut the gates
surely that kyng Edward might haue no acceſſe.
In þ̄ meane tyme kyng Edward came peaceably,
and

and without the resistance of any manne towardes the citee of York, of whose coming whē the citizens were certified, they made sure the gates, and standyng in harnesse for the defence of it did sende twoo of the aldermen to warne the kyng the coming nigh, that he dooe not enterpryse to far, or put hym self in leoperdy, for they wer mynded to drive hym & all his awaie with all the power they might. When kyng Edward had heard their mindes, he was in so greute feare and agonie that he could not tell what too dooe, for if he should have gone backe, he feared that the comynon people as menne gredie of a praye, would pursue hym and if he should go furth, he was in daunger of þe York-shiremen, lest they should sodenly fall vpon hym, and take hym: and therfore, seying that he was not able to matche them in battail, thought to mollify them with faire wordes, and so began to entreat after the moste lowly & gentle maner the messengers, that they would in his name shewe þe citizens that he came not to claime the crowne, but his heritage and right of the Duchie of York. and therefore that they would helpe their lord and Duke of York, and if that he mighte bee receiued through their meanes, he would requite their kyndenesse, and remembre their benifite as long as he liued. And by suche faire speakyng & flattery, he dismissed them and folowed straighte after to the gates with his compaignie. The citizens heeryng somewhat moued with this answer, for that he intended no harme against kyng Hēry, they spake with hym from the wall, and bad hym to go fro thence, and if he would goo quickly, he should take no

Ec. i. harme

harne. But he speakyng very getely to every one of theim, and callyng some by name, moſte gently did deſire theim that he might come into his owne towne. And ſo paſſyng all the daie in that communication, at the lengthe the citezens partly overcome with his moſte gentle ſpeakyng & large promiſes made, fell too this poynte, that if he would ſwere to handle his citezens after a gentle ſorte, & hereafter be obedient to kyng Henry his commaundement, thei would receiue hym into the citee, and help hym with all the power that thei might. Edward beeyng glad to here this, the next daie after early, a maſſe was ſaid at the gates, where he receiuyng the ſacramente, promiſed faithfully vpon his othe that he would obſerue bothe the thynges afore named, and ſo was receiued into the citee. Neuertheleſſe, it was ſo far vnlike that he would obſerue any one of theim, that he mynded none other thyng then that he might depriue kyng Henry of his crowne, as here after ſhall appere moze euident. So that often tymes we ſe noble men, as well as the late people, through ambition and filthy couetouſnes, thei forgettyng God and all godlines ſoo ſwere greate othes in promiſyng thynges, the whiche intende befoze thei make their othe, too breake it ſhortly after. Yet ſuche perſones oft tymes haue their rewardes of God at one or other tyme as this kyng Edward had, ſo that ſome tyme the puniſhment falleth on the nephewes, for the offence that the vnclie had committed. But of this thyng I will ſpeake moze in Richard the thirde, in a place where a manne may ſee that the progenie of kyng Edward wer puniſhed for this offence. And he he had
thus

thus framed his matters, he forgettyng the othe þe he had made, did se that the citee was strongly kept and gettyng hym an armye together thoughte he would not linger his busines because he hard his enemies made no greate preparaunce or haste, but toke his iourney toward London, & in his goyng did purposely go out of his waie that led hym too Pomfret where the lord Marques was, and toke on the right hande within lesse then fourc miles of his enemies. And whē he perceiued that thei made no skirmysh nor motion, came into the right waie again when he was past theim, and wente to Nottingham and ther proclaimed hym self kyng. But this greued the Yorkeshircmen that he should deceiue theim so vnhonestely and otherwise then did become a kyng, or noble manne. After that it was knowen that kyng Edward came without al daunger of his enemies to Nottingham, then came there to hym many noble menne, vpon this consideraciō that the lord Mountagewe either would not set vpon his enemies as though he had agreed with theim, or els durst not come out of his fortrese, for that he was not able to matche with theim. There fore menne thought better to take kyng Edward his part, considering that his power was so great then to hold with kyng Henry and bee in daunger of their liues, and losse of al their goodes and landes. Kyng Edward reioysyng at this, went to Lecestre, & hearyng þe herle was at his toune of warlike and theerle of Wrenford with hym, hauyng a greate armie, and that thei both entended to ioyne in one against hym: He preuentyng their purpose wet a waie with his host, either willyng to fight or

els ioyne in frendeship and loue with his brother duke of Clarence, with whom the commyng from London with an hoste of menne he thought too sprake before that he came to therle and his compaignie, fearyng lest that he would not stande to the promise that he made, for that he was variable and inconstant. In the meane time therle of Warwike was very heuy and sore moued with the lord Marques because he would nether kepe the kyng from York as he was bid, nor yet when thei came before his nose, would not proffer them ones too fight, and therefore considering that his enemies multiplied more and more, in his goyng towards hym made an hoste, and sente for the duke of Clarence to come to hym, then hauyng an hoste at London. Whom when he perceiued to linger, and as a manne doubtyng whether he should kepe battaill or peace, too haue no mynde of setting furthe his menne, mistrusting also that he was by some train allured to folowe his brethren and take their partes, tooke his wate to Couentree, to the ende that there he might mete his enemies. Then kyng Edward came to Warwike, and from thence to therle and pitched his feld by hym, and the nexte daie after bad battaill to therle, the whiche erle kept hym within y walles, for feare that the duke of Clarence whom he thought had deceiued hym, whiche duke in dedde came, as it was shewed after with a great power of menne. The whiche when kyng Edward perceiued, he made towarde hym, & that it should not bee thought to bee a made guyle, set his hoste in araye as though he would fight, and so did the duke. But when thei came in sight, Richard duke

of Gloucester as one that should take by this mat-
ter, first spake with the duke priuely in his eare, &
then came to Edward and dyd the same to him, &
at the last peace was proclaymed, whereby euery
ma puttynge downe their weapons, kyng Edward
and his brethren embraced louyngly one another
After this kyng Edward made it to be proclaymed
that y^e duke with al the that came with him, should
be perpetual frendes, & that they th^ec should loue
like.iii. brethren as they were in brotherly loue for-
euer. Neuerthelesse God doeth not seme to haue
forgeuen this Edward his offence of periury, al-
though euen now fortune fauored him, for yet it
were long he was againe vexed with warre, beside
the plague and destruction of his chyldren after his
death. When they were thus come together, they
minded to proue if the erle wolde come to them al-
so & holde with them, to whō the duke of Clarence
sent certain of his frendes, the whiche fyrst should
excuse that he had done, & then desyre him if that
he would be at one with kyng Edward. Whose
mynde when the erle heard, he vtterly detested him,
and with muche cursyng cried out of him that he
had cōtrary to his faith & othe made, fled to kyng
Edward. And to his cōmaūdement and bidding
that he sent, he made none other answer but this,
that he had rather be like him selfe, then like a fals
and periured duke. So that he appointed vtter-
ly neuer to leaue battail, before that ether he were
kylled & dead or his enemies ouercome. After this
the kyng hauyng suche a strong power of mē, wēt
boldly to Lōdon, where after it was knowen that
the duke of Clarence had taken his part, & that al

the byethen were come into one knot, the citezens were in such feare, that they could not tel what to doo, but at the length they were dyuen for feare to take kyng Edward his parte. At the same tyme there came letters from the cite to kyng Henry, to the duke of Somerlet, to the Archbisshope of Yorke and other of the kyng his counsaile, that they shoulde kepe the cite from their enemies handes for the space of .ii. or thre daies, & he would come streight with a great army of men. They defended the cite as strongly as they could, but it was to no purpose, for the citezens considering that kyng Henry was no great warriour, and that he had but smal policie in the feates of Chivalrie, and contrarie wyse, that kyng Edward was a man that of him selfe coulde rule a realme marueilous well, and such a man that woulde not onely preserve hym selfe and all his, but also defend the from all manner of iniuries and harmes that shoulde chaunce, thought best to leane on his syde. And at his comyng to London, the people coulde by no thretenyng or straight commaundement, be otherwyse kept backe, but that they woulde meete him then comyng, & salute him al together as kyng & ruler of the realme. At whose comyng in, the duke of Somerlet & certain other fled away, and made the best shifte euery man for him selfe that he coulde, to escape his handes, sayyng that kyng Henry tarried poste along in the Byshoppes paleys besyde Poules, where stadyng like a desperate man, and not knowyng what to do, was taken of kyng Edward, and cast in prison againe in the towre.

This Edward came into London the .ix. day of Apryll, halfe a yere after that he had sayled into Flaunders

flaunders, and calling his counsel together, dyd highly comende the citezens, for the faithfulness that they bare to him, and in especially the Aldermen that they caused the people to do their obedience to him and also sharply rebuked other of the cytee who he knewe to haue lent mony to king Henry. And for that cause would haue made them pay mony to the preparyng of an host for him, but at the last he bad them be without al feare, promysing them their pardon & safetee of life, throughe the whiche gentleness, he gatte the sauoure of the comon people wonderfully. The erle considering that battaile shoulde be shortly, folowed his enemies in great haste, to the entente that if his enemies had any stoppe or lette by the way, he might fight and buckell with them, befoze they came to London. But now after that he had purloined them long and came a good waye of his iourney, wordc was brought that kyng Edward had gotten London & imprisoned the kyng. The erle then perceyving that the victorie & ende of fighting should be tried in this one battaile, rested at s. Albones, partly to refreshe his men, and partly to take some counsaill. In this hoost there was the duke of Excester, the erle of Orforde, the duke of Somerset & the lord Mountacute Marques, brother to the earle which came to the erle by his letters for his excuse whom the earle perceiued to be very vnwilling to fight, and that against kyng Edward, & therfore he had no trust to hym, yet the loue he was betwixt brother and brother diminished the suspicion, but whatsoeuer he thought either of him or of other, he him selfe was euer out of feare and daunger.

And so came from saint Albones, to a towne that
is halfe way betwixt London and that, about a. r.
myle from London, called Barnet, and this towne
standeth on a hyl, where there is a goodly plaine,
and here the earle entended to pitche his battaile.
And Edward hearyng of this, prepared his army,
and adioyned a great power of yong men to them
and so with bowes, bylles, speares and arrowes,
and al maner instrumētes apperteinyng to warre,
he had so furnished his menne, that he thought to
make riddaunce of them at that tyme for all, and
finishe battaile that was so long holden. And so
came with this his army to mete his enemies, and
that he might be the redier to fight with the wher
soever he mette them, he had foure wynges, that
they could escape him at no hand. And he brought
with him to battaile also Henry then prisoner, to
the entent that his aduersaries might be the more
discouraged at the sight of him, or els if fortune
favoured him not, he might neuerthelesse be sa-
ued by him. After none, he pitched his tentes at
the forenamed Barnet nigh to his enemies, but
that he might not fight that day, he defended his
tentes veray strongly, for the longer he taried the
better it was, by reason of the daylye concourse of
noble men and common people to him, & the worse
for the earle, for that he was farre from his frendes
There they lodged that night, and by bryake of
day the earle of Warwike began to aray his army
of this sorte. First the lord Marques and the earle
of Oxforde was set on the left syde with certayne
horsemen, and he him selfe with the duke of Exce-
ter on the right syde. In the myddest betwixte
them

Barnet
& loc.

them bothe he setteth the duke of Somerset with
all the archers. And thus aratynge them to this bat-
tyle, began to exhortē thē, that they would fight
lustely and lyke hardye men, reuengynge the qua-
rel of their countree, for that he had moost falsely
possessed the crowne. In lyke maner dyd kyng Ed-
warde, whiche after that he had set them in orde,
encouraged them to fight likewise, and to remem-
ber that they inuaded rebelles, traitours and sedi-
cious persons, whiche entended nothyng but the
better destruction and losse of theyr countree. When
daye came, the trumpettes beganne to blowe on
bothe sydes, as the tokens and signes of the bat-
tyle. And fyrst the bowmen shot, & then drawyng
nere tried it with sworde. Edward trustyng tho-
rowe the multitude of his men to haue the better
hand dyd stand stiffely to them, enbouldnyng his
souldiers in all that they coude. Whose power the
erle most manfully resisted. And so by long conti-
nuance of battail, many men wer slaine in whose
places succeded euer fresher & fresher. At the lēgth
the erle perceiuyng his men to be ouerthowen by
the kyng his great power, drew nighe with his
foreward, & constrained the kyng to geue backe a
lytle. Then kyng Edward seying þ, brought freshe
men to ayd the other, so that thother men were be-
ten doune very soze to the ground. And kyng Ed-
warde beyng wepy of his long fightyng (for they
fought from moornyng to noone) caused them that
were without the battail, then standing for the de-
fence of the kyng, if suche nede should be, to fal v-
pon their enemies, and beate them doune with
their great power. The erle then seying freshe men
to

to come vpon them, was nothing afraid, but true
 kyng and lokyng surely for the victorie, did comfort
 and encourage his men then almost discomfited,
 most manfully, desirynge them to beare out this last
 byunt lustely, and the victorie should redounde to
 them, but they beyng weyred with long continu-
 aunce, were nothyng moued at his wordes. Then
 he him selfe most valiantly came among the mid-
 dest of his enemies, and there kyled & slewe many
 of them, where he him selfe at the last was stricken
 doune and his brother lord Marques then follo-
 wyng him, after whose death all the other fled, &
 so were taken moost parte of them. And this was
 the ende of the earle, whose stoutenes of stomacke
 made him bee in like peryll and ieopardye at ma-
 ny other tymes at diuerse and sundrye suche con-
 flictcs and warres. There was kyled of bothe
 partes more then .x. thousande men, and so many
 taken prisoners that they could not be nombred.
 The duke of Somerset, and the earle of Oxforde
 entendynge to take theyr waye to Scotlande, dyd
 chaunge theyr myndes, because it was so farre fro
 them, & fled straight to Wales to Jasper earle of
 Penbrycke, and so euery man to saue their liues,
 fled, some one waye and some another. The duke
 of Exeter scappynge very hardly, toke the sentuary
 at Westminster, and there remayned. When Ed-
 warde had gotte this victorie, he went to London
 after the most triumphyng fashyon, hauyng kyng
 Henry with him as prisoner. The dead corpes also
 of the earle and the lord Marques were brought
 to Poules and there laye for the space of ii. daies
 that euery man might see them to be dead, and that

The earle
 of War-
 wike slain

no manne after faying that he was alive, might
some sedicion againe in revenging his quarrel. Yet
the kyng was not so glad at the death of the earle,
but he was as soyr for the losse & destruction of the
lozde Marques, whom he dyd esteeme and take for
his great frende. After this, quene Margarete
hearyng that kyng Edward was come into Eng-
land, & had done muche hurt in the realme, purpo-
sed to come into Englande & her sonne also prince
Edward, with a great armye of chosen and picked
frenchemen, & so to land at Weymouth. But for
the great tēpest that was on the sea, she could not
come so soone as she would. But after she had lan-
ded, & heard that kyng Edward had conquered al
and her husband to be taken prisoner as destitute
of all his frendes, and that the earle with his bro-
ther lozde Marques was slaine in feld, & al their
army discomfited and slaine & put to flight, she be-
gan like a piteful and desperate ladye, to mourne
and lament the fate & calamite of her husband, the
whiche she did nowe se to haue chaunced, & so with
this great feare & agony she was in that case that
she had rather dye then lyue. The quene might
haue thought that this euil had chaunced to her
for the puttyng to death of the duke of Gloucester
of whose death although peradventure she was
not giltye, yet she offended, in that she did not saue
suche a good man. For if he had liued and had the
dominion of the publike weale, kyng Henry had
neuer bene in suche trouble. But nowe (to leaue
of this) the quene despayryng bothe of her owne
lyfe and her sonnes also, went thereby to a mo-
nastery of the Charterhouse Monkes at a place
called

called Beue lieu, in Englishe called Fayre place,
and there takyng Sentuarpe, remayned with her
sonc. And when it was knowen, that she was ther
in sentuary, there came to her the Duke of Somers
set, and his brother lord John of Somerset the
erle of Devonshyre, whiche man euen from the be
gynnyng had taken the other parte, whose retur
nyng after redounded to his euill and distruction,
also the erle of Penbroke lord Jasper, John lord
Wenlocke, and John Longstrother lord of saint
Thomes. The quene beyng in sorow & misery, was
somewhat comforted at the sight of her frendes,
with whom she talked and shewed the cause that
she came no rather, desirynge them to prouide for
the safegard of her sonne and to helpe her now, &
that she would if the wether serued go to Fraunce
again and byng with her God willyng at a more
better and mature tyme a greater power of men.
The duke beganne to putte her in good comforte
and wold in any wyse that she shuld set her mynde
whole vpon battail, & now to fight against kyng
Edward when he was bothe vnprepared and al
so not furnished of men that were able to fight, co
sideryng the great battail that he had with therle
of Warwyke, in the whiche his men were soze hur
ted and weried al together, & that it might be their
chaunce now to haue the better of him, although
he had discōfited therle & his host, for because that
victoryc turneth oftentimes frō one to another in
a momēt & short space. Furthermoze he shewed her
that the most part of the nobilitie bare theyr good
myndes & heartes to kyng Henry, and if so be that
she woulde be a capitaine as she had bene in tyme
passed

passed, he promised her a great armie of his owne
costes and charges, & that he would make other
noble menne to take her parte, and defende her at
all tymes. The Quene mistrustyng and fearyng
yet muche of her owne sonne, answered and saied
that she allowed his counsaill well, if so that she
onely might bee in daunger, & not her sonne. And
therfore fearyng that whē thei foughte moste ear-
nestly for their countree, her sonne might be destro-
yed or caste a waie, she thought beste either too put
of and defer the battaill to another tyme, or els to
sende her sonne into fraunce, and there to be kept
vnto suche tyme that thei had some better successe
in their warres. And truely the mother was not
without a cause so louyng to her child, for that her
housbande was a prisoner and a captiue persone,
and therfore as one caste a waie, so that next after
hym, she loued moste tenderly this her sonne. Also
that thei mighte goo the more wisely aboute their
entent, the quene counsailled them all to laie their
heddes together, and caste all the wates howe too
conueigh their businesse, & then if thei would fight
she promised them bothe her help, and good coun-
saill. Then the erle of Devonshire saied it was no
nede to waste any more wooordes, for he and al thei
would fight stoutely against their enemies, and
therfore thei would dooe that with all their might
and power, that thei had determined & apointed
vpon. So thei all gathered their armie, euery māne
for his parte, out of his owne countree and shire.
The quene broughte now in good hope of warre,
saied well bee it, and straight went by the counsaill
of the duke too Bathe, lookyng and taryng there

for

for the armie, but to what place soeuer she wente,
she would bee aknowen to none, to the entente that
her aduersaries mighte not knowe, vnto suche
tyme that she came where she would be. Kyng Ed-
ward hearyng that the quene was come, and that
the duke of Somersette had prepared an hoste to
aide her, sent certain spies to viewe of what num-
ber the army was. And when thei had shewed hym
the numbze (but yet not knowyng whether thei
would go) the kyng appointed to mete theim be-
foze thei came to London. And gatheryng his ar-
mie wente to Oxforde shire, and there pitched his
felde at Abyngton, encreasyng his numbze and ar-
mie as muche as he could: But perceiuyng that
thei were at Bathe, and there taried purposely too
multiplie and enlarge their compaignie, came too
Malebrydge fiftene miles from Bathe, and so ha-
sted to come to theim befoze thei did go to Wales,
as he suspected, whether in deede thei entended, to
therle of Denbroke vncle to therle of Richeimonde
hauyng there a greate bond of men. From whiche
towne of Bathe the quene fled, and from thence to
Bristowe, and willyng to go by Gloucester, sente
spies befoze to knowe if she mighte haue passage,
to whom answer was brought that she could not,
no, that thei of the towne would by any meanes
geue her place: she hearyng of that went from Bri-
stowe to Tewkesbury. And there the duke pitched
his battaill, against the will and aduise of many
other capitaines, whiche counsailed hym too tary
the erle of Denbroke his commyng: Where kyng
Edward did take the quene, and killed o, at the
laste unpysioned euery one almoste that came with
her

her. And of the nobilitie, there was killed the erle
of Devonshire, Iohn Wrenlocke capitaine of the
Rhodes, and the brother of the Duke of Somerset,
with many other mo: And taken prisoners, the
quene Margaret and her sonne prince Edward
the Duke of Somerset, the lord of saint Iohns,
and moze then twenty knightes beside theim. And
all these were beheaded twoo daies after in the self
same towne sayng onely the quene Margarete
and her sonne Edward. Shortly after prince Ed-
ward was broughte before the kyng, and there as-
ked wherefoze he did invade his realme, whiche
answered boldely and saied, too recouer my kyng-
dome as heritage by my forefathers and progenie
dewe to me. At the whiche wordes Edward saied
nothyng, but thrustyng hym from his sighte with
his hande, whom the duke of Clarence and Glou-
cester and the lord Hastings did kill mozte cru-
elly at his departyng. His inother the quene was
caried to London prisoner, and from thence roun-
domed was had too Fraunce, where she liued in
perpetuall sorowe and care, not so muche for her
self, oz her housbande as for her onely sonne Ed-
warde, whom bothe she and Henry her housbande
trusted should live and possesse the crowne. When
kyng Edward had thus overcome theim, he
wente to London, and there for thre daies, caused
procession too bee throughte every place after the
mozte solempne and deuoute fasson. And here
was the laste ciuill battaill that this kyng keppe,
whiche was the pere of our lorde a thousand foure
hundred fourescore and a leuen.

¶ After that kyng Edward was returned backe
after

Kyng Edward

after the subduyng of his rebelles, one Faucon-
bridge therle of Kent his basterde, a stoute harted
manne, beeyng admirall of þe sea, that none shoulde
passe betwixte Calles and Douer, to aide or socour
kyng Edward by the appoinctment of the erle of
Warwike, then after dyuen to nede and pouertee,
began to bee a pirate and a rouer in the sea. In so
muche that he had through his robbery & shame-
full spottynge got vnto hym a greate nauy of ship-
pes, and at the laste, landed in Kente, and there get-
tyng to hym a multitude of Kentishemen, with the
assistance of theim and his riotouse compaignie of
shippemen, came to London & saied with a lowde
voice, thei would defende kyng Henry, and restore
hym to his croune. But the people and citezens of
London perceiuyng that quene Margarete was
ouercome in battail, would geue them no passage,
but with greate mighte and violence enforced the
bastard to geue backe, and to take shippe, & killed
and tooke prisoners the better parte of his menne.
Shortely after, the same bastarde Fauconbridge
landyng vnware at Southampton, was taken and
behedded. But too speake of Jasper erle of Pen-
bryck, when he had knowlage that the quene was
taken at Tewkesbury, where she had waged bat-
tall, then goyng of his waie towarde her, turned
backe again too Chepstow. And there lamentyng
greately bothe his owne chaunce, and also the euill
fortune that kyng Henry had, did breathe a litle and
deliberate with hymself, what wer best to be doen.
In the meane tyme kyng Edward sente one Ro-
ger Laugham to take therle of Deuon by some
train of guyle. But the erle certified of it, did take
the

the self same manne and bechedded hym, so that he was killed that intended to kill. From that place therle wente to his towne of Benbucke, wher he was besieged of Thomas Morgan then sent from the kyng that he could get out by no meanes, but on the eight daie one David the brother of the forsaid Morgan his moste assured frend conueighed hym awaie, whiche then wente to a towne by the sea side called Tinby and there takyng shippe into Fraunce with the lord Henry his nephew by therle of Richmond his brother, and so by chaunce came to Britain, and there shewyng the duke the cause of his comyng, committed hym self wholly into his handes. The duke entertained the erles and al the compaignie after the moste best maner that he could, and made of them as though they had been his brethren, promisyng too them sure passeporte and saueconduite, ouer any place that he had rule or gouernaunce of. Nowe kyng Edward, after that his realme was pacified, and these greute tumultes appeard, he toke his iourney into Kente, and there setting his iustices, caused inquisition and serche to bee made of this businesse and insurreccion, by the bastard and his adherentes, for the whiche offence many were put to death and suffered execuciō moste sharpcly, accordyng to their merites. And not long after, to thentente that kyng Edward might bee out of all dangers and assaultes of his enemies. Kyng Henry that was depriued not long before of his crowne, was also spoyled of his life, that is, was killed. And as the repoyte and fame wente, the duke of Gloucester was suspected to haue doen that deede

Ed. i.

whiche

The death
of kyng
Henry the
sixte.

Kyng Edward

whiche sticked hym with a dagger. And when he was dedde, his corps was brought vncreuerently from the toure, thzough the streets of the citee vnto Paules with bulles and glayues and there laie all that daie and on the morowe folowynge conueighed and caried to the abbay of black monkes at Charteley, and there was buried. And shortly after had to Wyndesore castell, & lated in the newe chapel of saint George in a solcymne tobe. This Henry reigned. cxxviii. yeres. vi. monethes & viii. daies, & after he had repossessed his kingdome but half a yere. He liued vnto he was. lii. yeres of his age, & had by his wife quene Margaret one sonne called Edward whiche was slain at Tewkesbury.

Now to thentent that Edward the kyng might liue in quiet after this mans deathe, he wet about to serche all the rebelles that thei might be weded out of the compaignie of mene as pernicious and vnprofitable to the publique weale. At what tyme he toke tharchbishop of Yorke brother to therle of Warwike and sent hym prisoner to Gynnes, wher he long remained in holde, but after dismissed and died shortly for thought and pensifulnes of minde and there also therle of Oxenford the whiche from the ceason of Barnet felde had holden saint Michaelles Mounte, submitted hym self his life only saued, by his commaundement was had to a castle beyonde the sea called Hames, where he remained prisoner the space of twelue yeres. Furthermore vpon consideracion that no rebelles or traytours might haue any refuge to straunge countrees, he had made a league with the kyng of Scottes of peace and amitee to bee obserued and kept for the space

space of .xx. yeres. Yet he was not out of all feare,
 for that thecles of Denbrycke & of Richemond were
 with the duke of Britain, wher thei had moſte hono-
 rable entertaynemēt, miſtruſted alſo the pōg erle
 of Richemond would claime the crowne in tyme to
 come as next of blud to kyng Hēry the ſixt, he was
 in the moze feare, for the whiche matter, he ſent pri-
 uie ambadaours to the duke, promiſyng hym that
 if he would reſtore & deliuer vnto their hand both
 thecles he ſhould haue an ample and large porciō
 of money for ſo dooing. But the duke to make a
 ſhozte tale, would by no meanes deliuer them out
 of his handes, but ſo kept them thei neuer might
 bee in any dainger of their enemies through hym,
 kyng Edward therfore in this his .xiii. yere of his
 reigne, whiche was the yere of our lorde a thouſand
 four hundred threſcore and thirtene, held his par-
 liament at Weſtmiſter, whete firſte he cauſed all
 the ſtatutes and actes of his whiche wer abrogat-
 ed by Hēry the ſixt, to ſtand and be of good effect
 then the goodes of theſe traitours to be beſtowed
 and geuen abrode, alſo the baniſhed men that fled
 as rebelles & falſe to their countree, to be brought
 in, and that if any grudge or euill will were be-
 twixte any one or other of the nobillite, that ther it
 ſhould be forgotten, & turned to loue, & laſtly that
 certain money ſhould be paid to the kyng towar-
 des the great charges of his warre. When he had
 thus ſtudied & determined to lue quietly & ſet his
 realme in good ordze, Charles the duke of Burgoin
 ſet for aide to him againſt Lewis the french kyng ſo
 the could neuer bee at reſt, but one thyng or other
 ſhould diſquiet hym, for he could not deny hym

help cōsidering the benefites that he had receiued
of hym at diuerse and sundry tymes befoze that,
and that he now fought against his dedly enemye
whiche aided therle of Warwike bothe with mēne
and money to come against hym. Wherfoze he as-
semblyng his counsaill together, and shewing the
the matter, sente wooꝝde to the Duke that he would
kepe one piere oꝝ part of a battail against þe kyng.
foꝝ in deede at that same tyme, there was mortall
battail betwixte the Duke and Lewes the frenche
kyng, and because that the same Lewes was a be-
rie harde manne and churlishe and also hurtefull
aswell to his frendes as to his foes, many frenche
menne abhorring his condicions, did consente to
holde with the Duke. And emong many other, one
Lewes of Lucenburge erle of Sentpoule and con-
stable of fraunce, did apoint with the Duke to do
unischief to hym one wate oꝝ other, so that the kyng
was bothe in daunger of his owne countree men,
and also of the Duke beyng a straunger. The Duke
shewed this to kyng Edward, that he mighte the
soner allure and entise hym to battail. And vpon
this, kyng Edward tooke his voyage to fraunce
takng besides his aide that he had, certain mony
of the lordes and commons of the realme, whiche
thei of their owne gentlenesse gaue vnto hym, too
the sustenance and mainteyning of his army. And
foꝝ that, the kyng called that tribute and leuyng
of money, beneuolence, whiche neuerthelesse was
geuen with an euill will of many one. But he be-
lyng suche gentle passions towardes theim, pray-
ng theim so hartely of their assistaunce that thei
could none otherwile do but geue it hym. Whiche
when

¶ beneuo-
lence.

when he had, he gathered his armye whiche was.
 xx. M. and went to Aleps the. iiii. day of July.
 Whom Charles the duke dyd meete, & reioysyng
 greatly at his victorie, did instatly desire him that
 he would sticke stoutely to this battaile, that he
 might haue of the frenche kyng that he had lost
 by him. But when Lewes the kyng heard that Ed-
 ward came with his army, he encreased the num-
 bre of his people as muche as he could, & the moze
 higher the daunger that he was, the soner & haste-
 lyer he came vpon them. And with this army he
 sent furth Robert of Stotcuil a noble capitayne
 to the coastes of Ampas to resist the power of the
 Englishe men. And the kyng him selfe taried at
 Siluanect, castyng with him selfe what waye he
 might make a league of peace betwixt the duke &
 the kyng of England and him. Heryng therfoze
 that the kyng was gone towarde Ampas, he sent
 ambassadours to him for peace: whose myndes
 when the king had knowen, although he had found
 but lytle frendship at his handes in tyme past, yet
 consideryng that all his substaunce and treasure
 was wasted in ciuile battaile, & that he was not ha-
 ble to mainteyne a newe host if nede should be, noz
 yet vnneth susteyn them who he had vnder his ba-
 ner, thought best euē for pure necessitie to leane to
 peace & growe to attonement with Lewes & french
 kyng. The whiche thyng he might do also sauyng
 his honour, consideryng that both the duke & therle
 of L. Doule afozenamed had not done accordyng to
 their ppointe. So that, at the desire of the ambas-
 sadours he went to speake with the kyng at Din-
 quinake a towne in the territorie of Ampas, & ther

found the kyng. Then both the kynges mette on a
 brydge with a grate betwene them, so þæt one myghte
 se and speake with another, and after due saluta-
 tion, either to other had long cōmunication, & at
 the last a peace was confirmed and established for
 many yeres, for the agrement wherof the frenche
 kyng gaue vnto kyng Edward toward his charge
 and cost. lxxv. M. crownes, and from thens furthe
 yerely. l. M. crownes. After that peace made & mo-
 ny payde, kyng Edward went to Caleis, & from
 thens to Englad. In this battaile none was slain
 sayng onely the Duke of Exeter, the whiche man
 was in sentuary befoze, & cōmaunded to folow the
 kyng was put to death by drounyng & cast ouer a
 shyp by sir Thomas sent Lyger, whiche after ma-
 ried his wyfe contrary to the promise made. This
 was the yere of oure lord. M. CCC. lxxv. from
 that tyme furthe Lewes the kyng payed duely his
 tribute to kyng Edward, vnto the same yere that
 he died. But the Duke of Burgoyne and therle of
 saint Polle after they had knowen that Edward
 had made a league with Lewes the kyng, they fret-
 ted sore with him, and wrote sharp letters of thret-
 nyng and tauntynge him, sayng that he was the
 cause that they reuenged not them selues of kyng
 Lewes. Whose fyre thundryng wordes the kyng
 no more passed vpon, then the turnynge of his had.
 And as for the constable he was taken prisoner, &
 for his proud malicious wytyng & other treasons
 was beheaded at Paris.

¶ Thus kyng Edward beyng in quietnes bothe
 in his cōtre and abrode also, although he might
 wel thinke him selfe to liue so perpetually, for that
 he

he had been so great a conquerour, yet considering
that the erle of Richemondc was of nigh affinitee
to Henry the. vi. he was out of feare and daunger.
Therfore he thought ones to attempte the Duke of
Britayne againe, with gistes, promises and fayre
wordes that he might haue therle, who he thought
to rule as he wouldc. After that his answere was
geuen, The ambassadours came to the Duke with
a great substance of mony, and that their request
might be the honestest, they shewed the Duke that
they came to desire the erle of him, that he might
marrye the kynges daughter, so that by affinitee,
al euill wil and grudge might be forgotten, and se-
dition utterly reiected, although they enteded not
so to cause al suche thinges to be forgotten, but by
the death and kyllyng of him. The Duke after
long and muche denyng them, at the last throughe
muche entreatyng, and also great rewardes that
was brought gaue the erle to them, sendyng a
letter to the kyng, in praise and commendacion of
him, not thinkyng that he committed the lambe
to the wolfe, but the sonne to the father. The
ambassadours was very glad, that they had gotte
him, and prepared into Englande, in all the haste
they could. But the erle knowyng well that he
went to his death, for sorowe & care that he concei-
ued in his mynde, was cast in an agewe. When he
was gone, one John Chenlet, suche a mā as could
not be founde againe in al the countre, & in great
fauour with the Duke, hearing of that deed, beyng
very soze moued therwith, went to the Dukes place
& comyng before his grace, stode like a mā stricken
with

with some sodeyne disease, verie pale, & holdyng
his head doune, the Duke marueilyng at him, en-
quired what the matter was: To whom he sayd,
O moost noble Duke, my tyme is at hand, and this
palenes betokeneth death without remedy. That
I would God it had come befoze this day, & then
it shuld not haue greued me so muche: And this al-
cometh to me throughe a dede that you haue done
of late, whiche wil ether cause me to lose my life, or
els to liue in most misery and wretchednes as one
wery of this present life. The noble actes that you
haue done, (moost noble prynce) haue enhaunsed
your fame & glozy to the fardest part of the world,
but this one thyng me thynke (I pray you pardon
me what I say) is a great blemishe to your digni-
tee, that forgettyng the promyse that you made so
faythfully, haue geuen the innocent erle of Riche-
mond to be destroyed and pitefully kyllled among
wretched knaues & hangmen: Wherefoze, thei that
loue you, of whom I am one, cannot but lamente
to see you dishonoured by this great faute of per-
iury. When he had sayd, the Duke answered, holde
thy peace man I pray the, there is no suche harme
shal chaunce to him, kyng Edward would haue
him to mary his doughter. Then sayd John, be-
leue me (moost excellent and redoubted prynce) this
Henry is now almost famished and lost, and yf he
once go out of your countree, he is but cast awaye
and past all recouerye. At these wordes the Duke
was perswaded, through the whiche he comaunded
one Peter Landops his recepuer, to take the same
Henry from the ambassadours. The sayd rece-
uer pursued the Englishe ambassadours to saint
Malq

Walo and there holdyng them with long cōmuni-
cation, made him to be cōueighed into a sentuary,
whiche was then almost dead through that feure
and thought whiche he was cast in. And so after
that he was amended brought him to the duke.

The Ambassadors then beyng spoyled and de-
ceyued, bothe of theyr p̄ead and monye that they
brought, desired the same receiuer that they might
not go home in that wise, whiche receiuer promi-
sed, that he would either kepe him in sentuary, or
els cause him to be imprisoned at the duke his place
so that they should neuer nede to feare him.

In al this tyme kyng Edward beyng desyre-
ous to knowe what became of the earle, was en-
fourmed that he was take prisoner, but after that
escaped their handes, where at the kyng was very
angry: but when he knewe that he should be kepte
in holde, was well pleased and then dyd take no
thought. And lyued after, and that most welthye,
sparyng no expenses nor cost in keepyng his house,
neuerthelesse he dyd fall into one great offence in
this tyme. For sodenly, he cōmaunded his bro-
ther the duke of Clarence to be kylled and drowned
in a but of Salmesey. And the cause of his death
was, as men reporte, through a certayne prophe-
cie, whiche sayd that after kyng Edward one should
reigne, whose name began with a G. whiche pro-
phesie some sayd, was completed & fulfilled when
the duke of Gloucester, that after him had the
kyngdome, dyd reigne. Some helde another opi-
nion of this his death, sayng: that at what tyme
the olde malice dyd breake out betwixt them both
the duke through his sisters counsel, would haue
married

married ladye Mary Charles duke of Burgoyne
his onely daughter, whiche mariage the kyng did
infringe and stoppe, as one enuynng his brothers
felicitie, or good chaunce, for by that mariage he
had bene duke of Burgoyne and earle of Flaunders.
After that they bothe bearyng in their myn-
des mortal hatred, one of the sayd duke his serua-
ntes was accused of witchcraft and charmyng, for
whiche offence, he was put to death. The duke se-
yng that, coulde not but speake and resist against
that doyng as he thought iniurious, and therfore
was compyted to prison, and there beyng was kil-
led, and proclaimed after as a traitour to the king
and attainted by Parliament, for whose death af-
ter that, the kyng was very sorowful, & whan any man
had kneled to him, and asked pardon for an offen-
der, he would saye O infortunate brother, that no
man would aske thy pardon.

And this duke had ii. children, one ladye Mar-
garete, that was after married to Richard Pole, &
another Edwarde, whom the kyng made earle of
Warwyke, but this childe folowynge the face and
destinie of his father, was after put in prison, and
after put to death, and so was the daughter. lx. ye-
res after. And these thinges were done in the yere
of our lord a M. CCCC. lxxx. and the. xix. yere of
the reigne of kyng Edwarde. And two yeres then
after folowynge, the kyng died, before the whiche
yeres he began to be very harde and couetouse in
gettyng mony, and also very diligent in markynge
& attachynge his lordes that dyd offende, but now
he left that & fel to gentilnes. In this tyme þe kyng
of Scottes wylled his sonne James to be married
to

to the kynges daughter lady Cicile, whiche was
the pöger, that should haue bene married to Char-
les the frenche kyng his sonne. But it chaunced
not through Lewes the kyng that brake his pro-
mise, bothe in geupng his seruice, and payng his
tribute the last yeare of his reigne. Lykewile the
kyng of Scottes sepng that Lewes the kyng was
fals of his promise, he thought he might be so bold
to, and so breakyng league of amitee, set vpon the
Englyshemen. At the whiche kyng Edward was
soe vexed, and entended battaile against him, yet
after that he knewe that it was not by his wyl, but
thorow the counsel and euil disposed myndes of
his lordes, he would haue borne it in good worth,
had not king James owne brother Alexander duke
of Albany streight vpon that, prouoked him to
fight. Furthermoze, suche was the nature of the
Scottishe kyng that when he had set his mynde
vpon a thyng, no man could turne him, & because
that no mā might reprove him in any thing he pro-
moted lay people, and menne of basse bloud to his
counsel, puttyng to death, or banishyng euermoze
the nobilitie. Among whom this duke of Albany
his brother, consideryng the cōditions of the king
fled to the kyng of England, at what tyme he was
sent into fraunce, and there coulsailed the kyng to
fight against him. The kyng willyng to reuenge
his olde iniuries, bpō many cōsiderations gathe-
red, enteded no lesse by the help of the sayd duke of
Albany, enen to kepe open war. So that he did sed
the duke of Gloucester, therle of Northumberlād,
lord Thomas Staley, & this duke of Albany wa
great

great power of menne against the Scottes. The kyng knowyng of their comyng, went to Barwyke, with his army to kepe them fro the borders, but perceiuyng that he was not able to resist their great power, fled backe in 8 night to Edinburgh and there taried for his enemies. And the duke of Gloucester folowyng, burned and spoyled all the way, & when he was somewhat nigh his enemies, perceiuyng also that none of the Scottishe lordes came to the duke of Albany, mistrusted that some decepte or craft was wrought, and so laboured to haue peace, whiche gotten he went backe to the castel of Barwyke, that lord Thomas Stanley had wonne a lytle before. And the duke of Albany the authoure of this warre, for that he had but lytle thanks of Englande for his so doying, fled into Fraunce, & there was kyllled runnyng at the tylte in Parys. After this busynesse kyng Edward assembled his counsel together, and wylled them to prepare battaile against the freche kyng, for that he had neither payde nor would pay his tribute, nor yet geue his sonne in mariage to his doughter (as he promised) to the settyng furth of the whiche battayle, certayne mony was exacted of the priestes and religious men to be payde. At the whiche tyme the kyng was sodenly sickened, & shortly after dyed at Westminster the .ix. day of April then beyng .l. yerres of age, and reigntyng .xxiii. after the date of our lord a. M. iiii. C. lxxx. and thye, whose corps was after conueyed and had with great pompe and solempnitee to Wyndesore, there buried in saint George his chapell. Whiche kyng had by his wyfe the quene tenne chyl dren,
and

and of them left alive behind hym Edward prince
 of Wales, and Richard duke of York, and one ba-
 rard called Arthure & five daughters, Elisabeth,
 Cicile, Anne, Katherine, and Brigide, whiche after
 were married all, sayng that lady Brigide was a
 floure. This Edward was a goodly manne of
 personage, of stature highe, of countenaunce and
 beautee comely, of sight quicke, bryde brested, and
 well sette, in euery other parte conforimable to his
 body, of a pregnant wit, of stomake stoute & hault
 of courage, of perfect memory of suche thynges as
 he conceiued in his brayne, diligent in his affaires
 and weightie busines, in auentures bold & hardy,
 again his aduersaries scarce and terrible, too his
 frendes liberall and bounteous, haupng in all his
 warres moste prosperous and lucky successe, and
 not escheupng all pleasure and sensualitee, too the
 whiche he was by nature moste prone vnto, for the
 whiche cause and for the lowlines and humanitee
 that was in hym ingedged by nature moste plenti-
 fully, he bare hym self homely among his priuate
 persones, otherwise the the degre of dignite of his
 maiestie required, wherefore the fame ran, that he
 was poisoned, whiche was not trewe. A litle before
 his death, it was saied that he gaue hym self to a-
 uerice, whiche before as you se, vscd greate libera-
 litee. But the realme whiche throught ciuile sedi-
 tic was greatly unpoucrished, he made riche and
 plenteouse at his death daie.

The de-
 scription
 of kynge
 Edward
 the fourth.

Also he gaue spirituall promotions to the moste
 excellent and famous clerkes, and made theim of
 his counsaill, other of the late sort, whom he loued
 he did not enrich with possessions but with money
 and

and other like goodes; the whiche many princes
 hauing no respect of the honour, doo not alwaies
 obserue. By the whiche suche giftes and re-
 warde he had so far wonne the hertes
 of the people, that after his death
 many menne did lament
 the losse of his grace.

Kyng Edward the fifth.

fol. xxxi.

V H E N

almightie
God had cal-
led too his
merci p noble
prince kyng
Edward the
first . of that
name, Ed-
warde his el-
deste sonne
(prince of wa-
les) beganne
his reygne p

ninth date of April, in the yere of our lord a thou-
sande four hundred fourscore and thye, and in the
two and twenty yere of Lewes the leuenth then
frenche kyng. Whiche young prince reigned a
small space and litle season ouer this realme, either
in pleasure or liberte. For his vncle Richard Duke
of Gloucester, within thye monethes depriued hym
not onely of his crowne and regalitee, but also vn-
naturally bereft hym of his naturall life: & for the
declaracion by what craftie engine he firste attem-
pted his vngacious purpose, & by what false cou-
lorable & vnttrue allegations he set furth openly
his pretended enterpryse, and finally by what sha-
mefull cruell and detestable act he persourmed the
same: Ye muste firste considre of whom he and his
brother

brother descended, their natures cōditions and inclinacions, and then you shall casely perceiue, that there could not bee a moze crueller tiraunt appointed to achēue a moze abhominable enterpryse.

¶ Their father was Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, whiche began not by warre but by lawe to calenge the crowne of Englande, puttyng his claime in the parliament, holden the thirti yere of kyng Henry the sixte, where either for righte or for fauoure his cause was so set furthe and auanced that the bloud of the saied kyng Henry, althoughe he had a goodly sonne was clerely abiected, and the crowne of the realme (by autoritee of parliamente) entayled to the Duke of Yorke and his heires after the deccesse of the saied kyng Henry the sixt. But the Duke not entendyng so long too tary, but myndyng vnder the p̄terecte of discencion growen and arisen within the realme, and of couenañtes made in the parliamente, not kept but broken, to p̄uent the tyme and to take vpon hym the gouernaunce in kyng Henries life, was by to muche hardinesse slain at the battaill of Wakefelde, leuyng behinde hym thre sonnes, Edward, George and Richard. All these thre as thei were greate estates of birthe, so were thei greate and statelly of stomacke, gredy of autoritee and impaciente parteners of rule and autorite. This Edward reuenged his fathers deathe and deposed kyng Henry the sixte, and attained the crowne and scepter of this realme. George Duke of Clarence was a goodly and well feautered p̄ince, in all thynges fortunate, if either his owne ambition had not set hym against his brother or thenup of his enemies had not

not set his brother against hym, for were it by the
 quene or the nobles of her blud, whiche highly ma-
 ligned the kynges kyndred (as women comenly,
 not of malice but of nature, hate suche as their
 houbandes loue) or wer it a proud appetite of the
 duke hym self, entending to bee kyng, at the leaste
 wise heinous treason was laied to his charge, and
 finally wer he in faulte or wer he faultlesse, atta-
 inted was he by parliament and iudged to deathe
 and there vpon hastily drowned in a butte of mal-
 mesey within the towre of London. Whose deathe
 kyng Edward (although he commaunded it) whē
 he wiste it was dooen, piteously he bewailed and
 sorowfully he repented it. Richard duke of Glou-
 cester the thirde sonne (of whiche I must moſte en-
 treat) was in witte and courage egall with the o-
 ther, but in beautee and limamentes of nature far
 vnderneath bothe, for he was litle of stature, euill
 feautered of limmes, croke backed, the left shulder
 muche higher then the right, hard fauoured of vi-
 sage, suche as in estates is called a warlike visage,
 and among comen persones a crabbed face. He
 was malicious, wrothfull and enuious, and as it
 is reported, his mother the Duches had muche a
 dooe in her trauaill, that she could not bee deliue-
 red of hym vncut, and that he came into the world
 the fete forwarde, as menne bee borne outwarde,
 and as the same ranne, not vntoed, whether that
 menne of hatred reported aboue the truthe, or that
 nature chaūged his course in his beginnyng, whi-
 che in his life many thynges vnnaturalli commit-
 ted, this I leue to God his iudgemente. He was
 none euill capitain in warre, as to whiche, his dis-

The descri-
 ption of Ri-
 charde the
 thirde.

Kyng Edward

spolition was more enclined too then too peace.
Sondry victories he had and some ouerthrowes,
but neuer for defaute of his owne persone, either
for lacke of hardinesse or politique order. Free he
was of his dispences and somewhat aboue his po-
wer liberall, with large giftes he gatte hym vn-
stedfast ferndship, for whiche cause he was faine to
bozowe, pill and extort in other places, whiche gat
hym stedfaste hatred. He was close and secreete, a
depe dissimuler, lowly of countenaunce, arrogant
of herte, outwardly famulier where he inwardely
hated not lettynge to kisse whom he thought to kil
dispiteous and cruell, not alwaie for euill will,
but oftter for ambition and too serue his purpose,
frende and foe were all indifferente, where his a-
uauntage grewe, he spared no mannes death whose
life withstode his purpose. He slewe in the towne
kyng Henry the sixt, sayng: now is there no heire
male of kyng Edward the thirde, but wee of the
house of Yorke: whiche murder was dooen with-
out kyng Edward his assente, whiche would haue
appointed that bocherly office too some other, ra-
ther then to his owne brother. Some wise menne
also wene, that his dysste lacked not in helpynge
furth his owne brother of Clarence to his deathe,
whiche thyng in all apparaunce he resisted, al-
though he inwardly mynded it. And the cause ther
of was, as menne notynge his doynges and proce-
dynges did marke (because that he long in kyng
Edward his tyme thought too obtain the crowne
in case that the kyng his brother whose life he lo-
ked that euil diet would sone shorten) should hap-
pen to diseace, as he did in dede, his childre beyng
young

young. And then if the duke of Clarence had liued
his pretended purpose had been far hyndered. For
if the duke of Clarence had kept hym self trewe to
to his nephew the young kyng, or would haue ta-
ken vpon hym too bee kyng, euery one of these ca-
ses had been a troupe in the duke of Gloucesters
waie: but whē he was sure that his brother of Cla-
rence was ded, then he knewe that he might worke
without ieopardy. But of these pointes there is
no certentie, & whosoever denieth or coniectureth
maie as wel shote to fer as to shorte, but this con-
iecture afterward toke place (as fewe dooe) as you
shall perceiue here after. But afore I declare too
you how this Richard duke of Gloucester began
his mischeuous imaged and pretēced enterprize
as apparantly shalbee opened. I muste a litle put
you in remembraunce of a louyng and charitable
acte no lesse profitable then amiable to the whole
communitie, if it had been so inwardely thoughte
as it was outwardly dissimuled, whiche kyng Ed-
ward did liyng on his death bedde not lōg befoze
he died, for in his life although that the diuision
amongest his frēdes somewhat greued and irked
hym, yet in his helthe he lesse regarded and tooke
hede to it, by reason that he thoughte that he was
hable in al thynges to rule bothe parties, wether
neuer so obstinat. But in his last sickenes (whiche
continued longer then false and fantastical tales
haue vntruly & falsely surmised as I my self that
wrote this pamphlet truly knewe) when he percei-
ued his naturall strength was gone, & hoped litle
of recouery by the artes of all his phicisians whi-
che he perceiued only to prolong his life. Then he

Ce.ii.

began

King Edward

began to consider the pouthe of his children, how
 bee it, he nothyng lesse mistrusted then that that
 happened, yet he wisely forseyng and consideryng
 that many harines might ensue by the debate of
 his nobles while the youth of his children should
 lacke discreciō and good counsaill of their frendes
 for he knewe well that every parte would wooke
 for their owne commodite, and rather by plesant
 aduise to wyne thein selues fauour, then by pro-
 fitable aduertisment too. Dooe the children good,
 wherefore lyng on his death bed at Westminster
 he called to hym suche lordes as then were aboute
 hym whom he knewe to bee at variaunce, in espe-
 ciall the lord Marques Dorset sonne to the quene
 and the lord Hastings against whom the quene
 especially grudged for the fauoure that the kyng
 bare hym, and also she thought hym familiar with
 the kyng in wanton compaignie, her kynne bare
 hym sore, aswell for that the kyng made hym capi-
 tain of Caleis whiche office the lord Rivers bro-
 ther to the quene claimed of the kyng his former
 promise, as of diuerse other giftes whiche he recei-
 ued that thei loked for. And whē these lordes with
 diuerse other of bothe parties were come vnto the
 kyng his presence, he caused hym self to bee raised
 vp with pillous, and as I can gesse saied thus of
 muche like in sentēce to theim. My lordes and my
 dere kynsmen and allies, in what plight I now lye
 you se, and I partely fele, by the whiche I loke the
 lesse while to liue with you, therfore the more de-
 pely I am moued to care in what case I leue you,
 for suche as I leue you, suche are my children like
 to find you, whiche if thei should find at variaunce
 as

An exorta-
 cion of kyng
 Edward
 fourthe in
 his deathe
 bedde.

(as God forbid) thei theim selves might hap to fall at warre or their discrecion would serue to set you at peace: you se their youth, of whiche I reken the onely surety to reste in your con corde. For it suffi- seth not all you too loue theim, if eche of you hate other: if thei were menne your faithfulnessse might hap to suffice, but childhod muste bee maintained by mennes autoritie, & slipper you the vnderprom- pted with elder counsaill, whiche thei can neuer haue excepte you geue it, nor you geue it excepte you agree, for where eche labourer too breake that the other maketh, and for hated eche impu- gueth others counsaill: there muste nedes bee a long tracte or any good conclusion canne fore- warde. And further, while eache partie labourer too bee chief flatterer, adulation shall then haue more place, then plain and faithfull aduise, of whi- che muste nedes ensue that ciuill byngyng by of the prince whose mynde in tender youth infect shal redely fall to mischief and riote and drawe downe this noble realme to ruine. But if grace turne him to wisdom (whiche God send hym) then thei whi- che by euill meanes pleased hym beste, shall after fall fardest out of fauour so that at the length ci- uil driftes driue to naught, and good plain waies prospere and florish. Greate variaunce hath euer been betwene you, not alwaies for greate causes: Some tyme a thyng right well intended and mis- construed hath been turned to the worse, or a small displeasure doen to you either by your owne affec- tion, either by instigation of euill tongues hath ben soze aggrauate. But this I wote wel, you had neuer so great cause of hatred as you haue of loue

Ce. iii.

because

because we bee menne and that we bee all christen
 menne. This I will leaue to preachers to tell you,
 and yet I wote not whether any prechers wooꝝdes
 ought moꝝe too moue you, then that his goyng by
 and by to the place that thei all preche of. But this
 shall I desire you to remembre that the one part of
 you beyng of my bloud the other of my alies, and
 eche of you with other either of kynred oꝝ affinitee
 whiche is the very spirituall affinite and kinred in
 Christ as all partakers of þe sacramentes of Christ
 his churche. The weight of whiche consanguinite
 if we did beare as would to god we did, the should
 we moꝝe bee moued to spiritual charite then to fle-
 shely consanguinitee. Our loꝝde forbid that you
 loue the woꝝse together foꝝ the self same cause that
 you ought to loue the better, and yet that ofte hap-
 peneth, foꝝ no where finde we so dedly debate as e-
 mongest theini whiche by nature and lawe moꝝte
 ought to agre together. Suche a serpent is ambi-
 cioꝝ and desire of vaingloꝝy and souereingte, whi-
 che emongest estates when he is once entred he cre-
 pith furth so far, till with deuision and variaunce
 he turneth all to mischief. First longyng to be next
 to the beste, afterwarde egall with the beste, and at
 the laste chief & aboue the beste. Of whiche immo-
 derate appetite of woꝝship and the debate and di-
 scenciõ that grew there by, what losse, what soꝝowe
 what trouble hath within these fewe yeres growe
 within this realme, I praie God as well to forget
 as we well remembre, whiche thyng if I could as
 wel haue foꝝsene as I haue with my moꝝe pain the
 plesure proued, by God his blessed lady (þe was his
 common othe) I would neuer haue won the cūte-
 lies

sies of mennes knees with the losse of so many hed-
des. But sith thynges passed cannot bee called a-
gain, muche more ought wee to bee ware, by what
occasion wee haue taken so greate hurte befoze,
that wee eftsones fall not into that occasion again.
Now bee these greues passed and al is quiet than-
ked bee God, and likely well too prospere in welth
full peace, vnder your cooling my children, if God
sende theim life, and you loue and concorde. Of
whiche twoo thynges the lesse losse were thei by
whom althoughe God did his pleasure, yet should
this realme alwayes finde kynges, and parad-
uenture as good kynges as thei. But if you e-
mongest your selves in a childe his reigne fall at
debate, many a good manne shall innocentely pe-
rishe, and happely he and you also, for it is long
to finde peace and quiet again, wherefoze in these
laste woordes that euer I looke to speake to you,
I exhort and require you all, for the loue that you
haue borne too me, and for the loue that I haue
borne to you and for the loue that our Lorde bea-
reth to vs all. From this tyme forward all greues
forgoten, echc of you loue other, whiche I verely
truste you will, if you any thyng regarde God or
your kyng his affinitee or kynrede, this realme
your owne countree or your owne surete & wealth
And there with all, the kyng for fayntenesse no
longer enduryng too litte vp, layed hym downe
on his right side his face toward theim. And there
was none presente that could forbear weepyng,
but the Lordes comfortyng hym with as good
woordes as thei could, and aunsweryng for the
tyme, as thei thought should stand with his plea-
sure

sure. And there in his presence (as by their wordes appeared) eche forgaue other, and ioynded their handes together, whē as it after appeared by their dedes their hertes were far asunder. And so within a fewē daies this noble prince disceased at westminster the nyne daie of Aprill, in the yere of our lordē M.cccc.lxxiii. after that he had reigned. xxi. yeres one moneth and eight daies, & was with great funcrall pompe conueighed to Windsoze, leuyng behynde hym twoo sonnes, Edward the prince (of whom this story entreateth) a childe of xiii. yeres of age, Richard duke of Yorke two yeres younger thē the prince, and fiue daughters, Elizabeth, whiche by God his grace was married to kyng Henry the seuenth and mother to kyng Henry the eighte, Cicile not so fortunate as faire, first wedded to the vicount Welles, after to one kynce and liued not in greate wealth, Bridget professed her self a close Nonne of Sion, Anne was married to lord Thomas Hauwarde after erle of Surrey and duke of Northfolke, Katherine the yongest daughter was married to lord William Courtney, sonne to the erle of Deuonshyre, whiche longtime tossed in ether fortune, somtyme in wealth after in aduersite, till the benignitee of her nephewe kyng Henry the eighte brought her into a sure estate accordyng to her degre and progeny. This kyng Edward was suche a prince of gouernaunce & behaueour in the tyme of peace (for in tyme of warre eche must bee others enemye) that ther was neuer any kyng in this realme in attaynyng the crowne by warre and battaill so hertely beloued with the more substaunce of his people, nor he hymself so specially fauoured in any parte

The descri-
ption of
Kyng Ed-
ward 6. iii

part of his life, as at the tyme of his death, whiche
fauour & affection yet after his deathe, by the cru-
eltee, mischief and trouble of the tepestious world
that folowed, highly towarde hym more increa-
sed. At suche tyme as he died, & displeasure of those
that bare hym grudge for kynge Henry the first sake
(whom he deposed) was wel assuaged and in effect
quenched within the space of. xxi. yeres, whiche is
a greate parte of a mannes life, and some were re-
coiled and growen into his fauour, of the whiche
he was neuer straunge, whē it was with true herte
demaunded. He was goodly of personage and prin-
cely to beholde, of herte courageous, politique in
counsaill, and in aduersitee nothyng abashed, in
prosperite rather ioyfull then proude, in pcease iust
and mercifull, in warre sharpe & fearce, in the feld
bolde and hardy, and yet neuerthelesse no ferther,
then reason and policie would aduenture, whose
warres whosoever circumspectely and aduisedly
considereth, he shall no lesse comend his wisdom
and policie where he aduoided them, thē his man-
hod where he banquished them. He was of visage
full faced and louely, of body mightie, strong and
cleane made, with ouer liberall and wāton diet, he
waxed somewhat corpulent and bourly, but neuer
thelesse not vncomly. He was in youth greatly ge-
uen to fleshely wantonnes, from the whiche health
of body in greate prosperitee and fortune without
an especiall grace hardely refratneth. This fault
litle greued his people, for neither could any one
mannes pleasure stretch or extend to the displea-
sure of very many, nor a multitude bee greued by
a priuate mannes fantasy or voluptuousnesse, whē

it was dooen without violence. And in his latter daies he left all wilde daliaunce and fell to graunttee, so that he broughte his realme into a wealthie and prosperous estate, all feare of outwarde enemies were clerely extinguished, and no warre was in hande no: none toward, but suche as no manne looked for. The people were toward their prince not in a constrained feare, but in a true louyng and wilfull obedience emongest them self, and the commons were in good peace. The lordes whom he knewe at variaunce, he in his death bedde (as he thought) brought too good concoorde, loue and amitte. And a litle before his death, he left gatheryng of money of his subiectes, whiche is the only thyng that draweth the hertes of Englishe menne from their kynges and princes, no: nothyng he either enterprised no: tooke in hande, by the whiche he should bee drue there vnto. For his tribute out of fraunce he had a litle before recovered and obtained. And y pere before he died he recovered the towne of Berwike against the kyng of Scottes. And albeit that all that tyme of his reigne he was so benigne courteous and famlier, that no parte of his vertues was esteemed more then those highe humilitees. Yet that condicion in the end of his last daies decayed not, in the whiche many princes by a long continued soueraingtee, decline to a proud porte and behaueour from their condicions accustomed at their begynnyng. Yet lowlinesse and gentlenesse so far furth in hym encreased that the somer before he died, he beeyng at the haueryng at the bower, sente for the maire & aldermen of London thether onely to hunte & make pastyme, where
he

he made theim not so hertye but so familiare and frendely chere, and sente also to their wiues suche pléty of benyson, that no onc thynge in many daies befoze gatte hym either mo hertes oꝝ moze hertie fauoure emongest the common people, whiche often tymes moze esteeme and take foꝝ greate kyndnesse a litle courtesie, then a greate profite oꝝ benefite. And so this noble prince deceased, as you haue hearde in that tyme when his life was mooste desired, and when his people mooste desired to kepe hym. Whiche love of his people and their enticre affection towarde hym, had been to his noble children (haupng in theim selues also as many giftes of nature, as many princely vertues, as muche good towardenesse as their age could receiue) a merueilous foꝛtresse and a sure armoure, if the diuision and dissencion of their frendes had not vnarmed theim and left theim destitute, and the execrable desire of soureingte pouoked hym to their destruccion, whiche if either kynd oꝝ kindnesse had holden place muste nedes haue been their chief defence. Foꝝ Richard duke of Gloucester, by nature their vncle, by office their protectoure, to their father greatly beholden and too theim by othe and allegeaunce bounden, all the bandes broken and violated that bynde manne and manne together, without any respecte of God oꝝ the worlde, vnnaturally contriued too bereue theim not onely of their dignitie and prehemynence, but also of their naturall liues and worldely felicitie.

And first to shewe you, that by coniecture he pretended this thynge in his brothers life, ye shall vnderstand foꝝ a truth that the same night that kyng Edward

Edward died, one called Histlebrooke, long ere the daie sprong came to the house of one Dottier dwelling in Redcrosse strete without Creple gate of London, and when he was with hasty rapping, quickly let in, the saied Histlebrooke shewed vnto Dottier that kyng Edward was that night deceased: by my truth q Dottier, then wil my master the duke of Gloucester bee kyng and that I warrant thee. What cause he had so too thynke, harde it is to saie, whether he beeyng his seruauant knewe any suche thyng pretended or otherwise had any ynkelyng therof, but of all likelihod he spake it not of naught.

But now too retorne to the trewe historie, wex it that the duke of Gloucester had of olde soze practised this conclusion, or was befoze tyme moued there vnto and putte in hope by the tender age of the young princes his nephewes, as oportunitie and likely of speede putteth a manne in courage of that that he neuer entended. Certain it is, that he beeyng in the fforthe parties for the good gouernance of the coultre, beeyng aduertised of his brothers death contriued y destruction of his nephewes with the vsurpacion of the royal dignite & crowne And for asmuche as he well wiste, and had holpe to maintain, a long continued grudge and herte burnyng betwene the quenes kinned and the kyng his bloude, either parte enuiyng others autoritee, he now thought, as it was in deede, a ferthely beginning to the pursute of his entente, and a sure grounde and situacion of his vnnaturall buyldyng, if he mighte vnder the pretence of remembryng of olde displeasures abuse the ignorance and

and anger of the one partie too the destruction of that other, and then to wynn to his purpose as many as he could, and suche as could not bee wonne, might bee losse of thei loked therefoze. But of one thyng he was certain, & if his entent wer once perceived, he should haue made peace betwene bothe parties with his owne bloud, but all his intent he kept secret till he knewe his frendes, of the whiche Henry the Duke of Buckynghā was the firste that sente to hym after his brothers deathe a trusty seruant of his called Persuall to the citie of York, where the duke of Gloucestre kepte the kyng his brothers funeralles. This Persuall came to Iohn Ward a secrete chaumberer to the duke of Gloucestre, desirynge that he in close and couerte maner mighte speake with the duke his master: where vpon in the ded of the night the duke sent for Persuall (all other beeyng auoyded) whiche shewed to the duke of Gloucestre that the duke of Buckyngham his master in this newe worlde would take suche parte as he would, and would farther wayte vpon hym with a thousand good felowes if nede were. The duke sente backe the messanger with greate thanks and diuerse priuey instruccions by mouthe, whiche Persuall did somuche by his traual that he came to the duke of Buckyngham his master into the marches of Wales, and eftsones with newe instruccions met with the duke of Gloucestre at Notyngham, whiche was come out of the Northcountree with many knightes and gentle men to the numbze of sixe hundred horse and moze, in his iourney toward London. And after secrete metynge and communicaciō had betwene hym and
the

the duke of Gloucester he returned with such
spede that he broughte the duke of Buckyngham
his master too inete with the duke of Gloucester
not far fro Northampton with thre hundred hors-
ses, and so thei twoo came together too Northam-
pton where thei firste began their vnhappy enter-
prize, and so the duke of Buckyngham contynued
still with the duke of Gloucester till he was crow-
ned kyng, as ye shall plainly perceiue herafter.

¶ The young Kyng at the deathe of his father
kept houshoulde at Ludlowe, for his father had
sente hym thether for Justice too bee dooen in the
Marches of Wales, to the ende that by the auto-
ritee of his presence, the wilde Welshemenne and
euill disposed persones should refrain from their
accustomed murthers and outrages. The gouer-
naunce of this young Prince was committed too
lorde Antony Wooduille erle Rivers and lorde
Scales, brother to the quene, a wise hardy and ho-
nourable personage, as valiaunt of hande as po-
litique of counsaill, and with hym were associate
other of the same partie, and in effect euery one as
he was nere of kynne vnto the quene, so was he
planted nexte aboute the prince. That drift by the
quene scmed too bee diuised, whereby her bloudde
might of righte in tender youthe bee so planted in
the princes fauoure, that afterward it should har-
dely bee eradicated out of the same.

The duke of Gloucester turned all this to their
distruccion, and vpon that grounde set the foun-
dacion of his vnhappy buyldyng. For whom soe-
uer he perceiued too bee at variaunce with theim,
or to beare toward hym self any fauoure, he brake
vnto

hnto theim, some by mouth, some by writing and
secrete messengers, that it was neither reason nor
yet to be suffered that the young kyng their master
and kynsmanne should bee in the handes and cu-
stody of his mothers kynrede, sequestered in ma-
ner fro their compaignie and attendaunce, of whi-
che euery one oughte hym as faithfull seruise as
thet, & many of theim of farre more honorable part
of kinne then his mothers side, whose bloud & the
duke of Gloucestre sauyng the kyng his pleasure
was farre vnmete to bee matched with vs, whiche
now to bee remoued from the kyng and the leaste
noble to bee lefte aboute hym is & he neither ho-
nourable to his maiestie nor too vs, and also too
hym lesse suretie, to haue the nobles and mightiest
of his frendes from hym, and to vs all no litle ieo-
pardie to suffre, and specially our well proued euil
willers too growe into too greate autoritee with
the kyng in youthe, namely whiche is light of be-
lefe and soone perswaded. We remembre that kyng
Edward hym self, albeit he was bothe of age and
discrecion, yet was he ruled in many thynges by
that bende more then stode either with his honour
or our profite, or with the commoditee of anye
manne els, except onely the immoderate aduun-
cemente of theim selues, whiche whether thei tru-
sted soze after their owne weale or no, it were hard
I thynke to gesse. And if some folkes frendeshipe
had not holden better place with the kyng then
any respecte of kynrede, thei mighte, paraduen-
ture, easely haue trapped and brought to confusi-
on some of vs or this, and why not as easly as thei
haue dooen some other or this as nere of the blud
royall

royall, but our lord hath wrought his will, and thanked be his grace that perill is past, howbeit as greete is growyng if we suffre this possig king in his enemies handes, whiche without his wityng might abuse the name of his commaundement to any of our vndoing, whiche thynges god and good prouision forbid, of whiche good prouision none of vs hath any thyng the lesse nede for the late attoneimente made, in whiche the kyng his pleasure had more place then the parties heres or willes, nor none of vs is so vnwise ouersone to trust a newe frend made of an old foe, or thinke that any onely bindenesse so sodenly contracted in an hour, continued scātly yet a fourtnight, should be deper sette in our stomackes then a long accustomed malice many yeres rooted.

With these perswasions and witynges, the duke of Gloucester sette a fire thein whiche were easie to kyndle, and in especiall twain, Henry duke of Buckyngham and William lord Hastings and lord Chamberlain, bothe menne of honoure and of greete power, the one by long succession from his aunceters, thother by his offices and the kyng his fauoure. These two not bearyng eache to other so muche loue as hatred, both to þe quenes bloud accorded together with the duke of Gloucester that thei would remoue from the kyng all his mothers frendes, vnder þe name of their enemies.

Where vpon the duke of Gloucester beyng aduertised that the lordes aboute the kyng intended to byng hym too London too his coronacion, accompanied with suche a number of their frendes that it should be harde for hym too byng his purpose

purpose to passe without the assemblyng and gathering of people & in maner of open warre, wher of the ende he wylt was doubtful, and in the whiche the kyng beyng on the other syde, he shoulde haue the name and face of rebellion.

20 He secretely therfore by diuerse meanes caused the quene to be perswaded that it was neither nede and shoulde also be ieoperdeous the kyng to come bp so strong, for as nowe, every lord loued other and none other thyng studied for, but the triumph of his coronation & honoure of the kyng. And the lordes about the kyng, shoulde assemble in the kynges names muche people, they shoulde geue the lordes betwixt who & the ther had bene some tyme debate an occasion to feare and suspecte least they shoulde gather this people, not for the kynges saue gard, whom no man impugned, but for their destruction, hauyng more regarde to their olde variaunce then to their new attoneiment, for the whiche cause they on the other parte might assemble men also for their defence, whose powres she wylt wel farre stretched, and thus shoulde al the realme fal in a roare, & of the mischiefe that therof shoulde ensue (whiche was likely to be not a lytle) the most harne was like to fal wher she least woulde, and then all the worlde woulde put her and her kynred in the blame, sayng that they had vnwysely and vntreuely broken the amytie and peacc whiche the king her husband had so prudently made betwene her kynred and his, whiche amytie his kynne had alwaies obserued.

21 The quene beyng thus perswaded, sent worde to the kyng and to her brother, that there was no

ff. i.

cause

Kyng Edward

cause ner nede to assemble any people, and also the Duke of Gloucester and other lordes of his bend, wrote vnto the kyng so reuerently and to the queenes frendes there so louyngly, that they nothyng pearethly mistrustynge, brought the yong kyng towarde London with a sober compaignie in great hast (but not in good speede) til he came to Northampton, and fro thence he remoued to Stony Stratforde. On whiche day, the two dukes and their bed came to Northampton, saynyng that Stony Stratforde could not lodge them al, where they found the erle Ryuers, entendynge the nexte mornynge to haue followed the kyng, and to be with him early in the mornynge. So that night the dukes made to the erle Ryuers frendly chere, but assone as they were departed veri familer with great curtesie in open sight & therle Ryuers lodged, the two dukes with a fewe of their priuy frendes fel to counsel wherein they spent a great part of the night, & in the dawnyng of the day they sent about priuely to their seruauntes in their lodgynges to hast to horsebacke for their lordes were in maner redy to ryde, wherupon all their seruauntes were ready or the lordes Ryuers seruauntes were awake. Nowe had the dukes taken the keyes of the ynn into their possession, so that none shoulde yssue out without their consent. And ouer this in the high way towarde Stony Stratforde they set certaine of their folkes that shoulde cause and compell to retourne againe all persons that were passyng from Northampton to Stony Stratforde, saynyng that the dukes them selves woulde be the fyrst that shoulde come to the kyng from Northampton, thus they bare folkes

folkes in hand. But when the earle Ryuers vnderstode the gates closed and the wayes on euery syde beset, neither his seruautes, neither him selfe suffered to go out, perceiuyng so great a thyng without his knowledge, not begon for nought, comparynge this present doyng with the last nightes chere, in so few houres so a great chaunge, marueilously myslyked it. Howbeit, syth he could not get away, he determined not to kepe him selfe close, least he shoulde seme to hyde him selfe for some secret feare of his owne faute, wherof he saw no such cause in him selfe, wherfore on the suretie of his owne conscience he determined to go to them and to inquire what this matter might meane. Whom as soon as they sawe, they beganne to quarel with him, affirmynge that he pretended to set distaunce betwene the kyng and them to byng them to confusion, which shoulde not lye in his powre, and when he beganne as he was an eloquente manne in goodly wyse to excuse him selfe they woulde not heare his aunswere but toke him by force and put him to warde. And then he mounted on horsebacke & came into Stony stratford where the kyng was goyng to horsebacke, because he would leaue the lodgyng for them, for it was to straight for bothe the compaignies. And when they came to his presence they alighted and their compaignie aboute them, and on their knees saluted hym, and he them gentely receiued, nothyng pertyly knowyng ner mistrustynge as yet. The duke of Buckyngham sayd aloud, on afore gentlewomanne and women kepe your rouines, and therewith in the kyng

his presence they picked a quarel to the lord Richard Grey the quenes sonne and brother to the lord Marques & halfe brother to the kyng, sayng that he and the Marques his brother and the lord Ryuers his vncle had copassed to rule the kyng & the realme and set variaunce betwene the states, & to subdue and destroy the noble bloud of the realme. And towarde thacomplishment of the same, they sayde the lord Marques had entred into the towre of London, and thence had taken out treasure and sent men to the sea, whiche thynges these dukes knewe well were done for a good purpose & as very necessary, appointed by the whole counsaill at London, but somewhat they must haue sayd, vnto the whiche wordes the kyng answered: what my brother Marques hath done I cannot say, but in good faith I dare wel answer for mine vncle Ryuers and my brother here, that they be innocent of suche mattiers, yee my liege & the duke of Burkyngham, they haue kepte the dealyng of these matters farre from the knowledge of youre good grace, and furthwith they arrested the Lord Richard and sir Thomas Vaugham and sir Richard Hawte in the kyng his presence and brought the kyng and all to Northampton, where they toke further counsaill in their affaires. And there they sent from the kyng whom it pleased them, and set aboute him suche seruantes as better pleased them then him. At whiche dealyng he wepte, but it booted not. And at dynner the duke of Gloucester sent a dyshe from his owne table to the lord Ryuers, praiung him to bee of good chere and all shoulde be well, he thanked him and prayed the messen-

messenger to beare it to his nephiewe the lord Ry-
chard with like wordes, whom he knewe to haue
neede of comfort, as one to whom suche aduersite
was straunge, but he hym selfe had bene all his
dayes ennured therewith, and therfore could beare
it. But for al this message, the Duke of Gloucester
sent the lord Ryuers, the lord Rycharde & sir Tho-
mas Vaughn and sir Rycharde Hawte into the
North parties into diuerse prisonnes, but at last all
came to Bowmfrete where they al foure were behea-
ded without iudgement.

In this maner as you haue heard, the Duke of
Gloucester toke on him the gouernaunce of the
yong kyng, whō with muche reuerence he couered
towards London. These tidynge came hastely
to the quene before mydnight by a very sore report
that the kyng her sonne was taken & that her bro-
ther and her other sonne and other her frendes were
arested and sent, no man wylt whether. With this
heauy tidynge the quene bewayled her chyldes
ruyne, her frendes mischaunce and her owne infor-
tune, cursyng the tyme that euer she was persua-
ded to leaue the gatheryng of people to byng by
the kyng with a great powre, but that was passed
and therfore now she toke her yonger sonne the
duke of York and her doughters and went out of
the palays at Westminster into the sanctuary and
there lodged in the abbotes place, and she and all
her chyldren and compaignie were registred for
sanctuary persons. The same night there came to
doctoz Rotheram Archebischop of York and lord
Chauncelour a messenger from the lord Chabre-

layne to yorke place besyde Westminster, the messenger was brought to the bishoppes bedsyde & declared to him that the dukes were gone backe with the yong kyng to Northampton, and declared further, that the lord Hastings his maister sent him worde that he shoulde feare nothyng for all shoulde be wel. (Wel of the bishop) be it as well as it wyl, it wyl neuer be so well as we haue sene it, and then the messenger departed. Whereupon the bishop called by his seruantes befoze day light and toke with him the great seale and came befoze day to the quene, about whom he found muche heynesse, rumble, haste, busynesse, conueighaunce and cariage of hir stuffe into sanctuary, euery mā was buly to carpe, beare and conueigh stuffe, chestes and fardelles, no man was vnoccupied, and some caried moze then they were comaunded to another place. The quene sat alone belowe on the rushes al desolate and dismayde, whō the archebishoppe comforted in the best maner that he coulde, shewyng her that the matter was nothyng so sore as she tooke it for, and that he was putte in good hope and out of feare by the message sente to hym from the lord Hastings. I wo worth him of the quene for it is he that goeth about to destroy me & my blodde. Madame of he, be of good comforte and I assure you, if they crowne any other kyng then your sonne whom they nowe haue, we shal on the morowe crowne his brother whom you haue here with you. And here is the great seale, whiche in likewyse as your noble husbände deliuered it to me, so I deliuer it to you to the vse of your sōne and therewith deliuered her the greaete seale, and departed

departed home in the dawnyng of the day, and when he opened his wyndowes and loked on the Temps, he might see the riuer full of boates, of the duke of Gloucester his seruantes watchyng that no person shoulde go to Sanctuary ner none shoulde passe vnlerched.

Then was there great rumoure and commotion in the citee and in other places, the people diuersly deuined vpon this dealyng. And diuerse lordes knightes and gentilmen, either for fauoure of the quene or for feare of them selves, assembled companies and wente flockyng together in harneys. And many also, for that they recompted this demeanoure attempted, not so specially against other lordes as against the kyng him selfe in the dysturbaunce of his coronation, therfore they assembled by and by together to common of this matter at London. The archebishoppe of York fearing that it would be ascribed (as it was in dede) to ouermuche lightnes that he so sodeynly had yelded by the great seale to the quene, to whō the custodiy therof nothing apperteigned without especial commaūdement of the kyng, secretly sent for the seale againe and brought it with him after the accustomed maner to mete with the lordes.

At this metyng was the lord Hastings, whose trueth towarde the kyng no manne doubted nor neded not to doute, perswaded the lordes to beleue, that the duke of Gloucester was faithfull & sure towarde his prince, & that the lord Ryuers, the lord Richard and other knyghtes apprehended, were for matters attempted by them against the dukes of Gloucester & Buckyngham put vn-

At whiche counsell the Archebifhop of Yorke was
foze blamed for deliueying the great feale to the
quene, and the feale taken from him and deliuered
to doctoꝝ John Ruffel bifhop of Lyncolne, a wyfe
man and a good and of much experience, and di-
uerfe lordes and knyghtes were appointed to di-
uerfe roumes, the lord Chamberlayne and fome
other kept the roumes that they were in befoze,
but not many.

Nowe were it fo that the protectour (whiche al-
wayes you muft take for the duke of Gloucefter)
foze thifted for the acheuyng of his pretended en-
trepryfe and thought euery day a yeaꝛe tyl it were
perfourmed, yet durft he no further attempt as
long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand, wel
witting that if he deposed the one brother, all the
realme woulde fall to the other, yf he remayned in
sanctuary oꝛ fould happely be fhortly coueighed
to his fathers libertee. Wherefoꝛe incōtinent at the
next metyng of the lordes in counsell, he purposed
to the that it was an heynous thyng of the quene,
and procedyng of great malyce toward the kyn-
ges councelers that ſhe ſhould kepe the kynges
brother in sanctuary from him whoſe ſpecial plea-
ſure and comfoꝛte were to haue his brother with
him, and that to be done by her to none other in-
tent but to byng all the lordes in an obloquy and
murimoure of the people, as though they were not
to be truſted with the kynges brother, whiche lordes
were by the whole aſſent of the nobles of the
realme appointed as the kynges nere frendes to
the tucion of his royall perſon, the proſperita
wherof (q he) ſtandeth not alonely fro the keepyng
of

of enemies and euill dyate, but partly also in recreation and moderate pleasure, whiche he cannot take in his tendre yowth in the cōpany of olde and auncient persons, but in the familiar cōuersacion of those that be not far vnder nor farre aboue his age, & neuerthelesse of estate cōuenient to accompany his maiestie, wherfoze with whō rather then with his owne brother, and if any mā thynke this consideracion light (I thynke no man so thinketh that loueth the kyng) let him cōsider that sometime without final thynges, greater cannot stand, and verely it redouneth greatly to the dishonoure of the kynges highnes & of all vs that be about his grace to haue it come in any mans mouth, not in this realme onely, but also in other lādes (as euil wordes walke far) that the kynges brother should be fayne to kepe sanctuary. For euery man wyll iudge that no man wyll so do for nought, & suche opinions fastened in mens heartes be harde to be wrested out, and many growe to moze grieve then any man here can diuine. Wherfoze me thinketh it were not the worst to send to the quene some honourable and trustie personage, suche as tendreth the kynges weale and the honour of his counsell, and is also in credite & fauoure with her, for whiche considerations none semeth moze metely to me then the reuerende father my lord Cardinal archbishop of Cauntorbury, who may in this matter do most good of al men if it please him to take the payne, whiche I doubt not of his goodnes he wil not refuse for the kynges sake and ours & wealth of the yong duke him selfe the kynges most honorable brother and for the cōforte of my soueraigne

[lozde

lorde him selfe my most dearest nephiewe, considering that thereby shalbe ceased the slaunderous ruinoure and obloquy nowte goyng abroade, and the hurtes auoyded that therof might ensue, they must rest and quietnesse growe to all the realme. And if she percase be obstinate and so precisely set in her owne wyll & oppynion, that neither his wyse and faithful aduertisement can moue her, nor any mans reason satisfie her, then shal we by myne aduice by the kynges authorytee fetch him out of that prison and bring him to his noble presence, in whole continual company he shalbe so well cherished and so honorably intreated that al the worlde shal to our honour and her reproche perceiue that it was onely malyce, frowardnesse and folye, that causeth her to kepe him there. This is my mynde for this tyme, except that any of you my lordes any thyng perceyue to the contrary, for neuer shall I by Gods grace so wed my selfe vnto mine owne wyll but I shalbe ready to chaunge it vpon your better aduice.

¶ When the Protectoure had sayd, all the counsell affirmed that the mocion was good and reasonable, and to the kyng and the duke his brother honourable, and a thyng that should cease great murmoure in the realme yf the mother might by good meanes be induced to delyuer him, whiche thyng the Archebishop of Cauntorburie, whom they all agreed also to be mooste conuenient therunto, tooke vpon him to moue her, and thertoto do his vttermost endeuoure. Howebeit yf she coulde in no wyse be intreated with her good wyll to delyuer him, then thought he and suche of the
spiritu-

spiritualtie as were present, that it were not in a-
 ny wise to bee attempted to take him out against
 her wyl, for it would be a thyng that should turne
 to the grudge of all men and highe displeasure of
 God, if the pryviledge of that place should be bro-
 ken whiche had so many yerres bene kepte, whiche
 bothe kynges and Byschoppes had graunted and
 confirmed, whiche ground was sanctified by S.
 Peter him selfe more then fyue hundred yerres a-
 gone, and syth that tyme was neuer so vndeuous
 a kyng that euer enterprised that sacred priuilege
 to violate, nor so holy a bishop that durst presume
 the churche of the same to consecrate, and therfore
 of the Archebishop, God forbid that any manne
 shoulde for any yearthly enterpryse breake the im-
 munitie and libertie of that sacred sanctuary that
 hath bene the sauegarde of so many a good mans
 life, but I trust of he, we shall not nede it, but for
 any maner of nede I would we should not do it, I
 trust that she with reason shalbe contented and al
 thyng in good maner obtained. And yf it hap that
 I byrnyng it not to passe, yet shall I further it to
 my best power, so that you all shall perceyue my
 good wyl, diligence, and indenuoure. But the mo-
 thers dreade and womannishe feare shalbe the let
 yf any be.

Maye, womannishe frowarnesse of the duke of
 Buckyngham, for I dare take it on my solle that
 she wel knoweth that she nedeth no suche thyng to
 feare, either for her sonne or for her selfe. For as
 for her, here is no man that wyl be at warre with
 women, woulde God some men of her kynne were
 women to, and then should all be sone in rest.

Howe

Howbeit, here is none of her kynne the lesse loved
for that they be of her kynne, but for their owne
euil deseruyng. And put the case that we neither lo-
ued her nor her kynne, yet there were no cause why
we should hate the kynges noble brother to whose
grace we oure selves be kynne, whose honoure yf
she desired as our dishonoure, & as muche regarde
toke to his wealth as to her owne wyll, she coulde
be as loth to suffre him to be absent from the kyng
as any of vs, if she had any wytte, as would God
she had as good wyll as she hath frowarde wytte.
For she thinketh her selfe no wyser then some that
are here, of whose faithfull myndes she nothyng
doubteth, but verely beleueth and knowledgeth
that they woulde be as soye of his harine as her
owne selfe, and yet they would haue him from her
yf she abyde there.

And we all I thinke be content that bothe her
children be with her yf she came from thence and
be in suche place where they may be with their ho-
noure. Nowe yf she refuse in the deliuerance of
him to folowe the wysedome of them, whose wyse-
dome she knoweth, whose approbate fidelitee she
trusteth: it is easye to perceyue that frowardnesse
letteth her, and not feare. But go to, suppose that
she feareth as who may let her to feare her owne
shadowe, the more she feareth to deliuer him, the
more we ought to feare to leaue him in her han-
des, for yf she cast suche fonde doubttes that she
feare his hurte, then wyll she feare that he shall
be fet thence, for she wyll soone thinke that yf men
were set (whiche God forbidd on so great a mischiefe)
the sanctuary wyl litle let them, whiche sanctuarie
good

good men as me thynketh might without synne,
somewhat lesse regard then they do. Nowe then yf
he doubt least he might be fetched from her, is it
not likely that she wyl send him somewhere out of
the realme: verely I loke for none other. And I
doubt not but she nowe as soze myndeth it, as we
mynd the let therof. And if she might hap to byng
that purpose to passe, as it were no great mastery
to do we lettynge her alone, all the world would say
that we were a sorte of wyle counsellors aboute a
byng to let his brother to be cast away vnder oure
noses. And therfore I ensure you faithfully for my
mynde, I wyl rather maugre her stomacke fetch
him awaye, then leaue him there tyll her feare or
fonde frowarde feare conuey him away, and yet
wyl I breake no sanctuary, for verely lithe the pri-
uiledge of that place and other of the sorte haue so
long continued I woulde not go about to breake
it, but yf they were nowe to begynne I would not
behe that shoulde make them, yet wyl not I saye
nay, but it is a deede of pitie, that suche men as the
chaunce of y sea, or their euil debtors haue brought
into pouertee, shoulde haue some place of refuge
to kepe in their bodie out of the daunger of their
cruel creditours. And if it fortune the crowne to
come in question as it hath done before this tyme
whyle eche parte taketh other for traytours, I
thynke it necessarye to haue a place of refuge for
bothe. But as for theues and murtherers, wherof
these places be full, and whiche neuer falle from
their crafte after they once fall therunto, it is py-
tie that euer Sanctuary shoulde saue them, and

in especiall wylfull murtherers, whom God commaundeth to be taken from the aulter and to be put to death. And where it is otherwyle then in these cases, there is no nede of sanctuaries, appointed by God in the olde lawe. For if necessite of his owne defēce or misfortune dyued him to that deed then a pardon serueth him, whiche either is graunted of course, or the kyng of pytec and compassion geucth. Nowe loke howe fewe sanctuary menne there be whom necessitee or misfortune compelled together. And then see on the other syde, what a sort these be comonly therein of suche, whom wylfull vnchristyenes hath brought to naught, what a rable of theues, murtherers and malicious heynous traitours be, and that in two places specially, the one at the elbowe of the cytee, & the other in the very bowels, I dare wel a bowe it, if you wape the good that they do with the hurt that cometh of them, ye shal fynde it muche better to lese bothe then to haue bothe. And this I say although they were not abused (as thei now be and so long haue bene) that I feare me euer they wyll be whyle men be afearde to set to their handes to the amende-ment, as though God and saint Peter were the patrons of vngratious liuyng. Nowe vnchristes riot and ronne in debte vpon boldnes of these places, yea, and ritche menne ronne thither with poore mens goodes, there they buylde, there they spend and byd their creditours go whystle. Mens wyues ronne thither with their husbandes plate, and say they dare not abyde with their husbandes for betyng, theues bryng thither stolen goodes & hye theron. There deuyse they newe robberies
night

mightely and steale out and robbe, slue, and kill
 menne & come again into those places, as though
 those places gaue them not onely a sauergard to
 the harme that they haue dooen, but a licence also
 to do moze mischief, howbeit, muche of this greate
 abusion, (if wise menne would sette their handes
 there vnto) might bee amended, with greate than-
 kes of God and no bzeche of the priuiledge. The
 conclusion is, si the it is so long agoe I wote not
 what pope and what prince moze piteous then po-
 litique, hath graunted it, and other menne sence of
 a religious feare haue not broken it, lette vs take
 a pain with it, and lette it stande a God his name
 in his force, as farfurthe as reason will, whiche is
 not so farfurthe as maie serue too lette vs of the
 fetchyng furth of this noble manne to his honour
 and wealthe out of that place in the whiche nether
 is neither can bee a sanctuary or priuiledged man
 A sanctuarie euer serueth too defende the bodye
 of that manne that standeth in daungers abroad,
 not of greate hurte onely, but of lawefull hurte.
 For againste vnlawfull hurtes and harmes no
 pope ner kyng entended too priuiledge any one
 place wherein it is lawfull for one manne to dooe
 another manne wrong. That no manne vnlaw-
 fully take hurte, that libertie the kyng, the lawe
 and verie nature fordidde in euery place and
 maketh too that regarde for euery manne euery
 place a sanctuary: but where a manne is by lawe-
 full meanes in perell, there nedeth he the tuicion
 of some spectall priuiledge, whiche is the onely
 grounde of all sanctuaries, from whiche necessitee
 this noble prince is farre, whose loue to his kyng,

Eg. i.

nature

nature and kyndred proueth, whose innocencie too
all the worlde, his tender youthe affirmeth and so
sanctuary as for hym is not necessary ner none he
can haue. Whenne come not too sanctuary as they
come too baptyfme to require it by his godfathers
he muste aske it hymself that muste haue it, and
reason sithe no manne hath cause too haue it, but
whose consience of his owne faute maketh hym
haue nede to require it, what will then hath yow-
der babe, whiche if he had discrecion too require it
if nede were, I dare saie would bee righte angry
with theim & kepe hym there. And I would thinke
without any scruple of consience, without any bre-
che of priuiledge too bee somewhat more homely
with theim that bee there sanctuary menue in
deede, that if one go to sanctuary with another ma-
nes goodes, why should not the kyng leuyng his
body at liberty satisfy the party of his goodes eue
within the sanctuary, for nether kyng nor pope ca-
geue any place suche a priuiledge that it shall di-
scharge a man of his debtes beeyng hable to paie.
And with that diuerse of the clergie that were
there present, whether thei saied it for his pleasure
or as thei thoughte, agreed plainly by the lawe of
god & of the churche that the goodes of a sanctua-
ry man should be deliuered in paiement of his deb-
tes, and stollen goodes to the owner, and onely li-
bertie reserued to hym too get his luyng with the
labour of his hādes. Clerely & the duke I thynke
ye saie veri truth. And what if a mannes wife take
sanctuary because she list to ronne from her hous-
bande? I would thynke if she can alledge none o-
ther cause he maie lausfully without any displea-
sure

sure doorn too saint Peter, take her out of sainte Peters churche by the arine. And if no body maie betaken out of sanctuary because he saith he will abide there, then if a childe will take sanctuary because he feareth to go to schoole, his master muste lette hym alone, and as simple as that example is, yet is there lesse reason in our case then in it, for there though it bee a childishe feare, yet is there at the leaste some feare, and herein is no feare at all. And verely I haue harde of sanctuary menne, but I neuer hard before of sanctuary children, & therefore as for the conclusion of my mynde, whosoever maie deserue to haue neede of it, if thei thynke it for their suretee let thein kepe it, but he can be no sanctuary manne that hath nother discrecion to desire it, ner malice to deserue it, whose life ner libertie can by no lawfull processe stande in ieopardye, and he that taketh one out of sanctuary to dooe hym good I saie plainly he breaketh no sanctuary.

When the duke had dooen, the tempozal menne wholy, and the moste parte of the spirituall menne also thynkynge no hurte earthely ment toward the baby, condiscended in effecte, that if he wer not deliuered he should bee fetched oute. Howbeit thei thought it beste in aduoydng of all maner of rumour, that the cardinall should firste assaie to get hym with her good will. And therupon all þe counsaill came to the sterre chāber at Westminster, and the cardinall leauynge the protectour and other lordes in the sterre chāber departed into the sanctuarie to the quene accompaigned with certain lordes were it for the respecte of his honoure or that she should by þe persones of so many perceiue that his

arrande was not onely one mannes mynde, or wer it for that the protectoure enteded not in this matter too truste one manne alone, or els if she finally were determined to kepe hym, some of the compaignie had peradventure some secrete instruction incontinent maugree her will too take hym too leaue her no respitc to conueigh hym.

¶ When the quene and the lordes were come together in presence, the Cardinall shewed vnto her that it was thought to the lord protectour and the whole counsaill that her keepyng of the kyng his brother in that place highly sounded, not onely to the grudge of the people & their obloquy, but also to the importable grief & displeasure of the kyng his royall maiestie, to whose grace it wer a synguler comfozte to haue his naturall brother in compaignie, and it was their bothes dishonoures and theirs and hers also to suffice hym in sanctuary, as though the one brother stode in danger and perill of y other. And he shewed her farther that y whole counsaill had sentc hym to require of her the deliuerie of him that he might bee brought to the kyng his presence at his liberty out of that place whiche menne reconed as a prisone, and there should he be demeaned accordyng to his estate and degree, and she in this doying should bothe dooe great good to the realme, pleasure to the counsaill, profite to herself, succour to her frēdes that wer in destresse, and ouer that, whiche he wiste well she specially reuered, not onely greate comfozte and honoure to the kyng but also to the young duke hym self, whose bothe greate wealth it were to bee together, as well for many greater causes as also for their bothe Dispozte

disport and recreation, whiche thynges the lordes esteemed not sleighte, though it seemed lighte, well pondering that their yowthe without recreation and plaie cannot endure, nor any esttrainger for the conueniēce of bothe their estates so metely in that point for any of them as either of the for thother.

My lord (of the quene,) I saie not naie but that it wer very conueniente that this gentleman who you require were in the compaignie of the kyng his brother, and in good faith me thynketh it wer as greate commoditee to theim bothe, as for yet a while to bee in the custody of their mother the tēdyre age considered of the elder of theim bothe, but in espectall the younger, whiche besides his infancie that also nedeth good looking to, hath a while been so soze decaised with sickenesse & is so newlye rather a litle amended then well recouered, that I dare putte no persone carthely in truste with his keepyng, but my self onely, considering there is as phisicians saie, and as we also finde, double the perill in the resiliuacion that was in the firste sickenesse, with whiche decaise nature beeyng soze laboured, foreweryed and weakened, wareth the lesse hable to beare out a newe surfet. And albeit there might bee founden other that would happely doo their beste vnto hym, yet is there none that either knoweth better howe to orde hym then I that so long haue kepte hym, or is moze tendrely like to cherish hym then his owne mother that bare hym. No manne denieth good madame, of the cardinal, but that your grace of all folke wer moste necessaie aboute your children, and so would all the counsaill not onely bee content but also glad that it

wer if it might stande with your pleasure to bee in
 suche place as mighte stande with their honoure.
 But if you apointe your self too tary here, then
 thynke thei it moze conueniente the Duke of York
 wer with the kyng honozably at his libertie to the
 comfozte of theim bothe, then here as a sanctuary
 manne to their bothe dishonour and obloquy, sith
 there is not alwaie so greate necessite to haue the
 child with the mother, but that occasion sometyme
 maie bee suche that it should bee moze expedient to
 kepe hym els where, whiche in this well apcareth,
 that at suche tyme that your moste derest sonne the
 prince and now kyng should for his honoꝝ & good
 orde of the countree kepe household in Wales far
 out of your keepyng, your grace was well contente
 therewith your self. Not very well contente (q̃ the
 quene) and yet the case is not like, for the one was
 then in health and the other is now sicke, in whiche
 case I matuail greatly why my loꝝde protectour
 is so desirous to haue hym in his keepyng, where if
 the childe in his sickenesse miscaried by nature, yet
 might he runne into slander & suspicion of fraud.
 And thei call it a thyng so soze agaynst my chilles
 honoure & theirs also that he abideth in this place
 it is all their honoures there to suffer hym abyde
 where no manne doubteth he shalbe best kept, and
 that is here while I am here, whiche as yet entede
 not to come furthe and ieopard my self after other
 of my frendes, whiche would God wer rather here
 in suretee with me, then I were there in ieopardie
 with theim. Why madame (q̃ the loꝝde Hawarde)
 knowe you any thyng why thei should bee in ie-
 pardie? I saye verely (q̃ the) no, why thei should
 bee

bee in prysone neither as thei now bee, but I trowe
 it is no great marueill though I feare least those
 y haue not letted to put theim in duraunce with out
 coloure, will let as litle to procure their distrucciō
 without cause. The cardinall made a countenaunce
 to the lordc Haward that he should harpe no moze
 vpon that stryng, and then saied he too the quene,
 that he nothyng doubted but those lordes of her
 kinne the whiche remained vnder a reste should v-
 pō the matter examined dooe well inough, and as
 towarde her noble persone, was, neither could bee
 any maner of ieopardie. Whereby should I truste
 that (q the quene) in y I am gyltlesse, as though
 thei were gyltie, in that I am with their enemies
 better beloued then thei, when thei hate theim for
 my sake, in that I am so nere to the kyng, and how
 farre bee thei of that would helpe, as God sende
 grace thei hurte not. And therefore as yet I pur-
 pose not too departe hence, as for this gentleman
 my sonne, I mynde he shall bee where I am till I
 see further, for I see some menne so greddy without
 any substanciall cause too haue hym, whiche ma-
 keth me muche moze afraied and scrupulous too
 deliuer hym. Truly madame (q the Cardy-
 nall) the moze afraied that ye bee too deliuer hym,
 the moze other menne feareth too suffre you too
 kepe hym, leaste your causelesse feare, might cause
 you farther too conueighe hym, and many thynke
 he can here haue no priuiledge whiche can haue
 neither will too aske it, nor yet malice or offence
 to nede it. And therefore, thei recōne no priuiledge
 broken, although thei fetch hym out of sanctua-
 rie, whiche if you finally refuse too deliuer hym,

Kyng Edward

I thynke verely the counsaill will enfranchise
hym, so muche drede hath my lord his uncle, for
the tendre loue he beareth hym, leaste your grace
should sende hym awaie. Ah, & the queene, hath he
so tendre a zeale too hym that he feareth nothyng,
but leaste he should escape hym. Thynketh he that
I would sende hym hence, whiche is neither in the
plight to sende out: and in what place could I re-
couer hym sure, if he be not sure in sanctuary: wher
of was there neuer tiraunte yet so deuylishe, that
durste attempte too breake the priuiledge, and I
trust God is now as strong to withstande his ad-
uersaries as euer he was. But my sonne can de-
serue no sanctuary, you saie, and therefore he can
not haue it, forsothe the lord protectour hath sent
a goodly glose, by the whiche that place that maie
defend a thefe, maie not saue an innocēt: but he is
in no ieopardie no: hath no neede thereof, I would
God he had not. Croweth the protectoure I praise
God he maie proue a protectour, rather then a de-
stroyer, where vnto his painted processe draweth.
Is it not honourable that the duke hyde here: it
were comfortable to theim bothe that he were with
his brother, because the kyng lacketh a plaie feloe
yca be you sure, I praise God send hym better plai
felowes then hym that maketh so high a matter v-
pon suche a trisleyng pretexte, as though there
could none bee founde to plaie with the kyng, but
if his brother whiche hath no luste to plaie for sic-
kenesse, muste come out of sanctuary, out of his
sauegarde to plaie with hym: as though that prin-
ces so young as thei bee, could not plaie without
their peeres, or children could not plaie without
their

their kynred, with whom for the more parte they agree muche worse then with straungiers. But the childe you saie cannot require the priuiledge, who tolde the protectoure for. Aske hym and you shall here hym aske it and so shall he if ye will. Now be it this is a strange matter, suppose he could not aske it & thynke he would not aske it, and ymagene he would aske to go out, if I saie he shal not. Note if I aske þe priuiledge, but for my self, I say þe that against my will taketh out hym, breaketh sanctuary. Serueth this libertie for my persone onely or for my gooddes too? you maie not fro hence take my horse from me, if I stale hym not nor owe you nothyng, then foloweth it, that you maie not take my child from me, he is also my ward, for as farre as my learned counsaill sheweth me, he hath nothyng by dissent holden by knightes seruyce, but by focage, then the lawe maketh me his garden, then inate no manne lawfully (I suppose) take my warde from me out of this place, without the breche of sanctuary, & if my priuiledge could not serue hym, nor he asketh it for hym self, yet sith the lawe comitteth to me the custodie of hym, I maie require it for hym, excepte the lawe geue the infaute a garden onely for his gooddes, dischargyng him of the cure and sauekepyng of his body, for whiche onely, bothe gooddes and landes serue. Wherefore here entende I to kepe hym, sith the mannes law serueth the garden too kepe the infaute, and the law of nature willethe the mother to kepe the child and Godes lawe priuiledgeth the sanctuary, and the sanctuary priuiledgeth my sonne, sith I feare to put hym to the protectoures handes, that hath

Kyng Edward

his brother already, whiche is (if bothe failed) his heritoure to the crowne as heire male, as he saith. The cause of my feare no manne hath to dooe too examine, and yet feare I no ferther then the lawe feareth, whiche as learned menne tell me, forbiddeth euery manne the custody of theim, by whose death he maie enherite lesse lande then a kyngdom. I can saie no more, but whosoeuer he bee that breakech this holy sanctuary, I praye God sende hym shortly nede of sanctuary, when he maie not come too it, for I would not that my mortall enemye should bee taken out of sanctuary.

The cardinal perceiued that the quene euer the longer the farther of, and also that she began too kyndle and chafe and spake soze bytyng woordes against the protectour, and suche as he neither beleued and also was lothe to here, he saied to her, for a finall conclusion, that he would no more dispute the matter, and if she were content to deliuer the duke to hym and to the other lordes there presente, he durste laie his owne body and soule bothe in pledgc, not onely for his suerty, but also for his estate, and surely he knewe noz suspected no cause but he mighte so dooe (but he knewe not all.) And further he saied, if she would geue hym a resolute aunswere too the contrary he would therewith departe incontinente, and shifte who so would with this businesse afterwarde, for he neuer entended further to moue her in the matter, in the whiche he thought that he and al other also, saue her self, lacked either witte or truth. Witte if thei wer so dull if thei nothyng could perceiue what the protector enteded, and if thei should procure her sonne to bee
Delivered

deliuered into his handes, in whom thei should perceiue towarde the childe any euill will intended, then she might thynke all the counsaill bothe euill aduised and of litle fidelitee to their prince.

The quene with these wordes stode in a greate study, and forasmuche as she sawe the lorde cardinall more redier to depart the remanaunt, and the protectoure hym self redy at hande, so that she verely thought that she could not kepe hym there but he should bee incontinente taken thence, and to conueigh hym els where, neither had she tyme too serue her, nor place determined, nor persones appointed to conueigh hym, and so al thyng was vncedy, whē this message came so sodainly on her, nothyng lesse looking for then too haue hym out of sanctuary, whiche she knewe now menne too be sette in all places aboute that he could not bee conueighed out vntaken, and partely as she thought it mighte fortune her feare to bee false: so well she wiste it was either nedelesse or bootelesse. Wherefore, if she should nedes goo from hym, she demed beste to deliuer hym, and specially of the cardinales faith she nothyng doubtyng nor of some other lordes whom she sawe there, whiche as she feared lesse, thei might bee deceiued, so well was she assured that thei would not bee corrupted: the thought she that it would make thein the more warely too loke to hym, and the more circumspectly to see his surety, if she with her owne handes betooke hym them by truste, and at the laste she toke the young duke by the hande and saied vnto the lordes, my lordes of she and all my lordes, neither am I so vnwile to mistruste your wittes nor so suspicious to

mistruste

King Edward

mistrust your truthe: of the whiche thyng I pur-
pose to make suche a pꝛoofe that if either of bothe
lacked in you, might turne bothe me to sorow, the
realme to muche harme and you to greate repro-
che. For lo, here is of the this gentleman, whom I
doubt not but I could kepe safe if I would, what-
soever any manne saie and I doubt not also but
there bee some abroade so dedly enemies vnto my
bloud, that if thei wiste wher any of it late in their
owne body thei would lette it out, we haue also ex-
perience that the desire of a kyngdome knoweth
no kynrede, the brother hath been & brothers bane
and maie the nephewes bee sure of the vncle & eche
of these children are others Defence while thei bee
a sunder, and eche of their liues lieth in others bo-
dy, kepe one safe and bothe bee sure, and nothyng
to bothe moze perillous, then bothe too bee in one
place, for a wise marchaunte neuer auentureth all
his gooddes in one ship, al this notwithstanding
here I deliuer hym and his brother in him to kepe
to your handes, of whom I shall aske them bothe
before God and the worlde. Faithfull you bee and
that I wote wel, and I knowe you bee wise and of
power and strenght if you liste to kepe hym, for you
lacke no helpe of your selues, nor nede to lacke no
help in this case, and if you cannot els where, then
maie you leaue hym here. But onely one thyng I
beseeche you, for the trust that his father putte you
in euer and for the truste that I putte you in now,
that as farre as you thynke that I feare to muche
ye bee well ware that you feare not too litle. And
therewith all the saied to the child, fare well myne
owne swete sonne, God sende you good keeping, I
me

me once kisse you or you go, so God knoweth whē
wee shall kisse together again, and therewith she
kissed hym, and blessed hym, and turned her backe
and wepte, goyng her waie, leauyng the poore in-
nocent childe wepyng as faste as the mother.

When the Cardmall and the other lordes had
receiued the young duke, thei broughte hym into
the starre chaumbre, where the protectoure tooke
hym in his armes and kissed hym with these wo-
des, now welcome my lord with all my berie horte
and he saied in that of likelihod euen as he in war-
dely thought, and there vpon, furthwith brought
hym too the kyng his brother into the bishoppes
palace at Pauls, and from thence through the ci-
tee honourably into the tower, out of whiche after
that daie thei neuer came abode. When the pro-
tectoure had bothe the children in his possession,
yea and that thei were in a sure place, he then begā
to thriste to see the ende of his enterpryse and to a-
noyde all suspicion, he caused al the lordes whiche
he knewe to bee faithfull too the kyng to assemble
at Baynardes castle to commen of the ordre of the
coronaciō while he and other of his complices and
of his affinitee at Crosbies place contriued the co-
trary and to make the protectour kyng, to whiche
counsail there were adhibite very fewe, and thet
berie secrete. Then began here and there some ma-
ner of mutterynge amongest the people as though
all thyng should not lōg bec well though thei wist
not what thei feared nor wherefore: wet it, that be-
fore suche greate thynges mennes hertes (of a se-
crete instincte of nature) misgeueth theim, as the
southwinde somtyme swelleth of hym self before a
tempeste,

tempeste, or were it that some one manne happely perceiuyng, filled many menne with suspicion, though he shewed fewe menne what he knew, howbeit, the dealyng it self made to muche on the matter, though the counsaill were close, for litle and litle all folke dreyne from the tower where the kyng was, and dreyne to Crosbies place, so that the protectoure had all the resorte, and the kyng in maner desolate. While some made suite vnto theim that had the dooyng, some of theim were by their frendes secretely warned, that it might happely turne theim too no good to bee to muche attendaunt on the kyng without the protectoures apoinctmente, whiche remoued diuerse of the kyng his olde seruauntes from hym, and sette newe in their romes aboute hym.

Thus many thynges comyng together, partly by chaunce and partly by purpose, caused at length not common people onely whiche wauer with the wynde, but wise menne also and some lordes too marke the matter and muse ther vpon, in so muche as the lord Stanley whiche afterwarde was erle of Derby wisely mistrusted it and saied to the lord Hastynge, that he muche misliked these two seuerall counsaill, for while we tke he talke of one matter at y one place, litle wote wee whereof thei talke in the other place. Well q the lord Hastynge, on my life neuer doubtte you, for while one manne is there whiche is neuer thence, neither can there bee any thyng once minded that should sounde amisse towarde me but it should bee in myne eares or it were well out of their mouthes. This mente he by Catesop whiche was nere of his secrete counsaill, and

and whom he familiarly vsed in his moſte waigh-
tie matters, putting no manne in ſo ſpeciall truſte
as hym, ſith he wiſte well there was no manne too
hym ſo muche beholding as was this Cateſby,
whiche was a manne well learned in the lawes of
this lande, and by the ſpeciall fauoure of the lord
Haſtynges in good autorite and muche rule bare
in the countrees of Leceſtre and Northampton
where the lord Haſtynges power laie. But ſurely
great pitie was it that he had not had either more
truth or leſſe wit, for his diſſimulacion onely, kept
all that miſchief by, in whom if the lord Haſtyn-
ges had not put ſo ſpeciall truſte, the lord Stan-
ley and he with diuerſe other lordes had departed
into their countrees and broken all the daunce for
many euill ſignes that he ſawe, whiche he nowe
conſtrued all for the beſte, ſo ſurely thoughte he
that there could bee no harme toward hym in that
counſaill entended where Cateſbye was. And of
trueth the protectoure and the duke of Buckyn-
gham made very good ſembleaunce vnto the lord
Haſtynges and kept hym muche in their compai-
gnie. And vndoubtedly the protectour loued hym
well, and lothe was to haue loſte hym ſaying for
feare leſte his life ſhould haue quayled their pur-
poſe, for the whiche cauſe he moued Cateſby too
proue with ſome woordes caſt out a farre of, whe-
ther he could thynke it poſſible to wyne the lord
Haſtynges too their parte. But Cateſby, whether
he aſſaied hym or aſſayed hym not reported vnto
hym that he found hym ſo faſt, & harde hym ſpake
ſo terrible woordes that he durſt no farther breake,
and of a trueth the lord Haſtynges of very truſte
ſhewed

shewed vnto Catesby the mistruste that other began to haue in the matter. And therefore, he fearyng lest their mocions might with the lord Hastings haue minished his credence, where vnto onely all the matter leaned, procured the protector hastely to rid hym, & muche the rather, for he trusted by his death to obtaine muche of the rule whiche the lord Hastings bare in his countree, the onely desire whereof, was the thyng that enduced hym to bee procurer and one of the speciallest contriuers of all this treason. Where vpon the lord protector caused a counsaill to bee set at the tower on the fridaie the thirtene daie of June, wher was muche commonyng for the honourable solemnitee of the coronacion, of the whiche the tyme appointed approached so nere that the pageautes were a makyng daie and night at Westminster and bitaile killed whiche afterwarde was caste awaie.

These lordes thus sittynge commonyng of this matter, the protector came in among them about nyne of the clocke salutyng them curteously excusyng hym self that he had been from them so long sayng merely that he had been a sleper that daie. And after a litle talkyng with them he said too the bishop of Ely, my lord you haue verie good strawberries in your garde at Holborne, I require you let vs haue a messe of them. Gladly (my lord) (p he) I would I had some better thing as redy to your pleasure as that, and with that he sente his seruauit in all the haste for a dishe of strawberries. The protector set the lordes faste in commonyng and there vpon prayed them to spare hym a litle, and so he departed & came in again betwene .x. and cleuen

eleuen of the clocke into the chambze all chainged with a sorwe angry countenaunce knittynge the browes, frownyng and fretynge and gnawynge on his lips & so set him doune in his place. All the lordes were dismaied and soze maruelled of this maner and sodeyne chaunge and what thyng should him aple. When he had sitten a whyle, thus he began. What were they worthy to haue that copasse and ymagyne the distruction of me beyng so neare of blod to the king and protectoure of this his royal realme? At whiche question all the lordes sat soze a stonned, mulyng muche by whom this questyon should be ment, of whiche euery man knewe him selfe clere.

Then the lord Hastings as he that for the familiaritee that was betwene thein, thought he might be boldest with him, aunswered & sayd that they were worthy to be punished as heynous traitours whatsoeuer they were, and all the other affirmed the same, that is (of he) yoder sorcerers my brothers wyfe & other with her, menyng the quene at these wordes many of the lordes were soze abashed whiche fauoured her, but the lord Hastings was better content in his mynde that it was moued by her then by any other that he loued better, albeit his heart grudged that he was not afore made of counsel in this matter as well as he was of the takynge of her kynred and of their puttyng to death, whiche were by his assent befoze deuised to be beheaded at Pomfretre, this selfe same day, in the whiche he was not ware that it was by other deuised that he him self should the same day be beheaded at London: then sayd the protectour

Kyng Edward

in what wyse that the soxceresse and other of her counsaile, as Shores wyfe with her affinitee haue by their soxcery and witchecraft this wasted my bodey, and therewith plucked by his Doublet cleue to his elbowe on his lefte arme, where he shewed a werp she wythered arme and small as it was neuer other. And therupon euery mannes mynde mysgaue them, well perceyving that this matter was but a quarel, for wel they wist that the quene was bothe to wyse to go aboute any suche folpe, and yf she would, yet would she of all folke make Shores wyfe least of her counsaile whom of al women she moost hated as that concubine whom the kyng her husband most loued.

Also, there was no manne there but knewe that his arme was euer suche syth the day of his byrth; Neuerthelesse the lord Hastings, whiche from the death of kyng Edward kept Shores wyfe, on whom he somewhat doted in the kynges lyfe, saying it is sayd that he forbore her for reuerence towarde his kyng, or els of a certayne kynd of fydelitee towarde his frend. Yet now his heart somewhat grudged to haue her whom he loued so highly accused, and that as he knewe well vntreuly, therfore he answered and sayd, certaynly my lord, yf they haue so doone, they be worthy of heynous punishment, what of the protectour, thou seruest me I wene with yf & with and, I tel the they haue done it, and that wyll I make good on thy bodey traytour. And therewith (in a great anger) he clapped his fist on the borde a great rappe, at whiche token geuen one cried treason without the chamber, and therewith a doore clapped, and in came rushing

Myng men in harneyes as many as the chamber could hold. And anone the protectoure sayd to the lord Hastings, I arrest the traytoure, what me lord of herpce the traytour of the protectour. And one let flye at the lord Stanley, whiche shoncke at the stroacke and fell vnder the table, or els his head had bene cleft to the teth, for as shortly as he shoncke, yet ranne the blood aboute his eares.

Then was the Archebishop of Yorke and doctour Morton bishop of Ely and the lord Stanley take and diuers other whiche were bestowed in diuers chambers, saue the lord Hastings (whom the protectour commaunded to speede and shypue him apace) for by saint Poule (of he) I wyl not dyne tyl I se thy head of, it boted him not to aske why, but heuily he toke a priest at auenture & made a shorte myst, for a leger wolde not be suffered, the ptector made so muche hast to hisdiner, whiche might not go to it tyl this murther were done, for sayng of his vngratulations othe. So was he brought furthe into the grene besyde the chapel within the towre, and his head laid doune on a logge of tymber that lay there for buildyng of the chapel, and there tyrannously stricken of, and after his body and head were enterred at Wyndesore by his maister kyng Edward the fourth, whose solles Jesu pardon. Amen

A merueilous case it is to heare, cither the warnynges that he should haue boyded or the tokens of that he could not boyde. For the next night before his death, the lord Stanley sent to him a trusty messenger at mydnight in al the hast, requirynghim to ryse and ryde awaye with him, for he was disposed vtterly no lenger for to abyde, for

he had a feareful dreame in the whiche he thought that a boze with his tuskes so rased them bothe by the heades that the blod rane aboute bothe their shoulders, and for asmuch as the protectour gaue the boze for his cognisaunce, he ymagined that it should be he. This dreame made suche a fearefull impression in his heart, that he wasthoughtly determined no lenger to tary but had his horse ready, if the lord hastynge would go with him. So that they would ryde so ferre that night, that they should be out of daunger by the next day. A good lord (of the lord hastynge) to the messenger, lea-
neth my lord thy maister so muche to suche trifles and hath suche faith in dreames, whiche either his owne scare phantaseth, or do ryle in the nightes rest by reason of the daies thought. Tel him it is plaine witchcraft to beleue in suche dreames, whiche if they were tokens of thynges to come, why thynketh he not that we might as likely make the true by our goyng if we were caught and brought backe (as frendes faile fliers) for then had the boze a cause lykely to race vs with his tuskes, as folkes that fled for some falshead, wherfore either is there peril, noz none there is dedde, or if any be, it is rather ingoyng then abidyng. And if we should nedes fal in peril one way or other, yet had I lea-
uer that men should se it were by other mens fals-
shed, then thynke it were either our owne faute or faynte feble heart, and therfore go to thy maister and comende me to him and I pray him to be me-
ry and haue no feare, for I assure him, I am assured of the man he wotteth of as I am sure of myne owne hand. God send grace (of the messenger) and

so departed. Certeyn it is also that in ryddyng to-
warde the towre the same moornyng in whiche he
was beheaded, his horse that he accustomed to ride
on stombled with him twise or thise almost to the
fallyng, whiche thyng although it happeth to the
dayly to whom no mischaunce is toward, yet hath
it bene as an olde euil token obserued as a goyng
toward mischief. Nowe this that foloweth was no
warnyng but an envious scozne, & same moornyng
ere he were vp from his bed where Shores wyfe
lay with him al night, there came to him sir Tho-
mas Haward sonne to the lord Haward (the whi-
che sturrying that moornyng very earely) as it were
of curtesye to accompaaigne him to the counsaile,
but soasmuche as the lord Hastings was not re-
dy, he taried a while for him and hastened him away.
This sir Thomas, while the lord Hastings
stayed awhile comonyng with a priest who he met
in the Towrestrete, brake the lordes tale, sayng to
him merely, what my lord I pray you come on,
wherfore talke you so long with þe priest, you haue
no neede of a priest yet, and laughed vpon him, as
though he would saye you shall haue neede of one
sone. But lytle wist the other what he ment (but or
night these wordes were well remembred by them
that heard them) so the true lord Hastings lytle
mistrusted, and was neuer merier, ner thought his
life in moze suretie in al his dayes, whiche thyng
is often a signe of chaunge, but I shall rather let
any thing passe me then the surety of mans mynde
so neare his death, for vpon the towre wharffe, so
neare the place where his head was of so sone af-
ter, as a man might wel cast a balle, a pursyuant

Kyng Edward

of his awne called Hastings mette with him, and
of their metyng in the place he was put in remem-
brance of another tyme, in whiche it had happened
them to mete befoze together in the same place, at
whiche tyme the lord Hastings had bene accused
to kyng Edward by the lord Ryuers the quenes
brother, insomuche that he was for a while whiche
lasted not long highly in the kynges indignacion
and stode in great feare of him selfe, & forasmuche
as he nowe mette the same pursuivant in the same
place the ieoperdy so wel passed, it gaue him great
pleasure to talke with him therof, with whom he
had talked in the same place of that matter, & ther-
fore he sayd, Ah Hastings, art thou remembred
when I mette the here once with an heauy bearte
Ye my lord (or he) that I remembre wel, and than-
ked be to God gat no good ner you no harme ther-
by, thou wouldest say so (or he) yf thou knewest so
much as I do whiche fewe knowe yet, and moo-
shal shortly, that meant he that the earle Ryuers
and the lord Rycharde and sir Thomas Mauthe-
rton should that day be beheaded at Domscrete, as they
were in deede, whiche acte he wylste wel shoulde be
done, but nothyng ware that they are hong so nere
his owne head. In faith man (or he) I was neuer
so sorow ner neuer stode in so great daunger of my
lyfe as I dyd when thou and I mette here, and lo
the worlde is turned nowe, nowe stand myne ene-
mies in the daunger as thou maist happe to heare
more hereafter, and I neuer in my lyfe merier nor
neuer in so great suretie, I praye God it proue so
(or Hastings, proue or he doubttest thou that)
nay nay I warraunt the, and so in maner displeas-
sed

fed he entered into the Towre, where he was not long on liue as you haue heard. O lord God the byndnesse of oure mortall nature, when he most feared, he was in most suretie, and when he reco-
ned him selfe most surest, he lost his life, and that within two houres after. Thus ended this hono-
rable manne a good knight and a gentle, of great auctoritee with his prince, of liuyng somewhat dissolute, playne and open to his enemy, and sure and secrete to his frende, easy to begyle, as he that of good heart and courage foresawe no perilles, a louyng man and passyng welbeloued, very faith-
ful & trustie ynough, but trustyng to muche was his destruction as you may perceyue.

Nowe flew the fame of this lordes death through the cytee and farther about like a wynde in euery mans eare, but the Protectoure immediatly after dynner (entendyng to set some colour vpon the mat-
ter) sent in al the haste for many substaunciall men out of the cytee into the Towre, and at their com-
myng him selfe with the duke of Buckyngham stode, harnesssed in olde euil fauoured briganders, such as no man would wene that they would haue vouchsafed to haue put on their backs, excepte some sodeyne necessitee had constrained them.

Then the lord protecto^r shewed them, that the lord Hastynges and other of his conspiracy had contri-
ued to haue sodeynly destroyed him and the duke of Buckyngham there the same day in counceyl, & what they intended farther, was yet not wel kno-
wen of whiche their treason he had neuer knowe-
ledge before. x. of the clocke & same forenone, whi-
che sodein feare draue the to put on suche harnesse

Kyng Edward

as came next to their handes for their defence, and so God holpe them, that the mischiefe turned vpon them that would haue done it, and thus he required them to report. Every man answered saye, as though no man mistrusted the matter, whiche of trueth no man beleued. Yet for the further appeasing of the peoples myndes, he sent immediatly after dynner an Heralde of armes with a proclamation through the cytie of London whiche was proclaymed in the kynges name, that the lord Hastings with diuers other of his trayterous purpose had before conspired, the same day to haue slayne the protectour and the duke of Buckyngham sitting in counsaile, & after to haue taken vpon the rule of the kyng and the realme at their pleasure, and therby to pil and spoyle whom they lyst vncountrolled, and muche matter was deuised in the same proclamation to the slander of the lord Hastings, as that he was an euill counsailloure to the kynges father, entising him to many thynges highly redoundyng to the diminishyng of his honour & to the vniuersal hurte of his realme by his euil compaignie and synister procuryng and vngacious example, aswell in many other thynges as in vicious liuyng and inordinate abusyon of his body, bothe with many other and in especial with Shores wyfe whiche was one of his secret counsel of this heynoustreason, with whom he lay nightly, and namely the night passed next before his death, so that it was the lesse marueil if vngacious liuyng brought him to an unhappy ende, whiche he was now put to by the comaundement of the kyng his highnes & of his honourable and
faith

faithful counsaile, bothe for his demerites beyng
so openly taken in his false contrived treason, and
also lest the delaing of his execution might haue
encouraged other mischeuous persons parteners
of his conspiracye, to gather and assemble them
selues together in makynge so great comotion for
his deliuerance, whose hope nowe beyng by his
well deserued death pollytickely repressed, all the
realme shall by Goddes grace rest in good quyet
and peace. Nowe was this proclamacion made
within two houres after he was beheaded, and it
was so curiously endited and so fayre written in
parchement in a fayre sette hande, and therewith
of it selfe so long a processe, that euery chylde might
perceyue that it was prepared and studyed before
(and as some men thought, by Carelby) for all the
time betwene his death and the proclamacion pro-
claimyng, could skant haue sufficed vnto the bare
wrytynge alone, albeit that it had bene in paper
and scribeled furth in hast at aduenture. So that
vpon the proclaimyng therof, one that was scole-
mayster at Paules standyng by and comparynge
the shorutenesse of the tyme with the length of the
matter sayd to them that stode aboute him, here is
a gay goodly cast, foule cast away for hast. And a
marchaunte that stode by him sayd that it was
wrytten by inspyracyon and prophesye. Nowe
then by and by, as it were for anger and not for
coueteous, the protectoure sent sir Thomas Ha-
warde to the house of Shores wyfe (for her hus-
bande dwelte not with her) whiche spoyled her of
all that euer she had, aboue the valure of two or
thre thousande markes, and sent her bodye to pry-
son.

son. And the Protectoure had layde to her for the maner sake that she entended to witche him; and that she was a counsaill with the lord Bastynge to destroy him. In concludion, when no coloure could fasten vpon these matters, then he layd heinoussly to her charge that thyng that she could not denye, for all the worlde knewe that it was true, and that notwithstanding cuery man laughed to heare it then so sodeynly, so highly taken, that she was nought of her body. And for this cause as a godly continent prince cleane and faultlesse of him selfe, sent out of heauen into this vicious worlde, for the amendment of mens maners, he caused the byshop of London to putte her to open penaunce, goyng befoze a crosse one Sondaye at procession with a taper in her hand. In the whiche she went in countenaunce and pace so womanly, and albeit she was out of al her aray sayyng her kyrtel onely, yet went she so fayze and louely, and namely when the wondryng of the people cast a comely red in her chekes, of the whiche she befoze had moost mylle, that her great shame wane her muche praisc amongst them that were moze amorous of her body then curious of her solle, and many good folke that hated her liuyng and were glad to see hym corrected, yet pitied they moze her penaunce then reioysed it, when they considered that the protectour dyd it moze of corrupt mynde then any vertuous affection.

The description
of Shores
wyfe.

This woman was borne in London, well fren-
ded, honestly brought vp, and very well maryed,
sayyng somewhat to sone, her husoande an honest
and a yong citezen, godly and of good substance,
but

but forasmuche as they were coupled or she were
wel rype, she not very feruently loued for whom
she neuer lōged, whiche was the thyng (by chaūce)
that the moze easely made her to encline to the kyn
ges appetite, when he requyred her. Howbeit the
respect of his royaltee, the hope of gaye apparel,
ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth was ha-
ble sone to perce a softe tendre heart: but when the
kyng had abused her, anone her husbāde beyng
an honest manne and one that could his good, not
presumyng to touche a kynges concubyne left her
vp to him altogether. When the kyng dyed, the
lorde Hastynge took her, whiche in the kynges
daies albeit that he was soze enamoured with her
yet he forbore, either for a princely reuerence or
for a certayne frendely faithfulnessse. Proper she
was and fayre, nothing in her body that you could
haue chaunged, but if you would haue wished her
somewhat higher. This say they that knewe her
in her youthe, some sayd and iudged that she had
bene wel fauoured, and some iudged the contrary,
whose iudgement seemeth like as menne gesse the
beauty of one long before departed, by a scalpe
taken out of a chanell house, and this iudgement
was in the tyme of kyng Henry the eyght, in the
xviii. yere of whose reigne she dyed, when she had
nothyng but a reueled skynne and bone. Her beau-
ty pleased not menne so muche as her pleasaunt
behauoure, for she had a proper wytte and coulde
bothe reade and wyte, mery in compaignye, redy
and quicke of answer, neither mute nor ful of ba-
ble, sometyme tauntynge without displeasure, but
not

not without dispozte. Kyng Edwarde would say that he had thre concubines, which in diuerse parties diuersly excelled, one, the meriest, the other the wiliest, the thirde the holpest harlot in þe realme as one, whō no man coulde get out of the churche to any place lightly, but if it were to his bed, the other two were somewhat greater personages then mastres Shoze, and neuerthelisse of their humilitie were cōtent to be nameles and to forbear the praise of these properties. But the meriest was Shozes wyfe in whō the kyng therfore toke great pleasure, for many he had, but her he loued whose fauour to say the trueth (for it were synne to lye on the deuil) she neuer abused to any mans hurt, but to many mens comforte and reliefe. For wherc the kyng toke displeasure, she would mitigate and appease his mynde, wherc men were out of fauour, she would bring the into his grace, for many that had highly offended, she obteyned pardon, and of great forfeitures she gat remission, and finally, in many weighty suites she stode many menne in great steade, either for none or for very small reward: and those rather gay then ritche, either for that she was content with the dede wel done, or for that she delighted to be sued vnto, and to shewe what she was able to do with the kyng, or for that that waton women and welthy be not alwaies counctous. I doubt not but some mā wyl thynke this womanne to be to slight to be wrytten of among graue & weightie matters, whiche they shal specially thinke þe happely sawe her in her age & aduersite, but me semeth þe chaūce so muche moze woorthy to

be remembred, in howe muche after wealth she
 fell to pouertee, and from riches to beggery, vnfre
 ed, out of acquaintaunce, after great iustitice
 after so great fauour with her p[ri]nce, after so great
 suite & sekynge to, as many other men were in their
 tymes, whiche be now famous onely by the infam
 y of their euil deedes, her doynges were not mu
 che lesse remembred because they were not so euil,
 for none vse to wyte an euil turne in marble stone
 but a good turne they wyte in the dust, whiche is
 not w[or]st p[ro]ued by her, for after her wealth she
 went beggynge of many that had begged the selfe
 if she had not holpen them, suche was her chaunce.

Nowe was it deuised by the protectour and his
 counsaile, that the same day that the lord Cham
 berlayne was headed in the towre of London and
 about the same houre should be beheaded at Dou
 frete the earle Ryuers and the lord Rycharde the
 quenes sonne, sir Thomas Flaugham and sir Ri
 chard Haute, whiche as you heard were taken at
 Northampton and Stony stratford by the cōsent
 of the lord Hastynge, whiche execution was done
 by the ord[er] and in the p[re]sence of sir Richard Rat
 clif knight, whose seruice the protectour specially
 vsed in the cōsel, & in the execution of suche law
 lesse enterpises, as a man that had bene long se
 crete with him, hauing experience of the worlde &
 shewed wytte, shorte & rude in speche, rough and
 boysterous of behauour, bold in mischief, as farre
 from pytie as from feare of God.

This knight brought these foure persons to the
 scaffold at the day appointed, and shewed to all
 the people that they were traitours, not suffering
 the

the lordes to speake, and to declare their innocency, least their wordes might haue enclyned men to pytie them and to hate the protectour and his party and so without iudgement and processe of the law caused them to be beheaded without other yearthly gilt but onely that they were good men & true to the kyng and to nye to the quene, insomuche as sir Thomas Vaughan goyng to his death sayd, Al wo worthe them that toke the prophecie that G. should destroy kyng Edwardes chylde, meanyng that by the duke of Clarence lord George whiche for that suspicion is now dead, but now remaineth Richard G. duke of Gloucester, whiche now I see is he that shal and wyll accomplishe the prophecy and destroy kyng Edwardes chylde and all their alyes and frendes, as it appeareth by vs this day, whom I appele to the highe tribunal of God for his wrongfull murther and our true innocency, and then Ratclyffe sayd, you haue well appeled, lay doune youre head, ye q sir Thomas, I dye in right, beware you dye not in wrong, and so that good knight was beheaded and the other.iii. and buried naked in the monastery at Poumfrēt.

When the lord Hastings and these other lordes and knightes were thus beheaded & ryd out of the way, then the protectour caused it to be proclaimed that the coronacion for diuers great and vrgent causes should be deferred tyl the seconde day of Nouember, for then thought he, that while men musd what the matter ment, and whyle the lordes of the realme were aboute him, out of their owne strengthes, and whyle no man wylte what to thinke nor whom to trust, or euer they should haue tyme

time and space to digest the matter, and make par-
 ticulars, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose and
 put him selfe in possession of the crowne, or menne
 should haue tyme to deuise any wyse to resist. But
 now was al the study, this matter beyng of it selfe
 so heynous might be fyrst broken to the people in
 suche wyse as it might be wel taken. To this coun-
 saile they toke diuerse suche as they thought mete
 to be trusted and likely to be enduced to that parte
 and hable to stand them in steade, either by powre
 or by pollycy. Among whom, they made a coun-
 saile Edmond Shaa then Mayre of Lodon, whi-
 che vpon trust of his owne auaucement, where
 he was of a proud heart highly desirous, toke on
 him to frame the cytee to their appetite. Of spiri-
 tual men they toke suche as had wytte and were in
 auctorytee amongst the people for opiniõ of their
 learnyng and had no scrupulous conscience. E-
 amongst these had, they toke Raffe Shaa cleaerke
 brother to the Mayre, and freer Wynkie prouin-
 cial of the Augustyne freers, bothe doctours in
 diuinitee, both great preachers, both of more lear-
 nyng then vertue, of more fame then learnyng, &
 yet of more learnyng then truth. For they were
 before greatly esteemed among the people, but af-
 ter that, neuer none of these two were regarded.
 Shaa made a sermonde in praise of the Protec-
 tour before the coronacion, and Wynkie made one
 after the coronacion, bothe so full of tedious flat-
 tery, that no good mans eares could abyde them,
 Wynkie in his sermonde so loste his voyce that
 he was fayne to leaue of and come doune in the
 myddest. Doctoure Shaa by his sermonde loste
 his

his honesty, and sone after his life, for very shame
of the world, into the whiche he durst neuer after
muche come abzoade, but the freer forced for
shame, and so it harmed him the lesse. Howbeit
some doubt & many thynke that Wynke was not
of counsaile before the coronation but after the co-
mon maner fell to flattery after, namely, because
his sermon was not incontinent vpon it, but at
saint Mary Spittle the Easter after. But cer-
tayne it is that doctour Shaa was of counsaile in
the begynnyng, in so much that they determyned
that he should first breake þe matter in a sermon at
Doules crosse, in whiche he should by the auctho-
ritee of his preaching induce the people to encline
to the protectours ghostly purpose. But now was
all the laboure and study in the deuise of some con-
uenient pretexte, for whiche the people should be
content to depose the prince and accept the protec-
toure for kyng. In whiche diuerse thinges they
deuised, but the chief thyng and the weyght of all
that inuencion rested in this, that they shoulde al-
ledge bastardy in kyng Edward hym selfe, or in
his chyldren, or bothe, so that he should seme dis-
abled to enherite the croune by the duke of Yorke
and the prince by him. To lay bastardy in kyng
Edward sounded openly to the rebuke of the pro-
tectours owne mother, whiche was mother to the
bothe. For in that point could be none other co-
loure, but to pretende that his owne mother was
an auoutresse, but neuerthelesse he would that
point should be lesse and more fynely and closely
handled, not euen fully playne and directly, but
touched a slope craftely, as though menne spared

in that pointe to speake all the trueth for feare of
 his displeasure. But that other point concernyng
 the basterdy that thei deuised too surmise in kyng
 Edward his childzen, that would he should bee o-
 penly declared and enforced to the vttermoſt. The
 colour and pꝛexte whereof cannot bee well per-
 ceiued excepte wee reporte ſome thynges long be-
 fore dooen aboute kyng Edward his mariages.
 After kyng Edward the fourth had deposed
 kyng Henry the ſixte and was in peaceble poſſeſſi-
 on of the realme, determining hym ſelf too many
 (as was requiſite) bothe for hym ſelf and for the
 realme, he ſente therle of Warwike and diuerſe o-
 ther noble men in ambassade to the frenche kyng
 to entreate a marriage betwene the kyng and Bo-
 na ſiſter to the frenche kyng. In whiche therle of
 Warwike founde the parties ſo towarde and wil-
 luyng that he ſpedely without any difficultie accor-
 dyng to his inſtruccion broughte the matter to a
 good concluſion. Now happened it in the meane
 ſeaſon, there came too make a ſute to the kyng by
 pcticion dame Elizabeth Grey (whiche after was
 his quene) then a widdowe, borne of noble bloude
 ſpecially by her mother, whiche was Duchesse of
 Bedforde, and ſhe was married to ſir Richard
 Wooduile, lord Riuers her father.

Howbeit, this Elizabeth beeyng in ſeruiſe with
 quene Margaret wiſe to kyng Henry the ſixte, was
 married to one Ihon Grey Eſquire whom kyng
 Henry made knight at the laſte battaill of ſaincte
 Albones, but litle while he enioyed his knight-
 hood for at that felde he was ſlain.

Afterwarde that kyng Edward was kyng and

Kyng Edward

the Erle of Warwike beeyng on his ambassad this pooze lady made sute too the kyng too bee restored to suche small landes as her housoande had geuen her in ioyntoure, whom when the kyng behelde and heard her speake, as she was bothe faire and of good fauoure, moderate of nature, well made and very wise, he not alonely pitied her, but also waxed enamored on her, and takyng her secretly a side began too enter into talkyng more familiarly, whose appetite whē she perceiued, she veriteously denied hym, but that she did so wisely and that with so good maner and woordes so well set, that she rather kindeled his desire then quēched it. And finally, after many a metyng and muche wooeyng and many greate promises she well espied the kyng his affeccion towarde her so greatly encreased that she durste somewhat the more boldly saie her mynde, as to hym whose hert she perceiued more feruently set then to fall of for a woode. And in conclusiō she shewed hym plain that as she wist her self to simple to bee his wife, so thought she her self to good to be his concubine. The kyng muche marueilyng of her constancy, as he y had not been wonte els where so stiefly saied nay, so muche esteemed her continency and chastitee, that he sette her vertue in stead of possession and riches. And this takyng counsaill of his owne desire determined in hast to mary her. And after that he was thus appointed & had betwene them twa in ensured her, then asked he the counsaill of his secretc frendes, & that in suche maner that thei might easily perceiue that it voted not to saie nay. Notwithstandyng, the duchess of York his mother was so sore moued therewith

with that she diswaded that mariage as muche as
 she possible might. Alledgeng þ̃ it was his honor,
 profite and surety to mary in some noble progeny
 out of the realme, where vpon depended greate
 strength to his estate by that affinite & great possi-
 bilite of encrease of his Dominions. And þ̃ he could
 not well otherwise dooe, cōsidryng therle of War-
 wike had so farfurthe entered into the matter all
 ready, whiche was not like to take it well if all his
 boyage were in suche wise frustrate and his ap-
 pointmente deluded. And she saied ferther that it
 was not princely to mary his owne subiecte, no
 greater occasion ledyng there vnto, no possessions
 ner other comodite dependyng therupon, but one-
 ly as a riche manne would mary his maiden only
 for a litle wanton dotage vpon her person. In whi-
 che mariage many menne commend moze the mai-
 dens fortune then the mannes wisdomme, and yet
 she saied that there was moze honesty thē honoure
 in this mariage forasmuch as ther is not betwene
 a marchaunt and his maide so greate a difference
 as betwene a kyng and his subiect, a greate prince
 and a pooze widowe. In whose persone, although
 there were nothyng to bee misliked, yet was there
 saied she, nothyng so excellēt but that it might bee
 found in diuerse other that wer moze metely (¶ she)
 for your estate, yea and maidens also, the onely
 widowhed of dame Elizabeth Grey (although she
 wer in all other pointes and thynges conuenient
 for you) should suffice as me thynketh too restrain
 you fro her mariage, sith it is an vnsettyng thyng
 and a greate blemishe too the sacred maiestie of a
 prince that ought as nere too appoche priesthode.

in clennesse, as he dooth in dignitee, to bee defiled
with bigamy in his first mariage. The king made
his mother an answer part in earnest and part in
plate merely, as he that wiste hym self out of rule,
and albeit he would gladly that she should take it
wel, yet was he at apoint in his owne minde, toke
if he it wel or otherwise. Howbeit, so in what to satis-
fy her he saied, that albeit mariage beeing a spiri-
tuall thyng ought rather to be made for the respec-
te of God where the parties ought to encline too
loue together (as he trusted it was in his case) ra-
ther then for the regard of any temporall aduun-
tage, yet neuertheles hym seemed this mariage wel
considered not to bee vnprofitable, for he reconed
the amitee of no earthely nacion to bee so necessary
for hym as the frendeship of his owne, whiche he
thoughte likely to beare hym so muche the more
hertt fauour in that he disdained not to mari with
one of his owne lande, and yet if outwarde aliaunce
wer thought so requisite, he would finde the mea-
nes to entre therunto muche better by other of his
kin where all the parties could bee contented, then
to mary hym self wherein he should neuer happely
loue, and for the possibilitee of possessions leide the
fruite and pleasure of this that he had alreadye.
For small pleasure taketh a manne of all that e-
uer he hath belyde, if he bee wiued against his ap-
petite, and I doubt not (for he,) but there bee as
you saie other that bee in euery poynte compara-
ble with her, therefore I lette not them that like
them too mary them, no more is it reason that it
mislike any manne that I marie where it liketh
me. And I am sure that my cousyn of Warwike,
neither

neither loueth me so litle, to grudge at that that I
 loue, ner is so vnreasonable to loke that I should
 in choyse of a wife rather bee ruled by his pie then
 by myne owne, as though I wer a warde that wer
 bounden to mary by a garden. I would not bee a
 kyng with that condicion to forbeare myne owne
 libertie in choyse of myne owne mariage. As for
 possibilitie of more inheritaunce by newe affinitee
 in straunge landes, is oft þ occasion of more trou-
 ble then profite. And we haue alreedy title by that
 meanes, as suffiseth to gette and kepe well in one
 mannes daie. That she is a widdowe and hath al-
 reedy children: By god his blessed lady, I am a ba-
 cheler and haue some too, and so eche of vs hath a
 prooffe that neither of vs is like to be barren. And
 therefore madame I praie you be content, I trust
 to God she shall byng furthe a young prince that
 shall please you. And as for the bigamy, lette the
 bishop hardely laie it to my charge when I come
 to take ordres, for I vnderstande it is forbidden a
 prieste but I neuer wiste that it was forbidden a
 prince. The duchesse with these woordes nothyng
 apealed & seyng the kyng so sette on that she could
 not plucke hym backe, so highly she disdained it,
 that vnder preterte of her duety to Godwarde she
 deuised to disturbe this mariage, & rather to helpe
 that he should mary one dame Elizabeth Lucy,
 whom the kyng not long before had gotten with
 childe, wherefore the kyng his mother objected o-
 penly against this mariage (as it wer in discharge
 of her conscience) that the kyng was sure too dame
 Elizabeth Lucy and her housband before God, by
 reason of whiche woordes suche obstacle was made

Kyng Edward

in that matter, that either the bishop durste not or
the kyng would not proceade to the solemnisation
of the mariage, till his fame were clerely purged,
and the truth well and openly testified, where vpon
dame Elizabeth Lucy was sente for, and albeit she
was by the kyng his mother and many other put
in good comfote to affirme that she was assurede
to the kyng, yet when she was solemply sworne to
saie the truth, she confessed she was neuer ensured.
Howbeit she saied his grace spake suche louyng
wordes to her, that she verely hoped that he would
haue married her, and that if suche kynde woozdes
had not been, she would neuer haue shewed suche
kyndenesse to hym, to lette her so kindly gette her
with childe. This examinacion solemply taken, it
was clerely proued that there was no impediment
to let the kyng to mary, wherefore he shortly after
at Grafton beside Stonystratforde married the la-
die Elizabeth Grey verie priuely, whiche was his
enemies wife and had praied hertely for his losse,
in the whiche God loued her better then to graunte
her bones then had she not been his wife. And
after that she was crowned queene, and her father
was created erle Rivers & her sonne created Mar-
ques Dorset. But when the erle of Warwike vn-
derstode of this mariage, he toke it so highly, that
therof ensued muche trouble & great bludshed as
is declared befoze in the story of Edward the.iii.
20 I haue reherled this mariage somewhat the
more at length, because it might thereby the better
apere vpon how slight a grounder protectour builded
his colour, by whiche he pretended kyng Edward
his children to be bastardeg, but the inuencion as

simple

simple as it was liked them too whom it suffiseth too haue somewhat to saie, while thei were sure to be compelled to no larger p[ro]sse then them selues liste to make.

Now to retorne where I left, as I beganne to shewe you, it was by the protectour and his counsaill concluded that this docto[?] Shaa should in a sermon at Paules crosse signifie to the people that neither kyng Edward hym self nor þ[is] duke of Clarence wer lausfully begotten, nor wer the very children of the duke of Yorke, but begotten vnlausfully by other persones by aduouty of the duchess their mother. And dame Elizabeth Lucy was the very wife of kyng Edward, and so prince Edward and all the children begotten on the quene wer bastardes. And accordyng to this deuise, docto[?] Shaa the sor. daie after at Paules crosse in a greate audience (as alwaie a great numb[er] assembled to his preachyng) came into the pulpit takyng fo[?] his Theme. *Spuria vitulamina nō dunt radices altos. Sapientie quarto*, that is to saie: Bastarde slippes shall neuer take deperootes, wherupon when he had shewed the greate grace that God geueth and secretly infoundeth in righte generacion after the lawes of matrimony: Then declared he that those children comenly lacked that grace (and fo[?] the punishement of their parentes) were fo[?] the moste parte vnhappy whiche wer gotten in baste, and specially in aduouty, of whiche (though some by the ignorauncie of the worldc and the truthe hid from knowledge) haue enherited fo[?] a scason other mennes landes, yet God alwaie so p[ro]uideth that it continueth not in their bloude long, but the truthe commyng too

light rightfull enheritoures bee restored, and the
 bastard slippes plucked vp or it can bee rooted de-
 pe. And when he had laied to the profe and cōfir-
 macion of this sentence, examplis taken out of the
 old testament and other auncient histories, the be-
 gan he too discende to the praise of lordc Richarde
 duke of York, calling hym father of the protectoꝝ
 and declared his title to the crowne by inheritaunce
 and also by entaile autorised by parliament after
 the death of kyng Henry the sixte. Then shewed he
 that the lordc protectoꝝ was only the right heire of
 his body lawfully begotten, then declared he that
 kyng Edward was neuer lawfully married to the
 quene, but his wife befoze God was dame Elisa-
 beth Lucy, and so his children wer bastardes. And
 besides that, that neither kyng Edward hym self
 noꝝ the duke of Clarence (emongest them that wer
 secrete in the duke of Yorkes housholde) were ne-
 uer reconed surely to bee the children of the noble
 duke, as those that by their fauoures moze resem-
 bled other known menne then hym, from whose
 vertuous condicions he saied also that kyng Ed-
 ward was farre of. But the lordc protectoꝝ (q he)
 that veraye noble prince, the speciall patrone of
 knightly prowes, aswell in all princely behaueour
 as in the liniamentes and fauour of his visage re-
 presenteth the very face of the noble duke his fa-
 ther. This is (q he) the fathers owne figure, this
 is his owne countenaunce, the verie printe of his
 visage, the sure vndoubted ymage, the playne ex-
 presse likenesse of that noble duke. Now was it be-
 fore deuised that in the speakyng of these wordes,
 the protectoꝝ should haue come in emongest þe peo-
 ple

ple to the sermond warde, to thend that these woꝝdes so metyng with his pꝛesence, might haue been taken emongest the herers, as though the holy ghoſte had put theim in the pꝛeachers mouth, and ſhould haue moued the people euen there to haue cried kyng Richard, that it might haue been after ſaied that he was ſpecially choſen by God, and in maner by miracle, but this deuise quayled either by the pꝛotectoures negligence oꝝ the pꝛeachers ouer haſty diligence. Foꝝ while the pꝛotectoure founde by the waie taryng leaſte he ſhould haue pꝛeuented theſe woꝝdes, the doctoure fearyng that he ſhould come oꝝ his ſermon could come to thoſe woꝝdes haſtyng his matter thereto, he was come to theim and paſte theim, & entred into other mat- ters oꝝ the pꝛotectour came, whom when he beheld commyng, he ſodainly leſte the matter whiche he had in hand, and without any deduccion therunto out of all oꝝdꝛe and out of al frame begā to repete thoſe woꝝdes again. This is the very noble pꝛince the eſpeciall patrone of knightely powers, whiche aſwell in all pꝛyncely behaueoure as in the linia- mentes and fauour of his viſage repreſenteth the beraye face of the noble duke of York his father. This is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenaunce, & very pꝛinte of his viſage, the ſure vndoubted ymage, the plain expreſſe likenelle of that noble duke, whoſe remembraunce can neuer dye while he liueth. While theſe woꝝdes were in ſpeakyng, the pꝛotectour accompaigned with the duke of Buckyngham, wente throughe the people vp into the place wher the doctoꝝs ſtand and there heard thei out the ſermond: but the people wer ſo

far from cripynge kyng Richard that thei stode as thei had been turned into stones for woder of this shamefull sermōd, after whiche once ended the preacher gat hym home and neuer after durst lōke out and whē he asked any of his old frendes, what the people talked of hym, although that his owne conscience well shewed hym that thei talked no good, yet whē the other answered hym, that there was in euery mannes mouth of hym muche shame spoken it so strake hym too the herte that in fewe daies after he withered awaie.

Thē on the tuesdaye after next folowynge this sermōd, beyng the .xvii. daie of June there came too the Gylde hall of London the duke of Buckyngham and diuerse lordes and knightes mo then happely knew the message that thei brought. And at the east ende of the hal where the hoystynge be kepte, the duke and the maire and the other lordes sat downe, and the aldermen also, all the comyns of the citee beeyng assembled and standynge before them. After scilence commaunded vpon a greate pain in the protectoures name: The duke stode vp and as he was well learned and of nature meruelously well spoken, he saied too the people with a cleare and a lowde voice. Frendes, for the zeale and hertie fauoure that we beare you, we bee come too breke of a matter righte greate and weightie, and no lesse weightie then pleasynge to God and profitable to al the realme, nor to no parte of the realme more profitable thē to you the citezens of this noble citee. For why, the thyng that you haue long lacked and as we well knowe sore longed for, that you would haue geuen greate good for, that you would

The oracio
of the duke
of Buckin-
gham made
to the cite-
zens of Lon-
don.

would haue gone farre to fetch, that thyng be we
come hether to byng you, without your labour,
pain, coste, aduenture or ieopardy. What thyng is
that? Certes the surety of your owne bodies, the
quiet of your wiues and daughters and the saue-
garde of your goodes. Of all whiche thynges in
tymes passed you stode in doubt, for who was he
of you all that could recon hym selfe lord of his
owne good amongest so many gynnes and trap-
pes as wer set therefoze, among so muche pyllyng
and pollpyng, among so many taxes and talliages,
of the whiche there was neuer ende, and oftymes
no nede, and if any were, it grewe either of riote or
of vnrasonable waste then any necessary honou-
rable charge, so that there was daily plucked and
pilled from good and honeste menne greate sub-
staunce of goodes, to be lashed out among vnthrift-
tes, so far furthe that fiftenes suffised not nor any
vsuall termes of knowen taxes, but vnder an easy
name of beneuolence and good will, the commissi-
oners so muche of euery manne toke, as no manne
would with his good will haue geuen. As though
the name of beneuolence had signified, that euery
manne should paie, not what he of hym self of his
good will lust to graunt, but what the kyng of his
good will lust to take, who neuer asked litle, but e-
uery thyng was haüsed aboue the measure, amer-
ciamētes turned into fines, fines into ransomes
smalle trespasses into mesprisyon, mesprisyon into
treason, whereof I thynke that no manne looketh
that wee shall remembze of examples by name,
as though Burdet were forgotten that was for
a woorde spoken, in haste cruelly beheaded by the
misconstruyng

misconstruyng of the lawes of the realme for the
 princes pleasure, with no lesse honour to Merkam
 chief Justice then (whiche lost his office rather than
 he would assent to that iudgement) to the dishone-
 stie of those that either for feare or flattery gaue
 that iudgement: what nede I too speake of Tho-
 mas Cooke Alderman and maire of this noble ci-
 tee, who is of you either for negligence that wot-
 teth not, or so forgetful that he remembereth not, or
 so harde herted that he pitieth not that worshipful
 mannes losse: what speke I of losse, his wonderful
 spoyle and vndercrued distruction, onely because
 it happened them to fauoure hym whom the prince
 fauoured not. We nede not reherse of these any mo-
 by name, lithe I doubt not that here be many pre-
 sent that either in theim selues or their nighe fren-
 des, as well their goodes as persones were greatly
 endaungered ether by fained quarels or small mat-
 ters aggreued with heinous names, and also ther
 was no crime so great of whiche there could lacke
 a pterte. For lithe the kyng preuentynge the tyme
 of his enheritaunce attained the crowne by bat-
 tail, it suffised in a riche manne for a pterte of
 treason, too haue been of kynred or aliaunce, nor
 of familiarite or longer of acquaintaunce with any
 of those, that wer at any tyme the kynges enemies
 whiche was at one tyme or another moze then half
 the realme. Thus wer nether your goodes, neither
 landes in surety, & yet thei brought your bodies in
 ieoperdy, beside y comen aduenture of open warre,
 whiche albeit, that it is euer the well & occasion of
 muche mischief, yet is it neuer so micheuous as
 wher any people fall in deuision, & at all distaunce
 among

among them selues, and in no realme earthely so
dedly and so pestilent as when it happeneth emon-
gest vs. And among vs neuer continued so long
discenciō noz so many battailles in any season, noz
so cruell noz so dedly foughten, as wer in the kyng
his daies that dedde is, God forgeue it his solle.
In whose tyme and by whose occasiō, what about
the gettingyng of the garlaude, keepyng it, lesyng and
winnyng again, it hath coste moze Englishe blud
then hath the twise winnyng of fraunce. In whi-
che inwarde warre emongest our selues hath been
so greate effusion of the aunciente noble bloud of
this realme, that scarcely the half remaineth, to the
greate enfebling of this noble lande, beside many
a good towne ransaked and spoyled by them that
haue been goyng too the felde oꝝ returnyng from
thence, and peace after not muche surer thē warre.
So that no tyme was there in the whiche riche
menne foꝝ their money, and greate menne foꝝ their
landes, oꝝ some other, foꝝ some feare oꝝ foꝝ some di-
spleasure were out of perell. Foꝝ whom mistrusted
he that mistrusted his owne bꝛother? Whom spa-
red he that killed his owne bꝛother? Could not su-
che maner of folke that he moste fauoured dooe
somewhat (we shal foꝝ his honoure spare to speke)
howbeit, this ye wote well al, that whoso was best
bare euer the lest rule, and moze suite in his daies
was to Shores wife, a vile and abhominable strō-
pet then to all the lordes in Englande, excepte vn-
to those that made her their protectoure, whiche
simple woman was yet well named and honest till
the kyng foꝝ his luste and sinfull affeccion berefte
her from her housbande, a right honest manne and
substantiall

Kyng Edward

substantiall emongest you. And in that point whiche in good faith I am sorry too speake of, sayyng that it is vaine to kepe in counsaill that thyng that all menne knoweth, the kyng his greedy appetite was insaciabable, and euery where ouer all þe realme intollerable. For no woman was there any where, young or old, poore or riche, whom he sette his eye vpon, whom he any thyng liked either for persone or beautie, speche, pace or countenaunce, but without any feare of God, or respecte of his honour, murmur, or grudgyng of the worlde, he would importunately purllue his appetite and haue her, to the greate distruccion of many a good woman, and greate doloure to their housbandes and frendes, whiche beyng honest people of theim selues, so muche regarded the clennesse of their houses, the chastitee of their wiues and children, that theim were leuer to lose all that thei haue belide, then to haue suche a vilanie dooen to theim. And albeitt that with this and other importable dealing, the realme was in euery place anoyed, yet specially you the citezens of this noble citee, as for that emongest you is moste plentie of suche thynges as minister matter too suche iniuries, as for that you were nerest hande, lithe that nere here aboute was his moste common abidyng. And yet be ye people whom he had as singuler a cause well and truly to intrete, as any parte of his realme, not onely for that the prince by this noble citee, as of his speciall chambze and renoumed citee of this realme, muche honourable fame receiueth emongest all other nacions, but also for that, you now without your great cosse & sondze fauoures & reuerences

in all his warres bare euer your especiall fauoure
to his part, whiche your kind myndes borne to the
house of York, sith he hath nothyng worthely re-
quited you, there is of þe house now whiche by god
his grace shall make you full recompence, whiche
thyng to shewe you, is the whole some and effect of
our errande. It shall not, I wote well nede, that I
reherse vnto you again þe you all redy haue heard
of hym that can better tell it, & of whom I am sure
ye will better beleue it (& reason it is that it so bee)
I am not so proude too looke therfore, that you
should receiue my wordes of so greate autorite as
the preachers of the word of God, namely a man
so conning & so wise, that no manne wotteth better
what he should dooe and saie, & therto so good and
vertuous that he would not saie the thing, whiche
he wiste he should not saie in the pulpit, namely, in
to the whiche no honest manne cometh to lye: whi-
che honourable preacher ye wel remembre, substā-
cially declared too you at Paules crosse on Son-
daie laste paste, the right and title of the moste ex-
cellente prince Richard duke of Gloucestre now
protectour of this his realme whiche he hath vnto
the crowne of the kyngdome of the same. For that
worthypfulman made it perfectly and groundely
open vnto you. The children of kyng Edward the
fourth wer neuer laufully begotten, for as muche
as the kyng (liuyng his verie wife dame Eliza-
beth Lucy) was neuer laufully married to þe quene
their mother, whose bloud sayng he set his volu-
pteous pleasure before his honoure, was full vn-
metely to bee matched with his (the mynglyng of
whiche two bloudes together hath been þe effusion
of

of a greate part of the noble bloud of this realme
wherby it maie well bee seen, that mariage was
not well made, of whiche there is muche mischiefe
growen. For lacke of whiche lawefull copulacion
and also of other thynges whiche þe saied worshop-
full doctoꝝ, rather signified then vtterly explained,
and whiche thyng shall not bee spoken for me, as
the thyng that euery manne forbearerh to saie that
he knoweth, in aduocating the displeasure that my
noble lord protectoure bearyng as nature requi-
reth a filiall reuerence too the Duchesse his mother.
For these causes before remembred I saie that for
lacke of issue lawfully commyng of the late noble
prince Richard duke of Yorke, too whose royall
bloude the crownes of Englande and of Fraunce
are by the high autoritee of a parliament entailed
the right and title of the same is by iuste course of
enheritaunce accoꝝdyng too the comyn lawe of
this lande, deuoluted and come vnto the moste ex-
cellent prince the lord protectour, as to the vnto
lawfull begotten sonne of the fore remembred no-
ble duke of Yorke, whiche thyng well considꝝed and
the knightly prowesse with many vertues whiche
in his noble persone singularly dooe habounde.
The nobles and commons of this realme, and spe-
cially of þe North partes, not willyng any bastard
bloude to haue the rule of the lande, noꝝ the abusi-
ons in the same before vsed and exercised any lon-
ger too continue, haue fully condiscended and vt-
terly determined too make high peticion vnto the
puisaunt prince the lord protectour, þe it maie like
his grace at our humble request to take vpon hym
the guyding and gouernaunce of the realme, too
the

the wealthe and increase of the same accordyng to
 his very right and iuste title, whiche thyng I wot
 well he wil bee loth to take vpon hym as he whose
 wisedome well perceiueth, the labour and study
 bothe of mynde and body that shall come therewith
 to hym, whosoever shall occupie the come. I dare
 saie he will if he take it (for I warrande you that
 that come is no chylde's office) and that the greates
 wise manne wel perceiued when he saied *Verignocunus*
Rex puer est, woo to that realme whose kyng is a child
 wherefore, so muche more cause haue we to thanke
 God that this noble personage, whiche is so righ-
 teously entitled thereto is of so sad age, and therto
 of so greates wisedome ioynded with so greates expe-
 rience, whiche albeit, he wil bee lothe to take vpon
 hym, yet shall he too our petition in that behalfe
 the more graciously encline, if ye the worshopfull
 citezens of this citee beyng the chief citee of the re-
 alme ioyne with vs the nobles in our saied reque-
 ste, whiche for your owne weale we doubt not but
 that ye will. And yet neuerthelesse, we praeise you so
 to dooe, whereby ye shall dooe greates profit to all
 this his realme. Beside þ, in chosyng then so good
 a kyng, it shall bee to your self a speciall commo-
 dityte to whom his maiestie shall euer after, beare so
 muche the more tendre fauoure, in how muche he
 shall perceiue you the more prone and beneuolent-
 ly mynded towarde his election, wherein dere frē-
 des, what mynd you haue, we require you plainly
 to shewe vs. When the duke had saied and loked
 that the people whom he hoped that the Maire had
 framed before, should after this flaterpng prepo-
 sition made, haue cried kyng Richard, kyng Ri-

chard, all was still and mute & not one woorde answered to: wherwith the Duke was maruelously abashed and takyng the maire nere to hym with othec that wer about hym priuy to the matter, saied vnto theim softly. What meaneth this that the people be so still? Sir q̄ y^e Maire perceiue thei perceiue you not well, that shall we amende q̄ he if that will helpe, and therewith somewhat lowder reherled the same matter again, in other ordres and other woordes so well and ordinate, and neuerthelesse so euidently and plain, with voice gesture and countenaunce so comely and so conueniente, that euery mane muche maruelled that heard him and thought that thei neuer hearde in their liues so euil a tale so well told. But wer it for wonder or for other, or that eche looked y^e other should speake firste, not one woorde was there answered of al the people that stode befoze, but all were as still as the midnichte, not so muche as crounyng among them, by whiche thei might seme once to common what was beste too dooe. When the Maire sawe this, he with other partners of the counsaile, drew aboute the Duke and saied that the people had not been accustomed there to be spoken too but by the Recorder, whiche is the mouthe of the citee, and happely too hym thei will answere. With that the Recorder called Thomas Fize Wylliam a sadde manne and an honeste, whiche was but newlye come to the office and neuer had spokē to the people befoze, and lothe with that matter to begyne, notwithstanding, there vnto commaunded by the Maire, made rehersall too the commons of that whiche the Duke had twise purposed hym self but
the

the Recorder so tempered his tale, that he shewed
 euery thyng as the Duke his wooordes were, and
 no parte of his owne, but all this no chaunge made
 in the people, whiche alwaie after one stode as
 thei had been amased. Where vpon the Duke rou-
 ned with the Maire and saied, this is a maruei-
 leous obstinate scilence, and there with turned too
 the people again with these wooordes. Deare fren-
 des, wee come to moue you too that thyng whiche
 paradueriture wee so greatly neded not, but that
 the lordes of this realme and commons of other
 partes might haue sufficed, sauynge suche loue we
 beare you, and so muche set by you that we would
 not gladly doo without you, that thyng in whiche
 to bee parteners is your weale and honoure whi-
 che as to vs seemeth you se not or waite not: Where
 fore wee require you to geue vs an answer one or
 other, whether ye bee inpynded as all the nobles of
 the realme bee, to haue this noble prince now pro-
 tector to bee your kyng? And at these wooordes the
 people began to whisper among them selves secre-
 tely, that the voyce was nether loude nor base, but
 like a swarme of bees, till at the laste at the nether
 ende of the hall a busshement of the Dukes seruau-
 tes and one Rasyfelde and other belongyng too
 the protector with some prentices and laddes that
 thrust into the hall amongest the pceace, began
 sodainly at mennes backs to crye, kyng Richard,
 kyng Richard, and there threwe vp their cappes
 in token of ioye, and thei that stode before shooke
 their heddes marueilyng therat, but nothyng thei
 saied. And when the Duke and the Maire saw this
 maner thei wisely turned it too their purpose, and

saied it was a goodly crie and a ioyfull to here e-
uery manne with one voyce and no manne sayng
nay. Wherefore frendes (of the duke,) lithe we per-
ceiue that it is all your whole mindes to haue this
noble manne for your kyng, wherof we shal make
his grace effectuell reporte that we doubt not but
that it shal redounde to your greate wealthe and
commodite. We therefore require you that to mo-
rowe ye go with vs and wee with you to his noble
grace to make humble petition and request to him
in maner before remembred. And therewith the lor-
des came downe and the cōpaignie dissolued and
departed the more parte all iad, some with glad se-
bleaunce that were not very merie, & some of them
that came with the duke, not hable too dissemble
their sorowe, were faine euen at his backe to turne
their face to the wall, while þe doloure of their hert-
es braste out of their pyes.

Then on the morowe the maire and aldermen
and chief commoners of the citee in their best ma-
ner appareled, assembling them together at Pau-
les, resorted to Baynardes castle where the prote-
ctoure laie, to whiche place also accordyng too the
appointment repaired the duke of Buckyngham
& diuerse nobles with hym, besides many knigh-
tes and gentlemen. And there vpon the duke sente
worde to the lorde protectoure of the beyng there
of a greate honourable cōpaignie to moue a great
matter to his grace. Where vpon the protectoure
made greate difficulte to come downe to them, ex-
cepte he knewe some part of their errād as though
he doubted and partely mistrusted the comynng
of suche a numbre to hym so sodainly, without any
warnyng

warnyng of knowledge, whether thei came for
good or harme. Then when the duke had shewed
this too the mair and other, that thei might there
by se how litle the protectour looked for this matter,
thei sente again by þ messenger suche louyng mes-
sage, and there with so humbly besought hym too
vouchsafe that thei might resorte to his presence
too purpose their entent of whiche thei would too
none other persone disclose, at the last he came out
of his chambze, and yet not doune to theim, but in
a galaty ouer theim with a bishop on euery hande
of hym, where thei beneth might se hym and speke
to hym, as though he would not yet come nere the
till he wiste what thei meante. And there vpon the
duke of Buckyngham firste made humble peticio
too hym on the behalfe of theim all, that his grace
would pardone theim and licence them to purpose
vnto his grace the entent of their counnyng with-
out his displeasure, without whiche perdon obte-
ned, thei durst not bee so bold to moue hym of that
matter. In whiche, albcit thei meant as muche ho-
noure to his grace as wealth to all the realme be-
side, yet were thei not sure how his grace would
take it, whom thei would in no wise offende. Then
the protectoure, as he was verie gentle of hymself
and also longed soze apparantly too knowe what
thei meant, gaue hym leaue to purpose what hym
liked trustyng for the good minde that he bare the
all, none of theim any thyng would entede to hym
warde wherewith he thought to bee greued. Whe
the duke had this leaue and pardone to speake the
wered he bolde to shewe hym their entent and pur-
pose, with all the causes mouyng them thereto as

Kyng Edward

ye before haue hearde. And finally too beseeche his grace that it would like hym of his accustomed goodnesse and zeale vnto the realme now with his yie of pitie to beholde the long continued Distresse and Decaie of the same, & to set his gracious hande to þ redresse & amendement thereof by taking vpo hym the crowne & gouernaunce of the realme accordyng to his right and title laufully disceded vnto him, & to the laude of god, profite and surety of the lande and vnto his grace so muche the moze honoꝝ and lesse pain, in that that neuer prince reigned vpon any people that wer so glad to liue vnder his obeisaunce as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the protector had heard the propoſicion, he loked very strangely therat and made anſwere, that albeſt he knewe partely the thynges by them alledged to bee true, yet ſuche entiere loue he bare to kyng Edward and his children, and ſo muche moze regarded his honour in all realmes aboute, the the crowne of any one, of whiche he was neuer deſirous, ſo that he could not finde in his herte in this point to incline to their deſire, for in al other nacions wer the truthe not well knowne, it ſhould peraduenture bee thought that it were his owne ambitious mynde and deuise to depoſe the prince and to take hym ſelf the crowne, with whiche infamy he would in no wiſe haue his honour ſteined for any crowne, in whiche he had euer perchaunce percieued muche moze labour & pain the pleaſure to hym that ſo would vſe it as he þ would not and were not worthy to haue it. Notwithſtandynge, he not only perdoned them of the mocion þ they made hym, but alſo thanked them for the loue and hertly fauoure

fauoure thei bare hym, praiſing theim for his ſake
to beare the ſame to the prince vnder who he was
and would be content to liue and with his labour
and counſaill as far as it ſhould like the kyng too
uſe it, he would doo his vttermoſt deuour to ſette
the realme in good eſtate whiche was all redye in
the tyme of his protectourſhip (lauded bee God,)
well begon, in that the malice of ſuche as were be-
fore the occaſion of the contrarie and of newe en-
tended to bee, wer now partly by good policy, par-
tely more by God his ſpeciall prouidence, then
mannes prouiſion reſſeſſed and put vnder.

Upon this anſwer geuen, the Duke of Buckyn-
gham by the protectoz his licence a litle rounded, as
well with other noble men about hym as with the
maire and recorder of London. And after that (v-
pon like perſon deſired and opteined) he ſhewed a-
loude vnto the protectoz, for a final concluſion that
the realme was apointed that kyng Edward his
line ſhould no longer reigne vpon them, bothe that
thei had ſo far gone that it was now no ſuretee too
retreate (as for that thei thought it for þe weale v-
niuerſall to take that waie, although thei had not
yet begon it.) Wherefore if it would like his grace
to take the crowne vpon hym, thei would humbly
beſeeche hym therunto, & if he would geue them a
reſolute anſwer to the contrari (whiche thei would
bee lothe to here) then muſte thei ſeke & ſhould not
fail to finde ſome other noble manne that would.
Theſe wordes muche moued the protectoz, whiche
as euery man of ſmall intelligēce maye wit would
neuer haue enclined thereto, but when he ſawe
there was none other waye but that he muſte take

it, or els he and his bothe to go from it, he saied to
the lordes and commons, lithe it is wee perceiue
well that all the realme is so sette (whereof we bee
very sorre) that thei wil not suffre in any wise kyng
Edward his line to gouerne them, whom no man
earthely can gouerne against their willes: And we
also perceiue that no manne is there to whom the
croune can by so iuste title appertain as to our self
as very right heire laufully begotten of the body
of our moſte dread and dere father Richard late
duke of York, to whiche title is now ioyned your
election, the nobles and commons of the realme,
whiche we of all titles possible take moſte effectua-
all, wee bee contente and agree fauourably to en-
clynne to your petition and request, and accordyng
to the ſame, here we take vpon vs the royall eſtate
of prehemynence and kyngdome of the two noble
realmes, Englande and fraunce, the one fro this
daie forward by vs & our heires to rule, gouerne
and defende, the other by God his grace and your
good helpe to get again, ſubdue and eſtabliſhe for
euer in dewe obedience vnto this realme of En-
glande, the aduauncement whereof we neuer aſke
of God longer to liue then we entende to procure
and ſette furthe. With this there was a greate cry
and ſhoute, cryng kyng Richard, and ſo the lordes
went vp to the kyng, and ſo he was after that
daie called. But the people departed talkyng dy-
uerſly of the matter, every manne as his fantaſye
gaue hym, but muche thei maruelled of this ma-
ner of dealyng, that the matter was on bothe par-
tes made ſo ſtraunge as though neuer þ one parte
communied with the other parte thereof before,

when

when thei wiste that there was no manne so dull
 that hearde them, but he perceiued well ynoughe
 that all the matter was made betwene them. How-
 beit, some excused þ again, sayng: all thyng muste
 bee dooen in good orde, and menne muste some-
 tyme for þ maner sake not bee aknowen what thei
 knowe. For at the consecracion of a bishop, every
 manne perceiueth by paymente of his bulles that
 he entendeth to bee one, yet when he is twise asked
 whether he wil bee a bishop, he muste saie naie, and
 at the thirde tyme take it vpon hym as compelled
 thereto by his owne will. And in a stage plaie, the
 people knowe right well that he that plaieth the
 lowdain, is percase a souter, yet if one of acquai-
 intaunce perchaunce of litle nurture should call
 hym by his name while he standeth in his maiestie
 one of his tourmentours might fortune breke his
 hed for marryng the plaie. And so thei saied, these
 matters bee kynges games, as it were staige pla-
 zes, and for the mooste part played vpon scaffoldes,
 in whiche poore menne bee but lookers on,
 and thei that wise bee will medle no fer-
 ther, for thei that steppe by with
 them when thei cannot plaie
 their partes thei disor-
 der the plaie and do
 theim selues no
 good.

Et. b.

Kyng Richard

the thirde.



ICH ARDE
the thirde of
pname vsur-
ped p crowne
of England,
& opely toke
vpon hym to
bee kyng the
nyntene daie
of June, in
p yere of our
lord, a thou-
sande four-
hundred and
lxxxiii. and

in the .xxv. yere of Lewes the leuenth then beeyng
Frenche kyng, and with greate solempnite rode to
Westminster, and there sate in the seate roiall, and
called before hym p iudges of the realme, straigh-
tly commaundyng theim to execute the lawe with-
out fauoure or delaie, with many good exhortaci-
ons (of the whiche he folowed not one) and then he
departed towarde the Abbaye, and at the churche
dooze he was mette with procession, and by the ab-
bot to hym was deliuered the scepter of saint Ed-
warde, and so went and offered to saint Edward
his shryne, while the Monkes sang *Te deum* with a
faint courage, and from the churche he returned
to the palaice, where he lodged till the coronacion.

And

And to be sure of all enemies (as he thought) he set for five thousand men of the North against his coronacion, whiche came by euil appareled & worse harnessed, in rusty harneis, neither defensible nor scoured to the sale, whiche mustered in Finesbury felde, to the greete disoain of all the lookers on.

The fourth daie of July he came to the tower by water with his wife, and the fifth daie he created Thomas lord Hawarde duke of Norffolke, and sir Thomas Hawarde his sonne he created erle of Surrey, and William lord Barkeley was then created erle of Notyngham, and Fraunces lord Louell was then made Vicount Louell and the kyng his chamberlain, and the lord Stanley was deliuered out of warde for feare of his sonne the lord Straunge, whiche was then in Lancashire gathering menne (as menne saied) and the saied lord was made Stuarde of the kyng his housholde, likewise the archbishop of Yorke was deliuered: but Morton bishop of Ely was deliuered to the duke of Buckyngham to kepe in warde whiche sent hym to his manoure of Brecknoke in Wales, from whence he escaped to kyng Richard his confusion. The same night the kyng made leuentene knightes of the Bathe. The nexte daie he roade through London with greete pompe, and in especiall the duke of Buckyngham was richely appareled, and his horse trapped in blew beluet embzoured with the naues of cartes burnyng of golde, whiche trapper was borne by foremen from the grounde, with suche solemne fassion that all menne muche regarded it.

On the morowe beeyng the sixte daie of July the

Kyng Richard.

the kyng came toward his coronacion into Westminster hall where his chapell and all the prelates mitred receiued him. And so thei in orde of procession passed forwarde. After the procession folowed therle of Northūberlande with a poinctlesse sword naked, and the lord Stanley bare the Mace of the constablenesshippe. Therle of Kent bare the seconde swerd on the right hande of the kyng naked. The lord Louell bare an other swerde on the lefte hande. Then folowed the duke of Suffolke with the scepter, and the erle of Lyncolne with the ball and crosse. After theim folowed the newe erle of Surrey with the swerde of estate in a riche skabbard. On the right side of hym wente the Duke of Norfolk bearyng the croune, then folowed kyng Richard in a Circot and robe of purple beluet vnder a canabie bozne by the barones of the fiue portes gooyng betwene the bishoppes of Bathe and Duresme. The duke of Buckynghā with the rod of high stuard of England bare y kyng his train. After hym folowed therle of Hūntynghdon, bearyng the quenes scepter, and the Vicount lisle, bearyng the rod with y done, And the erle of Wilshire bare the quenes croune. Then folowed quene Anne daughter to Richarde erle of Warwike in robes like too the kyng, betwene twoo bishoppes, and a canabie ouer her hed, bozne by the Barones of the portes. On her hed a riche coronall sette with stones and pearle. After her folowed the countesse of Richemonde heire to the duke of Somerset, whiche bare by the quenes trayne. After folowed the duchesse of Suffolke and Norfolk with countesses, baronesses, ladies, and many faire gentlewo-
men

men in this orde thei passed throughe the palatce and entered the Abbay at the Weste ende, and so came too their seates of estate. And after diuerse songes solemply songe thei bothe disceded to the high altare and were shifted from their robes, and had diuerse places open from the iniddle bpward, in whiche places thei were anointed. Then bothe the kyng and the quene chaiged theim into clothe of golde and ascended to their scates, where þ car-
dinall of Cauntobury and other bishoppes theim crowned accordynge to the custome of the realme, geuyng hym the scepter in the lefte hande and the ballie with the crosse in the right hande, & the quene had the scepter in her right hand, and the rod with the doue in the lefte hande. On euery side of the kyng stooode a duke, and befoze hym stooode the erle of Surrey with the sweard in his handes. And on euery side of the quene standyng a bishoppe and a lady knelyng. The Cardinall song masse, and after pare, the kyng and the quene disceded, and befoze the high altare thei were bothe houseled with one hoste deuided betwene theim. After masse finished, thei bothe offred at saint Edward his shrine and there the kyng leste the croune of sainte Edward, and putte on his owne croune. And so in orde as thei came, thei departed to westminster hall, and so to their chambres for a ceason, durynge whiche tyme the Duke of Norffolke came into the hall his horse trapped to the grounde in clothe of gold as high marshall, and boyded the hall.

About foure of the clocke the kyng and quene entred the hall, and the kyng satte in the iniddle, and the quene on the lefte hande of the table, and

Kyng Richard

on euery side of her stode a countesse holdyng a
clothe of pleasaunce, when she liste to dꝛynke. And
on the right hande of the kyng satte the bishop of
Cauntowbury, the ladies satte all on onc side in the
middle of the hall. And at the table against them
satte the Chauncelloure and all the lordes. At the
table next the cupborde satte the Maire of Londo.
And at the table behinde the lordes, satte the Ba-
rones of the portes. And at the other bordes satte
noble and worshipfull personages. When all per-
sones were sette, the Duke of Norfolkke erle Mar-
shall, the erle of Surrey constable for that daie, the
lord Stanley lord Steward, sir William Hop-
ton treasurer, and sir Thomas Percy comptrol-
ler came in and serued the king solemnly with one
dishe of gold and another of siluer. And the quene
all in gylte vessell, and the bishop all in siluer. At
the seconde course came into the hall, sir Roberte
Democke the kyng his champion, makynge a pro-
clamacion, that whosoever would saie that kyng
Richard was not lawfully kyng, he would fighte
with hym at the vtteraunce, and threwe downe his
gauntlet, and then all the hall cried kyng Richard.
And so he did in thre parties of the hall, and then
one brought hym a cup of wine couered, and when
he had dꝛouke he caste out the dꝛynke, and depar-
ted with the cuppe. After that the herauldes cried
alarge theise in the hall, and so went vp to their
staige. At the ende of diner, the Maire of London
serued the kyng and quene with swete wyne, and
had of ech of them a cuppe of golde with a couer
of golde. And by that tyme that all was dooen, it
was darkenight. And so the kyng returned to his
chambre

chambr, and euery manne to his lodgyng. When this feaste was thus finished, the kyng sent home all the lordes into their countrees that would departe, except the lord Stanley, whom he retained till he hearde what his sonne the lord Straunge went aboute. And to suche as went home, he gaue straight charge and commaundement to see their countrees well ordeed, and that no wrong nor extorcion should bee dooen to his subiectes. And thus he taught other to execute iustice and equitie, the contrary whereof he daily exercised, he also with greate rewardes geuen to the Northemen which he sente for to his coronacion, sent them home too their countree with greate thankes. Whereof diuerse of them, (as thei all be of nature very greedy of auctoritee, and specially when thei thynke too haue any comforte or fauoure,) tooke on them so highly and wrought suche maistreis, that the kyng was fain to ride thether in his firste yere, and too putte some in execucion, and staie the countree, or els no small mischief had ensued.

Now after this triumphante coronacion, there fell mischises thicke and thicke, as the thyng euil gotten is neuer well keppe, so through all the tyme of his vsurped reigne, neuer ceased there quell, murder, death and slaughter til his owne destruction ended it. But as he finished with the best death and mooste righte wise, that is to saie his owne, so beganne he with the mooste piteous and wicked, I meane the lamentable murther of his innocent nephewes, the young kyng and his tendre brother whose death and fortune hath neuerthelesse so far come in questio that some remained long in doubt whether

Kyng Richard.

whether thei wer in his daies destroyed or not. For that Barke warbek by many folkes malice, and mo folkes folly so long space abusyng the worlde, was aswell with princes as with pooze people reputed and taken for the younger of these two. But for that also that all thynges were so couertly demeaned, one thyng pretended and another mente, that there was nothyng so plain and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and couerte dealyng, menne had it euer inwardly suspecte, as many well counterfet iewelless make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concernyng that opinion menne maie se the conueighaunce thereof in the life of the noble prince kyng Henry the. vii. in the processe of Barkyn. But in the meane ceasse, for this presente matter I shall reherse to you the dolorous ende of these twoo babes, not after euey waie that I haue heard, but after that waie that I haue so hearde by suche menne and suche meanes as me thinketh it to be hard but it should be true.

The de-
struction of
Kyng Ed-
wards chil-
dren.

Kyng Richard after his coronacion, takyng his waie to Gloucester, to visite in his newe honoure the towne, of whiche he bare the name of old, deuised as he roade to fulfill that thyng whiche he before had intended. And forasmuche as his mynde gaue hym that his nephewes liuyng, menne would not recon that he could haue righte to the realme, he thought therefore without delaie to rid them, as though the killyng of his kynsmen might ende his cause, and make hym kindly kyng. Where vpon he sent Ihon Grene, whom he specially trusted, sir Roberte Brakenbury constable of the tower, with a letter and credence also, that the same sir Roberte

Robert in any wyse should put the two children to death. This John Grene dyd his errand to sir Robert Brakenbury knelyng before oure lady in the Towre, who plainly answered that he woulde neuer put them to death to dye therfore. With the whiche answere Grene returned, recomptyng the same to kynge Rycharde at Warwyke yet on his journey, wherewith he toke suche displeasure and thought, that y^e same night he sayd to a secret page of his: Ah, whō shal a man trust: they that I haue brought bp my selfe, they that I went would haue most surely serued me, euen those fayle me, and at my cōmaundement wyl do nothing for me. Sy^{ng} the page, there lieth one in the palet chambze without, that I dare wel say, to do your grace pleasure the thyng were right harde that he woulde refuse, meanyng this by James Trel, whiche was a mā of goodly personage, and for the giftes of nature worthy to haue serued a muche better pynce, if he had well serued God, & by grace obteyned to haue as muche trueth and good wyl, as he had strength and wyl.

The man had an high heart and sore longed bpwarde, not risyng yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered and kept vnder by sy^{ng} Richard Ratcliffe and sir Willjam Catesbye, whiche longyng for no more parteners of the Princes fauoure, namely not for him, whose pride they knewe woulde beare no pere, kept him by secreete driftes out of al secrete trust, whiche thing this page had wel marked and knowen, wherfore, this occasyon offered, of very special frendshyp spied his tyme to set him forward, & by suche wyse to do him good, that al

Kyng Richarde

the enemies that he had (except the deuil) could neuer haue done him so muche hurte and shame, for vpon the pages wordes kyng Richarde arose (for this communication had he littyng on a drafte) a conuenient carpet for suche a counsaile) and came out into the palet chambze, where he dyd fynde in bed the sayd James Tyrell and sir Thomas Tyrel of person like a brethren of blood, but nothyng of kynne in condicions. Then sayd the kyng mercly to them, what syys, be you in bed? so sone and called vp James Tyrel, and brake to him secretly his mynd in this mischeuous matter, in the which he found him nothyng straunge. Wherefore on the morowe he sent him to Brakynburpe with a letter by the whiche he was commaunded to deliuer to the sayde James all the keyes of the Towre for a night, to thende that he might there accomplyshe the kynges pleasure in suche thynges as he there had geuen him in commaundement. After whiche lettze deliuered and the keyes receyued, James appointed the next night ensuyng to destroye them, deuising befoze and preparyng the meanes.

The prince assone as the Protectour toke vpon him to be kyng, and left the name of protectour, was therof aduertised and shewed, that he should not reigne but his vnclē should haue the crowne. At whiche worde the prince sore abashed beganne to sighe and sayd: Alas I would myne vnclē wold let me haue my life although I lese my kyngdome. The he that tolde him the tale vsed him with good wordes and put him in þe best cōfort that he could, but furthwith he and his brother were bothe shut vp, and all other remoued from them, one called
blacke

blacke Wyl, and Willpam Slaughter onely except, whiche wer sette to serue them, and.iiii. other to sec them sure. After whiche tyme, the prince neuer tyed his pointes, noꝝ any thyng rought of him selfe, but with that yong babe his brother lynge-
red in thought and heuinesse, tyll this trayterous death deliuered them of that wretchednes.

Foꝝ James Tirrel deuised that they should be murthered in their beddes, and no blood shed, to the execution wherof he appointed Wyles Foꝛest one of the foure that befoꝛe kept them, a felowe fleshe bꝛed in murther befoꝛe tyme: and to him he ioyned one John Dighton his owne hoꝛsekeper, a bygge broade square and stꝛōg knaue. Then al the other beyng reynoucd from them, this Wyles Foꝛest and John Dighton aboute mydnight the children being in their beddes, came into the chaumbre and sodenly lapped them vp amongest the clothes and so bewrapped them and entangled them, keepyng doune by force the fetherbed and pylloves headd vnto their mouthes, that within a while they smothered and styfled them, and their breathes faylyng they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the ioyes of heauen, leauyng to the tourmentours their bodies deade in the bed, whiche after the wretches perceyued, first by the strugglyng, with the pangges of death, & after long lyng styf to be thꝛoughly deade, they layde the bodies out vpon the bed, and fetched James Tirrell to see them, whiche when he sawe them perfightly deade, he caused the murtherers to burye them at the stayre foote metely deepe in the grounde vnder a great heape of stones.

Bynged:
wardes
children.
murthred

Kyng Richard

Then rode James Tirrel in great hast to kyng Richard and shewe d him al the maner of the mur- ther, who gaue him great thankes, and as menne saye, there made him knight, but he allowed not their burial in so vile a corner, saipng that he wold haue them buryed in a better place, becaule they were a kynges sones: Lo the honourable courage of a kyng, so; he would recompence a detestable murder with a solempne obsequy. Wherupon a priest of sir Robert Brakenburies toke them vp and buried them in suche a place secretly as by the occasyon of his death (whiche was very shortly af- ter) whiche onely knewe it, the very trueth coulde neuer yet be very wel and perfightly knowen. For some say that kyng Rycharde caused the priest to take them vp and close them in lead and put them in a coffyne full of holes hoked at the endes with ii. hokes of yron, and so to cast them into a place called the Blacke depes at the Thames mouth, so that they should neuer rise vp no; be sene agayne. This was the very trueth vnknown by reason that the sayd priest died so shortly and disclosed it neuer to any person that would vtter it. And for a trueth, when sir James Tirrel was in the Towre for treason committed to kyng Henry the seuenth: bothe he and Dighton were examined together of this point, and bothe they confessed the murder to be done in the same maner as you haue hearde, whether the bodie was remoued they bothe affir- med they neuer knewe. And thus as I haue lear- ned of them that muche knewe and litle cause had to lye, were these two noble princes, these innocent tendre childzen, bozne of the most noble blood and brought

brought bp in great wealth, likely long to liue, to
 reigne and rule in the realme, by trayterous tira-
 ny taken & depriued of their estate, shortly shut vp
 in prison and priuely slaine and murthred by the
 cruell ambition of their vnnaturall vncle and dis-
 pitcous tourmentours: whiche thynges on euery
 part wel pondered, God gaue this worlde neuer a
 moze notable example, either in what vnsuretye
 standeth this worlde's weale oꝝ what mischief woꝝ-
 keth the proud enterpryse of an high heart, oꝝ final-
 ly what wretched ende ensueth suche dispiteous
 crueltie: Foꝝ fyrst to begynne with the ministers,
 Wyllm Forrest, at S. Martyns le graund by pece
 meale miserably rotted away, John Dighton ly-
 ued at Caleys long after, no lesse disdayned and
 hated then pointed at, and there dyed in great mi-
 sery: But sir James Tyrel was beheaded at the
 Towre hyll foꝝ treason. And kyng Richarde him-
 selfe was slaine in felde hacked and hewen of his
 enemies handes, haried on a horsebacke naked be-
 yng dead, his heere in dispite torne & tugged lyke
 a curre dogge. And the mischief that he toke with
 in lesse then thye yeres, of the mischiese that he dyd
 in thye monethes be not cōparable, and yet all the
 meane tyme spent in muche trouble and payne out-
 warde, and muche feare, dread and anguyshe with-
 in. Foꝝ I haue heard by credible persons of suche
 as were secret with his chamberers that after this
 abhominable deed done, he neuer was quiet in his
 mynde, he neuer thought him selfe sure where he
 went abroade, his body priuely feinted, his eyes
 wherled aboute, his hand euer on his dagger, his
 countenaunce & maner lyke alwaies to stricke a-

Kyng Richard

gaine, he toke euill rest on nightes, laye long wa-
kyng and musing; forweried with care & watche,
rather slombzed then slept, troubled with feareful
deames fodeinly sometyne stert vp, leapt out of
his bed and looked about the chambres, so was his
restlesse heart continually tossed and tumbled with
the tedious impressiō and stormy remembraunce of
his abhominable murther and execrable tyranny.

And shortly after he was inquiēted by a conspi-
racie, or rather a confederacy betwene the duke of
Buckyngham and many other gentlemen against
him, as ye shal heare the next yere. But the occasiō
why the duke and the kyng fell out, is of dyuerse
folke dyuersly pretended.

This duke as you
haue hearde before, as sone as the duke of Glouce-
ster after the death of kyng Edward was come to
York, & there had solempne funeral service done
for kyng Edward, sent to him a secreete seruānt
of his called Peria, with luche messages as you
haue hearde before. And after the duke of Buc-
kingham came with CCC. horse to Northampton
and styll continued with him, as partener & chiefe
organe of al his deuices tyll after his coronacion;
they departed to al semying very frendes at Glou-
cester. From whence as sone as the duke came home;
he so highly turned from him and so highly conspi-
red against him, that a man would marueil wher-
of the chaunge grewe in so shorte space. Some say
this occasiō was, that a litle before the corona-
cion, the duke required the kyng amongst other
thynges to be restored to the erle of Hertfordes la-
des. And forasmuch as the tytle whiche he clay-
med by inherytaunce, was somewhat interlaced
with

with the tytyle of Lancaster, whiche house made a
 tytyle to the crowne, and enioyed the same thre dis-
 cretes, as al men knowe, tyll the house of York de-
 priued the third kyng, whiche was Henry the sixt.
 Kyng Richard somewhat mistrusted and concey-
 ued luche an indignacion that he reiected the Du-
 kes request, with many spitefull & minatory wo-
 des, whiche so wounded the Dukes heart with ha-
 tred and mistrust, that he could neuer after endure
 to loke right on kyng Rycharde, but euer feared
 his owne lyfe, so farre forth that when the Pro-
 tectoure should ryde to his coronacion, feigned
 him selfe sycke, because he woulde do him no ho-
 noure. And the other takyng it in euil parte sent
 him worde to ryse and ryde or he would make him
 to be caried. Whereupon gorgeously appparelled
 and sumptuously trapped with burnyng carte na-
 ues of golde embzodered, he roade before the kyng
 through London with an euill wyll and woosle
 heart. And that notwithstanding, he roase the
 daye of the coronacion from the feaste, feignyng
 him selfe sicke, whiche kyng Rycharde sayde was
 done in hate and spight of him. And therfore men
 sayd that eche of them euer after lyued continual-
 ly in suche hatred and dystrust of other, that the
 duke looked verely to haue bene murthered at
 Gloucester, fro which he in fayre maner departed
 but surelye suche as were right secrete with bothe,
 affirme all this to be vnttrue, and other wyse men
 thynke it vnkely, the deepe dissymulynge nature
 of bothe these menne well considered. And what
 nede in that grene worlde the Protectoure had of
 the Duke, and in what perel the Duke stode yf he

fell once in suspicion of that tyrante, that other the protectour woulde geue the duke occasyon of displeasure, or the duke the protectoure occasyon of mystrust. And surely men thynke, that if kyng Rycharde had any suche opinion conceived in him, he woulde neuer haue suffered him to auoyde his handes or escape his power: but very true it is, that the duke of Buckyngham was an high myn- ded mā, and euil could beare the glozy of another, so that I haue hearde of some that sawe it, that he at suche tyme as the crowne was set vpon the pro- tectours head, his eye could neuer abyde the sight therof, but wyed his head another way, but men sayd he was not wel at ease, and that was both to kyng Rycharde well knowne and wel taken, no: a- ny demaunde of the dukes request vncurteously reiected, but gently deferred, but bothe he with great giftes and high behestes in moost louyng & trustye maner departed from the kyng to Glouce- ster: But soone after his comyng home to Brecke- nocke, hauyng thereby kyng Rychardes comaū- dement doctour Morton bishop of Ely who before as you haue haue heard was taken at the councel at the towre, waxed with him very fauynlier, whose onely wysdome abused his pride to his owne deli- uerance and the dukes distruction. The byshop was a man of great natural wytte, very well lear- ned and of honourable behaueoure, lackyng no wyse wayes to wyne fauoure. He was fyrst vpon the parte of kyng Henry, whyle that parte was in wealthe, and neither left it no: forsoke it in no woo, but fled the realme with the quene and the pryncce. And whyle kyng Edward had kyng Henry in pris-
son

he neuer retourned but to the felde at Barnet.
after whiche felde lost and vtterly subbdued and
all parte takynges extynguished, kyng Edward
for his fast fayth and wyledome, as not onely con-
tent to receyue him, but also wooed him to come &
had him from then forth bothe in secrete trust and
speciall fauoure, whom he nothyng deceyued. for
he beyng after kyng Edwards death fyrst taken
by the tyraunt for his trueth to the kyng, founde
the meane to set the duke in his toppe, and ioyned
gentlemen together in ayde of the earle of Riche-
monde, whiche after was named kyng Henry the
seuenth: fyrst deuising the mariage betwene the
lady Elizabeth daughter to kyng Edward the
fourth, by the whiche his faithfull and true seruice
declared to bothe his maysters at once, was an
infinite benefite to the realme, by the coniunction of
the bloodes of Lancaster and Yorke, whose funeral
tytles had long iniquited the realme. This man
afterwarde escaped fro the duke & fled the realme,
and went to Rome, neuer myndyng to medle with
the world, tyl kyng Henry the seuenth sent for him
and after made him Archebishop of Cauntobury
and Chauncelour of England and after was made
Cardinal, and liued well to al mens iudgementes
and died well. But to retourne to the former pur-
pose, he by the long and often alternate proffe, as
wel of prosperitee as aduerse of fortune, had got-
ten by great experience the very mother & maistres
of wisdom, and depe insight in polittike worldly
distres, wherby perceiuyng now the duke to com-
mon with him, fed him with fayre wordes and ma-
ny pleasaunt praises, and perceiuyng by the grete
of

Kyng Rycharde

of their communications the dukes pryde nowe and then to balke out a lytle byapde of enuy towarde the gloze of the kyng, and therby felyng hym easye to fal out yf the matter were wel handled, he craftely sought the wayes to prycke him forwarde, taking alwayes the occasyon of his comynge, and also kepynge him selfe close within his bandes that he rather leamed to folowe him then to leade him. For when the duke beganne fyrst to praise and boast the kyng and shewe howe muche profite the realme should take by his reigne. Bysshop Morton answered, surely my lord, folpe it were for me to lye, for I am sure yf I would swere the contrarye ye would not once beleue me, but yf the worlde would haue begonc as I would haue wished, that kyng Henries sonne had had the crowne and not kyng Edward, then would I haue bene his true and faithfull subiecte, but after that God had ordeyned him to lose it, and kyng Edward to reigne, I was neuer so madde with a dead man to strue against the quicke, so was I euer to kyng Edward a faithfull and true chapeleyn and glad woulde haue bene that his chyldren should haue succeeded him, howbeit if the secreete iudgement of God haue otherwyle prouyded, I purpose not to spurne against the prycke, nor labour to set vp that God pulleth doune. And as for the late protectour and nowe kyng, and with that worde he lefte, sayynge that he sayd that he had already medled to muche with the worlde, and would from that day medle with his boke and beades, and no further. Then loked the duke sore to heare what he would haue sayde, because he ended with the kyng, and ther

there so sodenly stopped, and exhorted him faithfully, betwene them bothe to be holde and to say whatsoeuer he thought, wherof he faithfully promised there should neuer come hurte, & paradure more good then he would wene. And that he him self intended to vse his faithful secreete aduice and counsaile, whiche he sayd was the onely cause for the whiche he procured of the king to haue him in his custodie, where he might recon him selfe at home, or els he had bene put in the handes of them with whom he should not haue found like fauour. The byshoppe right humblye thanked him and sayd, in good faith my lord, I loue not muche to talke of princes as of a thyng not all out of perel, althoughe the worde be without faute, but as it pleaseth the prince to construe it. And euer I thinke on Ilope's tale, that when the Lyon had proclaymed that on paine of death there should no horned beastes come into the woode, one beast that had a bonche of fleshe growyng out of his heade, fled a great pace: the fore that sawe him flye with al the hast, asked him whether he fled? In faith y he, I neither wote ne recke so I were once hence, because of the proclamacion made against horned beastes. What roole y the fore, the Lyon neuer ment it by the, for hat whiche thou haste is no horne in thy heade. No mary y he, I wote that well ynoughe, but yf he say it is a horne, where am I then? The duke laughed merely at the tale and sayd, my lord I warraunt you, neither the Lyon nor the boore shall pycke any matter at any thyng here spoken, for it shall neuer come nere their eares. In good faith

faith sayd the byshop, if it dyd, the thyng that I was aboute to say taken aswel as befoze God I mente, it coulde deserue but thanke, and yet taken as I wene it would, might happen to turne me to lytle good and you to lesse.

Then longed the duke muche moze to wete what it was, wherupon the bishop sayd. In good faith my lord, as for the late protectour, sith he is now kyng in possession I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the wealth of this realme, whereof his grace hath now the gouernaunce, and wherof I my self am a pooze membre, I was about to wishe that to those good abilitie wherof he hath alredy right many, litle neadyng my praisse, yet might it haue pleased God for the better stoz to haue geuen him some of suche other excellent vertues mete for the rule of the realme, as our Lord hath planted in the person of your grace, and there left of agayn. By whiche wordes the duke perceiuyng that the byshop bare vnto him his good heart and fauoure, mistrusted not to entre moze plaine communication with him, so farre, that at the last the bishoppe declared him selfe to be one of them that would gladly helpe that Rycharde who then vsurped the crowne might be deposed, if he had knowen howe it might conueniently be brought to passe that suche a person as had true title of inheritaunce vnto the same, might be restored therunto. Upon this the sayd duke, knowyng the bishoppe to be a man of prudence & fidelitee opened to him all his whole heart & entet sayng, my lord I haue deuised the way how y^e blod both of king Edward & of king Henry y^e sixt, that is left, beyng coupled by mariage
and

and affinitee may be restozed vnto the croune being by iust and true title due vnto them bothe (for kyng Rycharde he called not the brother of kyng Edward the fourth, but his enemy & mortal foe). The way that the duke had deuised was this, that they should with al speede and celerite find meanes to sende for Henry earle of Richemonde (whom the rumour went immediatly vpon knowledge of king Edwardes death to haue bene deliuered out of prison with fraunces duke of Britayn) and the same Henry to helpe with all their power and strength, so that the sayd Henry would fyist by his faithfull othe, promise that immediatly vpon y obteynyng the croune, he would mary and take to wyfe Elizabeth the elder doughter of Edward the fourth. The bishop of Ely right wel alowed bothe the deuice and purpose of the duke, and also the maner and way howe the matter should be brought to effecte, and found meanes that Reynold Breye seruant with Margarete mother of the sayd Henry then married to Thomas Staley, came to the duke into Wales, and the dukes mind thoroughly perceyued and knowen, with great speede returned to the sayd Margarete, aduertisynge the same of all thinges whiche was betwene the duke & him concerning aswel the comon weale of the realme, as also the aduancement of her and her blood had bene debated.

Nowe it came so to passe that the duke of Buckingham and the lady Margarete mother to the sayd Henry, had bene in comunicacion of the same matter befoze, and that the sayd lady Margarete had deuised the same meane and way for the depoc-

sycious

siston of kyng Richard and bringyng in of Henry
her sonne, the whiche the duke nowe brake vnto
the byshop of Ely, wherupon there rested no more,
forasmuche as she perceiued the duke nowe wil-
lyng to prosecute and further the sayd deuce, but
that she should fynde the meanes that this matter
might be broken vnto quene Elizabeth the wife of
kyng Edward the fourth then beyng in sanctuary.
And hereupon she caused one Lewes that was her
physician in his owne name, & as though it came
of him selfe to breake this matter vnto the quene,
sayng that if she would consent and agree ther vnto,
a meane might be found how to restore againe
the blood of kyng Edward and kyng Henry the
sixt vnto the crowne, and to be aduenged of kyng
Richard, for the murther of kyng Edwardes chil-
dren, and then declared that there was beyond the
sea Henry earle of Richemond, whiche was of the
blood of kyng Henry the sixt, whom yf she would
be content that he marry might Elisabeth her eldest
doughter, there should of his syde be made right
many frendes, & she for her part might helpe in like
maner, wherby no doubt it should come to passe
that he should possesse the crowne by most rightful
inheritance. Whiche matter when she hearde
it, it liked her excedyngly well, insomuche as she
comitted the sayd physician to breake the same vnto
his mastresse the ladye Margarete and knowe
her mynde therein, promisyng vpon her woorde
that she would make all the frendes of kyng Edward
to take part with the sayd Henry if he would
be sworne that when he came to the possessyon of
the crowne, he would immediatly take in mariage

Elisabeth

Elizabeth her eldest daughter, or els if she lyued not that tyme, that then he would take Cicile her yongest daughter.

Whereupon the sayd Lewes retourned vnto the lady Margarete his mastresse declaryng vnto her the whole mynde and entent of the quene. So that then it was shortly agreed betwene these two women, that with all speede this matter should be set forwarde, insomuche that the lady Margarete brake this matter vnto Reynold Bray, willyng him to moue and set forwarde the same with all such as he should perceiue either able to do good or willyng therunto. Then had the quene deuised that one Christopher (whom the foresayd Lewes the physician had promoted into her seruice) shuld be sent into Britayne to Henry to geue him knowledge of their myndes here, and that he should prepare and appoynt him selfe redy and to come into Wales, where he should fynd ayd & helpe ynough ready to receyue him.

But then shortly after it came vnto her knowledge that the Duke of Buckyngham had of him selfe afore entended the same matter, wherupon he thought it should be mete to sende some messenger of more reputation and credyte then was this Christopher, and so kepte him at home, and then sent Hughe Conewepe with a great somme of monye, willyng him to declare vnto Henry all thynges, and that he should hast him to come and to lande in Wales as is aforesayd. And after him one Rycharde Guilforde out of Kente sent one Thomas Ramney with the same message,
the

the whiche two messengers came in maner both at
one tyme into Britayn to the erle Henry, and decla-
red vnto him al their commissyons. The whiche mes-
sage when Henry had perceiued & thzoughly hard
it reioysed his heart, and he gaue thankes vnto
God, ful purposyng with all conuenient spede to
take his iourney towardes England, desirynge the
ayde and helpe of the duke of Britayne, with pro-
myse of thakeful recopence when God should send
him to come to his right. The duke of Britayne
notwithstadyng that he had not long after bene re-
quired by Thomas Hutton purposely sent to him
from kyng Rycharde in message with mony efflo-
nes to impryson the sayd Henry erle of Richemond
and there continually to kepe and holde the same
from comyng into England, yet with al gladnesse
and fauour inclyned to the desyre of Henry and ay-
ded him as he might with men, monye, chyppes, &
other necessities. But Henry whyle he might ac-
cordingly appoint and furnishe him selfe, remay-
ned in Britayne sendyng afoze the foresayd Hugh
Coneway and Thomas Ramney, whiche.ii. were
to him very true and faithful to beare tidynge in
to England vnto his frendes of his comyng, to
the ende that they might prouidently orde al thin-
ges aswel for the comodious receiuyng of him at
his comyng, as also forescyng suche daungers as
might befall, and auoydyng suche trappes and
snares as by Rycharde the thirde and his comply-
ces might be set for him and for al his other com-
pany that he should byng with him.

In the meane tyme, the frendes of Henry with
al care, study, and dilygence wrought all thynges
vnto

vnto their purpose belōgynge. And though al this
wer as secretly wrought and conueighed as emōg
so greate a numbꝛ was possible to bee, yet priue
knowledge thereof came to the eares of kyng Ri-
chard, who although he were at the firste hearynge
muchē abashed, yet thought beste to dissemble the
matter as though he had no knowledge thereof,
whilc he might secretly gather vnto hym power
and strength, and by secreete spiall among the peo-
ple get moze perfect knowledge of the whole mat-
ters and chief autoures and cōtriuers of thesame.
And because he knewe the chief and principall of
them, as vnto whom his owne conscience knewe
that he had geuen moste iust causes of enemite, he
thought it necessary first of all to dispatche ysaine
duke out of the waie. Wherfoze, vnto the duke he
addꝛessed letters enforced and replenished with al
humanitee, frendship, familiaritee and swetnesse
of wordes, willyng and desirynge thesame to come
vnto hym with all conueniente spede. And ferther
gaue in commaundmēt to the messenger that ca-
ried the letters that he should in his behalfe make
many high and gaie promises vnto the duke and
by all gētle meanes persuade thesame to come vn-
to hym. But the duke mistrustynge the faire wooꝝ-
des & promises so sodainly offred of hym, of whose
wily craftes and meanes he knewe sonderly exam-
ples afoze practised, desired the kyng his perdon,
excusynge hym self that he was diseased and sicke,
and that he might bee ascertained that if it possible
wer for hym to come, he would not absent hym self
from his grace. This excuse the kyng would not
admitte, but eftsones dictated vnto the duke other

Am. i.

letters

letters of a more rough sorte, not without manag-
 cyng and threatenyng onlesse he would accordyng
 to his dutie repaire vnto him at his calling, wher
 vnto the Duke playnly made aunswere that he
 would not come vnto hym whom he knewe to bee
 his enemye. And immediately the duke prepared
 hym self to make warre against hym, and perswa-
 ded all his complices and partakers of his intent
 with all possible expeditiō some in one place and
 some in another to sturre against kyng Richard.
 And by this meanes and maner at one tyme and
 houre, Thomas Marques of Dorchester reised an
 armie within the countye of Poike, beeyng hym
 self late come furthe of sanctuary and by the mea-
 nes and helpe of Thomas Howell preserued and
 saued from perell of deathe. And in Devonshire,
 Edward Courtenay with his brother Peter bi-
 shoppe of Excester reised in like maner an armie,
 and in Kente, Richard Gylforde accompaigned
 with certain other gentle men rayled bp the peo-
 ple as is aforesaid, and all this was dooen in ma-
 ner in one momente. But the kyng who had in the
 meane tyme gathered together greate power and
 strength thynkyng it not to bee best by pursuyng
 euery one of his enemies to dispartle his compa-
 gnie in small flockes, Determined to lette passe all
 the others, and withall his whole puyssaunce to set
 vpon the chief hed, that is to saie the duke of Buc-
 kyngham: so takyng his iourney from London
 he wente towardes Salisbury to the entente that
 he might set vpon the saied duke in case he mighte
 haue perfecte knowledge that the same laie in any
 felde embatailed. And now was the kyng within

Twoo daies iourney of Salisbury when þe Duke ac-
cepted to mete him, whiche Duke beyng accompa-
nyed with great strength of Welshemen, whō he
had enforced thereunto & coherted, moze by lordly
commaundement then by liberall wages and hire
whiche thyng in deede was the cause that thei fell
from hym & forsoke hym. Wherfore he beyng so-
denly forsaken of his menne, was of necessite con-
strained to flee, in whiche doyng, as a man caste in
sodain and therfore great feare, of this his sodain
chaunge of fortune, and by reason of thesame fear
not knowyng where to bee come, nor wher to hide
his hed, nor what in suche case best to doo, he secre-
tely conueighed hym self into the house of Homf-
ray Banaster, in whome he had conceiued a sure
hope and confidence to finde faithfull and trustie
vnto hym because thesame had been and the was
his seruauant, entendyng there to remain in secrete
vntill he mighte either raise a newe armie oz els
by some meanes cōueigh hym self into Britain to
Henry erle of Richemonde. But assone as the o-
thers whiche had attempted thesame enterpise a-
gainst the kyng had knowledge that þe Duke was
forsaken of his compaigny and fled and could not
bee founde, thei beyng stricken with sodain feare,
made euery mā for himselfe suche shift as he might
and beyng in vtter despaire of their helth and life
eithet gotte theim to sanctuaries oz desert places
oz els assaied to escape ouer sea, and many of them
in deede arriued sauely in Britain, enōg whō wer
these whose names ensue. Peter Curtney bishop of
Excestre with his brother Edward erle of Deuon-
shire, Thomas Marques of Dorcestre with his
sonne

sonne Thomas beyng a very young childe, Ihon Bourshere, Ihon Welthe, Edward Woodvyle a stoute manne of armes and brother to Elizabeth the quene, Robert Willoughby, Giles Daubeney Thomas Harondell, Ihon Cheyny with his twoo brethren, Willia Berkeley, Willia Brandon with Thomas his brother, Richard Edgewood, and all the se for the moste parte knightes. Also Ihon Halwell, Edward Bointz an excellent good capitaine & Christopher Urswicke, but Ihon Borton bishop of Ely at the self same tyme together with sondre of the nobles & gentlemen sailed into Flaunders.

But Richard the kyng, who was now come to Salisbury and had gotte perfect knowledge that all these parties sought to fle the realme, with all diligence and haste that mighte bee, sent to all the porte townes there aboute to make sure stepe that none of theim might passe vntaken, and made proclamaciō that whosoever would byng him knowledge where the duke of Buckyngham wer to bee had, should haue for his reward, if he wer a bondman, his fredome, and if he were free, his pardon and besides that, a thousande pounce of money.

Furthermoze because he vnderstod by Thomas Butto newly returned out of Brittain, of whom afore is mencioned, that fraunces duke of Brittain would not onely hold Henry erle of Richemond in prisone for his sake, but also was ready to help the same Henry with menne, money and shippes in all that he might against hym, he set diuerse and sonder shippes in places conueniente by all the sea coastes to Brittain ward, that if Henry should come that waie, he might either bee taken before his ar-

riual

quall oꝛ els might bee kepte from landyng in any
coaste of Englaunde. And furthemoze in euery coa-
ste and corner of the realme, lated wouderfull
waite and watche to take partely any other of his
meinies, and specially the saied Duke of Buckyn-
gham. Where vpon the saied Homfrey Banaster
(wer it foꝛ mede oꝛ foꝛ losyng his life and goodes,)
disclosed hym vnto the kynges inquisitoꝛs, who
immediatly toke hym, and furthwith all brought
him to Salisbury where kyng Richard was. The
duke beyng diligently examined vttered without
any maner refusall oꝛ stickyng, all suche thynges
as he knewe, trustyng that foꝛ his plain confession
he should haue libertie to speake with the kyng,
whiche he made moste instaunt & humble petition
that he might doo. But assone as he had confessed
his offence towardes kyng Richard, he was out
of hande beheaded. And this death the duke recei-
ued at the handes of kyng Richard whom he had
befoꝛe holpen in his affaires and purpoies be-
ponde all Godes foꝛbode.

While these thynges wer in hande in Englande
Henry erle of Richemond made redy his hoste and
strength to the numbre of fīue thousand Britons
and fiftene shippes, the daie appointed of his de-
parture beeyng now come, whiche was the twelwe
daie of the monethe of Octobꝛe in the yere of our
loꝛde God a thousande foure hundred foureskoꝛe
and foure, & the seconde yere of the reigne of kyng
Richard and haupyng a faire wynde, hoysed vp the
sailes and setfoꝛwarde, but to ward the night came
siche a tempest that thei wer disperfed one from a-
nother some into Briten, and some into Normandy.

¶ An.iii. But

But the ship in whiche Henry was with one other ship, tossed all the night with the waues of the sea & tempest, when the mornynge came, it waxed somewhat calme and faire weder, and thei wer come toward the Southe parte of Englande by a hauen oꝝ poꝛte called Boole, where thesaied Henry sawe all the shoyes oꝝ bankes sette full of harnessed men whiche were souldiours apointed there to waite by kyng Richard as wee haue saied before, foꝛ the comynge and landynge of therle. While Henry ther abode he gaue commaundement, that no manne should lande before the comynge of the other shippes. And in the meane tyme that he waited foꝛ the, he sent a litle bote with a fewe in it a laud to knowe what thei wer that stode on the shoye, his frendes oꝝ enemies. To whom those souldiours beeyng before taught what thei should saie, answered that thei wer the frendes of Henry and wer appointed by the duke of Buckyngham there too abyde his comynge and to conducte hym to those castelles and holdes where his tentes, pavilions and artillery foꝛ the watte laie, and where remaigned foꝛ hym a greate power that entended nowe with all spede to set vpon kyng Richard while he was now fled foꝛ feare and cleane without prouisiō, and therefore besought hym to come alande.

Henry suspectynge this to bee but fraude, after that he sawe none of his shippes apered, hoisted vp the sailes, haupng a meruelous good wynde euen appointed hym of God to deliuer hym from that greate ieoperdy, and sailed backe again into Normandye. And after his landynge there, he and his compaignie after their laboures, arrested them foꝛ the

the space of thre daies, determining too go from
thence afoote into Britain, and in the meane while
sente messengers vnto Charles the frenche kyng
the sonne of Lewes that a litle before departed, bes-
sechyng hym of libertie and licence too passe thro-
ough Normandy into Britain. The young kyng
Charles heeryng so, for his fortune, was not on-
ly ready and well pleased to graunte his passage,
but also sente hym money too helpe hym furthe in
his iourney. But Henry before that he knewe the
kyng his mynde (not doubtyng of his greate hu-
manitee and gentlenesse) had sente awaic his ship-
pes towarde Britain, and had sette hym self fore-
warde in his iourney, but made no greate haste
till the messengers returned, whiche greate gen-
tlenesse when he receiued from the kyng, reioysed
his hert and with a lussy stomacke and good hope
sette forwarde into Britain, there to take farther
counsail of his affaires.

And when he was in Britain, he receiued from
his frendes out of Englande knowledge that the
duke of Buckingham was beheaded, and that the
Marques of Dorchester with a greate numbere of the
noble men of Englade had been ther a litle before
to seke hym, and that thei wer now in Veneti a cite
in Britain. The whiche thynges heeryng knowen
to therle, he on the one parte did greatly lamente
the death and euill chaunce of his chief and prin-
cipall frende, but yet on the other part he greatly
reioysed in that he had so many a noble manne to
take his parte in the battaill. And therefore con-
ceiuyng a good hope and opiniõ that his purpose
should well frame and come to passe, determined

Hym. lxxi.

with

with hym self with all expediciō to set furthward
and there vpon wente to a place in Brittain called
Rhedon, and from thence sent the Marques with
all the other noble men that thei should come vnto
hym. Then when thei heard that Henry was safe
returned into Brittain reioysed not a litle, for thei
had thoughte he had landed in Englande, and so
fallen into the handes of kyng Richard, and thei
made not a litle hast till thei were come vnto hym.
The whiche when thei mette after greate ioye and
gladnesse as well of their parte as of his, thei begā
to talke of their p̄penssed matters, and now was
Christmasse come, on the whiche daie thei altoget-
her assembled in the churche and ther sware faith
and truthe one to another. And Henry swarc firste,
promisyng ȳ assone as he should possesse ȳ crowne
of Englande, that he would marye Elizabeth the
daughter of kyng Edward the fourth and after-
ward thei sware feaultee and homage vnto hym
euen as though he had alredy been kyng, and so
fro that tyme furthe did take hym, promisyng hym
that thei would spende bothe their liues and good-
des with hym, and that Richard should no longer
reigne ouer them. When this was dooen, Henry
declared all these thynges to the duke of Brittain,
praiyng and desiryng hym now of helpe, and that
he would aide hym with a greater numbze of men,
and also to lende hym a frendely and honeste some
of money that he might now recouer his righte &
enheritaunce of the crowne of Englande, vnto the
whiche he was called and desired by all ȳ lordes &
nobilitie of the realme, and whiche (God willyng)
he was mooste assured to possesse, and after his pos-
session

session he would moſte faithfully reſtoze the ſame again. The duke promiſed hym aide, vpon the truſt whereof, he began to make redy his ſhippes that thei might with all expedition be redy to ſaile that no tyme ſhould bee loſt. In the whiche tyme kyng Richard was again retourned to Londō, and had taken diuerſe of them that wer of this conſpiracy that is to ſaie George Browne, Roger Cliforde, Thomas Selenger, knightes. Alſo Thomas Rā, Robert Cliforde and diuerſe other whom he cauſed to bee put to death.

After this he called a parliament wherein was decreed, that all thoſe that wer fled out of the land ſhould bee reputed and taken as enemies too the realme, and all their landes and goodes to be forſaite & conſiſcate. And not content with that prey which was no ſmall thyng, he cauſed alſo a great tax and ſome of money to bee leuied of the people for the large giſtes and liberalitee that he firſt vſed to bye the fauoures and frendſhippis of many had now brought hym in nede. But nothyng was moze like then that Thomas Stāley ſhould haue been reputed and taken for one of thoſe enemies becauſe of þe working of Margaret his wife which was mother vnto Henry erle of Richemonde the whiche was noted for the chief hed and woozker of this conſpiracy. But for aſmuch as it was thought that it was to ſmall purpoſe that women could dooe. Thomas beeyng nothyng faulty was deliuered and commaunded that he ſhould not ſuffer Margaret his wife to haue any ſeruauntes about her, neither that ſhe ſhould not go abrod, but bee ſhutte vp and that from thence forth ſhe ſhould

Am, v. ſende

Kyng Richard

sende no message neither to her sonne nor to any of her other frendes, whereby any hurte mighte bee wrought against the kyng, the whiche commaundement was accomplished. And by the autoritie of thesame parliamente, a pcease was concluded with the Scottes, whiche a litle before had skirmished with þe boꝛderers. Whiche thyng brought to passe the kyng supposed all cōspiracy to bee clenc auoyded, foꝛ asinuche as the duke with other of his cōpaignie wer put to death, and also certaigne other hanned. Yet foꝛ all this, kyng Richard was daile berred and troubled, partely mistrustynge his owne strength, and partely fearynge the comynge of Henry with his compaigny, so that he liued but in a miserable case. And because that he would not so continewe any longer, he determined with hym self to putte awaie the cause of this his feare and businesse, either by policie oꝛ els by strengthe. And after that he had thus purposed with hym self, he thought nothyng better then too tempte the duke of Britain yet once again either with money, pryncer oꝛ some other speciall rewarde because that he had in keepynge therle Henry, and moſte chiefly, because he knewe that it was onely he that might deliuer hym from all his trouble by deliuerynge oꝛ imprisonynge thesaied Henry. Wherfoꝛe incontynently he sente vnto the duke certain ambassadours the whiche should promise vnto hym beside other greate rewarde that thei broughte with them, to geue hym perely all the reuenewes of all the lādes of Henry & of all the other lordes there beyng with hym, if he would after the receite of the ambassadours put them in prisone. The Ambassadours beeyng

deeyng departed & come where the duke laie could not haue communicacion with hym, for as muche as by extreme sickenesse his wittes were feble and weak. Wherfoze one Peter Landose his treasurer a manne bothe of p̄egnaunt wit and of greate autozitee, tooke this matter in hande. For whiche cause he was afterwarde hated of all the lordes of Britain. With this Peter the Englishe ambassadours had communicaciō, and declaryng to hym the kyng his message desiered hym instantly, for as muche as thei knewe that he might byyng their purpose to passe that he would graunt vnto kyng Richard his request, and he should haue the yerly reuenues of all the landes of the saied lordes. Peter consideryng that he was greatly hated of the lordes of his owne nacion, thought yf he mighte byyng to passe throughe kyng Richard to haue all these greate possessions and yerely reuenewes, he should then bee hablc too matche with them well inough and not to care a rushe for them, where vpon he answered the ambassadours that he would dooe that kyng Richard did desire, if he brake not promise with hym. And this did he not for any hatred that he bare vnto Henry, for he hated hym not for not long before he saued his life where the erle Henry was in greate ieoperdy. But suche was the good fortune of Englande, that this craftie compacte tooke no place, for while the letters and messengers ranne betwene Peter and kyng Richard, Thon bishoppe of Ely beeyng then in Flaundres was certified by a prieste whiche came out of Englande whose name was Christopher Urswicke of all the whole circumstance of this deuise and purpose.

pose. Where vpon with all speede the saied bishop
caused the saied priest the same daie to cary know-
ledge thereof into Brittain to Henry erle of Richemond
willyng hym with al the other noble menne
to dispatche theim selves with all possible haste in-
to fraunce. Henry was then in Venetie, when he
heard of this fraude, without tariaunce sent Chri-
stopher vnto Charles the frenche kyng desirynge
licence that Henry with the other noble menne
might safely come into fraunce, the whiche thyng
beeyng sone obteigned, the messenger returned
with speede to his lord and prince.

Then therle Henry setting all his businesse in
as good staie and ordre as he mighte, talked litle
and made fewe a counsaill herof, and for the more
expedition, he caused the Erle of Penbroucke
secretely to cause all the noble menne to take their
horses, dissemblyng to ride vnto the duke of Bry-
tain: but when thei came to the vttermoste partes
there of, thei should forsake the waie that led them
toward the duke, and to make into fraunce with
al that euer thei might. Then thei doyng in euery
thyng as thei wer bidden lost no tyme but so sped
them that shortly thei obteigned and gatte into
the countie of Angeow. Henry then within twoo
daies folowynge, beyng then still at Venetie tooke
foure or fiue of his seruauntes with hym and fei-
gned as though he would haue ridden there by to
visite a frende of his: and forasynuche as there wer
many Englishe menne lefte there in the towne, no
manne suspected any thyng, but after that he had
kept the right waie for the space of fiue miles, he
forsoke that and turned streight into a wood that
was

was thereby, and toke vpon hym his seruauntes apparell, and put his apparell vpon his seruaunt and so tooke but one of theim with hym, on whom he waited as though he had been the seruaunte and the other the maister. And with all conuenient and speedy haste so set furthe on their iourney that no tyme was lost, and made no more tariaunce by the waie then onely the baityng of their hores, so that shortly he recouered the coastes of Anjou where all his other compaignie was.

But within foure daies after that the erle was thus escaped. Peter receiued from kyng Richard the confirmation of the graunte & promises made for the betrayng of Henry and the other nobles. Wherefore the saied Peter sent out after hym hores and menne with suche expedition and speede to haue taken hym, that scarcely the erle was entered fraunce one houre but thei wer at his heles. The Englishe menne then beyng aboue the numbze of thzee hundred at Veneti, hearyng that the erle and all the nobles wer fled so sodainly and without any of their knowledge, wer astonied and in maner despaired of their liues.

But it happened contrary to their expectacion for the Duke of Brittain takyng the matter so vnkynndely that Henry should bee so vbled with hym that for feare he should bee cōpelled to fle his land was not a litle vexed with Peter, too whom (although that he was ignoraunte of the fraude and crafte that had been wrought by hym) yet he laied the whole faute in hym, and therefore called vnto hym Edward Boynynges and Edward Wooduile, deliuerpng vnto theim the foresaied money that

Kyng Richard

that Henry before had desired the Duke too lende hym towarde the charge of his iourney, and commaunded theim to conueigh and conducte all the Englishemen his seruantes vnto hym payng their expēses, and to deliuer the saied some of money vnto the erle. When the erle sawe his menne come and heard this comfortable newes, he not a litle reioysed, desirynge the messingers that returned to shewe vnto the Duke, that he trusted ere long tyme to shewe hymself not to bee vnthankfull for this great kindnesse that he now shewed vnto him. And within fewe daies after, the erle wente vnto Charles the frenche kyng, too whom after he had rendred thanks for the great benefites and kindnesse that he had receiued of hym, the cause of his commynge firste declared, then he besought hym of his helpe and aide, whiche should bee an immortall benefite to hym and his lordes, of whom generally he was called vnto the kyngdome, forasmuche as thei so abhoyred the tyranny of kyng Richard. Charles promised hym helpe and bade hym to bee of good chere & to take no care, for he would gladly declare vnto him his beneuolence. And the same tyme Charles remoued and tooke with hym Henry and all the other noble menne.

While Henry remained there, Ihon erle of Darford (of whom is before spoken) whiche was put in prison by kyng Edward the fourth in the castle of Hammes with also James Blount captain of that castle, and Ihon Forskewe knyghte Porter of the towne of Caleis, came vnto hym. But James the capitaine, because he lefte his wife in the castle, did furnishe thesame with a good gar-
rison

isson of menne befoze his departure.

Henry when he sawe therle, was out of measure glad that so noble a manne & of greete experience in battail, and so valiaunt and hardy a knyght, whom he thought to bee mooste faithfull and sure, for somuche as he had in þe tyme of kyng Edward the fourthe, continuall battail with hym in defending of kyng Henry the sixt, thought that now he was so well appointed that he could not desire to bee better, and therfore communicated vnto hym all his whole affaires, to bee ordred and ruled only by hym. Not long after Charles the frenche kyng remoued again to Paris, whom Henry followed, and there again moued and besoughte the kyng as he had mooste fauourably and kyndly entreteigned hym all this tyme, not onely in wordes but also in dedes that it would likewise please him yet so muche further to extend his fauour and beneuolence vnto hym that now he would aide and helpe hym forwarde in his iourney, that not onely he, but also all the lordes and nobilitie of Englad mighte iustly haue cause to knowlege and confesse that by the meane of his fauour and goodnesse thei were restored again to the possession of their enheritaunces, whiche without him thei could not well bypnyng to passe.

In the meane while, his fortune was suche, that many Englishe menne came ouer dayely out of Englande vnto hym, and many whiche then were in Paris, among whom were diuerse studientes that fell vnto his parte bothe more and lesse, and specially there was one, whose name was Richard Forc a prieste, beeyng a manne of a synguler good witte

witte and learnyng, whom Henry streight waie re-
taigned and committed all his secretes vnto hym
and whom also afterwarde he promoted too many
high promotions, and at the laste he made hym bis-
shop of Winchester.

Kyng Richard then hearyng of all this conspi-
racie and of the greate aide that daily wente ouer
vnto Henry, thought yet for all this, & if he might
bryng to passe that Henry should not couple in ma-
riage with the bloud of kyng Edward, that the he
should dooe well inough with hym and kepe hym
from the possession of the croune. Then deuised he
with hym self al the waies and meanes that might
be how to bryng this to passe. And first he thought
it to bee best with faire and large promises to at-
tempte the quene whose fauoure obteyned, he dou-
bted not but shortly to finde the meanes to haue
bothe her daughters out of her handes into his
owne, and then rested nothyng but if he hym selfe
might finde the meanes afterward to mary one of
the same daughters, wherby he thought he should
make all sure and safe to the vtter disapoyntyng
of Henry. Where vpon he sent vnto the quene the
beeyng in the sanctuary diuerse & sondry messen-
gers that should excuse & purge hym of his facte
afore dooen towards her, setting furthe the mat-
ter with pleasaunte woordes and high promises
bothe to her & also her sonne Thomas lord Mar-
ques of Dorset, of all thynges that could bee desi-
red. These messengers beeyng menne of grauitee,
handled the quene so craftely that anone she begā
to bee alured and to herken vnto theim fauoura-
bly, so that in conclusiō she promised to bee obediēt
to

to the kyng in his requestes (forgettyng the iniu-
ries he had done to her befoze, & on the other parte
not remembryng the promise that she made to Mar-
garete Henries mother). And first she deliuered
both her Doughters into the handes of kyng Ry-
chard, then after she sent priuely for the lord Mar-
ques her sone beyng then at Paris with Henry (as
ye haue heard) will yng him to forsake Henry with
whom he was, and spedely to retourne into Eng-
land, for al thinges was pardoned and forgeuen, &
she againe in fauoure and frendshyp of the kyng,
and it should be highly for his aduauncement and
honoure

Kyng Richard (when quene Elizabeth was thus
brought into a fooles paradise) after he had recey-
ued al his brothers Doughters from the sanctuary
into his palayce, thought there nowe remayned
nothyng to be done, but onely the cast yng awaye
and destroiyng of his owne wyfe, whiche thyng
he had wholy purposed and decreed within hym
selfe. And there was nothyng that feared him so
muche from this most cruell & detestable murther
as the los yng of the good opinion that he thought
the people had conceyued of him, for as ye haue
heard befoze, he feigned him selfe to be a good mā
and thought the people had esteemed him euen so.
Notwithstanding shortly after, his foresayd vn-
gracious purpose, ouercaine all this honest feare.
And first of all, he absteyned from beddyng or ly-
yng with her: and also found him selfe greued with
the barrennes of his wife, that she was vnfruitful
and brought him furth no chyldren, complainyng
therof very greuously vnto nobles of his realme

and chiefly aboue other vnto Thomas Rotherham then archebishop of York (whom he had deliuered a lytle afore out of prison) the whiche byshop dyd gather of this, that the quene should be ryd out of the way, ere it were long after (suche experiēce had he of kyng Rychardes compleccion, who had practised many lyke thynges not long befoze) and the same tyme also he made diuerse of his secrete frendes prey of the same his coniecture.

After this, he caused a rumour to runne among the comen people (but he would not haue the author known) that the quene was dead, to the intent that she hearyng this merueilous rumoure, should take so greuous a conceyte that anone after she should fall into some great disease, so þ he would assaye that way, in case it should chaunce her afterward to be sicke, dead or otherwysse murdred, that then the people might impute her deathe vnto the thought she toke or els to sickenesse. But when the quene heard of so horrible a ruinour of her death spzong abzoade among the comon people, she suspected the matter and supposed the worlde to be at an ende with her, & incontinently, she went to the kyng with a lamentable countenaunce, and with wepyng teares asked him, whether she had done any thyng whereby he might iudge her worthy to suffer death. The kyng made answer with a smiling and dissimulynge countenaunce and with flatterynge woordes, byddynge her to be of good comforte and to plucke vp her heart for there was no suche thyng toward her that he knewe. But howe soeuer it fortunied, either by sorowe or els by poisoning, within fewe dayes after the quene was
dead

dead and afterwarde was buryed in the abbey of Westmynster. This is the same Anne, one of Rycharde the earle of Warwikes daughters whiche once was contracted to prince Edward kyng Henry the sixt his sonne.

This kyng beyng thus deliuered of his wyfe fantasied a pace lady Elizabeth his niece, desirynge in any wyse to mary with her: but because that al men, yea and the mayden her selfe abhorred this vnlawfull desire, as a thyng moost detestable, he determined with him selfe to make no great haste in the matter, chiefly for that he was in a pecke of troubles, fearynge least that of the noble men some would forsake him & runne vnto Henry his part, the other at the least would fauoure the secrete conspiracy made againe him, so that of his ende there was almost no doubt. Also the more part of the common people were in so great dyspayre, that many of them had rather to be accompted of the nombre of his enemies, then to put them selves in jeopardy both of losse of body and goodes in takynge of his part.

And amongst those noble men whom he feared, fyrst was Thomas Standley and Willyam his brother, Gilbert Talbote, and other a great nombre, of whose purpose though kyng Rycharde was ignorant, neuerthelesse he trusted not one of the, and least of all Thomas Standley, because he had maryed Henryes mother, as it maye well appere by this that foloweth. For when the sayd Thomas would haue departed from the courte vnto his owne mansyon for his recreation (as he sayd) but the trueth was, because he would be in a

An. ii.

readynesse

readynesse to receyue Henry and ayde him at his commyng into the realme. But the kyng dyd let him, and would not suffre him to departe, vntyll suche tyme he had lefte in the courte behynde him George Strange his sone and heyre for a pledge. And whyle kyng Rycharde was thus wrapped in feare and care of the tumulte that was to come, lo, euen then tidynge came that Henry was entred into the land, and that the castell of Hammes was prepared to receyue Henry, by the meanes of the erle of Orenforde whiche then was fled with James Blunte keper of the castel vnto Henry.

Then kyng Rycharde, thynkyng at the begynnyng to stey all this matter, sent furth with al hast the greater part that were then at Calyce to recouer the sayd castell agayne. Those that were in the castel, when they sawe their aduersaries make towardes them, spedely they armed them selves to defence, and in all hast sent messengers to Henry, desirynge him of ayde. Henry furthwith sent the erle of Orenforde with a cholen sorte of menne to assyst them, and at their fyrst commyng they layde siege not farre from the castel. And whyle kyng Rychardes menne turned backe hauing an eye towardes them: Thomas Brandon with thirty valiaunt menne of the other syde gatte ouer a water into the castel, to strength them that were within. Then they that were within layde harde to their charge that were without: on the other syde, the erle of Orenford so valiantly assayled them of the backside that they were glad to make proclamation to them that were within, that yf they would be cōtent to geue ouer the castel, they should haue fre

fre lybertie to depart with al that euer they had.

The erle of Oxenford hearyng this, whiche came onely to saue his frendes from hurte, and namely James Bluntes wyfe, was contented with this condicion and departed in saufegard with all his frendes returnyng backe to Henry, whiche was at Paris. After this, kyng Rycharde was enfourmed that the frenche kyng was wery of Henry and his company, and would do nothyng for him, wherby Henry was now not able in maner to healpe him selfe, so that it was not possible that he should preuaile or go forward in thenterpryse þe he thought to haue taken in hand against kyng Rycharde.

Kyng Rycharde beyng brought thus into a fooles paradise, thought him selfe to be out of all feare, and that there was no cause why he should beyng so sure, once to wake out of his slepe or trouble him selfe any furder, and therfore called backe his nauy of shyppes that then was redy vpon the sea, whiche was fully furnyshed to haue scoured the seas. But yet for the more suretie least he should be sodenly oppressed, he gaue comaundement to the great men dwellyng by the sea syde (and specially the Welshmen) to watche night and day, least his aduersaries should haue any oportunitie to entre into the lande. As the fashyon is in tyme of warre that those that dwel by the seas syde should make becons in the highest places there aboute, whiche might be sene afarre of, so þe when it should chaunce their enemies to arriue toward the lande, by and by they should fyre their bekyngs and rayse the countrey, to the entent that quickly frō place to place they might be ascerteyned of al the whole

matter and also to arme the selves spedely against their enemies.

And so to come to our purpose againe, kyng Rycharde through the aforesayd tidynge, began to be more carelesse and rechelesse, as who say, he had no power to withstand the destiny that hong ouer his head. Suche is the prouident iustyce of God, that a man doeth lest knowe, prouide and beware when the vengeance of God is euen at hand for his offences. And to go furth, at that tyme when Henry the erle of Rychemond remained in Fraunce entreatyng & suynge for ayde & helpe of the freche men, many of the chief noble men, whiche had the realme in gouernaunce (because of the yong age of Charles the kyng) fell somewhat at dissencion, of the whiche variaunce, Lewes the prynce of Oylvaunce was the chiefe and heade, whiche because he had married John the kynges syster looked to haue bene chiefe gouernoure of all the realme. By the whiche meanes it came to passe, that one manne had the principal gouernaunce of the realme. And therfore Henry the erle was constrained to sue vnto al the nobles seuerally one after another desirynge and prayng the of ayde and helpe in his purpose, and thus the matter was prologed. In the meane tyme Thomas the Marques of Dorcet (of whom we spake afore) was priuely sent for to come home by his mother, partly mistrustynge that Henry should not preuaile, & partly for the great & large promises that kyng Rycharde had made to her for him before. Whiche letters when the sayd Marques had receyued, he beleuyng all thynges that his mother wrote vnto him, & also thynkyng that

Henry

that Henry should neuer preuaile, & that the frenche men dyd but mocke and dalay with him: he sodely in the night tyme coueighed him selfe out of Paris & with great speede made towarde Flaunders. The whiche thyng when therle & other of the Englishe lordes heard of, they were sore astounded & amazed, & with all speede purchased of Charles the kyng a licence & comaundement that the Marques might be steved whersoever he were found within the dominion of fraunce chiefly for that he was secrete of their couel & knewe al their purpose. The comaundement was quickly obteyned and postes made forth euery way, among whō one Humfrey Cheyney playng the part of a good blodhound so truly smelled out & folowed the trace, that by & by he found out & toke the Marques: and so hadled & perswaded him with gentle and good wordes, that shortly after he was content to retourne.

Then Henry beyng delpuered of this chaunce, thought it best to prolonge the matter no further least he should loose bothe the present oportunitie and also wery his frendes that looked for him in England. Wherfore he made haste and set forward with a smal army obteyned of the frenche kyng, of whom he also borrowed some money, and some of other his frendes, for the whiche he lefte the Marques and John Burchere behynde for a pledge. And so setting forward came to Roan, and whyle he taried ther and prepared shippynge at the hauen of Seyn, tidynge came to him ꝑ kyng Richardes wyfe was dead, & purposed to mary with the lady Elisabeth, kyng Edwardes eldest daughter beyng his nere, & that he had married Cicile her

syſter to a mans ſonne of the land farre vnderneath
her degre. At the whiche thing, Henry was ſore a-
maſed and troubled, thinkyng that by this mea-
nes al his purpoſe was daſhed, for that there was
no other waye for him to come to the kyngdome
but onely by the mariage of one of kyng Edwardes
doughters. And by this meanes alſo, he feared
leaſt his frendes in England would ſhyſynke from
him for lacke of an honeſt title. But after they had
conſulted vpon the matter, they thought it beſt to
tary a lytle to proue yf they might get moze helpe
and make mo frendes. And among all other, they
thought it beſt to adioyne the lord Harbart vnto
them, whiche was a mā of great power in Wales
and that ſhould be brought to paſſe by this mea-
nes, for that the lord Harbart had a ſyſter mary-
able, whom Henry would be content to marry, if he
would take their part. And to bring al this mat-
ter to paſſe meſſengers were ſent to Henry the erle
of Northumberland, whiche had married the other
ſyſter ſo that he ſhould bring this matter aboute,
but the wayes were ſo beſette that the meſſengers
could not come to him.

And in the meane ſeaſon, came veray good ty-
dynges from John ap Morgan a tēporal lawyer,
whiche ſignified vnto them that ſir Ryce ap Tho-
mas a noble & valiaunt man and John Sauage,
fauoured his part earneſtly and alſo ſir Reynolde
Bray had prepared a great ſūme of mony to wage
battaile on his part and to helpe him, and therfore
he would they ſhould make haſt with all that euer
they could, and make towarde Wales.

Then Henry ſpedely prepared him ſelfe becauſe
he

he would lenger his frendes no lenger. And after þ
he had made his praier vnto almighty God that
he might haue good successe in his iourney, onely
with .ii. M. men and a fewe shippes in the calēdes
of August he sayled frō the hauen of Seyne, & the
vii. day after whiche was the .xii. day of August,
he arriued in Wales aboute sonne set and lāded at
Wylford hauen, & in the part whiche is called the
Dale, where he heard that there was diuers layd
in wayt for him, to kepe him backe. frō thence, in
the moynynge betimes he remoued toward a toun
called Harford within .x. myle of the Dale, where
he was very ioyfully receiued. Here he had contra-
ry tidynge brought to that he heard in Normā-
dy afore, that sir Ryce ap Thomas and John Sa-
uage withal that euer they coulde make, were of
kyng Rychardes part.

Notwithstādyng, they had suche tidynge sent
them from the men of Pembryche by a valiaunt
gentlemā, whose name was Arnold Butteler, that
it reioysed al their heartes, whiche was, that if al
former offences might be remytted, they would be
in a redynesse to sticke vnto their owne Gespere
the erle. Then Henries company by this meanes
beyng encreased, departed frō Harford .v. myle to-
ward Cardigane, and then while he refreshed his
men, sodaynly came a rumoure vnto him that the
lord Harbact whiche dwelled at Carmerdine was
nigh at hand with a great armye of menne. At the
whiche rumoure therewas a great sturre amōgest
them, euery man toke him selfe to his weapon and
made them selves redy if nede were to fight, and a
lytle while they were al afrayd, tll suche tyme as

Henry

Kyng Richard

Henry had sent out horsmen to try the truieth, whiche when they came againe, declared, that al thinges was quiet and that there was no suche thyng. But most of all maister Gyspythes a very noble man dyd comfort them and gladden their heartes, whiche although befoze he had toynded himselfe to the lord Harbert, at that very tyme he cleued to Henry with suche a company as he had, although they were but fewe, and the same tyme came John ap Morga vnto him. Henry went styl forwarde & taried almost in no place, because he would make sure worke and the better spede, he inuaded suche places afoze that they were armed against him, & whiche places he bette doune wth very lytle strength. But afterwarde hauyng knowldege by his spyes that the lord Harbert & sir Ryce were in a redynes to geue him battaile he determined to set vpon the, and either to put the to flight o^r els to make them sweare homage and feaultee vnto him, & to take them with him in his host against kyng Rychard. And because he would ascertayne his frendes in England howe al the matter went forwarde with him, he sent of his moost trusty frendes to the lady Margarete his mother, to Standley, to Talbot, and to other of his most especial frendes with certayne comaundementes. The effecte of the comaundementes were, that he intended with the helpe of his frendes to passe ouer Seuerne and by Shrewesbury to make toward London. Therfoze he desired them with those that were of their counceyl in tyme and place conuenient to mete him. So the messengers goyng forth with these comaunssyons, Henry went forward toward Shrewesbury

bury, & in the way met with sir Rysse ap Thomas
with a great nōber of men whiche came vnto him
and was of his part. For two dayes afore Henry
promysed him to be chiefe ruler of all Wales as
sone as he came to the crowne (if he would come vnto
him) whiche afterward he gaue to him in dede.
In the meane tyme the messengers executyng the
message, diligently returned backe agayne with
large rewardes of them, to whō they were sent and
came to Henry the same day he entred into Shrew-
esburie & shewed howe all his frendes were in a
redynesse to do the vttermost that lay in thē. This
tidynges put Henry in suche great hope, that he
went furth with a courage and came to the towne
of Newpōrte & there set vp his tentes vpon a lytle
hyl, and there lay all night. That night came to
him sir Gylbert Talbot with aboue two hundred
men. After that they went furth to Stafforde and
whyle they were there, Willyam Standley came
to him with a few after him, and when he had tal-
ked a lytle with him, returned backe againe to his
hoost whiche he had prepared. From thence he wēt
to Lichefeld, & that night lay without the towne,
but in the mornyng betime he entred into the citee
and was receyued honourably. A day or .ii. afore,
Thomas Standley was there with fyue .M. men
armed, whiche when he knewe of Heries cōmyng,
furth with wēt afore to a village called Aderstone
there to tary tyl Henry came. This he dyd to a-
uoyde suspicion, beyng afrayd lest king Richard
knowyng his intent would haue put his sonne to
death, whiche as I telled you befoze was left with
him as a pledge for his father. But kynge Ry-
chard

chard in the incane tyme, which then was at Not-
tyngham, hearing that Henry with a few more of
banishedmen was entred into Wales, so lightly
regarded the matter, that he thought it was not
much to be past upon, so that he came in with so
fewe in nombre, and that the lord Harbarte and
sir Ryce, whiche were rulers of all Wales, would
eyther kyll him, or els take him and byng him a-
liue. But afterward, when he remembred him selfe
that oftentimes a smal matter in batel if it be not
loked vnto betymes, would make at the laste a
great sturre: he thought it best to remedy the mat-
ter betymes and commaunded Henry the earle of
Northumberlande with other of the nobles of the
realme (whō he thought had set more by him then
by their owne goodes) to raise by an army and to
come to him with speede. Also he sent diuers mes-
sengers with letters to Robert Baskynbury keeper of
the Towre of London, commaunding him to come
vnto him in all hast, and to byng with him as fe-
lowes in battaille, Thomas Burschere, Walter
Hungreford and diuers other knightes, whom he
dyd not a lytle suspecte.

¶ In this tyme it was shewed that Henry was
come to Shrewesbury without any hurt. With
the whiche tydynges, the kyng began to rage and
made exclamacion against them, that contrary to
their faithes they had utterly decceyued him, and
then he beganne to mistrust all menne, and wylde
not whom he might truste, so that he thoughte it
best to sette fourth him selfe against his aduersa-
ries. And furthwith he sent out spyes to knowe
whiche way Henry dyd take. They when they had

Done

done their diligence retourned backe againe and shewed him howe that Henry was come to Lichfeld. The whiche thyng after he knewe, because now there was a great nombze of souldiers come together, by and by his men set in aray, he commaunded them forwarde, and to go .iiii. and .iiii. together, and by that way whiche they kept they heard say, their enemies were comynge. The suspecte persons he put in y^e middes, he him selfe with those he trusted came behynd, with wynges of horsemen runnyng on euery side. And thus keepyng their order, aboute sonne set came vnto Leicestre.

When Henry in the incane season had remoued from Lichfeld vnto the next village called Tamworth, in the mydway he met with Walter Hungerforde, Thomas Burschier & many other more whiche had promised to ayde him afore. And forbe cause they perceyued that they were suspected of kyng Rycharde, and least they shoulde be brought violetly vnto him beyng their enemy they forsoke Robert Brakenbury their capitayne, and in the night tyme stole priuely away and went to Henry. Vnto whom there chaunced by the waye that was worthy to be marked, whiche was that Henry, althoughe he was a man of noble courage and also his company dyd dayly encrease, yet for al that he rode in great feare because he was vncertayne of Thomas Stanley whiche as I telled you befoze, for the feare of puttyng his sonnes to death, inclined as yet vnto no part, and that the matter was not so slender of kyng Rycharde, as reporte was made to him of his frendes.

Wherefore, as all a frayde without a cause, he

took

Kyng Rychar

toke onely twenty men with him, and steyed in his
iourney as a man in dispayze and halfe musyng
with him self what was best to be done. And to ag-
grauate the matter, tidynge was brought him
that kyng Rychar was comyng nere to mete him
with a great and houghe hoost of men. And whyle
he thus lnygered fo: feare behynd, his hoost came
afoze to the toun of Tamworth, and because it
was then darke night, he lost bothe his company
and also his waye, then wandryng from place to
place, at last came to a lytle village.iii. myle from
his hoost beyng ful of feare, and lest he should fal
into the daunger of þ scoutwatche he durst not aske
a question of any mā, and partly fo: the feare that
was present, and partely fo: that was to come he
lay there that night and toke this fo: a signe o: a
pronosticacion of some great plage that was to
come: and the other part of his hoost was no lesse
abashed seyng his absence fo: that tyme. When in
the mornynge Henry came to them in the light of
the day he excused the matter that he was not ab-
sent because he had lost his way, but rather of pur-
pose, because he would comon with his preyfren-
des whiche would not be sene in the day. After
that he went priuely to Aderstone where Thomas
Standley and Wyllyam his brother dyd dwell.
Here Henry, Thomas, and Wyllyam mette and
toke othe by the hand with louyng salutacions &
were glad one of another: Then after they coun-
celed together of their metyng with kyng Richard
whom they perceiued no: then to be farre from the
That day when it dreyne toward night, in the eue-
nyng John Sauage, Wyttanne Sanforde, Symon

mon Digby with many other had forsaken kyng
Rychard and came to Henry with a great power
of menne, whiche power and strength sette Henry
aloft againe. In the meane season kyng Ry-
chard whiche purposed to go throughe thicke and
thinne in this matter came to Bosworth a lytle be-
yond Lecester where the place of battail should be
(as a man would say the high iustice of God, whi-
che could not be auoyded hangyng ouer his head,
had called him to a place where he should suffer
worthy punishment for his detestable offences) &
there he set vp his tentes & rested that night. Afore
he went to bed, he made an oration to his company
with great behemencye, perswadyng & exhortyng
them manfully to fight. And afterward, as it was
sayd he had a terrible dreame in his slepe scmpyng
that he sawe horrible deuilles appeare vnto him &
pulling and halyng of him that he coulde take no
rest, whiche vision fylled him full of feare & also of
heuy care when he waked. For by and by after, be-
yng so greued in his mynd, he dyd prognosticate
of this dreame the euil lucke & heuy chaunce that
after came to him, and he came not with so chere-
ful a countenaunce vnto his companye as he was
wonte to do. Then least they should thynke that
he had this heauynesse for the feare of his enemies
he stode vp and reherced vnto them al his dreame.
But I thynke that this was not a dreame, but ra-
ther his conscience pricked with the sharpe styng
of his mischeuous offences, whiche although they
do not pricke alway, yet moost comonly they wyll
byte moost towarde the latter daye, representyng
vnto

Kyng Richard

unto vs not onely them selfe, but also the terrible punishment that is ordeyned for the same, as the sight of the deuill tearyng and halpyng vs, so that therby (if we haue grace) we may take an occasyon to be penitent, or els for lacke of the same dye in desperacion. Nowe to come to my purpose againe, the next day after, kyng Richard haupng al thynges in a readynesse went furth with the armye out of his tentes, and began to sette his men in aray: fyrst the forwarde let furth a merueilous length bothe of horsemen and also of footemen, a veray terrible compaignie to them that should see them a farre of: and in the formost part of al he ordeyned the bowmen as a strong fortresse for the that came after, and ouer this John the duke of Northfolke was head captaine. After him folowed the kyng with a mighty sorte of men.

And in this while, Henry beyng departed from the communicacion of his frendes without any taryng pytched his tentes nere his enemies and laye there all night and commaunded his men to be in a redynesse. In the moorning he sent also to Thomas Standley beyng then in the middes betwixt bothe hostes that he should come nere with his armye. He sent him worde againe that he should set his men in an ordre tyll he came: with the whiche answer otherwise then he had thought or then the matter did require, he was not a litle abashed and stode as it were in doubt. Yet for all that he taryed not but with all spede set his men in an order, the forwarde was but slender, because his nombre was but fewe, the archers were set in the formost parte. Over them John the erle of Orenford was head captain

capitain. In þe right wyng he set Gilbert Talbot. In the left he put Ihon Sauage. And he hymself with the helpe of Thomas Stanley folowed with one compaignie of horsemen and a fewe footemen for all his whole compaignie wer scant fivē thousande besides bothe the Stanleys with their compaignie, of the whiche William Stanley had thre thousande. The kyng his armie was double to all this. And so when bothe armies were all in a redynesse and began for to come within the sight of oþther thei bragged furthe them selves of bothe parties, lokyng onely for the signe & token of striking together. Betwixt bothe hostes, there was a marrelle whiche Henry left on his right hande purposely as a defence of his menne, he founde the meanes also too haue the bryghte sunne on his backe, that it might dasill the yies of his enemies.

But the kyng whē he sawe Henry passe ouer the marrelle commaūded his men with all violence to set vpon them. Thei by & by with a sodain clamor let arrowes flee at theim. On þe other side thei paid the home manfully again with the same. But whē thei came nere together thei laied on valeauntely with swerdes. Therle of Oxforde fcarpyng least in þe meane tyme kyng Richardes multitude should haue cōpassed in his men whiche were but a fewe, he cōmaūded them by fyres thei should not moue forward past ten foote the whiche cōmaundement knowen, thei knit them selfe together and sealed not in fightyng: their aduersaries becyng afraied suspected some craft or gyle & began to breake of, & many of the same part wer not muche greued therewith, because thei wer as glad the kyng should be

Kyng Richard

losse as saued, and therefore thei fought with lesse
corage The therle of Orford with his men thicke
together stroke on more freshlier. The other of the
other part did likewise thesame. And while the first
wardes of the battail had fought so manfully, Ri-
chard perceiued by his spies Henry a far of with a
fewe cōpaigny of armed men. Afterward comyng
nere, Richard knewe him by signes & tokens, then
beeyng inflamed with an anger, furiously stroke þ
horse with the spurres and ran out of the one side
of the hoste, & like a lion ran at hym. On the other
side, Henry perceiuing hym comyng, was very desi-
rouse to mete him. Richard at þ first setting furth,
killed diuerse þ stode befoze him, again he threwe
doune Henryes banner and William Bzadon the
bearer also, he ran at Cheiny a man of great might
whiche came for to mete hym, & with great violence
ouerthrewe hym to the grounde, and this he made
hymself awaie through them, for to come to Henry.
But Henry kepte better tacker with hym then his
men would haue thought, whiche the was almoste
in despair of the victorie. And euen at that time lo
there came Willia Staley to aide them with thre
thousand men, and euen at the very same tyme the
residue of kyng Richardes men wer put to flight.
Then Richard fightyng alone in the midst of al
his enemies was ouerthrowne and slain. In the
meane tyme therle of Orford in the forward after
he had fought manfully a litle while, put the resi-
due to flight of whom he slewe a great nūbre. But
a great nūbre more whiche folowed Richard more
for feare then for loue, helde their handes fro fight-
yng and went awaie without hurte, for that thei
looked

looked not for his safegard, but rather for his destruction. There were slain at this conflict not many more than one. M. of þ which these were noble men. Tho Duke of Norfolk, Walter Feris, Robert B. kyngbury, Richard Radcliffe & many other more. And within ii. daies after, William Catilby lawyer with certain other of his felowes was put to deth at Leicester, & amonges those that ran awaie, was Fraunces Louell, Humfray Stafford, with Thomas his brother & other more þ ran into sanctuary at Colchester in Essex. Ther was of the captiues a great numbze, because þ when kyng Richard was slain, euery man cast doune his wepon & yeld hym self to Henry, of the which the more parte would haue dooen so at the beginnyng, if it had not been for feare of kyng Richardes spies, which then wā dzed in euery place. And emōgest these the nobles, wer therle of Northumberlade the erle of Surrey of the which therle of Surrey was put in prisone the other as a frend was receiued into fauor. Henry at that feld losse not aboue. C. men, emongest whō the chief was William Brandon which bare Henryes baner. This battail was fought in the. xxvii. daie of the monethe of Auguste, in the yere of our lord. M. cccc. lxxvi. the conflict indured more than two houres. Richard might (as the same wēt) assured hym self if he would asled awaie, for those that wer about hym when thei sawe his men fro the begimpyng fight but faintly & that some were come awaie to the other part, suspected treason & willed hym to fle, and whē the matter was manifest that all hope of victoꝝ was paste, thei brought hym a swift horse. He puttyng a lide all hope & trust that

was in flyng, made (as it was saied) this answere that this daie he would haue either an end of bat-tail oꝛ els of his life, suche was his great audacite and manfulnes whiche because he did se certainly that in this daie he should obtain the kyngdome quietly all daies of his life oꝛ els lose bothe foꝛ e-uer, he entred in cmōgest them as it was declared before intendyng vtterly either to lose all oꝛ els to win all. And so the wretche died haupyng the ende that al suche wer wont to haue, whiche in the stede of lawe, honesty, & al godlinesse folowe their owne appetite villany and all wickednesse. And plainly this is an example whiche cannot bee expꝛessed, to feare them whiche will not suffre one houre to bee otherwise spent then in cruelte mischief & al deu-lish fashions. Henry whē he had thus obtained the victoꝝy he fell doune on his knees and with many pꝛaiers and thankes, referred all to the goodnesse of God. Then after he stode by beeyng wonder-fully replenished with ioye, and wente by vpon a litle hill and there gaue greate commendacions to his souldiours, commaundyng them that were hurte to bee heled and the ded to bee buried: after-ward he gaue immortall thankes to his noble ca-pitains promisyng them that he would neuer foꝛ-get their benefite. The multitude in ȳ meane time with one voyce & one minde proclaimed him kyng. When Thomas Stāley sawe ȳ he toke kyng Ri-charde his croune whiche was founde cmōgest the spoile, & by & by put it vpon Henries hed as though he had been then created kyng by the eleccō of the people as it was wont to be in the old tyme, & this was the first token of his felicity. After this kyng
Henry

Henry with his compaigny and carriage wente to
Leicestre towarde nighte too bed, where after he
had refreshed his compaignie well for the space of
two daies, that thei might the better go towarde
London: Kyng Richardes body was brought na-
ked ouer a horse backe, the hed and the armes han-
gynge on the one side and the legges on the other,
and caried into the Grey Friers of Leicester, and
surely it was but a miserable sight to looke vpon,
yet it was good inough considerynge his wretched
liuyng, and there without any solempnitee was
buried two daies after. He reigned two yeres two
monethes and one daie, he was but of a small sta-
ture hauynge but a deformed body, the one shulder
was higher then the other, he had a shorte face and
a cruell loke whiche did betoken malice, gyle and
deceit. And while he did muse vpon any thyng sta-
ndynge, he would bite his vnder lippe continually,
wherby a manne might perceiue his cruell nature
within his wretched body strived & chafed alwaie
within hymself, also the dagger whiche he bare a-
bout him, he would alwaies be choppyng of it in
and out, he had a sharpe and peregnaunt witte, sub-
tile and to dissimule and faine very mete. He had al-
so a proude and cruell mynde, whiche neuer wente
from hym to the houre of his death, whiche he had
rather suffer by the cruell sword, thoughe all his
compaignie did forsake hym, then by shamefull
flight he would fauoure his life, whiche af-
ter might fortune by sicknesse or o-
ther condynge punyshement
shortely too perishe.

¶

¶

Do. lli.

Kyng Henry the seventh.



ENRY THE. VII

of þ name kyng of Englande.

Firste after that he had obtained the kyngdome and heritage by force of armes, entēdyng to stablishe all thynges and extynguish sediciō, before he departed frō Leicester, cau-

sed sir Robert Willoughby knight too bryng the young erle of Warwike þ duke of Clarence some before his p̄sence (whom kyng Richard too that tyme had kept at Sherihutton in Yorkeshire) fearyng muche, lest that by this young erle some occasion might be taken of renuyng battaill, whiche entended nothyng more then too liue in peace and quietnesse. And so this erle was brought too hym, and at his commaundement conueighed to London. and there caste in holde.

In the self same place also of Yorkeshire, was lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter to the forenamed kyng Edward, whom kyng Richard her vnkle would haue married soze against the minde and consent of the same lady. In so muche also that þ people wer soze against it, and accompted it not onely as a reproche and infamy to the kyng hymself, but also to his counsaill that did agree to his naughty purpose. Albeit, God of his infinite mercy p̄serued the ladye, whiche in shorte tyme after was brought to London to her mother.

In

In this tyme the kyng drawyng nighe to London, was there accepted of his citezens streight after his comyng mooste royally, and of all parties saluted after the mooste louyng fasshon that thei could deuise, geuyng thanks to God with solempne procession, for that he had sent theim a kyng to gouerne the realme, whiche befoze was ruled by a cruell and hatefull tiraunt.

After this gratulacion and thankefgeuyng, the kyng at a daie appoynted assembled his counsaill to thend he might mary þe lady Elizabeth, thowhe the whiche mariage aswel the nobilite as comons of the realme wer brought in good hope þe al thynges should be redressed & an end made of al sedicio and strief for euer. And at this parliament holden and kept at Westminster he was created kyng the

Daie of October, in the yere of our Lorde a thousande foure hundred foure skore and sixe, whiche kyngdome he enioyed as of God apoynted for as menne reporte aboute seuen hundred foure skore and seuentene yeres past, it was reueled too Cadwalader laste kyng of Britones that his progeny should beare rule and dominion again. And the rather also thei did beleue it because that kyng Henry the sixte did forsaie the same. Therefore he beeyng thus proclaimed as true inheritour of the croune, and at the same parliamente created kyng did firste cause too bee published that all suche should be pardoned that would submit themselves to his grace, and as faithfull people dooe too hym due allegiaunce, and the other that absented themselves, to bee taken as rebelles and traytours. After the whiche proclamation heard, many that wer

King Henry

in hold and sanctuaries, came for pardon and safety of life too hym, whiche persones so submytting them selves wer pardoned and enhaūced to honoz, euey man after his owne deserte as the kyng and his counsaill thought beste. And first considering his chief frendes and niegh kynsemen, made Gaspar his vncle duke of Bedford, sir Thomas Stanley knight erle of Darby, Giles Dabney, sir Robert Wiloughby, and Robert Brooke lordes, and Edward eldest sonne too the duke of Buckyngham, he restored wholy to all that kyng Richard had depriued hym of, at what tyme he with other wer banished. Also al actes and statutes stablISHED & confirmed by Richard as was thought expediet and verie necessary at that tyme for the publique weale, wer by hym abandoned and infringed euey one. After these thynges doen, he prouided with all celerite & expedition to redeme the lord Marques Dorset, and Ihon Burscher, whom he had lefte at Paris as a pledge and suretye for certain money that he had borowed there, and Iho bishop of Ely for like debte out of flaunders. Furthermore, to thende that his realme might bee in a better staie, he commaūded that if any manne had iniury shewed at any tyme, the same person should put vp his matter to hym, of who he should bothe haue and finde redress. And for these matters and causes to bee hearde, he made of his counsaill the erle of Orenford, the duke of Bedford, the erle of Darby, the lord Straunge with his sonne and Willian his brother his chief chamberlain, the lord Brooke chief steward, and lord graund master of his house, Renoulde Beye, Ihon Dorset bishop

bishoppe of Ely, Richard fore, Thon Dinham, whom after he made treasourer of Englande, Giles Dabene, Richard Gildford, lord Cheney, Richard Tunstall, Richard Egecombe, Thomas Louell, Edward Bonynge, with other wise menne, as Richard Ap Thomas a Welshman, as well circumspecte as wise, Morgane Kydwell, lord Gave Marques Dorset, lord Talbot, erle of Shrewesbury, Thon Risley, lord Thomas erle of Ormonde, an Irishmanne, Henry Warney, Wyllyam Sape, Wyllyam Ody, Gilbert Talbot, Wyllyam Wall, Thomas Tropes, Richard Raufaute capitaine of Caleis, Robert Poynte, James Hubert, Charles Somerset, Thomas Hawarde erle of Surrey, a manne of wysedome, grauitee, and constantnesse mooste commendable. The erle of Essex descendyng of an high and noble parentage, lord Wyllyam Blunte, Thon Burscher, Thon feneur, Peter Egecombe, Hewe Conuey, Thomas Cerell, sir Henry Wyat, Roberte Throgmorton, Thomas Brandon, sir Thon Wynkefelde, sir Edmonde Dudley, Edward Belknappe, Richard Hemson. Also bishoppes, Henry Deney bishoppe of Cauntorbury, Olpuer Kyng bishoppe of Bathe and Welles, Wyllyam Barons bishoppe of London that dyed shortly after he was bishoppe. And Wyllyam that succeeded nerte after. Henry archebishoppe of Cauntorbury, Richard of London, and Richard bishoppe of Norwiche.

When the kyng had taken these menne too bee of his counsaill for the wealthe of his realme, he married lady Elizabeth daughter to king Edward

Kyng Henry

as he had promised, for the whiche he had the her-
tes of many menne. So that afterward he had no
nede to feare the assaultes of any persones or the
coniuracions of rebelles. Neuerthelesse, considryng
the chaunce he had befoze, and the falshode that is
in many menne from their youthe, made pomen of
the garde for his body, the whiche he firste of all
Englishe kynges caused to bee, & as it is thought
he did take it of the frenche kyng. Also after this
he caused a parliament too bee had, wherein was
made and decreed certain lawes, actes and statu-
tes for the wealthe of his realme.

The garde
firste orde-
ned by king
Henry the
seuenth.

The swea-
tyng sick-
nesse.

In this yere a newe sicknesse did reigne, and y
so sore and painfull, as neuer was suffered befoze,
the whiche was called the burnyng sweate. And
this was so intollerable, that mene could not kepe
their beddes, but as lunatike persones and out of
their wittes ran about naked, so that none almost
escaped that wer infected therewith. At the length
after the greate death of many a thousand manne
thei learned a presente remedy for the same discaise
that is, if he wer sicke of that sweate in y daie, that
he should streight lie doune with his clothes & ve-
stures, if in y nighte, that he should not rise for the
space of. xiiii. houres, and eate no meate at all, if
he could forbere, and drinke as litle as he might.

This discaise reigned throughout al Englande
whereof also ensued a plague, as a token, and as
the people iudged, a plain arguente that kyng
Henry should neuer bec out of feare and dreade of
some mischaunce, seyng that he was in suche great
veracion at the sedicious tumulte that was risen
at the clainyng of the croune.

When

When all thynges wer apeaced in London and ordered after his owne minde, he rode Northward in progresse to pacifie al his realme, and especially those partes where the firste commocion was, and where also were priuy and cloked frendes of his aduersaries. But because it was nigh Easter, he toke his waie to Lincolne, and there taryng was certified that the lord Louell and Hufrey Stafford wer gone from the Sanctuary in Colchester, but to what place or whether, no manne could tell: whiche message the kyng litle regardyng, wente furthe as he apointed to Yorke. And whē he came there, it was shewed hym that the lord Louel was at hand with a strong power of menne, and would inuade the citee: also that the saied lord Stafford and his brother were in Gloucester, and there had made an insurreccion, and set menne on euery part to defende the gates and walles of the citee.

The commocion made by the lord Louell and lord Stafford.

At the firste hearyng of this, the kyng was but litle moued, but after that he was certified by the letters of his frendes that it was trewe, he was in greate feare, for that he had neither an armie prepared, nor harneis for them: but because the matter required haste, least that by long taryng, his aduersaries power might bee encreased and multiplied, he commaunded the duke of Bedforde to mete them with thre thousand menne, whiche wer harnessed but barely, for their beste plates wer for the moste part lether: And he hymself in the meane tyme would gather vp an hoste, where he might in euery place. The duke hauyng his menne nigh to the tentes of his enemies, consulted with certain of his compaignie, by what waie he might trayne them.

theim to peace, without bloud shedyng. After the whiche deliberacion and aduiselemente had, it was decreed that certain should proclame openly, that al thei should haue their pardone, that would leue battaill. The whiche proclamaciō auailed muche, for the lord Louel, either for some feare, or mistrust that he had in his people, or fearyng himself of his owne behalfe, fled priuely in a night from his compaigny, to Lankeleshire and there remained a space with sir Thomas Broughton knight. And whē his armie had knowledge therof, thei also submittynge theim selves all to the duke, asked pardon for their heinous offence. The lord Stafford also hearyng this, was in a greate agony, and for feare did take sanctuary at Colname twoo miles from Abindō. But because that sanctuary was not a defence for traitours, he was taken frō that place and behedded, & his brother was perdoned because he was thought not to haue dooen it of his owne will, but through the counsaill & perswasion of his brother.

After this businesse was allwaged & Yorkeshire set in peace & quietnes, the kyng went to London, and shortly after hē to Winchester, where the quene his wife, was deliuered of a prince called Arthure, and frō Winchester he returned again to London.

Some after it chaunled that one sir Richarde Simond priest, bozne by nature to bee a traitoure and sedicious person, and yet well learned, had a child called Lambert Simenell to bee his scholar by whom he inuented this crafte and disceate that he would make the childe kyng of Englande and hym self archebishop, or some high potestate in the realme, for he knewe verely, that many menne sup-
posed

posed kyng Edward his children to bee fled into some straunge place, and that Edward the erle of Warwike, sonne to y^e Duke of Clarence either was or should bee put to death shortly. And to thende he might the better byng his purpose aboute, he taught the childe bothe learnyng & good maners, and also to order hym self, as one linially descen- dyng from a highe progeny. Some after, the ru- mours was, that the young erle of Warwike was ded in prisone. And when the priest hearde of this, intendyng thereby to byng his matters aboute, chaunged the childes name and called hym Ed- ward, after the young erle of Warwike, the whi- che were bothe of one age, and then sailed into Irelande, there openyng his mynde to certain of the nobilitie, whom he knewe to beare but litle fa- voure to kyng Henry, wher he was promised aide of the lord Gerardyne chauncelloure of all that countree, and all that he could doo. Whiche lord firste callyng all his frendes and louers together desired their help in restoryng the yong erle to his heritage. And did sende certain into Englande to desire thaim that wer kyng Richardes frendes to continue in their loue and faithfulnessse towarde hym, and helpe his nephewes child to his right.

And that his power might bee the stronger too- uercome his enemies, he desired the lady Mar- garet sister to kyng Edward, and wife to the Duke of Burgodi, to further his purpose with her help, whiche lady beyng then in Flaunders, promised hym by the messaungers, that she would not onely maintain his intente with large money and sub- stance, but with all the labour & paines that she might

Kyng Henry

might occasion other, to be of the same conspiracy.

When king Henry was certified of this, he was sore greued, that by the meanes of suche a miscreant person, so greate sedicion should bee, neuerthelesse, the kyng considering that it should bee to the destruccion of many menne, if that he should fighte with his enemies in open feelde, called his counsaill together at the Charter house beside Richemonde, and there consulted to pacifie this matter without any moze disturbaunce. Where first it was decreed, that thei should bee pardoned for their offences and treasons lately committed, whiche hath from that tyme, bozne theim selves by right towardes their kyng, least that sir Thomas Broughton whiche kepte the lord Louell from the kyng a greate tyme, with other despering of their pardon should haue made some sodayne insurreccion against hym. Furthermoze, that menne should not thynke, but that the duke of Clarence was in England, it was appointed that he should shewe hym self abroad, whereby the opinion that he was in Irelande mighte bee frustrate, and accounted as a lye. Also it was further determined that the lady Elizabeth wife to kyng Edward the fourthe should lose all her landes, because she had submitted her self and her daughters wholly to the handes of kyng Richard, contrary to the promise made to the lordes and nobles, whiche at her desire lefte all that thei had in Englande and fled to kyng Henry in Britayne, and there did sweare hym to mary her eldest daughter, as she wylled them to dooe.

But her purpose did not frame as (God would) this

this quene buylded a College in Cambrige, and gaue landes to the mainteignyng of thesame whiche at this houre is called the quenes College.

When this orde and determinacio of the kyng was ended, he went to London, and the nexte son-daie folowynge he caused the young erle too bee brought out of the Toure through the stretes to Paules. And there to shewe hymself to euery body and talke with the chief and noble menne that wer thought to haue conspired against kyng Henry, for this cause that thei mighte perceiue the Irishe men to moue battail vnadvisedly, and cause strief vpon no iuste occasion. Howbeit, all this nothyng auailed, for the erle of Lincolne, the duke of Suffolkes sonne, and nephew to kyng Edward, could not suffer kyng Henry thus to reigne, but as a traitoure sailed into Flaunders to the lady Margarete, takynge with hym sir Thomas Broughton, with certain other, where also the lord Louel landed two or thre daies before.

And there thei beeyng all together, determined that the erle of Lincolne and the lord Louel should go to Ireland, and there attend vpon the counterfette erle, and byynge hym to Englande with all the power thei might against kyng Henry.

So that if their dooyng had good successe, that then the foresaied Lambarte (misnamed the erle) should by the consente of the counsaill bee deposed and the true erle to dee deliuered out of prison and enherite his right, and iuste title of his dominion. But the kyng, not mistrustynge any manne too bee so foolish hardy as to fight in suche a cause, or any so vndiscrete (especially of his realme) as to beleue
it.

Kyng Henry

it, did onely mynde the suppressyng of the Irishmenne, and their enterpryse to subdue. Yet hearyng that the erle of Lincolne with other were fled, and gone to his aduersaries, he caused the borders too bee diligently kepte that none other might escape or geue them socoure, and commyng to the abbay of saincte Edmondes Bury, it was certified that the lord Thomas Marques was come to excuse and purge hymself before him, for certain thynges that he was suspected, to whom the kyng did send therle of Orenford to take hym commyng, and conueigh hym to the Toure of London, for this cause that if he were his frende, as he was in deede, that he should not bee discontented to suffre a litle imprisonment for the saftie of his kyng, if he wer not his frende, there to tary that he might haue no damage or hurte by hym.

Martyn
Swart.

And so the kyng went furthe to Norwiche and taryng there Christmas daie, went after to Walsyngham, and from thence too Cambryge and so streight to London. In this tyme the erle of Lincolne, and the lord Louell had gotte aboute two thousande Germaines, with Martyne Swarte too bee their capitain, and so sailyng to Irelande came and made the forenamed Lambarte kyng of Englande at Deuelyng. And so with the greate multitude of Irishemen aswell naked and vnarmed persones, as other that the lord Gerardyne had vnder hym, they sailed into Englande, and landed for a purpose within a litle of Lancastre, trustyng there to bee aided of sir Thomas Broughton the chief autoure of this conspiracie.

The kyng not slepyng his matters, but mistrustyng

kyng that suche thynges shoulde chaunce sent certain knightes, through all the Easte parties to attend the comynge of his enemies, and gatherynge all his hoste together, went hym self to Couentre, where he beyng, it was certified hym that the erle of Lyncolne was landed at Lancastre with the newe kyng. Whom the kyng appointed to mete after the consent and agremente of his counsaill, and to go vpon them without any farther delaire laste that their power by long sufferance shoulde bee augmented and multiplied.

And so after suche aduiselement taken, he wente to Notyngham, and there by a litle woodde called Boures he pitched his tentes. To whom shortly after came the lord Talbot erle of Shrewesbury the lord Straunge, & lord Cheiney with a great armie of menne, and many other noble men, whose names here after ensue.

Raue Longforde	William Berpoyntes
Jhon Montgomery	Jhon Babington
Henry Vernone of Deke	William Bedill
Raue Shurley	Robert Brundell
Godfrey Folgehan	Jhon Harkham
Thomas Grisle	William Harbury
Edward Sutton	Edward Aborogh
Humfrey Stanley & an-	William Tirwite
other Humfrey Staley,	Jhon Hussey
William Hugton	Robert Shesilde
William Herpynge	William Newporte
Edward Stanope	Robert Dymeston
Geruase Clifton	Thomas Tempest
Bryan Stapulton	William Kniuct
Henry Wyloughby	Henry Willapbet

Ep. l.

Lorde

Kyng Henry

Lorde Edward Hastyng	Robert Cotton
ges. Ihon Digby	Ihon Sainct Ihon
Simō Digby Haryngtō	Ihon Wozdant
Richard Sachenerell	Thomas Terell
Ihon Willers	Ihon Rainford
Edward fildyng	Robert Daynton
Thomas Boltenev	Robert Daniell
Nicholas Waur	Henry Warney
Thomas Grene	Edmond Arundell
Nicholas Giffard	Also ther came fro þ fer-
Edmond Lucy	dest partes of his realme
Edward Belknap	other noble men, as these
Robert Throgmorton	George Ogle
George Gray of Ruthin	Raufe Reuill
Guydo Wolstone	Richard Latemere
Thomas Findery	William Bulmere
Dauid Phillips	Ihon Langforde
Thomas Cheiney	William Norris
Ihō Reuill of Cortynbridge	& Ihon Williams.

The erle of Lincolne in the meane season went furth softely with his compaignie into Yorkeshire without hurte or discommoditee of any man that dwelt there aboute, trustyng partly therby, & partly also because he was well knownen and acquainted emong them, that he should get great aide and socour there. But when he perceiued very fewe or none to folowe hym, and that he could not (seeyng his enemies wer so nigh hāde and he also so far entred) in safegard with his hosts returned backward yet he thought it best to abide and tast the chaunce of battaill, & so muche the rather, because he sawe Henry within two yeres before accompaigned but with a fewe and smal sort of souldiours ouercame

kyng

kyng Richard whiche brought with hym a greate hoste of well armed men. Wherfore he, beyng now in a great hope of victoꝝ, toke his iourney thence toward Newmarke, there to set his souldiours in a-
raie and met the kyng, who he knewe well inough not to bee paste two daies iourney from hym. But befoze he could come thether, kyng Henry whiche was surely certified of all thynges that he did or wēt about, came to Newmarke a litle befoze the euen that thei should fight on the morow, other wise the therle looked for: and there taryng not long, wente furth thre miles ferther and set his tentes and taried all nighte. Of whose commyng although the erle knewe, yet he wēt furth lustely of his iourney and came y night to a village nigh to his enemies whiche is called Stoke, & there pitched his tētes.

Stoke feld

The next daie, the kyng so sone as he had set his souldiours in due orde and araie, went forwarde with al speede to the place where the erle with all his laie. To the whiche place, whē he was come, & had appointed the feld, whiche was moſte mete for the battaill to bee fought in, by & by he gaue place for his enemies to come furthe and prouoked them to battaill. But as ready as he was to prouoke, so readye wer thei of their owne corage to come furthe: so that of bothe partes thei ran to battail & fought moſte egerly, in whiche conflicte it did euidently appere that the Germaines whiche wer set in the forwarde, whose capitain was Martyne Swart, wer nothyng woꝛse in manlyneſſe and chualry (whiche thei gotte chiefly by daie ly and long exercise) then the Engliſhemen. And the Irishemen although thei fought very lustely, yet by the reason that the

Kyng Henry

were not harnesse (accordyng to their fastion and custome) were discomfited and beate doune bothe moze in numbre, and soner then all the other. Yet was this battaill so earnestly, and boldly foughte for a while of bothe partes, that it could not bee well discerned to whiche side the victoꝝ would inclync. But at the laste, the kynges forwarde whiche there abode all ieoperdie, so lustely and coragiouſlie ran vpon their enemies, that thei wer not able to resist oꝝ abide their power: so that al aswel Germaines as Irishemen wer there slain oꝝ els made to fle, of the whiche none at al could escape awaie. Whiche battaill, when it was thus dooen, all men might se of what boldnesse and audacitie these rebellions wer. For their capitaines Jho erle of Lincolne, Fraunces Louell, Thomas Broughton, Martyn Swarte, and Thomas Gerardyne neuer gaue backe one foote but were slain all in the same place where thei began firste to fight. There wer killed at that battaill with their fiue capitaines spoken of euen now of that parte about foure thousand. Of the kynges parte there wer not half of theim whiche fought in the forewarde slain.

Then was Lambert the child whiche was falsly reported to bee the dukes sonne of Clarence, and his master sir Richard Simonde prieste, bothe taken, but neither of theim putte to deathe, because Lambert was yet but a child and did seme to dooe that, moze by compulsion of his master then of his owne will, and the other was a prieste whiche for his default was cast into perpetuall prison. But this Lambert was taken into the kynges kechyn and after was made one of the kynges faueners
and

and is yet a liue. And thus was al that Margaret went about at this tyme, turned to naught and to none effect, whiche thyng when she heard tell of in Flaunders, she was very sorow at the herte & made great mone. And yet could she not be cōtēt, but immediately after, inuēt another thyng to bere & trouble kyng Henry, as it shal bee shewed here after.

Kyng Henry when he had all thynges brought thus to passe, and vtterly vanquished these his enemies, thought hymself at one tyme deliuered frō twoo euilles together, that is to saie, from both: feare that was present, and also that was to come. For it was not to be thought that thei whiche w^{re} so fewe in numb^{re} durste bee so bolde to entre into the realme & make battaill against the kyng v^{hō} thei knewe well inough would byyng with hym a greate and well armed hoste, but that thei had other felowes of thesame cōiuracion whiche would mete and aide them all that thei could in y^ere and place conuenient. Therefore when the kyng sawe the hoste of his enemies manifestly befo^{re} his pies he commaunded that no manne shauld kill the erle of Lyncolne, but that he shoulde bee broughte to hym aliue, to the entente that h^e mighte shewe and bewraie all the other whiche w^{re} of that conspiracie. But the souldiours would not do p^r, least the sauyng of hym, shoulde bee the destruccion (as it shoulde haue been in deede) of many other. This battaill was fought the yere of our lo^rde. M. cccc. lxxx. and the seconde yere of this kyng Henry his feigne. In p^r whiche yere also Thomas Burschere Archebischoppe of Cauntorbury died, into whose roume succeded, Jhon Morton late bishop of Ely,

Kyng Henry

whō Alexander of þe name the first biſhop of Roma
made Cardinall. Now to retorne to my purpoſe.

After this the kyng, when he had gathered all
the praies and ſpoyles together, and had buried
thein that there wer ſlain, went furth to Lincolne
and there taried thre daies, and had euery daie one
proceſſion to thake God almighty that he had the
ouerhande of his enemies. And incontinently ſent
his banner to Wallyngham to be conſecrat to our
Lady, there to bee kept for a perpetuall monumēt
of victorie. Then did he executiō of ſuche rebelli-
ons as wer there taken, and ſhortely after toke his
iourney furt he to Yorke, and there likewise ſuche
as were founde gyltpe did he puniſhe ſtraightlye.
When all this was dooen, he went vnto Newca-
ſtle, and from thence ſent into Scotlande Richard
fore whiche not long before was made biſhoppe
of Exeter, and Richard Egecombe knight as am-
baſſadours to kyng James for a league of peace.
For this kyng Henry thought it a greate pleaſure
and commoditee, to bee in peace and concord with
kynges and gouernours whiche laie aboute this
his realme, and ſpecially and before all other with
kyng James, becauſe þe there no rebellions might
triſte (whiche otherwiſe perhaunce would haue
trufte) to haue aide or ſuccoure at his hande: ſo
that thereby there durſt none again take weapon
againſt hym. The ambaſſadours, when they wer
come into Scotlāde to the kyng, wer of hym bothe
gently and after the moſte louyng faſſion receiued
and heard, and then did he plainly declare and o-
pen to, thein that he hym ſelf loued kyng Henry
and his, no manne better; but that the moſte parte
of

of his Scottes and subiectes could in no case agree with the Englishe menne. Wherefore, excepte that he should offende or displease them, he desired the legates to bee cōtent with truce for seuen yeres in p̄cesse, but in dede he saied, that peace betwene them on his parte should neuer bee broken, and or euer those seuen yeres should bee passed, that he would geue truce for seuen yeres longer: so that kyng Henry and he would euer bee in peace and moste assured amitee. And this did kyng James, because he knew that no facte of his people, should bee allowed. When the ambassadours heard this they tooke the yeres that wer offered them, as concerning peace, and by and by returned home to kyng Henry again, and shewed hym all the matter in orde. With the whiche tidynge he was verie well contented.

Shortely after, the kyng departed thence towarde London, and in the waie at Leicester mette hym ambassadours from the frenche kyng whiche shewed him, that their kyng Charles had recovered many townes and citces, whiche befor were possessed of kyng Maximilian, and that he kepte battaill now with fraunces the duke of Britain, because he kept and socoured in his dominion certain that wer traitours and rebellions aginst him of the whiche the chief was Lewes duke of Olyuance, and therefore he desired hym of his frendshippe and familiarite, that either he would helpe hym or els medle of neither party. But kyng Henry, although he had found muche frendship at the frenche kynges hād, yet for as muche as he spied wherof this stricf begā, with this message was not

Kyng Henry

well contente. For the cause that the Frenchemen toke battaill, was because they sawe the Duke was an old man & had neuer a child, & thereby that they might bring that dukedome into their subteccion.

When kyng Henry perceiued this, and also how louyng the Britaines had been euer to Englande, and finally remembred the tēdre loue whiche was betwene the Duke and hym, thoughte it beste, if nede wer, to help the Britaines. Yet for as muche as he had founde the frenche kyng verie kynd in tymes past, and had partely by his help recouered his kyngdome, he was verie lothe to medle: in so muche that he could not well tell what was best in this matter to bee dooen. But at the laste he fully purposed, if necessitee should require, to helpe the duke in al that he might. Yet least he should make of his high frende his extreme enemy, his answer was to the ambassadours, that he did intende to make their kyng & the duke frendes again. Wherefore as sone as the frenche kynges ambassadours wer dismissed, he sent on message Christopher Urswicke to Charles the frenche kyng. Firste to certify hym, that he was very glad of the victory that he had bpō Maximilian, secondarely what tumulte and insurreccion was made here in Englande, thirdly and especially to desire him to bee at one again with the duke of Britain. And then he commaunded this Urswicke, that if the frenche kyng should bee so contente, to go furthe immediately to the duke, and desire hym likewise of the same.

But when the kyng was come again to London, there was ioye & mirth for the victory that he had on euery side. For not only the king, but also euery
one

one of his cleyes reioysed verie muche. Wherefore the kynge shewed hymself bothe very humaine and courteous toward all men, & also rewarded al that toke paines in that battaill moste boūtefully. And not long after deliuered lord Thomas Marques out of the Toure, and laued hym verie well.

In the meane season Christopher Arswicke was come too the frenche kynge, and of hym, after the moste louyng fassion that could bee, receiued. And as soone as he had shewed his message, the kynge shewed hymself to bee therewith verie well pleased. Then went the ambassadour streight thence, as it was commaunded hym, into Bytain, and shewed the duke what kynge Henry would haue doen. But the duke (because hymself had been sicke a greate while, and thereby his memozy and witte was decayed) called to him to heare the message bothe Lewes the duke of Dyleaunce and other of his counsaill, whiche Lewes in nowise would haue any peace to bee made, but saied that it was moze mete that kynge Henry (seying he had found suche kyndnesse at the dukes hande, and Bytain was suche a good defence to Englande) to help to kepe battaill all that he might against the frenchemen. Then returned this Christofer again into fraunce, and declared to the kynge Charles what answere was made of the Bytaines, and shortly after came into Englande again. But still in the meane tyme, the frenche kynge went about busely to overcome the Bytaines, and þe moze he was nigh of his purpose, so muche the moze did he exhorte and desire kynge Henry to make peace betwene thein, wherefore he sent Bernarde Daubeney knight in al the

haste to kyng Henry to desire hym in any wise to
make soine ende of this contrauersy. And there vpon
the kyng beeyng desirous of the same, chose
three orators, the Abbot of Abindon, Ihon Lillie
the bishop of Boues collectour and Richard Tō-
stall a knight and a verie wise manne, to go firste
to the frenche kyng, and then to the duke to make
amitie and frendship again betwene thei. But o-
uer these ambassadours proceded on their iour-
ney, Ihon Lillie fell sicke of the gout: therfore for
hym was chosen Christofer Urwicke, and thei to-
gether went (as thei wer commaunded) first into
Fraunce to the kyng, and thence without delaie in-
to Britain. But fraunces duke in no case would
take suche condicions as wer there offered, where-
fore thei came backe again into fraunce without
their purpose, and there taryng, signified to kyng
Henry by their letters all that was dooen. But of
their letters came to the kynges handes, Edward
Wooduile, a bolde champion came to him and de-
sired very earnestly that he might haue an hoste of
menne to helpe the Britaines, and leaste it should
cause any dissencion betwene the frenche kyng and
hym, he saied that he would go pruely and with-
out a pasporte, to the entent it might bee thought
that he stole out of the lande. But the kyng, for as
much as he trusted that peace should bee made,
would in no wise graunte his petition. Wherefore
this Edward wente streight into the Ile Aeches,
whiche was in his domination, and there so sone
as he had gathered his men together about foure
hundred sailed ouer to the Britaines, and ioyued
hymself with thei against the frenchemen, whi-
che

the thyng when it was known in Fraunce, made
the ambassadours greatly afraid of their lifes.
But whyles they were in this feare, and the frenche
men thought it dooen maliciously of kyng Henry,
there came other Ambassadours from hym to the
frenche kyng, certifying hym and declaring (by
moste euident tokens) that it was nothing in dede
as it was thought to haue been. To the whiche
message, albeit the kyng had litle credence, yet he
made as though he had not been angrie at al. So
the ambassadours renewed peace betwene their
kyng & hym for. xii. monethes and returned home
again, and shewed the kyng al suche thynges that
they had either heard or seen there, wherof he ga-
thered that the frenche menne did nothing lesse
entende then to haue peace made. Wherfore with-
out delaie he called a parliamente and there con-
sulted of the aydynge of the Britaines: then of the
expence that should bee therein made, and after of
other matters.

And as sone as the parliament was broken by
he caused musters to be taken in euery toune tho-
roweout his realme. Yet leaste peradventure he
might seme willingly to breake the amitee whiche
was betwene the frenche kyng and hym, he sente
Ambassadours into Fraunce to certifie the kyng
that of late he had kept a parliament, & there that
it pleased all the nobles that he should send help to
the Britaines, because they at all tymes had dooen
more benefites to Englande then all other naciōs
and therefore that he should either leaue of battaill
or els that he should not bee greued if he did obey
the myndes of his lordes and prelates, and yet
that

Kyng Henry

that he would promise hym this one thyng, that he should medle with hym no lenger then he was in Britain and kepe battaill vpon them. With these commaundementes þe ambassadoures went furthe and declared too the frenche kyng all the mynde and will of their kyng whiche thyng he litle cared for, and thought as it came to passe in dede, that the Englishemen there could litle auaile.

In the meane season the Britaines fought one feld at a place called saint Albones and ther sped verie ciuel. For of theim Lewes Duke of Orleans with many mo wer take, and Edward Wooduille, James Galeot an Italian and a verie good warrier, with diuerse other noble menne slain. Whiche thyng when kyng Henry heard tel of, he thynkyng it tyme to make haste, sent spedely Robert Brooke lorde, Ihon Cheiny, Ihon Hidelton, Raufc of Helton, Richard Corbet, Thomas Leighton, Richard Lacon, and Edmond Cornewell, all lusty capitaines with eight thousand well armed menne to the Britaines to helpe theim in their nede, whiche by reason the wind serued theim, came thether so sone as thei could desire. But when the frenche menne knewe of their comyng (whom they knewe so long as thei wer freshe and lusty too bee in a maner inuincible) at the first wer blanke all, and durst scarcely looke out of their tentes, but afterwarde trustyng that thei might wery theim, thei went many of theim together into diuerse places, and kepte many bikerynge with the Englishe menne, but thei theim selves euer bare the worste awaie, howsoeuer the Englishe menne sped, thei sped naught. While thei this kynde of warre did exercise, the
Duke

duke fraunces died, and then was all dashed. For the chief rulers of the Britaines beeyng some of them corrupted with money, and some sturred bp with ambition, fell into deuision among theinselves, and senied nomoze to endeuour to defend their common weale, but rather to destroye and vtterly extinguishe it. Whiche thyng the Englishe menne perceiuyng, & also sufferiung muche cold, wer compelled of necessitee within fiue monethes that thei went thether, to come backe again into Englande.

Then Charles the frenche kyng married Anne the dukes daughter, and gatte all Britain by that meanes into his handes. But of this it shalbee spoken moze here after.

It was decreed here in Englande befoze there wer any souldiours sent into Britain, that for the expence of that warre, euery manne should paie as thei were able, a tribute, whiche the moste parte of theim that dwelte in the bishoprike of Duresme and Yorkeshire, did vtterly refuse to paie, & complained of the matter to their lord the erle of Northumberland. And he immediatly signified to the kyng by his letters that the people did greatly lament and was sozr sayiung, that thei wer neuer put to so muche cost, as thei had been of late daies, and now that there was so muche required of theim, that neither thei wer able to paie so greate a sune, nor would paie it. Yet for all that the kyng commaunded the erle to get it on theim and make them paie it whether thei would or not, least peraduenture it might be a cause, that if at any thyme a tribute again should bee required of the, to make an insurreccion. Whiche thyng whē the people heard of,

The mur-
dering of
the erle of
Northum-
berlande.

of, by and by thei ran vnto therle and as the autors
of the tribute payng killed hym out of hand. And
when thei had so dooen, thei chose Ihon Egremou
knight a very sedicious persō to be their capitain
and so arraied them selves, and wente against the
kyng, making cries in euery toun, that thei came
to fight for no nother cause but to defend the com-
mon libertie.

But when the matter should come too blowes
thei waxed cold all the sorte of them, and euery one
wished that this tumultee were retracted whiche
was now alreedy begon, so that at the conclusion
not one scarcely scaped without his great discom-
modite. For the kyng allone as he heard of this in-
surreccio, went doune with an hoste to York where
of these slaues & traitours beyng greatly afraied
fled some hether and some thether and durst not a-
bide and sustain the power of the kyng his armie.
Wherefore thei wer sone take & punished greuou-
sely, accordyng to their deseruyng euery one of the
But Iho Egremot whiche was their capitain fled
into Flaunders to Margaret of who we spake before

And the kyng so sone as this businesse was
quenched, toke his iourney backe again vnto Lon-
don & committed the tribute whiche was in York
and aboute York too bee taken vp, wholly too Ri-
chard Constall. And this was the yere of our lord
a thousand foure hundred foure skore and ten and
the fourth yere of the reigne of this kyng Henry.

The fourth
yere of
kyng Henry
the seventh

And in this yere also the kyng of Scottes was
soe vexed. For his subiectes rose against hym and
made his sonne James whiche was as yet but a
child, their capitain. Wherefore he sent to the kyng
of

of Englande, to the frenche kyng, & to the bishop
 of Rome Innocencius, too desire therein too make
 some end of this ciuile battaill and cōtencion whi-
 che was betwene his people and hym. Whiche af-
 terwarde sent their ambassadours as thei wer de-
 sired, but all in vain. For the rude sorte would ne-
 des fighte onlesse he would resigne his crowne,
 wherefore shortly after, thei foughte, and in that
 battaill killed þe kyng and gaue his sonne James
 whichc was the fourthe of that name the crowne.

The kyng
 of Scottes
 slain of his
 subiectes.

But the bishop of Romes legate Hadrian came
 to late. For whiles he was in England with kyng
 Henry, worde came that the kyng of Scottes was
 slain in battaill & his sonne made kyng. And ther-
 fore he taried here in Englad for a space, and was
 verie muche made of, and highly commended too
 the kyng by Jhon Morton archebishop of Can-
 tobury. Whereby he came into so highe fauoure
 with kyng Henry, that he made hym bishoppe of
 Herford, and shortly after, gaue hym the bishop-
 prike bothe of Welles and Bathe. And not long
 after he returned with these honoures too Rome,
 and there of Alexander was made Cardinall.

There began also of freshe, certain businesse as
 concernyng Brittain befoze this geare was appea-
 sed: whichc was, that Marimilian beeyng at that
 tyme without a wife, would haue married the Duke
 of Brittaines daughter, and had one that wolwed
 for hym, whichc ladye promysyng hym faithe and
 truth, to the entent that she might not go from her
 woorde, he vled this waie with her: when she went
 to her bed the nigh taster, as to þe bed of wedlocke
 the wower that was hired, put one of his feete into
 the

Kyng Henry

the bed to the knee in the sight and compaignie of many noble matrons and ladies, for a token and testimony that the mariage was consummate, and thei twoo as manne & wife. But this did nothyng auaille, for Charles the frenche kyng was desirous to mary her and hearyng that Maximilian was sure to her, did the moze busely sette vpon the Britaines, to the entent he mighte bothe haue the lady and the countree also at his will, for he esteemed that mariage too bee of no strengthe or force. Neuerthelesse, he feared kyng Henry muche, least that he would stop his purpose, whiche kyng had made a legue, and Ferdinande also the kyng of Spain, had made thesame with the Britaines, to assist them in all their leoperdes and perelles that should chaunce to them by fozen countrees, wherefore he sent in all poste hast fraunces Lucemburgense, Charles Marignane and Robert Gaguine to kyng Henry for a peace to bee confirmed and had desirynge hym, that their kyng mighte ordeine the mariage of the lady Anne as were thoughte beste without any lette or hinderaunce of it by hym, but kyng Henry would not agree to thein, that y lady should bee married too hym, considerynge she was made sure to the king Maximilian, for that it was against all right and lawe bothe of God & manne. Albeit the kyng would gladly make a peace betwene thein bothe, and so demissynge the kyng his Ambassadoures with a large and ample rewarde, sente Thomas Goldstone abbot of Cauntorbury and the lord Thomas of Ormonde ambassadoures streight after them.

In this meane space, Alexander bishop of Rome
the

the sixt of that name after Innocēcius sent the bi-
shop of Concordienſe legate to the frenche kyng
for certayne matters, and among other for a peace
and vnitee to be confederate betwixte him & kyng
Henrye, the whiche when he had easely obteyned,
he came to England and there beyng entertayned
most royally of the kyng, had his purpose and de-
ſire of him. The Engliſhe ambaffado : rs then be-
yng with the frenche kyng, purpoſed to haue a
peace concluded, whiche ſpyt demaunded certayne
chyngeſ of the kyng ere that it ſhould be made, al-
beit the kyng woulde graunt them nothynge, and
was ſore moued with their request & askynge. So
that ſhortly after, the frenche kyng ſent to the no-
ble men of Britayn great giſtes and rewardes to
the entent they might moue the lady Anne to geue
her trueth to him, and alſo ſente to her ſelfe many
pryncely giſtes & tokens, that ſhe woulde bear loue
to him. And that ſhe might not ſcare but that ſhe
might lawfully mary to him, certified her that the
promiſe was of none effecte that ſhe had geuen to
Maximilian for that it was geuen and made with-
out his conſent whiche had the gouernaunce and
dominion ouer all the countre. And this was the
cauſe that no con corde or peace could be kept be-
twixt them. And where as that the kyng had take
Maximiliāſ daughter lady Margarete to be his
wyfe, he ſayd that it might be lawfully diſſolued
becauſe the ladye was vnder age, and not rype to
be married. This lady Anne of Britayne through
the perſuacion of many noble men of that countre
was contented to be his wiſe & lady. And when the
kyng was certified of this, he haſtened the mary-

age with al the expedicion & celeritee that he could
 So that the Englishe ambassadours returned a-
 gayne to their countree, and nothyng done oꝝ a-
 greed vpon in their matter. When the kyng was
 certified of this by his ambassadours, he purposed
 to make battaile against him, and to reuenge the
 naughtie entent of his, with the swerde: & assem-
 blyng his counsaill together, shewed them the mat-
 ter and the iust cause he had to fight, desirynge the
 foꝝ the mayntenaunce of the same warres to helpe
 him with moncy: neuerthelesse that menne should
 not thynke it to be extoꝝte of them, he willed euery
 man to geue as muche and as lytle as he would,
 and them to be esteemed and taken as his most best
 and assured frendes that gaue the moost money.
 While this some was in gatherynge & pꝛeparaũce
 made foꝝ battaile, Maximilian the kyng warred
 soꝝe with the frenchemen, whiche kyng was take
 alytle befoꝝe at a certayn bzunt & skymishe made
 and cast in prison, after the whiche time kyng Hen-
 ry sent to him Giles Dabeneꝝ captaine of Calais
 to ayde him with thꝛe thousand harnessed men.
 At the length Maximilian hauynge the better had
 of the frenchemen, entended to reuenge him selfe
 of the frenche kyng, foꝝ that he had repudiate his
 doughter ladye Margarete, and taken to him as
 wyfe quene Anne, but because he was not fully a-
 ble of him selfe to susteyn that battail, he sent Ja-
 mes Contibalde ambassadour to kyng Henry foꝝ
 helpe, whiche James when he had done his mes-
 sage, the kyng promised that he would do foꝝ him
 al that he could in mainteinyng his warres.

In this tyme, Charles the frenche kyng married
 lady

lady Anne, chalengyng by this mariage the domi-
 nion and gouernaunce of the Britaynes. Mar-
 milian the king beyng certified of this, was great-
 ly moued, for that he did not onely forsake and re-
 pudiate his doughter ladye Margarete, but also
 receyued in mariage the ladye and quene Anne to
 his wyfe, and in this furyc he sent to kyng Henry
 desiryngh him to prepare an armye, for he would
 go vpon the frenchemen, and kepe open battaile
 with them, whiche kyng Henry gathered an hoost
 of men, and proclaymed battail in all his realme,
 after the whiche proclamacion there came to Lon-
 don an houghe army of men, with their capitaines,
 whiche hereafter ensue and folowe.

Richard Thomas Dye,
 with a great compaigny George erle of Kent.
 of Welshemen. Lorde Thomas Dozces
 The earle Thomas of Marques.
 Derbye. John Chepney.
 George erle of Shyrewes Gyles Dabener.
 burye. Richard Gylforde
 Thomas erle of Harun- John Raynsforth
 del. Edmonde duke of James Terel.
 Suffolke. John Sauage.
 Edward erle of Deuen- Thomas Barof Heltō.
 shyre w his noble yong Willjam Bulburey.
 sonne. Edward Stanley, with
 Thomas erle of Dymon other.

After that all this armye was araised, the kyng
 sent sir Christopher Urswycke, and sir John Ry-
 seley knightes to the kyng Marimilian, to cer-
 tifye him that they were all in a redynesse to kepe
 battaile

battaile when he would haue them. When they had done their message, they returned backe again to their kyng, certifying him, that Maximilian was so poore and nedy of money and men, that he could not be hable to susteyne any battaile, neuerthelesse his mynde & wyll was good, yf his power and habillitee had bene correspondent to it. The king after the receipt of these letters, was displeased much with him, albeit considering he had gone so farre in it, and had suche furniture of all thynges prepared, least that men should impute it to him as cowardnesse to faynt from battail, he proceeded furth toward Fraunce, and about the .vi. day of Septembze he laded at Calice, and there rested his armye. Where worde was brought to all the host (for they did not know of it before) that Maximilian could make no preparaunce for lacke of money. At the whiche they marveled greatly considering that he had such vilany shewed him not long before as the kyng of Fraunce had. Yet they were neuer discomfited at it, but lyke stoute and valiant warriors had great confidence in their owne power and strength, with whō the kyng of Fraunce (after that he perceyued it best for his profyte and ease) would gladly haue bene reconciled, although he had a redy host to fight against them and withstand their power. And especially he desired peace for this cause, that he might haue the loue of his neighbours, to the entent his realme might be in better sauegard & quietnes, when he should warre against Ferdinand kyng of Naples, at the desire of Ludouike Sfortia duke of Melayn, whiche at that present tyme dyd inuite him to it, wherfore he

dyd sende Philip Desquerd chiefe of Annonye to
desyre kyng Henry of peace, whiche Phillippe dyd
send the letters to him, befoze he came into the coun-
tree him selfe, wherein he signified that he would
take suche paynes in bryngyng his purpose about
that he would if it should so please his grace, re-
concile both him and their kyng to loue eche other
as they haue done heretofore, & sayd that it should
be for his honour to take the same condicion, whi-
che condicion if he would send certain of his capti-
taynes to mete with him in any parte of Fraunce,
and there to determine of it he should haue it ther
promised & hereafter duely to be perfourmed. The
kyng after he had red these letters, dyd sende the
bishop of Exeter, and Gyles Dabeney to the fore-
named Philip for peace to be agreed vpon and co-
cluded, the whiche after a space determined vpon
certayne condicions whiche hereafter shalbe she-
wed, that peace should be had on bothe parties.

When they were thus cōsultyng, the king hauing
his host at Caleis, remoued from that place to Bo-
nony, and there pitchyng his tentes besieged the
toun with all the power he might, whiche toun
because it was strongly defended and furnished
with al thinges necessary for warre, it could not be
ouercome without great labour, & befoze that he
either could or dyd ouercome any part of it, worde
was brought, that a peace was concluded & made,
which heard, as it was pleasure to þe Frenchemen,
so it was sorowe to þe Englishemen. For they cried
out of the kyng and sayd it was not for his hono-
so to do, but the kyng as a wyse man & moost pru-
dent prince, sayd it should be the death of many no-
ble

ble & puissaunt capitaynes if he should contynue
the same battaile, & therfore it might be to his soze
reproche, if it were in his power, not to tēde aswel
the health of his cōmons as his owne, whiche say-
yng dyd somewhat coole and pacifye their grieve.
And after this done, the kyng returned backe to
Calice, because it was inforēd him that one Ri-
chard that named him selfe the sonne of kyng Ed-
warde had made an insurreccion in Flaunders,
throughe the counsaile of lady Margaret the duchesse
to fight against him, whiche thyng, kyng Henry
consideryng dyd the more spedely hasten to cōclud
a peace. And the cōdicton of this peace to be made
was this, that the freche king should pay to king
Henry, a certayne sōme of monye, the whiche was
leuied by the ambassadours for the cost and char-
ges & the kyng was put to in that battail, & also
should perely for a certayne space pay or cause to
be payde to the kyng of England for a ful recom-
pēce. xxv. thousand crounes. The whiche Frenche
kyng after that beyng in warre with & Italyans,
payde the sayd tribute to the most noble prince &
our soueraigne lord kyng Henry the. viii. sonne
to kyng Henry the seuenth, for a full recompensa-
cion and frendshyp to be had for euer. This was
the yere of our Lorde a thousand fourc hundredeth
fourescore and thirtene, and the seuenth yere of his
reigne. Also in this inuadyng and beliegging of
Boleyne (whiche we spake of before) there was
none kyllled, sayyng onely sir John Sauage, whi-
che goyng out of his tent with sir John Ryseler,
was taken priuily ridyng about the walles of the
tūne, and there because he would not yelde was
slaine

flaine of the Frenchemen, albeit the other sir John
Rysely fled and escaped their daunger.

After this the kyng went frō Calice to England
again, and yet that he might not be without some
trouble or busyness, lady Margarete of Burgoyne
(whiche euer watched to do him a displeasure) per
ceyving that the erle with his company could not
haue suche successe in their busynesse as she would
haue wysshed thē, she inuēted a newe way to worke
treason against him. There was a certayne yong
man of Cornace, very beautiful & fayre of counte
naunce, & of a pregaunt wytte, whiche yong mā
was called Peter & surnamed Warbecke, and for
his cowardnes nickenamed of the Englishemen &
called Berkyn, whiche yong man trauallyng ma
ny countrees could speake many languages & for
his basenes of stocke & birth was knowen of none
almost. Therfore the duchess thinkyng this yong
mā to be mete whō she might feigne to be the duke
of York, and lonne to her brother kyng Edward,
kept him a certayne tyme with her priuely, and tel
lyng him what he should be, & he might the rather
persuade men to be the kynges sōne dyd send him
into Irelād, after what tyme she knewe that kyng
Henry had apointed to fight against the frenche
kyng, where he was honorably receyued & taken
of euery man as a prince, for whose right, they pro
mised all to fight, and healpe him in all that they
could. After this it came to the frenche kynges
eare that suche an one was in Ireland, for whom
the kyng dyd sende to see and caused him to bee
brought befoze him, and when he came into his
presence, the kyng accepted him gladly, and after

Kyng Henry

and after a princely fashon intertayned him. But after that he came in loue with the kyng of England, the sayd Charles dyd dimisse the pong man, and would no longer kepe him, least that some in-
cōueniēcie oꝛ cause of strif should chaūce through it. Wherfoꝛ the pong man went to flauunders a-
gaine to the ladye Margarete, whiche ladye dyd receiue him with suche gladnes, that she could not wel rule her selfe, and foꝛ this cause onely she dyd shewe her selfe so ioyfull & merye, that men might persuaide the selfe that this was Rycharde the kyn-
ges sonne, and byō that cause truely, men dyd the moze reuerence to the pong mā, & the moze firme-
ly beleue him to be the right heire & sonne to kyng Edward. Also after this rumoure blased aboꝛde, aswel in England, fraunce, as flauinders, ther be-
gāne great sedicion to spyng, and fyrst they that were long in sanctuary foꝛ the great offences that they had cōmytted, & other that were cast in pouer-
tie, gathered a compaigny of men & sayled ouer in-
to flauunders to the counterfayte Richard, other-
wysc named Peter, also many of the noble men cō-
spired together, & to the entent they might byng
their purpose wel about, they dyd send certayne to
the lady Margarete, to knowe when the same Ri-
chard might come cōueniently into England, that
they beyng certified of the same might the moze
easely receyue & byng him into the realme. So
that by the consent & agreement of them al, syꝛ Ro-
bert Clifford knight & Willham Barley were set
to shew al their myndes and aduice as cōcernyng
the newe found duke, to the duches Margarete.
Whō she dyd accept gladly, and persuaaded them,
that

that it was true that was published of Rycharde the duke, & straight vpon shewed them the same Peter, whiche was muche like Richard, praisynge his vertues and qualities that he had, wonderfully.

The sayd Robert, when he had sene the pong mā beleued surely that he was of the kynges bloode, and wrote to England to his companie & felowes of his conspiracie, that he knewe him to be the kynges sonne by his face and every proportion of his body. And when these letters came vnto Englad, the chiefe capitaynes of this busynesse dyd openly diuulgate and publishe, that it was true that was spoken & sayd abroad of the duke, but it was done by suche a crafte, that no man could tell who was the authoure of that rumoure.

When the kyng perceiued that many men dyd geue credence to his bayne fable, he thought best for his owne safegard to prouide a remedy for it, & also mistrustynge that some conspiracye had bene made because that syr Robert Clifford had fled priuely into Flaunders, commaunded certain knightes that were chosen and piked men of warre with a bonde of men to kepe the borders surely that no man might escape or layle ouer the sea without a pasporte or lycence geuen by him. Also that men might not cōtinue in the false persuacion and belefe that they had conceiued of the duke, he caused certayne spyes to serche in al the citees of Belgike to know of what progeny this misnamed Richard was, and to geue them high rewardes that would shewe the veritee and trueth of the same matter.

So that they sailynge into Fraunce, every manne dyd go into a contrarie quarter, and enquired diligently

ligently for him, and at the length, certayne of the
came to a toun called Cornace and ther were cer-
tified by the testymonie of many honeste men that
he came but of a lowe and course parentage, and
he was named Peter Warbecke, whiche thyng
also the kynges frendes certified him by their let-
ters and writynges to him moze playne and euy-
dently. Therfore when the kyng had knowen the
matter wholly, as wel by his frendes as by his spy-
es sent furth purposely for the same: he caused it
to be proclaymed openly as well in other regions
and countrees as in England that the disceyte and
deuclishe crafte might appeare euident to eue-
ry man. And fyrst he sent ambassadours to Philyp
the chiefe capitayne in Flaunders, and to his cou-
cel, because he was but of yong age, which were sir
Edward Bonynge knight, and sir William
Warrane priest and lawyer, that they might shew
evidently howe falsly the yong man hath vsurped
the name of Rycharde duke of Yorke whiche was
kylled with his brother Edward in the Towre of
London, at the commaundement and wyll of kyng
Rycharde his uncle, as euery man could testifie &
assure most surely.

Also that he was borne of a poore stocke, and
an obscure familie in Cornace, and there named
Perkyn Warbecke, and therfore that it would
please him and his counsell not to suffer themsel-
fes to be blinded or seduced with suche mere impo-
stures and craftie illusions, nor yet to ayde him at
any hande to cause sedicion or strife, considering
that he had no iuste tittle to the enherpyng of the
same. And that they would the rather be his fren-
des

des now, because that he healped Maximilian their kyng the yere before against the power and violencye of the frenchemen, where as he of him selfe was not able to resyst their might and strong power. When the Ambassadors had done their message, they were gently entertayned of him. and had their request, that he would not (for the loue that he ought vnto the kyng) no nor any of his counsaile helpe the same Perkyne any thyng at all.

Neuerthelesse, yf the ladye Margarete woulde persyst and contynue in her malycie towardes the kyng (whom the Ambassadour syr Wyllyam Warrame had reproued and checked soze, for bringyng bp of suche monsters and commune plagues, to the publike weale in his oration that he made vnto Philyppe and his counsaile) it was not in their power to withstande it, for because that she might do in her owne heritage all thynges at her owne wyll and pleasure. Whiche ladye entended fully to arme this Perkyne with a strong compaignye of men against kyng Henry.

After that kyng Henry dyd heare of this, he purposed to pacifye all this busynesse that was lyke to chaunce, by witte and policie: and streight dyd sende furth certayne spyes, whiche should fayne themselves to haue fledde vnto the duke, and by that meanes searche furth and knowe the whole intent of theyr coniuration, and after what waye they framed their matters.

Other also should promise a pardon and remission vnto syr Roberte Clyfforde, and Wyllyam Barley

Kyng Henry

Barley for their offence committed to the kyng.
And when they had so doone, many of them returned to Englande, and brought the names of certayne that were chiefe of the same conspiracye, other taried vntyll suche tyme that sir Robert Clifford came to Englande againe. And when the kyng had knowen the chier capitaynes of this tumulte by his spyes that were there with them, he caused al them to be attached & brought to Lodon before his presence, whole names were sir John Ratclyffe, sir Symon Monforde, sir Thomas Thwarte knyghtes, Wyllyam Dabeney, Robert Ratcliffe, Rycharde Lesey, with many other. Also certayne priestes & religious men, as sir Wyllyam Rycheford, & Thomas Boynes bothe freers of s. Dominikes order, sir Wyllyam Sutton, sir Wyllyam Urseley Deane of Poules, & Robert Laybourn other that were giltie of the same crime, hearyng that many of their company were taken, fled & did take sanctuary. And the other that were taken were condemned al of treason, of the whiche there was beheaded sir Symon Monford, sir Robert Ratcliffe lord Fitzwater, & Wyllyam Dabeney, as authours and chiefe capitaynes of this busynesse. The other were pardoned, & the priestes also for their order that they had taken. Also sir Robert Ratcliffe lord Fitzwater, was pardoned of his lyfe, but after that he came to Caleis, and there cast in prison, he was beheaded, because he corrupted the keepers w many promyses to haue escaped out of the same. Shortly after, sir Robert Clifford trusting to find fauoure & grace at the kynges hand, came to England, of whole comyng when the kyng was certified

tified he went streight to the Towre of London, & there taried til suche tyme that sir Robert Clifford came, whiche thyng he vsed vnder this pzetence, that if sir Robert Clifford had accused any man to him of that treason, that then euerye suche person might be called thether without any suspicion of any euil, and there streight to be cast in hold. But befoze I go any further, I wyl shew the opinion & many menne conceyued of the knightes goyng to Flaunders. Some men helde this opinion, that kyng Henry dyd sende him as a spyc to Flaunders, and therfoze he came the soner into his fauoure. Neuerthelesse, this is not like to be true by diuers reasons. Fyrst that it turned to the great infamy and hurt, both of him selfe and his frendes. Secondly that he was not in so great fauour with the kyng, as he had bene in tynes past for because that he was giltye in that part. Therfoze the sayd sir Robert nowe comyng to the kyng after his retourne into Englande, kneled mekely doune at his fecte, and desired pardon of his grace and after that beyng inquired of the comuracion & examyned who were the aucthours of this mischiefe, he pronounced and sayd that Willyam Standley whom the kyng made earle, was one of the chiefe: when he had so sayd, the kyng was greatly dismayed and greued, that he should offende; who he had made chiefe of his priuie chamber, considering also that he had founde great kyndnes hertofore at his hande, and that he did ouercome kyng Richard chiefly by hys helpe and meanes. So that the kyng could not be perswaded, that he was any suche offender, had not it bene shewed him after by manifest:

manifest tokens and apparent argumentes that it was true as he sayd. Whom the kyng then caused to be taken and examined of the matter, after the which examination he was proued to be an offender. Then the kyng doubtyng what to do with him, dyd consult and breath a lytle with himselfe, for he feared, that his brother lord Thomas by whom he had shewed great kyndnesse would take it greuously, also & yf he should remytte that faulte, other would abuse his lenitee, and trespasse more highly. Albeit, at the last he wylled that he should suffer for his offence, and so caused him to be beheaded. The cause that their loue (as men reporte) dyd chaunge into hatred was this. The lord William considering that he saued the kyng and brought him to this realme to be gouernour thought he should neuer be recompensed for his so doyng, and wher as the kyng also remembryng this benefyte, dyd make him his chiefe chamberlayne, and gaue him the highest promotions that he had, he lytle regarded them and looked for some greater rewarde, wherfore, the kyng perceiuyng that, was sore greued with him, and so they bothe dyd fal at debate and hatred eche with other.

Also at this tyme the kyng thought best to vse some asperite in correctyng the offices of his subiectes, because that some had taken suche heart & audacitee to them, that thei feared not to speake euill of his maiestie with inmost spiteful and contumelious wordes, trustyng euer that the fayned Richard duke of Yorke, now lately risen from death to life on Gods name, should clayme the croune, & enherite his counterfeted fathers possessions, and
when

when suche persons had suffered due punishment
 for their offences, other learning by their neigh-
 hours mischaunce to beware, dyd fro þe tyme beare
 them selves as true & faithful subiectes, & assysted
 him with al their power, at what tyme he required
 helpe of them. After the death of this Wyllyam
 Staley, Giles Dabenev was chosen & made chief
 chamberlayn. And now the kyng was in a good
 stay for his realme, sayng that Ireland was not
 wel wedded of the pernicious sede that was sowed
 by the yong mā Berkyn Warbecke and his secte.
 Wherfore, he sent sir Henry Denylate abbot of
 Lankton abbey thither, & made him chauncelour o-
 ver al that Ile & Edward Bonynge to scrche al pla-
 ces that the forenamed Berkyn was in, to punishe
 the extremely in the exāple of other, that were gil-
 tie of that cryme; but when they heard of this, they
 fled for the most part into woddes, & marishe pla-
 ces for the defence & safegard of the selves, there cō-
 sultynge to kepe open warre against him, whiche
 Edward after that he persued the many tymes, &
 could neuer try it with the because they were so dis-
 persed as foren & wyld people, he returned backe,
 and suspectynge that the earle of Kylbare was the
 occasyon of this, attached him at the counsaile of the
 erle his evil willers, and brought him as prisoner
 to England. Where when he was arraigned, & cer-
 tayne matters of treason layde to his charge, ad-
 vouched them all, & clerely quitted him selfe: whō the
 kyng dismissed, & sent him to Ireland there to be
 gouernour and captayne ouer them as he was be-
 fore. So that now the kyng beyng out of al feare
 of battayle, dyd take his progresse to Lanky-
 shyre

shyre, there to recreate his spirites and solace him
 selfe with his mother lady Margarete, wyfe and
 countesse to the erle of Darby. Yet when the kyng
 was thus delityng him selfe, Perkin Warbecke
 could not moderate or rule him selfe, although so
 many suffered and were putte to execucion for his
 mischief: but to proue again the chaunce of battail
 gathered a great armie of men as well prisoners,
 slaues, sanctuary men as other & came into Kent,
 because the wynde so serued, & ther caused certayn
 to land, and to enquire if the Kentishe men would
 beare with him; with whom the Kentishe men wor
 kyng guyles promysed that they would assist him
 if he & his company would land there. Albeit, the
 same Perkin fearyng that they meaned falshode
 and craft, would not descend him selfe, but cauled
 certayn of his souldiours to land, whiche persons
 beyng a pretye way from their shyppes, were soze
 beaten & put to flight, & many of the taken priso-
 ners & after were cōdemned to dye. Wherefore
 Perkin failyng of his purpose fled to flaunders, &
 there consulted with his freides vntyll suche tyme
 he had bene better prepared bothe of men & coun-
 sayle. The kyng hearyng that his enemies had
 made entraunce into his realme, left of his pgressse
 and purposed to go to Lōdon, but beyng certified
 the next day after, how wel thei had sped, cōtinued
 and wente furth of his pgressse, sendyng to them
 Rycharde Guilford, to geue thanks & p̄mise of a
 good turne herafter, for the good seruiue that they
 had done him in those tumultes and assaultes of
 his enemies. Also that they might not haue any ac-
 cesse herafter into thosc parties, the king cōmaun-
 ded

ded the lordes to bee defended strongly with but-
warres and other sure muniments and fortresses
of the whiche this same Berken beeyng certified,
hastened þ more to renew battail against the kyng
that he mighte not haue longer space throughe his
delaye, to dooe all these thynges for the defence of
his realme, and so came to Irelande with all his
armie, and there taryng a space, sailed to Scot-
lande for aide and succoure of kyng James, tru-
styng to finde grace at his hande, to whom he spake
after this maner. I thynke it is not vnknewen to
you moste noble kyng in what ruine the stocke of
kyng Edward the fourthe of that name is now of
late, whiche if you dooe not knowe, & it please your
grace so to take me I am his sonne, and by the po-
wer of god, preserved aliue at this houre from the
mightie hande of a tyrant. For my father when he
died, apointed his brother Richard duke of Glou-
cester to be our gouernour and protectour. Albeit
he was rather a destroyer of our progenye then a
maintainer of it, for he wyllyng to bee kyng hym-
self, and depriue vs of our right & title, commaun-
ded that we should bothe bee slain, and dispatched
out of this worlde. Therefore he hauyng then full
power to ordeyne vs at his wil, did cause my brother
to be destroyed, and because that he might be with-
out some parte of that offence, and not shewe hym-
self all a tyrant, he caused me to bee conueighed to
some straunge and forein countree, and there to be
desolate of all comforte and help. And so kyng Ri-
chard did holde his crowne by dispatchyng awaie
of vs twoo, so that I could not tel by the reason of
my tender age, what I was, vntill now of late that

Kyng Henry

myne auntelady Margaret beyng in Flaunders
did shewe me what I was, after she had scen me,
and to thentēt I might recouer again my fathers
possessiōs, she had geuen me for her power a bonde
of menne, willyng me that I should desire the help
of ceterne nacions & countrees. And so I am come
too you for succoure, whom as it is reported will
help at all tymes euery manne in his right: and in
case bec I shall finde you fauourable too me, you
shall bynde me and all myne, neuer to thynke our
selfes able too make you a mendes. When he had
thus saied., the kyng promised hym that it should
neuer repēt hym of his comyng to hym, and bad
hym to take a good herte, and after this the kyng
assemblyng his counsaill together, asked what thei
thought best in that matter, and whether any deli-
beracion should bee taken of it, or no. Too whom
some of theim that wer wisest, answered that it wer
foolishnesse to go ferder in suche a matter, cōside-
ryng that he was but a painted and feigned duke
and had no right too Englande. Other also saied
that it was for diuerse causes mooste profitable too
the cominē wealth, partly that this Darkyn, if his
matters go well forward, would reward them, as
thei would desire, and enriche their realme mooste
plentifully by his liberalite, partly also that Hen-
ry the kyng perceiuyng their kyng to assiste hym,
would gladly paie tribute to hym for a peace and
concord to behad. When this counsaill was geue,
the kyng did gladly folowe it, and that his loue
might bee more apparent to the people, he caused
lady Katherine daughter to the erle of Huntley, his
nigh kinswoman, to bee married to hym, After this
was

was dooen, the kyng wyllyng that this Berkyne should reigne in Englande, hastened his tourney towarde the bozders, and there commyng, proclaimed openly that all should bee pardoned & would beare with the duke of Yorke, and fight in his quarrell: and that menne might for feare submit theim selves, thei burned, spoyled, and killed without all mercie as fer as thei did go, but the kyng perceiuyng & no Englishemen came to aide this young duke, and that his souldiours were so loden with prayes and spoyles that thei would not gladly go ferther, he returned backe too Scotlande caryng with hym infinite goodes & riches. And when this duke came to Scotlande again, consideryng the greate distruccion & losse of the Englishemen, and that none came to aide hym, to the entent that this iugglyng of his couinterfect dignitee might not bee perceiued, he saied very craftely with a loud voice Oh wretche and stony herte, that I am not moued with the losse and deathe of so many Englishemen of myne, and at that woorde he desired the kyng that he would not molestate his realme hereafter with suche cruell tozmentyng, & fyring. To whom the kyng shaped hym this answer right shortly. Truly sir me thynke you take charge & thoughte of an other mannes realme and not of your owne, because that I could se no manne that would take your parte, and helpe you with his power, when you wer now last among theim. And for this cause the kyng did litle esteeme hym after that tyme, cou-tyng hym inconstante, vnstable, and speakyng wordes not agreyng to his promise. When & Englishelozdes & capitaines heard of this businesse

Kyng Henry

thei were in greate feare, and fled for safegarde of their lifes euery manne to his castle and hold, and gatherynge an armie to withstande their enemies certified the kyng in all poste haste of the Scottes enterpryse, whiche hearyng, prepared an armie in all the hast to fight against theim. But the Scottes beyng laden with their praies and spoiles that thei had, were gone backe to their countree, ere the Englishemen could bee readye. And this was the first commocion & busines of the Scottes against the Englishemen. When the Scottes were thus gone, and the kyng certified of it, he thoughte not to suffer them lenger, lest that by long taryng and deferryng of the matter, thei should take hert, and so with more fearsenesse inuade the realme again.

And assemblyng his counsaill together, shewed them that it was for the profite of the publique weale to warre against his enemies, to whom thei all agreed right gladly, and for the maintainyng of this battaill, there was leued a certain summe of tribute to bee paid on euery mannes hed, whiche payment although it was but easie and small, yet many of the commē people grudged to paie it. At this parliament also & conuocation there was certain lawes, actes & statutes confirmed & made, as was thought moste expedient for the publique weale. And after this was dooen, the kyng prepared to fight in all the haste, & gatherynge an armie, made Giles Dabeneý graund capitain ouer them and in his goyng too Scotlande, there began sodainly ciuile battail in the realme, whiche was for the paymente of this money, for that the Cornishe men, (whiche made this insurreccion) beeyng but poore,

poore, could not well paie this tribute. And so thei gathering al together, one Michael Joseph smith and Thomas Flammoke, did take vpon them the gouernaunce of all this compaignye. And seeyng theim greued soze that thei should paie so muche, did moze and moze incense their myndes againste their p:ince. Albeit thei laide this faulte, & cause of exaccion, to Ihon Morton bishop of Cantorbury, and Reignalde B:ate because thei wer chief of the kynges house. Thus thei preparyng theim selves to warre, when thei had aswell sufficiente biandye as all other thynges ready, thei toke their iourney to Welles, and from thence intended to go to London. Whē the kyng was shewed of this by his auditours, that thei wer vp, and that the lo:de Twichet, and the lo:de Audely with other of the nobilitie had taken their partes, he thoughte firste too scoure his realme of suche rebelles and traytours ere he would fight against the Scottes. And therefore he caused Giles Dabenev to retorne backe again then goyng vpon the Scottes, whose armie he encreased & multiplied with many picked and freshe warriors, that he might the better with lesse laboure ouercome these rebelles. And leaste that the Scottes might now (haupng good oportunitie) inuade the realme again (in this tyme of ciuile battaill) he caused lo:de Thomas erle of Surrey, a puissaunte and moste redoubted warriar whome he had taken prisoner, at the ouerthrowe of kyng Richard, and a litle before that, had set at libertie, and made tresourer of Englande, after the death of Ihon Dynham, to gather a bonde of menne at Durham, and there to kepe of the Scottes, if thei

The blacke
Smith.

Kyng Henry

Should chaunce to come, vntill suche tyme that the Cornishe menne beynge pacified and subdued, he might lende to thein the fozenamed Gyles again with all his power and armie. When as the nobles heard of this busynesse, thei came to London euerie manne, with as many as thei could make, to aide the kyng, if nede should bee. In the whiche compaignie there was the erle of Essex, the lord Mongey, the erle of Suffolke, Richard Thomas Wolliam Say, lord Hawarde the erle of Surrey his soonne a noble young manne and of stoute courage.

Robert Litton
Thomas Bande
Robert Cliforde
Wylliam Dauers
George Uerye
Thomas Terell
Richard Fizelewes
Jhon Ransforth
Thomas Montgomerie
Jhon Wyngfilde
Robert Broughton
James Terell
James Hubert
Jhon Wyndham
Robert Fenys
Wylliam Carre
Robert Durye
Jhan Audely
Robert Wyngfilde with
his brother Richard
Robert Brandon

Thomas West de lauare
Thomas Fenis Dacres
Dauid Owen
Henry Rolfe
Jhon Deuenisse
Henry Selenger
Jhon Paulet
Jhon Burghere
Thomas Woode
Mathewe Browne
Thomas Troys
Wylliam Sandes
Edmond Graye of Wil-
tone
Jhon Uerney
Thomas Brian
Richard Poole
Thomas Harecourte
Jhon Hampden
Edward Barkley
Wylliam Bolongue with
his

his sonne Thomas	Rober Louell
Henry Haydon	Jhon Shaye
Robert Clarence	Thomas Frouwike
Philip Calthrope	with mani other of lower

degre that wer moſte noble & cunnyng warriers.

In this meane ſpace, Charles the Frêche kyng commyng from the warres that he had at Naples with Ferdinande, ſente ambaffadours to the kyng for a peace and league of amitee to bee confirmed. When the kyng was enformed of their commyng, and that thei were at Caleis, he ſent certain of his nobilitie to mete them commyng, and to kepe them purpoſely at Douer, vntill ſuche tyme that this buſyneſſe were ended, that thei mighte not knowe of it in any wiſe.

And now the Corniſhmen goyng from Welles (where thei had their graunde capitain lorde Audely) went to Saulſoury & from thence to Winchester, and ſo to Kent, where thei looked for helpe, but thei were deceiued, for the erle of Kent, and the lorde of Burgone Doole, the lorde Cobham, Thomas Butcher, Edward Donyng, Richard Gilford, Willpaim Scotte, James Cromer, Jhon Deche, Jhon Darell, Henry Wiat, Richard Hault, Jhon Fogge, and other wer redy to withſtande their power, and to cauſe the people to beare true hertes to their kyng. For the whiche many of the Corniſhe men fainted and had leſſe mynde too fight, and for feare fled priuely in the night from their cōpaigny. But the capitaines perceiuyng thei could haue no help at their handes, truſted to their owne power, and broughte them too Blacke heathe felde nigh London, and there pitched their tentes in the

Rr.iiii. plain

Kyng Henry

plain to bid battaill to the kyng, if he would mete them, or els to inuade the citee, whō the kyng perceiuyng to bee there ready to fight, he caused Henry Buricher erle of Essex, Edmond Bolam erle of Suffolke and Richard Thomas, thre noble warriors too besiege them on bothe sides with two wynges, and so came hym self in the middest sending befoze, Giles Dabenev with a greate power And after his comyng thus to the feld, bothe the erles and Richard Thomas sette vpon them violently, and at the firste bzunt put them to flighte and killed about two thousand that resisted, and toke prisoners more then could bee tolde and emonges them the capitaines whiche shortly after wer putte to death. But this Michacell Joseph was a man of suche stoute corage and valiauntnesse that he neuer fainted or once gaue backe vntill suche tyme he was stricken doune, and killed openly.

When this battaill was ended the kyng loste but thre hundred in all his compaignie that were killed at that presente. Also the prisoners that wer take he pardoned, sauyng the capitaines and first autozs of that mischief, whose quarters he would haue to bee put on stakes and set in diuerse places of Cornewell, that their naughtye dooynges and foolish enterprises might bee a documente for other herafter to beware: but because there wer many of that countree that would gladly haue renewed battaill, if thei might haue had some capitaine and that thei were nothyng abashed for the overthrowe of their late insurreccion, he turned his mynde, so that thei were not had thether nor their quarters sette vpon any stakes there. When this
businessse

businesse was in hande, the kyng of Scottes beeyng certified of it by certain spies, thought best to inuade Englands again, and burned all the waie as he did befoze, lest that the kyng should prouoke hym too it of force, because he had dooen so muche hurte to it befoze, and thus came to Duresme and there burned all aboute, entending also to wyne Roxham castle, whiche the bishop had furnished a litle befoze with menne and vitail sufficiently, so that he could haue none accesse into the castle. And this was the bishop fore, that was bishop of Exeter, and for his godlinesse and verteous liuyng after that, made bishoppe of Welles and Bathe. Whiche bishop now beeyng in this businesse, certified the kyng of it in all the haste, and also therle of Surrey, that was then in Yorke shire with a greate armie of menne. Too whom the erle came shortly after, with his compaignie, and after hym folowed other noble menne of all quarters, euery one bryngyng for his habilitee as manycas he could too aide the bishop, and fight in the defence and quarell of their kyng. And in this compaigny was there many lordes the erle of Westmerlande, Thomas Dacres, George Graunge, Rafe Neuel Richard Latimer, George Lumley, Ihon Scrop, George Ogle, Thomas Baron of Hilton, Henry Cliford, Willyam Coyners, Thomas Percy.

Also knightes.

Sir Willyā Percy,	and Sir Rauffe Bigot,
three other of þ name as	Sir Rauffe Bowes,
Bulmery,	Sir Rauffe Elaker,
Gascogne,	Sir Thomas Appar,
Penpington,	Sir Thomas Thwartō.

R. v.

Sir

Kyng Henry

Sir Thomas Stran-	Sir Christopher Ward
guthie	Sir Walter Stryn-
Sir Jhon Constable	glande
Sir Jhon Ratcliffe	Sir Roger Belyngham
Sir Jhon Saucell	Sir Willjam Heron
Sir Jhon Gouer	Sir Rauffe Grape
Sir Musgraue	Sir Nicholas Ridley
Sir Jhon Waller	Sir Walter Griffit
Sir Jhon Aloder	Sir Jhon Heron
Sir Jhon Cuerinham	Sir Rauffe feneuike
Sir Brian Stapelton	Sir Thomas Grape
Sir Thomas Vortell	Sir Christofer Curwen
Sir Harduke Constable	Sir Robert Varcoppe
Sir Christopher Pike-	Sir Rouland Tempest
ryng,	Sir James Medcalfe

With many other capitaines, although not so noble in degree, yet as valiaunte in marciall feactes and prowesses of warre. The Scottes hearyng of the erle of Surrey that he was comyng and at hande with a greate power, then besiegyng this fozenamed Castle, whiche thei could by no meanes ouercome, thei fled streighte backe too Scotlande, whom the erle folowed as long as his vitailles serued, and after that returned backe too Duresme, ther abidyng vntil suche tyme he knewe ferther of the kyng his pleasure.

And in this ineane space, one Henry Hayles was sente Ambassadoure from Ferdinande vnto the kyng of Scottes for a generall peace too bee had with hym and the kyng of Englande, for he loued hym well, & kyng Henry also to whose sonne the young Prince Arthure, he would haue geuen his daughter lady Katherine in mariage that by

affinitie

affinitie and kynrede of bloude their loue mighte continue for euer.

So this Henry entreated hertely the Kyng of Scottes for a peace, and when he had some hope in it, he wrote vnto the Kyng of Englande, that it would please hym too sende one of his nobles too helpe too conclude this matter with hym and the Scottes. The kyng because he had been in greate trouble and then verie desierous of peace, he sente the bisshope of Duresme too hym in all the haste. So that this Henry and the bisshope reasoned with the Scottishe ambassadours as concernyng this peace too bee had, albeit thei could not agree, because that Kyng Henry desired too haue Perkyne Warbecke that was the cause of all this busynesse, and had so greatly disquieted his realme, whom the kyng would not deliuer, although he mighte of right, consideryng his falsehod and deceite that he had vied with hym.

Therefore, after that thei had reasoned muche of this matter, and could byyng it to no ende, yet a truce was taken for certain yerres of this condicio, that the same Perkyne Warbecke should bee conueighed out of Scotlande, and not too tary there longer. While this was doyng, kyng Henry caused the Ambassadours of the frenche kyng too bee brought too hym, whiche as it is shewed before, were stopped at Douer of their iourney, vntil suche tyme that the insurreccio of the Cornishmen was ceassed, and hearyng that thei came for a peace and league to bee made, graunted them it righte gladly. So that now beyng reconciled with twoo kynges, and the same his neighbours, he thanked Ferdinand.

Kyng Henry

Ferdinande and his wife Elizabeth for that thei caused a peace to bee made betwixte hym and the Scottes, and rewarded the ambassadoure moſte woꝛthely after a princely maner. And the time that this vnitee and concoꝝd was made, it was the yere of our lord a thousand foure hundred foure ſcore & eightene, & the twelſe yere of kyng Henries reigne

The .xii.
yere of
kyng Henry
the ſeuenth

And the kyng of Scottes kept his promeſſe wel inough. For when he perceiued manifeſtly that he was deluded, he called vnto hym Perkyne Warbeck, and firſte declared his benefites and pleaſures that he had doen vnto hym, and then counſailed hym too gette hym vnto ſome place where he might abide in ſafegard, and come again another tyme when he ſhould haue moze oportunitie. But neuer after he looked for any helpe at his hande, partely becauſe he had made peace with the kyng of Englande, and partely becauſe he ſawe that no Engliſhemen came to take his part. Wherefore he deſired hym not to bee miſgreued that he did thus leaue hym, & alſo counſailed hym to go into ſome other place or region, wherefore this Perkyne was verie ſory and (as the kyng had counſailed hym) departed thence with his wife, and went into Irelande, determinyng with hymſelf if he might haue no helpe of the men of Cornewale, to returne thence as faſte as might bee home to his greate maſtres and aunt Margaret into Flaunders. But he was no ſoner come thither, then he hearde by diuerſe meſſengers that thei of Cornewale were as ready to fight againſt kyng Henry as euer thei wer before, of hope of the whiche he wente ſtreight into Cornewale and there did ſturre vp their hertes with

with giftes and promyses, that all immediatly called hym their capitain and saied that thei would folowe hym and in all thynges obey promptly his commaundementes. Then was Berkin in as good hope as euer he was, and (because he would do no-
thyng rashly & without aduise ment) he purposed firste to ouercome citees and al well defended places that laie in his waie, & so to get as many as he could to folowe hym and to take his part, & incontinently, to buckle with the kynges hoste. Whē he had thus deliberate with hymself, he went streight to Excester whiche was the next citee that he could come vnto and besieged it, and because he had no gunnes to breake doune the walles, he laboured all that might be to breake the gates, but when he saue that thei could not easely bee beaten doune with any thyng, streight with he set fire on theim.

Wherof, the citezens wer verie sore astraied and pryncly in þ night let doune diuerse ouer the walles with ropes to go certifie þ kyng of their trouble, and in the meane tyme whē thei saue that their enemies had almoste brent vp the gates of the one side, took greate blockes and set theim on fire on the other side, for none other cause but that aswell their enemies thereby might bee excluded, as thei them selves included. And thei not trustyng to this onely, made also within greate ditches and other thynges to defende them from the inuasion of the rebelles. When Berkyn saue this, he got ladders and would by that meanes haue come into the cite but thei came not so sone vp but thei were beate doune again, and by this meanes many wer there slain, yet would he not thence departe, but trusted
surely

surely at the laste that thei should bee glad to yeld
 themselfes al that wer within for lacke of biandze.
 But as sone as the kyng hearde of this, he hasted
 with his hoste towarde Excester as faste as was
 possible, and sent diuerse souldiours befoze to cer-
 tifie all menne of his comyng and preparaunce,
 for at that tyme there was set furthe to help theim
 of Excester, Thomas Trencherd, Williã Cortney
 Walter Cortney, Edmond Carre, Jhon Halemell
 Peter Eggecombe Thomas Fulford, Jhō Crook
 Willyam Saintmaur, with a greate hoste whose
 capitain was Edward Cortney erle of Deuēshire,
 and his sonne Willyā, whiche was a young man
 of moſte noble corage, whiche thyng when Berkin
 heard tell of, he left besiegyng of Excester & wente
 to the next toun whiche is called Tauntun & there
 viewed his hoste and sette it in araie redy to fight,
 howbeit, he had but litle affiaunce in thesame, be-
 cause many of his souldiours wer so ſlēderly har-
 nessed, and no better skilled in warre. When the
 king sawe he was gone to Tauntun he hasted the-
 ther after hym with all speede. Thether came also
 Edward the duke of Buckyngham a young man
 verie valiaunt and of lusty corage, and hym folo-
 wed a greate compaigny of noble menne as Giles
 Bigge, Alexander Brian, Morish Barkelcy, Ro-
 bert Came, Jhon Sapcot, Jhō Wadham, Hugh
 Lutrell, and Nicholas his sonne, William Stoz-
 ton, Thomas Jinde, Jhō Semar, William Noz-
 ris, Thomas Blunt, Jhon Guple, Robert Pointe
 Henry Vernon, Jhon Mortimer, Jhon Speke,
 Richard Beaucamp, Fraūces Cheny, Roger Co-
 hete, Roger Wenburg, Henry Roger, Edwarde
 Darell

Darell, Ihon Langforde, Richard Lacon, Thomas Tremaille, Edward Sutton, Amis Daulet, Ihon Bicknell, Willjam Saintemaur, Thomas Long, Nicholas Latimer, Ihon Turbaruill, willjam Martyn, Walter Herforde, Morrishe Barons, Richarde Corbet, Thomas Cornuall, and many other besides these.

But the kyng when he came nighe to the towne sente befoze to begynne battaill, Robert Brooke, lord Richard Thomas, and Giles Dabency with a greate and strong hoste, to the entent that he himself with his souldiours might sette vpon theim behynde. But this deuise and purpose of the kyng was all superfluous. For Perkyng, so sone as he espied that the kyng was ready to fight, fled priuely in the nighte into a sanctuary at Bellilo Abbeye, and there lurked. But whether this Perkyng so did for feare leaste his menne should forsake hym or for the timiditie of hymself, it is as muche vncertain, as it is probable and sure that the kyng toke by his flight greate commoditee.

For the Cornishe menne were surely purposed either to wyne and ouercome their enemies or els not one of theim too haue liued any daie lenger. When kyng Henry knewe that Perkyng was gone he sente after hym many horse men that if it might bee, thei should ouertake hym in his iourney and byng hym backe.

But Perkyng Warbecke made suche speede, that he was not seen befoze he came into the sanctuary, but his petie capitaines could not scape so cleue. For of theim, the moste parte were taken and broughte backe again to the kyng. The residue.

Kyng Henry

due of the souldiours when thei vnderstode that Perkin their chief capitain was fled and the other taken, gaue vp theim selves by and by to the kyng without any more businesse, and of hym moste getely wer forgeuen. When all was dooen, the kyng wente again too Excester and there bothe gaue greate thankes to suche as wer worthy, and punished the autores and sturrers bp of this insurrection moste straightly. And in the meane tyme many of the souldiours roade too saincte Michels Mounte and there (as chaunce was) founde Katheryne Perkyngs wife, and brought her streighte like a bond woman and captiue to the kyng. And the kyng sente her by and by accompaigned with a goodly sort of matrons (because she was so goodly a young woman) to London too the quene as a true and sure token of victoꝝ. And whyles he taried ther at Excester, supposyng with himself, that he could not haue no perfect victoꝝ vntill he had gotten Perkyng hymself, whiche was the beginner of all this sedicion and strick, sente furthe twoo compaignies of menne to besiege the sanctuary where Perkyng was, that by no meanes he mighte scape awaie, and sente hym woꝝde also by certain messengers that if he would humbly submit hym self, he should bee forgeuen of al that was committed. Wherefoze, Perkyng now seeyng and ponderyng the state and misery, that he was in, wente voluntarily out of sanctuary and committed hym self to the kyng his pleasure.

Then was the kyng verie glad and tooke his iourney immediately after towarde London, not without the great metyng of people whiche came
out

out of euery quarter to see this feloe as he were a monster, because he beeyng but an alien durste bee so bold to come into this so noble a realme to make battaill and delude noble menne after suche a fassion. But when the kyng was come to London he appointed certain menne too kepe hym bothe night and daie verie vigilantly, to the entent that he might neither conueigh hymself out of the land ner go any whether within the realme to make any like perturbacion and disquietnesse.

After this the kyng perceiuyng that there wer many aswell in Somerset as in Deuonshire, whiche were helpers of the rebelles greatly, bothe goyng furthe and commyng homewarde, thought it good too punishe thein also, leaste peraduenture thei might bee the moze bold to dooe a like thying after. And therfoze he committed this businesse to Anis Paulet knight, & Robert Sherburne deane of Paules to bee dooen. Whiche in serchyng out all suche thzoughout bothe the shires, wer very exacte and diligent, but thei were fauourable to all suche as did it for feare or compulsiō. Yet wer thei to none so fauourable but thei were thoughte for their defaultes inditterently to bee punished. So that equitee therein was verie well cecuted.

In the same yere of a small matter befell greate strief betwene kyng Henry, and James kyng of Scotlande, whiche strief began of this fassio. Certain young men of the Scottes came armed vnto Duresme castle, & beheld it wonderous circumpectly as though thei had been delirous to know what was there doen. But when the keepers of the castle could not perceiue that thei went about any

hurte or displeasure, and seyng theim go awaie of
their owne accord, thei made no wordes but let the
alone. But when thei came again the next day and
viewed it likewise, the keepers of the castle deman-
ded of them what was their intent. Thei answered
them (like rude and unmanerly gentlemen) as fro-
wardly as could bee thought, in so much that at
the last through much alteration of bothe partes
thei fell together by the eares, and there wer some
of the Scottes slain, and the residue put to flight.
Whiche when thei came home certified their kyng
of the same. Wherwith he beyng sore moued to an-
gre, sent worde to kyng Henry that he would with-
out doubt reuege his quarel, wherfore kyng Henry
becyng very sorry, not so much for feare, as for too
liue in quietnesse and peace in his age, made hym
answer that it was not dooen through his default
or counsaill, but rather by the rashnes of his subie-
ctes, whiche if thei could bee proued gyltie should
bee accordyng to the fault punished. Wherfore he
desired hym moste louyngly to bee contented: But
this was not able to mitigate or swage the Scot-
tes anger & outrageousnesse. For the whiche cause
Richard bishop of Duresme whiche was more he-
uie then all other, because his seruauntes were the
beginners of this discorde, wrote many letters to
kyng James to desire him to kepe peace and be at
quiore. With whiche letters the kynges rage was
so quenched, that he bothe sent verie kynde letters
again to hym, and desired hym hertely too come o-
uer and talke with hym. Of þ whiche tidynges the
bishop was verie glad, and went streight to kyng
Henry to shewe hym the matter, and had leaue of
hym

hym incontinently to go ouer to hym.

Whē he came into Scotlande, he was receiued as loungly as could be thought of the kyng him self, at an Abbey called Helrole, and there after that he had complained muche of the crueltie that was vsed toward his menne here in Englande he began to cominen secretly of other matters, and especially of the amitie betwene kyng Henry & hym the whiche to be for euer stablised and confirmed he desired the kynges daughter Margaret in marriage. Of the which thyng, albeit the bishop was glad in his herte, yet he would make no perfet answer: were oꝝ shewe futh any sure hope of thesame, but saied that when he came home, he would dooe the best in the matter that laie in hym. Wherefoze the kyng shortly after dimissed hym, and desired hym earnestly to breake thesame matter to kyng Henry. And whē he was come home, so he did, & the proffer pleased the kyng verie well, because he was a man whiche was alwaies moze delited with peace and quietnesse then with þ troublefomnesse of battaill.

And now did appoche the deathe of Berkyn Warbecke, and of Edward erle of Warwike whiche had so long lien all readye in the tower. But Berkyn thought that he would saue hymself, and thercoze on a tyme he toke his leggues and ranne awaie, but so sone as the kyng hearde tell thereof, he made menne after hym with all the speede that might be, with whole clamours and shoutes Berkin was so feared, that of necessite he was compelled to go to an abbey whiche was called Bethelaim and there intreated the Abbote of the place too desire the kyng of his pardon that he might not dye.

Sl. ii.

Whiche

Whiche thyng the abbot did for hym and obtained it. Wherefore Berkin was brought bound and fettered, too Westminster and there stode an whole daie in the sighte of all menne to the greate shame and reproche of hymself. And after (partly because the kyng had promised hym his life, and partely because he should no more ren awaie) he was committed to the tower. Where his wickednesse boylng so hote within his brest, would not suffer him to escape the vengeaunce and punishment of god but shortly after was moste iustely and worthely put to death as hereafter shalbe shewed. Then it chaunced that a Monke whose name was Patricke had a scholer, whom he promised if he would folowe his counsaill, should easely come too the kyngdome of Englande. Whiche scholer when he had once heard his masters mynde, was verie instaunte in the matter and desiered his master not to forget his purpose, but rather begyn it as sone as was possible. Wherefore, when thei betwene theimselfes had taken deliberaciō and counsailed of the thng how it should bee brought to passc, thei went bothe together into Kent. And there began this young feloe to tell priuely to many that he was the erle of Warwike, and had gotte out of the tower by the helpe of this Monke. To the whiche, when he perceiued credence geuen, he declared it openly, and desired all menne of helpe.

But oꝛ euer this sedicion began to go forward, the heodes and principalles of the same wer taken and cast into prisone. Of whiche one was condemned to death, and the other condemned to perpetuall prisone and darkenesse. For at that tyme
here

here in Englande was so much attributed to prestes, and al religious menne, that though thei had committed felonye, murder, yea or treason, thei should not haue been therfore condemned too deathe. Howeuer, whosoever could reade, though it wer neuer so litle, what crime soeuer he had committed (saue treason) should by his booke be saued and therfore it was inuented, that if the defaulte were so greate, that any manne shoulde suffer death for thesame, he should onely bee burnt in the hande, wherfore he that had comitted theft, should be marked in the hand with this letter T. if he had comitted murdye, with M. and after that, if he wer depzeended in like crime, then there should no fauor at al, moze then to other men, be shewed. Whiche act was made & confirmed by this kyng Henry in the second yere of his reigne, and taken of the frenche menne, whiche are wonte if thei take any suche, to cut of one of his eares and lette hym go. Whiche priuiledges of bookes made theses bothe bolde and plenty throughout all the coastes and partes of this his realme of Englande.

But now to my matter again. Perkin, of whom we spake inuche before, whiles he was in the toure corrupted many of the keepers, partely with giftes and partely with faire promises, so that thei were all agreed (saue the leutenante, whom he fully determined to kill) that he and therle of Warwike should go their waie out of y^e toure, and afterward to make the beste shifte that thei could for themselves. But this his purpose came not to full effecte, for it was knowen within shorte tyme after, for the whiche he and his felowes al of the same coun-

Kyng Henry

saill wer hanged by the neckes. And therle of war-
wike, because he was founde giltye in the same de-
faulte was behedded, whiche was doen in the yere
of our Lorde a thousande foute hundred nyntie
and nyne, and in the thirtene yere of this kyng
Henry his reigne.

**The. xiii.
yere.**

The nexte yere after, was here in Englande a
greate plague wherof menne died in many places
verie soze, but especially and moste of all in Lon-
don. For there died in that yere aboute thirty thou-
sande. Wherefore the kyng sailed ouer too Caleis
and thether came to hym Philippe erle of Flaun-
ders, and was receiued of hym as louyngly as
could bee thoughte, and also oze euer thei departed,
the league whiche was made betwene thei in twoo
not long before was renewed.

Some after, when the plague was flaked, the
kyng returned again into Englande, and was no
soner come thether, but there met hym one Gasper
Bons sente from Alexander the bishop of Rome,
whiche broughte with hym indulgences and par-
dons wherby he made the kyng belcieve that he and
his should sic streight to heauen, but those could
not bee graunted without a greate somme of mo-
ney, the whiche the rather that he might obtain, he
promised parte of it to the kyng himself, so decei-
uyng bothe the king and the people. In this same
yere was burnt a place of the kynges, whiche he af-
ter builded vp again and named it Richemount.

Aboute this tyme died three bishoppes here in
Englande, John Morton bishop of Cauntorbury
Thomas Langton bishoppe of Wynchester, and
Thomas Rotherham bishoppe of Yorke.

Also

Also in this yere, there were greate mariages made, for kyng Henry had geuen his daughter lady Margaret to the kyng of Scottes, & his sonne prince Arthur to lady Katherine daughter to Ferdinando kyng of Spaine, whiche mariages were made specially for this cause, that he might liue in peace with those kynges in his old age.

After this, prince Arthure that came too London purposely to be married, went to Wales again with his lady and wife to ouerse all thynges well there, and to the entent he might not miscary or go out of the waie in rulyng his dominion, he had with hym many noble menne, as firste Richard Doole his nigh kinsman whiche was made chief of his priue chambze, and David Philip husher of his halle. Also he had of his counsaill certain knightes as Willjam Udall, Richard Croft, Peter Neuton, Henry Vernam, Thomas Englefeld. And other besides them, as Ihon Walestone, Henry Martyne, Willjam Smithe priest, chief of his counsaill late bishop of Lyncolne, and sir Charles Booth a lawer, then bishop of Herforde.

A litle before this mariage, Edmond Doole erle of Suffolke sonne too lady Elizabeth the sister of kyng Edward, was accused for killyng of a man, and althoughe the kyng pardoned hym, whom he might iustely haue cōdempned for that offence, yet because he was raigned at the barre, whiche he thought it a greate maim and blemishe to his honour, toke it heuely, and shortly after fled to Flaunders without any passeporte or licence of the kyng to Lady Margaret his aunte: but he returned agayne, and so excused hym selfe before the kyng,

S.iii.

that

King Henry

that he was foude faultlesse in any thyng that was obiected vnto hym. Also when this mariage was kept at London, with great pompe and solempnitie, this Edmond fled again to Flaunders with his brother Richard, either for þe he had been at greate charges at thesame mariage and far cast in debte that he was not able to paie, either because the lady Margarete his aunte had allured hym, or els for euill will and enuie that the kyng should prosper so wel. Whe it was knowen that he was gone and the kyng certified thereof, he feared that some businesse should rise by his meanes and was soyy that he had pardoned hym for his offence lately committed. But sone after, that therle came from Flaunders, sir Robert Cursone knight and captain of Hāmes castle, feignyng hymself to bee one of that conspiracie, wente purposely to espie what the Duches entended against kyng Henry, whiche afterward for his so dooing was in greate fauour with hym. For the kyng was so bigilaunt and circumspecte in all his matters, þe he did knowe them by name that either bare hym euill will, or worked any thyng in their minde: whom he caused too bee attached and caste in hold. And among them William therle of Deuonshires sonne, whiche married lady Katherpne doughter to kyng Edward, was taken, and another William brother to Edmond erle of Suffolke, James Citel, & Ihon Windhā. But these twoo Williams wer taken rather of suspencion then for any offence of gyltinesse. Wherefore William this erles sonne of Deuonshire after the deathe of kyng Henry, was deliuered and had in great fauour with the kynes sonne King Henry.

Henry the eight, but shortly after when he began too exercise hymself again in marshall feactes of warre, he sickened of a disease calle (Plureses) and died therewith, whiche because it was straunge and vnknownen to the phisicians, it was incurable. He lefte one sonne behynde hym aliue to vpholde the name of that auncetree. The other Willyam brother to Edmond erle of Suffolke had also greater fauoure shewed hym in prisone, then he had befoze. And as for James Terell, and Thon Windham, because thei wer traitours, and manifestly accused of thesame, wer putte to death and beheaded. But when the erle of Suffolke heard of this, he was in greate dispaire with hymself that he should neuer frame his matters well, & so went all aboute Germanie and Fraunce for aide and socour, prouyng if he could finde any helpe at their handes, whom whē he perceiued to shewe no token of loue towardes hym in that behalf, he made hym subiect to the prince of Flaunders, but his brother Richard being an experte manne, did so wisely order and behaue hymself in that businesse, & he was not greatly found gilty in any poynt of that matter. The kyng not yet beyng out of all feare of his enemies perceiuyng that many sanctuary menne looked for a faire daie, desired of Alexander bishop of Rome that all traitours and banished menne should not bee saued by any sanctuary, and that suche as wer there in hold, should take them hereafter as no refuge and socoure to them, if thei once go out, whiche thyng, after the bishop had graunted, it was to the ease and quietnesse of all the realme.

When the kyng had all his businesse so wel ended,

Sl. v.

ded,

ded, and brought in a good state. Prince Arthure died halfe a yere or lesse, after that he had maryed lady Katheryne, for whose death there was greete lamentyng. It is reported also that lady Katheryne feared suche like chaunce evermore, for because that after she had taken her leaue of her parentes, and sailed towarde Englande, she was tossed long in the sea, with the violence of the water and the wynde, ere the shippes could haue any landyng.

Not long after, the quene was brought in bed with a daughter, and died vpon the same, whiche daughter also taried but a litle season after her mother. There departed also within short space after, Remald Bray, a manne for iustice so commendable, that if any thyng had been doen against good lawe or right, he would streight reprove the kyng for it. Of the same vertue was Thon Horton bishop, and would dooe in all thynges as he did in reprovyng the kyng, for the reformation of thynges amysse, whiche bishop died two yeres before. About that tyme also died Henry bishop of Cauntorbury whose roome Willia Warrā bishop of London supplied, and in the bishop of Londons place was elected William Barons, after whose deathe succeeded Richard Fitzjames bishop of Chichester.

The. xvi.
yere.

In this yere, whiche was the. xvi. of his reigne and of our lorde. M cccc. and two, the kyng did kepe his parliament, wherein many thynges were decreed and made for the publique commoditee, & among other thynges it was determined that theues and murderers duely conuicted by the lawe to die, should be burned in the hande and quit if they could reade on the booke any one woorde.

Fur.

Furthermore, it was decreed that the people should paie certain money to þe kyng, and that the goodes of them that wer banished and fled, should bee disparled and sette to sale. Also the priestes wer commaunded to paie money for the maintenaunce and sustentacion of the common weale.

And now the kyng drawyng nighe to age, and considryng the greate battailles that he had in tymes past, whiche (as it was thought) came of ouer muche weithnesse, prouided a remedy right shortly for it. And to thentent þe men should not thynke that he would oppresse them or dooe them wrong for of all people he hated oppressours, therfore he deuised with hymself, by what honeste meane he might do it, & thus deuising called to mynde that Englishmen did litle passe vpon the obseruacio of any lawes that wer made: in so muche, þe if suche a thyng should be called to accōpt, he thought many men as well lordes, as other of the laie fee, would be found faultie. And so searchyng ouer the statutes that he had made, punished them a litle by the pursle that had trasgessed them. After that he appointed twoo commissioners to receiue the forfeitures, the one Richard Hempson, and the other Edmonde Dudley bothe lawers of the temporaltee, whiche persones for the desire to please the kyng had no respecte how they gotte the money, so they might haue it either by right or wrong. Albeit, the kyng hauyng pitee of his people, after that he perceiued they wer sore punished and palled vnknownen to hym, restored to them their money, of whō it was exacted vniustely, and depriued them of their office that had so vniustely executed it.

In this yere, died quene Elizabeth of Castell wife to Ferdinand kyng of Aragon without any issue of manne child, so that the heritage did fall to lady Johan her eldeste daughter, by Ferdinande whiche after was married to Philippe duke of Austrik and Burgone, then made by this mariage also the chief gouernoure ouer all that countree.

Shortely after aboute the. xiii. daie of January whiche was the yere of our lord. M. cccc. and fiue, this Duke called kyng of Castell, haupng a nauy prepared, sailed out of Flaunders with his wife to Spaine, but he had not set furthe long, ere the wether began to chaunge, and tempestes to rise so that at the last fearsenelle of the winde, did driue them to the coastes & borders of Englande, where he landed at an hauen or porte called Waymouthe sore against the mynde and consent of all his compaignie, whiche knewe well that the same landyng should be the occasion of long taryng there. When it was knowen that he was thus laded, ther came a greate number of harnessed menne to proue if he wer the kynges frend or no, whiche when thei perceived hym to bee his frende, and enteded nothyng but loue and frendship, Thomas Trencharde the chief of that compaignie wente to the kyng, desirynge hym (if it would witesalfe hym) to take a lodgyng at his house, whiche was euen nigh at hand trustyng therby to haue thanke of y kyng his master who he certified in al the haste of his comyng.

Also Jhon Caroe desirynge hym that he would not go untill suche tynie that he had spoken with the kyng his louyng and faithfull frende, considering that he was within twoo or thre daies iourney

ney of hym. So that at length although he laied many excuses to haue been gone and departed, at their instaunce taried there with theim. And when the kyng was enfourmed of his commyng, he reioyled highly and sente certain of his nobilitie to byng hym where he was. Wherfore kyng Philip seyng no remedy but that he muste nedes tary, he wente streight to Windesore where the kyng did lie. And shortly after folowed his wife quene Johan. After thei two had communed of many thynges together, at the laste thei began to treate of a league and perpetuall amitie to bee had.

And firste kyng Henry desired to haue Edmōd Poole banished manne vnder his captiuitee and bondage. To whō kyng Philip answered & saied that it was not in his power to restore hym, yet after muche entreatyng & prayng, the kyng graunted at the laste that he should bee sent to hym right shortly. After this for prolongyng of tyme that he might haue his desire, he brought kyng Philip to London, and there shewyng hym his citee, returned from thence with hym.

Then Edmond Poole, seyng that ther was no more hope to bee had in forein princes, & trustyng that kyng Henry would put hym at libertee, came to Englande willyngly to proue his gentlenesse, that if vpon this expectacion and hope, he wer deceiued, yet he might at the laste dye and bee buried in his natie countree.

It was not long after that the king Philip departed from Englande, but he died, beyng of thirtie yeres of age, whiche had by his wife sixe childre: twoo menne children as Charles and Ferdinand,
and.

Kyng Henry

and foure daughters, Elionar, Elizabeth, Marie and Katherine, a manne for his comlinesse of body right commendable, of a meane stature, a liberall countenaunce, corpulent, full of fleshe, quicke witted and bolde herted. This tempest that the kyng Philip suffered on the sea: was greatly wondercd at of many menne, because it stroke doune an Eagle of brasse from a pinnacle of Paules church, and with that fall, the same Eagle did breake another Eagle that was sette for a signe at a tauerne doze. For vpon this, menne did take an opinion that the Emperour Maximilian whiche at that time gaue an Eagle for his armes, should haue a great losse, whiche was that he should lose his sonne Philip erle of Flaunders.

Also shortly after the departyng of þe kyng Philip, George Neuell lord of Burgeiny, & sir Thomas Grene knight, wer suspected to be guilty of the treason that Edmond Poole had wrought, and so cast in prison, but shortly after, when thei had purged theiues of that suspicion & crime, thei wer deliuered. Albeit, this knight sir Thomas Grene died in prison. The other lord for his sobrynesse of liuyng, & true herte þe he bare to his prince was had in greater estimacion then euer he was before.

After this, the kyng had peace, aswell with foreign princes as also of ciuile battaill for the space of thre yeres, but then the kyng beeyng diseased with a certain infirmitie and weakenesse of body, this euery yere about the springtide was again stirred vp by the reason of a greete plague of the sweate þe reigned through the whole realme, howbeit by the reason of the remedy that was inuented for

for it the last tyme before it did the lesse hurt. Another mischief chaused, that many riche men and of great possessions wer caused to leaue their countre by the reason that the commissioners of the forfeites had delt falsely with them and exterminated them by their naughtie meanes. So if had not the kyng been gracious to many of them, thei had been vndoone for euer. In this meane tyme Alexander bishoppe of Rome departed out of this worlde, after whom fraunces Pius nephew to Pius the secod was made and stalled bishop, whom kyng Henry had made gouernoure ouer his realme, and reioysing gladly of his high promociō, sent sir Gilbert Talbot knight, Richard Beare abbot of Glastinbury, and Roberte Sherburne to bee glad of his honour in his behalf, and make a promise that he would dooe hym obeysaunce hereafter. At this same tyme also died Giles Dabenev lord chamberleyne, whose office Charles bastarde sonne of Henry brother to Edmonde duke of Somerssette had geuen to hym. Sone after the kyng caused Guydo Ubald duke of Urbin to bee made knight of the garter, the whiche honour and dignitee he desired to haue, that he mighte haue some parte of the nobilitie that his father Fredericke had, whiche was receiued and chosen also into that orde by kyng Edward. And because it was blased that Julius the seconde was bishoppe of Rome after the deathe of Pius, the kyng sente a goodly vesture by his Ambassadoure, for this Guydo to weare. Whē he had receiued this garmente, he did sende Balthesar Castillo a Mantuan boyme vnto kyng Henry, whiche receiued of the knightes a garter.

kyng Henry

garter, in token that he should bee a knight of the same orde. When this buinesse was doen, Lewes the frenche kyng mistrustynge that he should neuer haue manchild, married his eldest daughter lady Anne to fraunces Wailesc Dolphine, duke of Eugoisy, whiche was sure a litle before to Charles the kyng of Castell. And when kyng Henry knewe of this, he thought best to mary his daughter lady Mary to this Charles kyng of Castell, whiche marriage was confirmed and made at Calers by the bishop of Wynchester and the ambassadours of Flaunders, the lady being but ten yeres of age.

And now wer the thre yeres expired, at whiche tyme kyng Henry thought his fatall daie to draw nigh. Therefore, to thentent that the people might wilke & praye for hym after his death, for his kindnesse that he shewed to them, he caused a generall pardon to bee geuen vnto all offendours, lauyng onely theues and murtherers, because they did not offende hym, but another manne. For this goodnesse shewed to the people, procession was in euery place of the realme for the safegarde of the kyng.

Neuerthelesse his tyme was come, that God would haue hym, so that he died the .xxi. daie of Appyll, in his palace of Richemond, the whiche was the yere of our lorde a thousande five hundred and eight. His corps was buried at Westminster in a chappell the whiche he caused to bee builded. He reigned thre and twentie yeres, and more then seven monethes, & liued. lii. Also he had by his wife the quene eight children, foure menne childre, and foure women children, of the whiche thre remained a liue, Henry prince of Wales, lady, Margarete,

rete, and lady Mary. He was a manne of body but
leane and spare, albeit, mightie and strong there-
with, of personage and stature some what higher
then the meane sorte of menne bee, of a wondrefull
beautie and faire complexiō through all his body,
of a mery and laughyng countenaunce, especially
in his communicacion, thynne tothed, and thynne
heared, of witte in all thynges like Salomon, of a
pryncely and redoubted stomake, and in greate af-
fares and matters of weightie importaunce very
wittie. For suche thynges as he went about, he did
theim warely and not without greate deliberacion
and breathyng. Besides this, he was sobre, mode-
rate, buxome and bouiteous, and without al pride
and highnesse of stomake, in so muche, that he was
harde and rough with theim that were noted of
that crime, for no manne had so greate autoritte
with hym, that either durst or could doe any thyng
as his owne fantasie did serue hym, without the
consent and agremente of other. Yea he kepte this
poincte so well, that he would not suffre his owne
mother to haue her will. For this was his sayng
that a kyng was a ruler that should rule and not
bee ruled. He was also verie iust, and defended the
matters and causes of many pooze people from
the power of the greate menne. And so liuyng all
his tyme in vertue, renowne, gloze, and va-
liauntnesse of merciall prowesses, gaue
bp his ghoſte at the laſte, whiche
vndoubtedly is in that place
where euerlaſtyng ioye
and gladneſſe re-
maineth for euer and euer.

Kyng Henry

the eighte.



VR MOSTE GRACIOVS
louereigne lozde Kyng Henry
the eighte, the sonne of Kyng
Henry the seuenth, began his
reigne the. xxiij. daie of April
in the yere of our lozde a thou-
sande fiue hundred. and nyne,
and was crowned at Weste-
minster in the feaste of the natiuitee of saint Iho
Baptist then nexte folowynge.

And in the. xxviii. yere of his moste gracious
reigne was borne his moste noble and vertuous
sonne, Prince Edward at Hampton courte the. xii.
daie of the moneth of October beeyng saint Ed-
wardes euen.

Now for a finall conclusion as touchyng this
moste noble and excellēt prince and for the closyng
vp of this present werke. If that his highnes had
by all that space of his reigne heretofore, whiche
hath been. xxxiiij. yeres, dooen no more but onely
these thre thynges (as moste true it is y his grace
hath dooen a greate and infinite numbre of moste
prudente & beneficiall thynges, bothe for the qui-
etnesse of his realme and wealth of his subiectes)
that is too late: the extirpyng and abholishyng of
the blurped autozite of the bishop of Rome out of
all his dominions, and restoryng vnto vs the ho-
ly and moste blessed woorde of God, to the entente
chiefly y wec might knowe our duety to almighty
God.

God, our obedience to our prince and his successors kynges of this realme, and liue a Godly and christen life one with another. Secundarely, in taking a waie all supersticion and idolatrie. And thirdely and last of all the dissoluyng and suppressing of all counterfete sectes and false religions, who were able to rendre worthy thanks and praises to his highnesse: And therefore to conclude, infinite thanks bee geuen too almighty God, that so hath wrought by his speciall grace, in the herte and mynde of his highnesse, and lette earnest prayers and supplications incessantly bee made of all his faithfull subiectes for the preservation of his highnesse in moste triumphant honoure and wealth that he maie ouer vs long reigne and rule. And when nature shall geue place to deathe in his noble person, that then thesame giftes of prudence, pollicie, and godly iudgement that his highnesse is so plentifully enduewed with, maie yet bee planted in the person of that goodlye ympe and moste flourishing braunche prince Edward, that thesame maie finishe and maintegne that whiche his noble father and our soueraigne Lorde hath moste graciously begonnc. To this all true Englishe heartes saie. Amen.

MUSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM



L O N D I N I .
Ex officina Richardi Craſtoni,
Cum priuilegio ad im-
primendum ſolum
per ſeptennium.

